



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



SIN

Fam

IALE

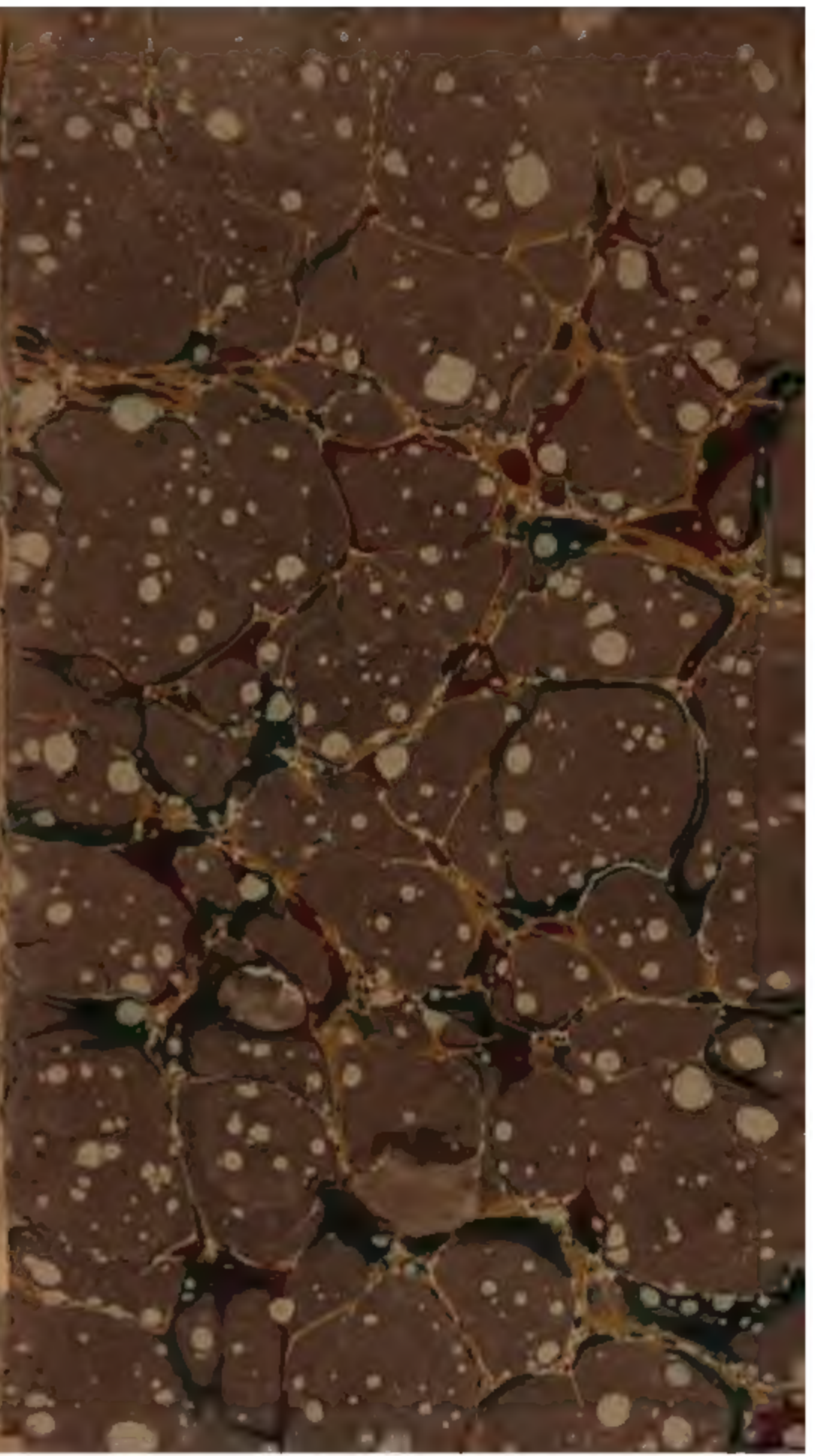
Str

61

roadw

Rin

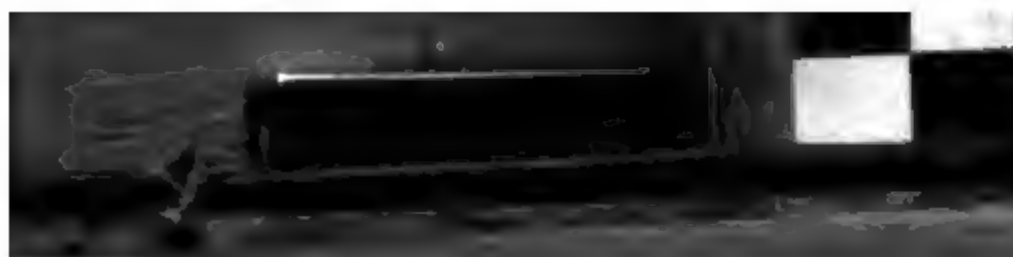
THOMAS

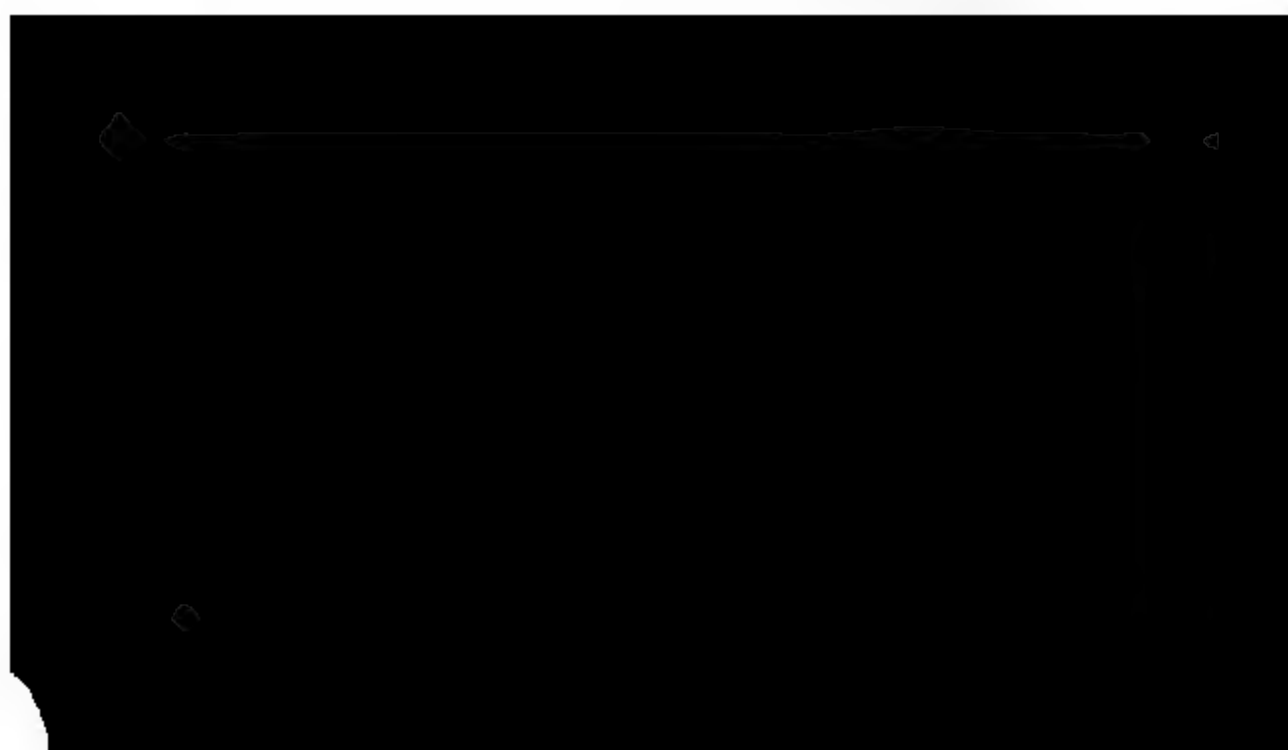


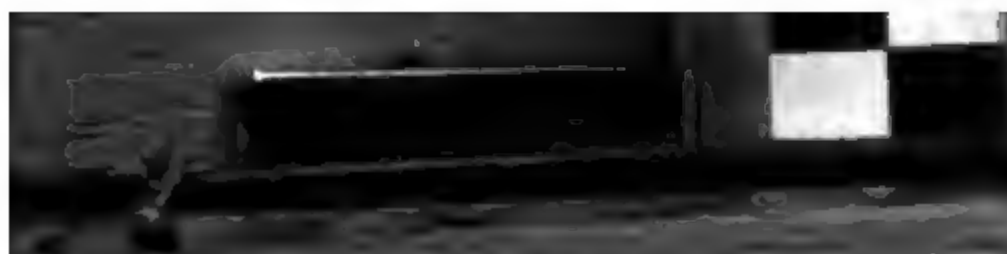
821.1

C4968

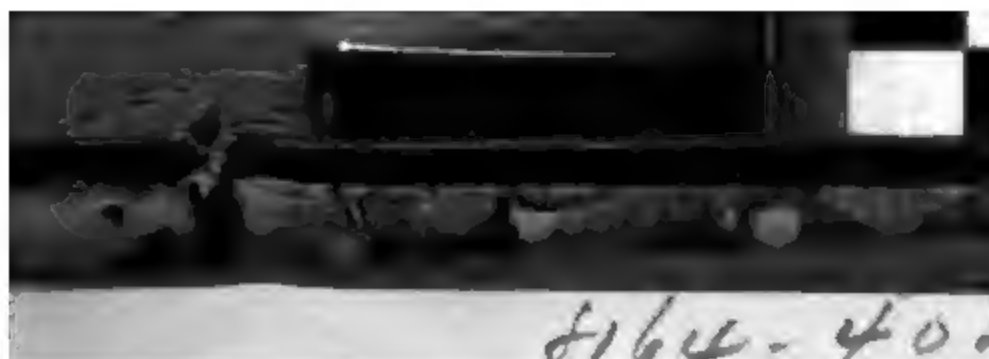
no. 73









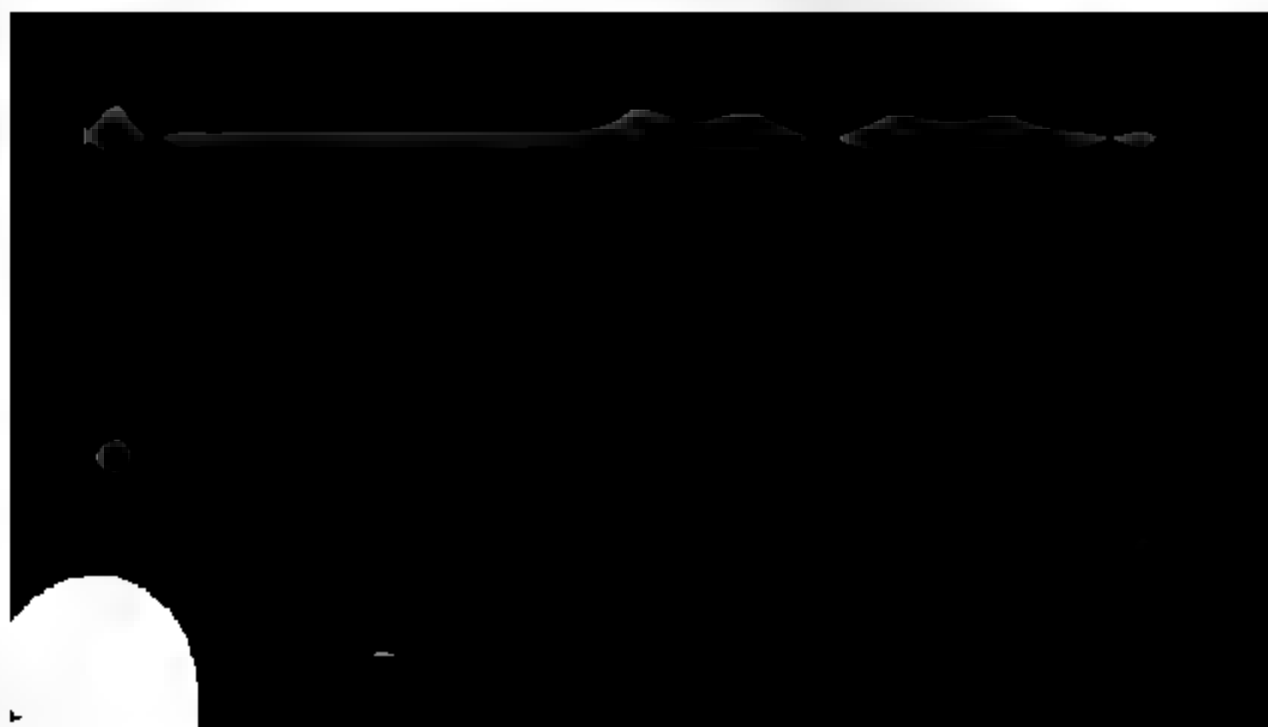


8164-400.72

The Harleyian MS 7334

II

Chancer's Canterbury Tales.



THE
Hanleian MS 7334
OF
Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY
FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.



LONDON:
PUBLISHT FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY BY
N. TRUBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXXV.

TO
The Lovers of Chaucer,
PAST, PRESENT,
AND
TO COME
159606

FOREWORDS.

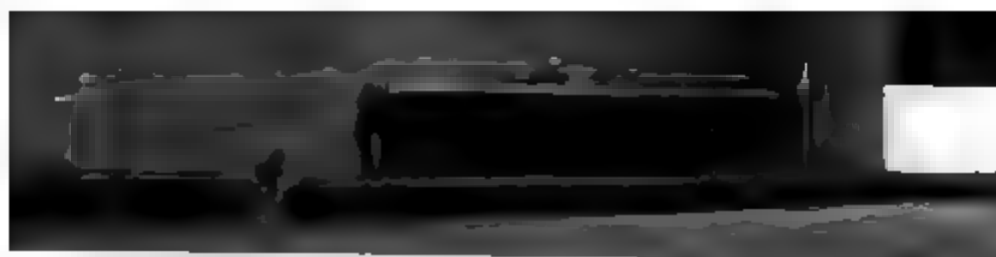
WHEN thinking in 1868 what were the six best MSS of the *Canterbury Tales* to print in my *Six-Text* for the Chaucer Society, the Harleian 7334 was of course one of the first that occurred to me. But as it had been printed twice by the late Thomas Wright—in 3 vols. for the Percy Society, and then in cheap double-column,—then by Mr. Jephson for the late Robert Bell's *Series of English Poets* (published by Jn. Wm. Parker), and a fourth time by my friend Dr. Richard Morris for George Bell's *Aldine Series*,¹ I decided to let these four printings suffice for the Harleian 7334, and so get a fresh MS (which proved to be of the B-type) into print among my *Six*. It was not a wise decision, as there are too many of the Corpus or B-type already in the *Six-Text*, and I have unluckily filled up gaps in the better A-type MSS—Ellesmere, Hengwrt, and Cambridge—with extracts from B-type ones, though in several cases the Christchurch A-type MS was open to me. But when I started Chaucer work, I didn't know even the little that the course of it has taught me. (Still, as investigation of the niceties of Early English goes on, probably no student will blame me for having printed one more MS of *The Canterbury Tales*. And though collators' curses for the amount of labour I've thrown on them have already fallen thickly upon me, I always assure these Balaams that they'll bless me when their work is done.)

¹ Mr. George Bell meant at first simply to reprint Ploker's text of Chaucer's *Poetical Works*, but, on my strong remonstrance as to its badness, Mr. Bell agreed to engage Dr. Morris to re-edit the whole from MSS.

Well, when Editors began to edit Chaucer's Tales, and wanted to know what the reading of Harleian 7334 is, they often found some italics in Dr. Morris's text, showing that he'd altered his MS; and as his publisher wouldn't let him give various readings, a reference to the MS became necessary. This was a great bore, specially when a man lived in Germany or America. Moreover, my friend Prof. Child meant his foundation-Essay on Chaucer's language and metre to be based on the MS Harl. 7334, and not on any Editor's changes of it, whether right or wrong. So it gradually became plain that a simple print of this MS must be done for the Chaucer Society. And here accordingly it is. It is as accurate as twice reading of every line with the MS by me can make it; but no doubt little slips have happened: they always will befall.

The MS is dear to the soul of HENRY BRADSHAW and all concerned in the due order of the Canterbury Tales, because it has, at the end of the First Fragment of Group B—the Man of Law's Tale—the proper Man-of-Law-Shipman Link, which should hook it on to the Second Fragment that the Shipman's Tale heads. No Shipman's Tale and Fragment 2 however follow it—but instead, Group D,—Wife, Friar, Summoner,—then Groups E, F, G, C,—and after these, the wanting Second Fragment of B, though without its genuine End-Link.

The MS is of an independent type, not falling into



1—487 of the Franklin's Tale, p. 354-5 below, Harl. paging), render it less fitted for the basis of a complete edition of *The Canterbury Tales* than the fine illuminated Ellesmere MS.¹ Moreover, Harl. 7334 sticks 8 spurious lines—2004 b, c; 2012 b, c; 2037 b, c; 2048 b, c,—p. 444-4, into the Summoner's Tale, and one, l. 592 (p. 444) into the Squire's Tale. It also has not 2 lines, A 252 b, c, in the General Prolog, p. 8; 2 in the Cook's Tale, A 4375-6, p. 127; and 8 at the end of the Cook's Tale, A 4415—4422, p. 128; 7 lines in the Knight's Tale, A 2013-18, p. 58, A 2958, p. 84; 2 lines in the Miller's Tale, A 3721-2, p. 106; 2 in the Reeve-Cook Link (A 4355, 4358, p. 125-6; 4 lines altered into two); one line in the Man of Law's Tale, B 417, p. 444, and five at the end of the Man of Law's End-Link, B 1186—1190, p. 444; thirty lines in the Wife's Preamble, D 575—584, 605—612, 619—626, 717—720, p. 444-444, 444; eight in the Second Nun's Tale, G 155, 210—216, p. 444, 444; the 8 genuine Ellesmere lines² in the Franklin's Tale, 1455-6, 1493-8, p. 444-4, besides leaving out 2 lines (2356-7, p. 444) in the Merchant's Tale,³ four (299-300, 305-6, p. 444) in the Doctor-Pardoner Link, two in the Pardoner's Tale, C 478-9 (p. 444); five in the Shipman's Tale, B 1355 (p. 444) and B 1376-9 (p. 444); one in Sir Thopas, B 1995 (p. 444); about a dozen of prose (trebles) in Melibe,⁴ one stanza of 8 in the Monk's Tale, B 3213-20 (p. 444), four lines in the Nun's Priest's Tale, 4136-7 (p. 444), 4478-9 (p. 444), and all its End Link, 16 lines, (for which see p. 694,) and about 23 treble ones in the Parson's Tale: see the gaps in pages 444-444 as you

¹ The Ellesmere has not the Man-of-Law-Shipman Link which Harl. 7334 has.

² No other MS yet examined by me has these 8 lines.

³ Lines like these, due to the scribe's jumping from one 'sight' to the other, might well have been dotted differently in the print, so as to show the jump.

⁴ B 2252-3 (p. 444), 2264 (p. 444), 2432, 2444 (p. 444-444, 2623-4 (p. 444-444), part of 2646-7 (p. 444), 2708 (p. 444), part of 2726, 2730, 2741 (p. 444-444), part of 2854 (444), 3034 (p. 444).

turn over the leaves. Altogether, at least, 760 lines are wanting in Harl. 7334: a serious loss.¹ But on the other hand, this Harl. 7334 puts lines 1307-8 of Group D, the Friar's Tale, in their right place, on p. ††† instead of their wrong one as lines 1293-5 of the Wife-Friar Link, on p. †††.

That in some cases the Harl. readings are not so good as those of the Ellesmere, I showed in my article 'Recent² Work at Chaucer' in *Macmillan's Magazine* for March 1874; but I admitted that in other instances the Harleian readings were the better. Of the MSS which contain the spurious 'Tale of Gamelyn'—the A-type ones don't—Prof. Skeat found Harl. 7334 much the best. See his 1s. 6d. edition of *Gamelyn* for the Clarendon Press.

I once hoped to have edited the *Tales* and all Chaucer either with Mr. Bradshaw or alone; but alas, what with the Philological Soc., and occasional work for its Dictionary, Early English Texts and Wyclif, Shakspeare and his Quartos and Folios, Browning and Shelley Societies, Sculling-Fours, Kangaroo bicycles, evenings out, and general laziness, I fear that edition must be left for some more learned and energetic person than myself. Let it suffice that the Chaucer Society has cleared the way for the coming man. I am due now at our Rowing-Club Dance.

British Museum,

Friday, Jan. 8, 1886, 7.30 p.m., under the Electric Light.



CONTENTS

OF THE HARLEIAN MS 7334.

Group	Six Text pages	Harl. pages
A. § 1. General Prologue ¹	1	1
§ 2. Knight's Tale (of Palamon, Arcite, and fair Emelye) (Pt. II, p. 40; Pt. III, p. 54; Pt. IV, p. 71)	26	26
§ 3. Knight-Miller Link	89	89
§ 4. Miller's Tale (of Nicholas, Absolon and the Oxford-Carpenter's Wife)	92	92
§ 5. Miller-Reeve Link	111	111
§ 6. Reeve's Tale (of the Trumpington Miller and Cambridge Clerks)	113	113
§ 7. Reeve-Cook Link	125	125
§ 8. Cook's Tale (of the London Victualler's Apprentice) <i>unfinished</i> ²	127	127
Appendix to Group A. The Spurious Tale of <i>Gamelyn</i>		129
<hr/>		
B. § 1. Man-of-Law's Head-Link	129	155
§ 2. Man of Law's (Proem p. 131 and) Tale (of Constance and her Boy) (Pt. I, p. 131; Pt. II, p. 131; Pt. III, p. 131)	132	158
§ 3. Man-of-Law's End-Link ³	167	193
[For B § 4—14, see p. 143, and for B § 15, see Appendix 1, p. 694. For Group C, see p. 143.]		

¹ It has not the Friar lines 252 b, c of the Hengwrt MS.

² Eight genuine lines, 4415—4422, are left out here.

³ Five genuine lines at the end are left out, 1186—1190.

Group		Six-Text pages	Harl. pages
D. § 1.	Wife of Bath's Preamble (of her 5 Husbands, &c. <i>less</i> 30 lines, p. 448-449, 449)	334	194
§ 2.	Wife of Bath's Tale (of what Women most desire: Rule over Husbands)	359	219
§ 3.	Wife-Friar Link ¹	371	231
§ 4.	Friar's Tale ² (of the Summoner being carried off to Hell)	372	232
§ 5.	Friar-Summoner Link	383	243
§ 6.	Summoner's Tale (of the Friar being trickt by a Sick man and a Lord's Squire)	385	245
<hr/>			
E. § 1.	Clerk's Head-Link	403	262
§ 2.	Clerk's Tale (of Grisilde) (Pt. II, p. 422; Pt. III, p. 442; Pt. IV, p. 444; Pt. V, p. 444; Pt. VI, p. 444; Chaucer's Envoy, p. 444 ³)	405	264
§ 3.	Clerk-Merchant Link	442	301
§ 4.	Merchant's Tale (of January and May)	443	302
§ 5.	Merchant's End-Link	476	335
<hr/>			
F. § 1.	Squire's Head-Link	478	336
§ 2.	Squire's Tale (of the Magic Horse, &c., and the Falcon) <i>unflusht</i> ⁴ (Pt. II, p. 444)	479	337
(§ 3 has been torn out of the MS)			
§ 4.	Franklin's Tale (of Dorigen, Arveragus,		



CONTENTS OF THE HARLEIAN MS 7834.

xi

Group		Six-Text pages	Harl. pages
G.	§ 1. Second Nun's (Proom and) Tale (of St Cecile)	527	367
	§ 2. Second-Nun-Canon's-Yeoman Link ...	547	387
	§ 3. Canon's-Yeoman's Preamble (of Al- chemy)	552	392
	§ 4. Canon's-Yeoman's Tale (of the rascally Alchemist Canon)	560	400
<hr/>			
C.	§ 1. Doctor's Tale (of Virginia)	303	415
	§ 2. Doctor-Pardoner Link ¹	312	424
	§ 3. Pardoner's Preamble (of his Preaching and Tricks)	314	426
	§ 4. Pardoner's Tale (of the Three Rioters ²)	318	430
<hr/>			
B.	§ 4. ³ Shipman's Tale (of the Monk and the Merchant's Wife)	168	445
	§ 5. Shipman-Prioress Link	181	458
	§ 6. Prioress's Tale (of the little murderd Boy)	182	459
	§ 7. Prioress-Thopas Link	190	467
	§ 8. Chaucer's Tale of Sir Thopas (<i>unfinit</i>)	191	468
	§ 9. Thopas-Melibe Link	199	476
	§ 10. Chaucer's Tale of Melibe (prose: englisht from French)	201	478
	§ 11. Melibe-Monk Link	253	530
	§ 12. Monk's Tale ⁴ (of folk fallen from high estate)	256	533

¹ Four lines, 299-300 and 305-6, are left out in this.

² Dr Richard Morris was the first to track this to its source in one of the Buddhist Jataka Tales. He englisht it long ago for me, and mentiond the Eastern source in his article in *The Contemporary Review*, May 1881, p. 728-749.

³ For B § 1-3 see Man-of-Law's Head-Link, Tale and End-Link, p. 144, above.

⁴ The four 'modern instances'—1. Peter (the Cruel) of Spain, 2. Peter of Cyprus, 3. Barnabo Visconti of Milan, and 4. Ugolino, Count of Pisa—are rightly put after Zenobia, l. 3564, p. 144, and not at the end of the Tale as in the Ellesmere and other A MSS, p. 500-3 Elles. But one stanza is missing, B 3213-20, p. 144.

GROUP A. FRAGMENT I.

§ 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE.

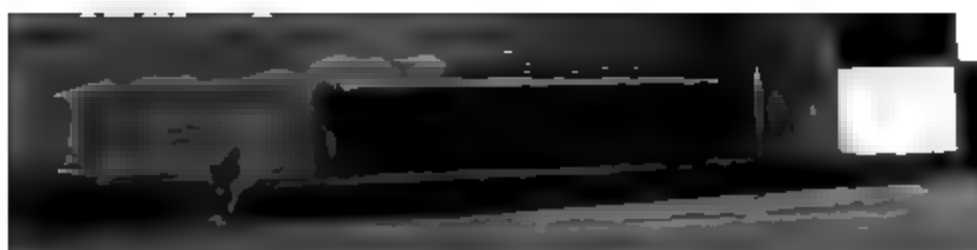
HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

WHan that aprille with his schowres swoote (leaf 1)
 The drought of Marche hap perced to þe roote
 And bathud euery veyne in swich licour
 Of which vertue engendred is þe flour 4
 whan zephyrus eek with his swete breeth
 Enspirud hath in euery holte and heeth
 The tendre croppes and þe zonge sonne
 hath in the Ram his halfe cours I-ronne 8
 And smale fowles maken melodie
 That slepen al þe night wiþ open yhe
 So prikeþ hem nature in here corages
 Thanne longen folk to gon on pilgrimages 12
 And palmers for to seeken straunge strondes
 To ferne halwes kouthe in sondry londes
 And specially from euery schires ende
 Of Engelond to Canturbury þey wende 16
 The holy blisful martir for to seeke
 That hem hap holpen whan þat þey were seeke
Byfel þat in þat sesoun on a day
 In Southwerk at þe Tabbard as I lay 20
 Redy to wenden on my pilgrimage
 To Canturbury with ful deuout corage
 At night was come in to þat hostelrie
 Wel nyne and twenty in a companye 24
 Of sondry folk by auenture I-falle
 In felaschipe and pilgrymys were þei alle
 That toward Canturbury wolden ryde

VOLUME 1

2 GROUP A § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE Harleian 7334.

The Chambres and þe stables weren wyde 28
 And wel we weren esud atte beste
 And schortly whan þe sonne was to reste
 So hadde I spoken with hem euerychon
 That I was of here felawschipe anon 32
 And made forward erly to a Ryse
 To take oure weye ther as I ȝow deuyse
 But natheles whiles I haue tyme and space
 Or þat I ferpere in þis tale pace 36
 Me þinkeþ it acordant to resoun
 To telle ȝow alle þe condicioun
 Of eche of hem so as it semed me [leaf 1, back]
 And which þey weren and of what degre 40
 And eek in what array þat þey were inne
 And at a knight than wol I first bygynne
A Knight þer was and þat a worpy man
 That from þe tyme þat he ferst bigan 44
 To ryden out he louede Chyualrye
 Trouthe and honour fredom and curtesie
 Ful worthi was he in his lordes werre
 And þerto hadde he riden noman ferre 48
 As wel in Cristendom as hethenesse
 And euere honoured for his worpinesse
 At Alisandre he was whan it was wonne
 Ful ofte tyme he hadde þe bord bygonne / 52



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 3

This ilke worþi knight hadde ben also 64

Somtyme with þe lord of Palatye

Ageyn anoper hethene in Turkye

And eueremore he hadde a souereyn prys

And þough he was worþy he was wys 68

And of his port as meke as a mayde

he neuer ȝit no vilonye ne sayde

In al his lyf vnto no maner wight

he was a verray perfyȝt gentil knight 72

But for to telle ȝou of his array

his hors was good but he ne was nouȝt gay

Of fustyan he wered a Gopoun

Al by smoterud with his haburgeoun 76

For he was late comen from his viage [leaf 8]

And wente for to doon his pilgrimage

With him þer was his sone a ȝong' squyer

A louter and a lusty bachelor 80

With lokkes crulle as þey were layde in presse

Of twenty ȝeer he was of age I gesse

Of his stature he was of euene lengthe

And wondrously delyuer and gret of strengthe 84

And he hadde ben som tyme in Chiuachie

In Flaundres in Artoys and in Picardie

And born him wel as in so litel space

In hope to stonden in his lady grace / 88

Embrowdid was he as it were a mede /

Al ful of fresshe floures white and reede

Syngynge he was or flowtynge al þe day

he was as fressh as is the moneth of may 92

Schort was his goune with sleues long and wyde

wel cowde he sitte on hors and wel cowde he ryde

he cowde songes wel make and endite

Iustne and eek daunce and wel purtray and write 96

So hote he louede þat by nightertale

he sleep nomore þan dop a nightyngale

Curteys he was lowly and seruyable

4 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334.

And carf byforn his fadar at þe table / 100

A ȝeman had he / and seruanter nomoo

At þat tyme for him lust ryde soo

And he was clad in coote and hood of grene

A shef of pocok arwes bright and kene 104

vnder his belte he bar ful priftily

wel cowde he dresse his takel ȝomanly

His arwes drowpuð nouȝt wip fetheres lowe

And in his hond he bar a mighty bowe 108

A not heed hadde he wip a broun visage

Of woode craft cowde he wel al þe vsage

vpon his arme he bar a gay bracer

And by his side a swerd and a bokeler 112

And on þat oþer side a gay daggere

harneyed wel and scharp as poynt of spere

A cristofre on his breast of siluer schene [leaf 2, back]

An horn he bar þe hawdrik was of grene 116

A forter was he sothely as I gesse

Ther was also a Nonne a prioressse

That of hire amylyng was ful symple and coy

hire grettest ooth nas but by seynt loy 120

And sche was clept / madame Englentyne

Ful wel sche sang þe seruise deuyn

Entuned in hire nose ful semyly

And frensch sche spak ful faire and fetysly 124

After þe wele of Stratford atte Bowe



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 5

Ful semely aftur hir mete sche raught 136
And sikurly sche was of gret disport
And ful plesant/ and amyable of port
And peyned hire to counterfete cheere
Of court and ben estatlich of manere 140
And to ben holden digne of Reuerence
But for to speken of hire conscience
Sche was so charitable and so pitous
Sche wolde wepe if þat sche sawe a Mous 144
Caught in a trappe if it were deed or bledde
Of smale boundes hadde sche þat sche fedde
With rostud fleissch and mylk and wastel breed
But sore wepte sche if oon of hem were deed 148
Or if men smot it wip a 3erde smerte
And al was conscience and tandre herte
Ful semely hire wymple I-pynched was
Hire nose streight hire eyen grey as glas 152
Hire mouth ful smal and þerto softe and reed (leaf 8)
But sikurly sche hadde a fair forheed
It was almost a spanne brood I trowe
For hardily sche was not vndurgrowe 156
Ful fetys was hire cloke as I was waar
Of smal coral aboute hire arme sche baar
A paire of bedes gaudid al with grene
And þer on heng a broch of gold ful schene 160
On which was first I-writen a crowned A.
And after þat Amor vincit omnia.
Anothur Nonne with hire hadde sche
That was hire Chapelleyn and prestes þre 164
A Monk þer was a fair for the maistrie
An out Rydere þat loved venerye
A manly man to ben an abbot able
Ful many a deynte hors hadde he in stable 168
And whan he rood men might his bridel heere
Gyngle in a whistlyng wynd so cleere
And eek as lowde as dop þe chapel belle

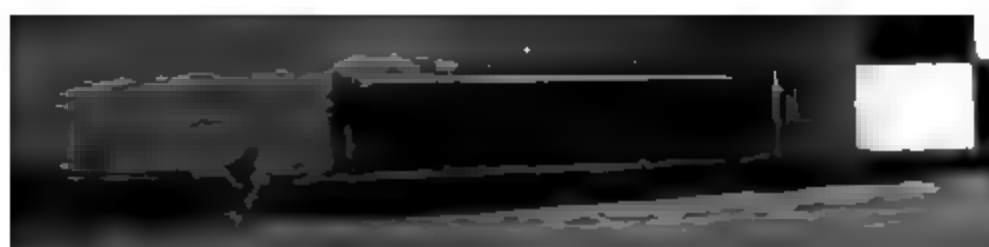
Ther as þe lord was keper of þe selle 172
 The Reule of seynt' maure or of seint' Beneyt'
 By cause þat it was old and somdel streyt'
 This ilke monk' leet' forby hem pace
 And helde aftur þe newe world þe space 176
 he þat nat' of þat' text' a pulled hen
 That seiþ þat' hunters been noon holy men
 Ne þat a monk' whan he is Cloysterles
 Is likned to a fische þat' is watirles 180
 This is to seyn a monk' out' of his cloystre
 But þilke text' hild he not' worþ an oystre /
 And I seide his opinioun was good
 what' schulde he studie and make himseluen wood 184
 Vppon a book' in Cloystre alway to powre
 Or swynke with his handes and laboure
 As Austyn byt' // how schal þe world be serued
 lat' austyn haue his swynk' to him reserued 188
 Therfore he was a pricasour aright'
 Greyhoundes he hadde as swifte as fowel in flight
 Of prikyng' and of huntynge for þe hare [leaf 3, back]
 was al his lust for no cost' wolde he spare 192
 I saugh his sleues purfiled atte hond
 wiþ grys and that' þe fynest' of a lond
 And for to festne his hood vndur his chyn
 he hadde of gold y-wrought' a curious pyn 196
 A loue knotte in þe gretter ende þer was
 His heed was halled and schen as any glas



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 7

A Frere þer was a wantoun and a merye 208
A lymytour a ful solempne man
In alle the ordres foure is noon þat can
So moche of daliaunce and fair langage
He hadde I-made many a fair mariage 212
Of ȝonge wymmen at his owne cost
vnto his ordre he was a noble post
Ful wel biloued and famulier was he
with Frankeleyns ouer al in his cuntre 216
And sek with worþi women of þe toun
For he hadde power of confessioun
As seyde himself more þan a curat
For of his ordre he was licenciāt/ 220
Ful sweetly herde he confessioun
And plesaunt was his absolucioun
He was an esy man to ȝeue penance
Ther as he wiste han a good pitance 224
For vnto a poure ordre for to ȝeue
Is signe þat a man is wel I-schreue
For if he ȝaf he dorste make anaunt
He wiste þat a man was repentaunt 228
For many a man so hard is of his herte (leaf 4)
He may not wepe þough him sore smerte
Therefore in stede of wepyng and prayeres
Men mooten ȝiuen siluer to þe pore freres 232
His typet was ay farsud ful of knyfes
And pynnes for to ȝiue faire wyfes
And certayn he hadde a mery noote
wel couthe he synge and pleye on a Rote 236
Of ȝeddynges he bar vturly þe prys
his nekke whit was as þe flour delys
Ther to he strong was as a Champioun
He knew wel þe tauernes in euery toun 240
And euery Ostiller or gay tapstere
Bet þan a laȝer or a beggere
For vnto such a worþi man as he

Acorded not as by his faculte 244
 To haue with sike lazars aqueyntaunce
 It is not honest it may not avaunce
 For to delen with such poraile
 But al with riche and sellers of vitaille 248
 And ouer al þer eny profyt schulde arise
 Curteys he was, and lowe of seruyse
 Ther was no man no wher so vertuous
 He was þe beste begger in al his hous 252
 [.
 no gap in the MS.]
 For þough a widewe hadde but oo schoo
 So plesaunt was his In principio
 3et wolde he haue a ferthing or he wente
 his purchase was bettur þan his rente 256
 And rage he coupe and pleye as a whelpe
 In loue-dayes ther couthe he mochil helpe
 For þer was he not like a cloysterer
 With a thred-bare cope as a pore scoler 260
 But he was like a maister or a pope
 Of double worstede was his semy cope /
 That rounded was as a belle out of presse
 Somwhat he lipede for wantounesse , 264
 To make his Engliisch swete vpon his tunge
 And in his harpyng when þat he hadde sunge
 His eyzen twynkeled in his heed aright [leaf 4, back]



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 9

wel couþe he in exchange scheeldes selle /
This worþi man ful wel his witte bisette
Ther wiste no man that he was in dette 280

So estately was he of gouernaunce
with his bargayns and with his cheyssaunce
For sothe he was a worþi man with alle
Bot soth to say I not what men him calle / 284

A Clerk þer was of Oxenford also
That vnto logik hadde longe I-go
Al so lene was his hors as is a rake
And he was not right fat I vndertake 288

But lokede holwe and þerto soburly
Ful thredbare was his ouerest courtepy
For he hadde nouȝt geten hym ȝit a benefice
Ne was not worþy to hauen an office 292

For him was leuer haue at his beddes heed
Twenty bookes cloped in blak and reed
Of Aristotil and of his philosophie
Then Robus Riche or fithul or Sawtrie 296

But al þough he were a philosopre
Ȝet hadde he but litul gold in cofre
But al þat he might gete and his frendes sende
On bookes and his lernyng he it spende 300

And busily gan for þe soules pray
Of hem þat ȝaf him wherwith to scolay
Of studie tooke he most cure and heede
Not oo word spak he more þan was neede 304

Al þat he spak it was of heye prudence [100/5]
And schort and quyke and ful of gret sentence
Sownynge in moral manere was his speche /
And gladly wolde he lerne and gladly teche 308

A Sergeant of lawe war and wys
That often hadde ben atte parrys
Ther was also ful riche of excellence
Discret he was and of gret Reuerence 312
He semed such his wordes were so wise

Iustice he was fuloften in assise
 By patent and by pleyn comission
 For his science and for his beih renown 316
 Of fees and Robes had he many oon
 So gret a purchasour was þer no wher noon
 Al was fee symple to him in effects
 his purchasyng might nought ben to hi m suspecte 320
 No wher so besy a man as he þer nas /
 And ȝit he semed besier þan he was
 In termes hadde caas and domes alle
 That fro þe tyme þat kyng were falle 324
 Ther to he couþe endite and make a þing
 Ther couþe no man pynche at his writyng
 And euery statute couthe he pleyn by roote
 He rood but boomy in a medled coote 328
 Gird with a seynt of silk wip barres smale
 Of his array telle I no lenger tale
A Frankeleyn þer was in his companye /
 whit was his berde as þe dayeys 332
 Of his complexioun he was sangwyn
 wel loued he in þe morn a sop of wyn
 To lyue in delite was al his wone
 For he was Epicurius owne sone 336
 That heeld opynyoun þat pleyn delyt
 was verrailly felicite perlyt
 An houshaldere and þat a gret was he

GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 11

And many a brem and many a luce in stewe
 Woo was his Cook^t but if^t his sauce were
 Poynant^t and scharp and redy al his gere 352
 His table dormant^t in his halle alway^t

Stood redy couered al þe longe day
 At^t sessions þer was he lord and sire
 Ful ofte tyme he was knight of^t þe schire 356
 An Anlas and a gipser al of^t silk^t

heng^t at his gerdul whit^t as morne mylk^t
 A schirreue hadde he ben and a counter
 was nowher such a worthi vausser 360

AN haburdassher and a Carpenter
 A webbe a deyer and a Tapicer^t
 weren with vas eeke clothed in oo lyuere
 Of a solempne and gret^t fraternite 364

Ful freisshe and newe his gere piked was
 Here knyfes were I-chapud nat^t with bras
 But^t al with siluer wrought^t ful clene and wel
 here gurdles and here pouches euery del 368

wel semed eche of^t hem a fair burgeys
 To sitten in a zeldehalle on þe deys
 Euery man for þe wisdom^t þat he can
 was schaply for to ben an aldurman^t 372

For Catal hadde þey Inough and rente /
 And eek^t here wyfes wolde it^t wel assente /
 And elles certeyn hadde þei ben to blame
 It is right^t fair for to be clept^t Ma Dame 376

And for to go to vigilies al byfore
 And han a mantel rialy I-bore

ACook^t þei hadde with hem for þe nones
 To boyle chiknes and þe mary bones 380
 And poudre marchaunt / tart^t and galyngale [leaf 6]
 wel cowde he knowe a drauȝt^t of londoun ale

He cowde roste sethe boille and frie
 Make mortreux and wel bake a pye 384
 But^t gret^t harm was it as it^t semede mo

That on his schyne a mormal hadde he
 For blankmanger he made with þe beste

A Schipman was þer wonyng fer by weste 388
 For ought I woot he was of Dertemouthe

He rood vpon a rouncey as he couþe
 In a gowne of faldyng to þe kne
 A dagger hangyng on a laas hadde he 392

Aboute his nekke vnder his arm a doun
 The hoots somer had maad his hew al broun
 And certainly he was a good felawe

Ful many a draught of wyn had he drawe 396
 From Burdeauxward, whil þat þe chapman sleep
 Of nyce conscience took he no keep

If þat he foughte and hadde þe heizer hand
 By water he sente hem hoom to euery land 400
 But of his craft to rikne wel þe tydes

his stremes and his dangers him bisides
 His herbergh and his mone his lodemenage
 Ther was non such from hulle to Cartage 404

Hardy he was and wys to vndertake
 with many a tempest hath his berd ben schake
 He knew wel alle þe hauenes as þei were

From Scotlond to the cape of fynestere 408
 And euery Cryk in Bretayne and in Spayne
 His Barge y-clepud was the Magdelayne

Ther was also a Doctour of phisik



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 13

he was a verrey parfight' practisour
The cause I-knowe and of his harm þe roote
Anon he ȝaf þe syke man his boote 424
Ful redy hadde he his apotecaries
To sende him dragges and his letuaries
For eche of hem made opur to wynne
Here frendschipe nas not newe to begynne 428
wel knew he þe olde Esculapius
And deiscorides, and eeke Rulus
Old ypocras, haly and Galien
Serapyon, Razis and Auycen 432
Auerrois damascen and Constantyn
Bernad and Gatisdeñ and Gilbertyn
Of his diete mesurable was he
For it was of no superfluite 436
But of gret' norisching' and digestible
His studie was but litel on þe bible
In sangwyn and in pers he clad was al
Lyned with taffata and with Sendal 440
And ȝit he was but esy in dispence
He kepte þat he wan in pestilence
For gold in phisik' is a cordial
Ther fore he louede gold in special 444
A Good wif' was þer of byside bathe
But sche was somdel deaf and þat' was skape
Of cloth makyng' sche hadde such an haunt
Sche passed hem of ypris and of Gaunt 448
In al þe parisshe wyf' ne was ther noon
That' to þe offryng' byforn hire schulde goon
And if þer dide certeyn so wroth was sche
That' sche was þanne out' of alle charite 452
hire keuercheys weren ful fyne of grounde
I durste swere þey weyȝede ten pounde
That' on a sonday were vpon hire heed
hire hosen were of fyn scarlett reed 456
Ful streyte y-teyed and schoos ful moyste and newe [1045 7]

Bold was hir face and fair and reed of heewe
 Sche was a worpy womman al hire lyfe
 Housbondes atte chirche dore hadde sche fyfe 460
 withouten oþur companye in ȝouthē
 But therof needeth nouȝt to speke as nouthe
 And þries hadde sche ben at Ierusalem
 Sche hadde passud many a straunge streem 464
 At Rome sche hadde ben and at Boloynē
 In Galice at seynt Iame and at Coloyne
 Sche cowde moche of wandryng by þe weye
 Gattothud was sche soþly for to seye 468
 vppon an amblere esely sche sat
 wymplid ful wel and on hire heed an hat
 As brood as is a bocler or a Targe
 A foot mantel aboute hire hupes large 472
 And on hire feet a paire of spores scharpe
 In felawschipe wel cowde lawghe and carpe
 Of Remedyes of loue sche knew par chaunce
 For of þat art sche knew þe olde daunce 476
A Good man was ther of Religioun
 And was a pore person of a toun
 But riche he was of holy þought and werk
 He was also a lerned man a Clerk 480
 That criates gospel gladly wolde preche
 His parischens deuoutly wold he teche
 Benigne he was and wondur diligent

GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 15

The ferrest in his parissche moche and lite
 Vppon his feet and in his hond a staf [leaf 7, back]
 This noble ensample vnto his scheep he 3af 496
 That ferst he wroughte and after þat he taughte
 Out of þe gospel he þo wordes caughte /
 And þis figure he addid 3it þerto
 That if gold ruste what schulde yren doo? 500
 For if a prest be foul on whom we truste
 No wondur is a lewid man to ruste ;
 And schame it is if a prest take kepe
 A schiten schepperd and a clene schepe 504
 wel oughte a prest ensample for to 3iue
 By his clenness how þat his scheep schulde lyue
 he sette not his benefice to huyre
 And lefte his scheep encombred in þe myre 508
 And ran to londown vnto seynte poules
 To seeken him a chaunterie for soules
 Or with a brethuredde be wip-holde
 But dwelte at hoom and kepte wel his folde / 512
 So þat þe wolf ne made it not myscarye
 He was a schepparde and no mercenarie
 And þough he holy were and vertuous
 he was to senful man nought dispitous 516
 Ne of his speche daungerous ne digne
 But in his teching discret and benigne
 To drawe folk to heuen by clenness
 By good ensample was his busynesse 520
 But it were eny persone obstinat
 what so he were of high or lowe estat
 him wolde he snybbe scharply for þe nones
 A better preest I trowe ther nowher non is 524
 he waytud after no pompe ne reuerence
 Ne maked him a spiced conscience /
 But cristes lore and his apostles twelue
 he taught. and ferst he folwed it himselue 528
With hem þer was a plough man his broþur

That hadde I-lad of dong' ful many a fopur
 A trewe swynker and a good was hee
 Lyuyng in pees and parfyt charitee 532
 God loued he best' al his trewe herte [449' 5]
 At alle tymes pough him gamed or smerte
 And panne his neighebour right' as himselue
 He wolde threisshe and perto dyke and delue 536
 For cristes sake with euery pore wight'
 wipouten huyre if it laye in his might'
 His tythes payede he ful faire and wel
 Bathe of his owne swynk' and his catel 540
 In a tabbard Rood vpon a mere
Ther was also a Reeue and a meller
 A sompnour and a pardoner also
 A maunciple and my self' per was no mo 544 2
THe meller was a stout' carl for þe nones
 Full big' he was of braun and eek' of boones /
 That' preuede wel for ouer al þer he cam
 At wrastlyng he wolde bere away þe Ram 548
 He was schort' schuldred broode a pikke knarre
 Ther was no dore þat' he nolde heue of' harre
 Or breke it with a rennyng' with his heed
 his berd as ony sowe or fox was reed 552
 And perto brood as pough it were a spade
 vpon þe cop right' of his nose he hade
 A werte and þer on stood a tuft' of heres



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 17

And þerwip al he brought vs out of towne

A Gentil maunciple was ther of a temple
Of which achatours mighten take exemple 568

For to be wys in beyyng of vitaille

For wheþur þat he payde or took by taille

Algate he wayted so in his acate (leaf 8, back)

That he was ay biforn and in good state 572

Now is not þat of god a ful fair grace

That such a lewed mannes wit schal pace

The wisdom of an heep of lernede men

Of maystres hadde moo þan pries ten 576

That were of lawe expert and curious

Of which þer were a doseyn in an hous

worthi to be stiwardz of Rente and lond

Of any lord þat is in Engelond 580

To make him lyue by his propre good

In honour detteles but if he were wood

Of lyue as scarcely as he can desire

And able for to helpen al a schire 584

In any caas þat mighte falle or happe

And ȝit this maunciple sette here aller cappe

The Reeue was a sklendre colerik man

his berd was schane as neigh as euer he can 588

his heer was by his Eres neigh I-schiorn

his top was dockud lyk a preest biforn

Ful longe wern his leggis and ful lene

Al like a staff ther was no calf y-sene 592

wel cowde he kepe a gerner and a bynne

Ther was non auditour cowde on him wynne

wel wiste he by the drought and by þe Reyn

The ȝeeldyng of his seed and of his greyn 596

his lordes scheep his neet his dayerie

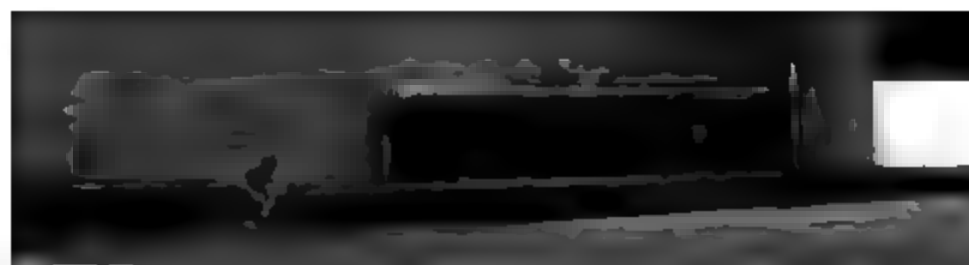
his swyn his hors his stoor and his pultrie

was holly in this Reeues gouernynge

And by his couenaunt ȝaf þe Rekenynge 600

Syn þat his lord was .xx.ⁱⁱ ȝeer of age

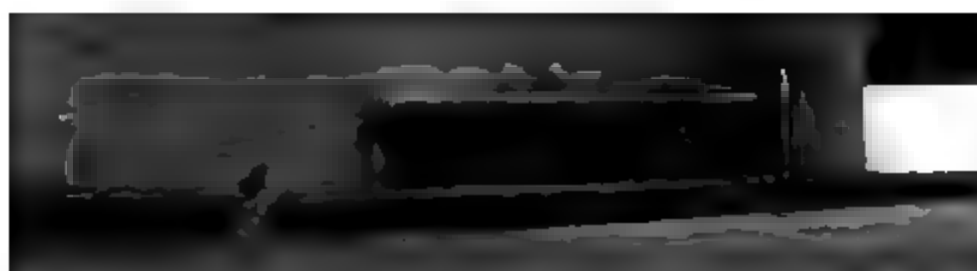
Ther couthe noman bringe him in arerage
 Ther nas baillif ne herde ne oþer hyne
 That þey ne knewe his sleight and his couyne 604
 They were adrad of him as of þe deth
 his wonyng was ful fair vpon an heth
 wiþ grene trees I-schadewed was his place
 he cowde bettre þan his lord purchase 608
 Ful riche he was I-stored prinely [leaf 9]
 His lord wel couthe he plesse subtilly
 To ȝeue him and lene him of his owne good
 And haue a þank a cote and eek an hood 612
 In ȝouþe he lerned hadde a good mester
 he was a wel good wright a carpenter
 This Reeue sat vpon a wel good stot
 That was a pomely gray and highte Scot 616
 A long surcote of blew vppon he hadde
 And by his side he bar a Rusty bladde
 Of Northfolk was þis Reeue of which I telle
 Byside a toun men callen Baldeswelle 620
 Tukkuð he was as is a frere aboute
 And euer he rood the bynderest of þe route
 A Sompnour was þer with vs in þat place
 That hadde a fyr-reed Cherubyns face 624
 For sawceslem he was with eyȝen narwe
 As hoot he was and leccherous as a sparwe
 Wiþ skalled browes blak and piled berd



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 19

Than wolde he speke no word but latyn
A fewe termes hadde he tuo or þre
That he hadde lerned out of som decree 640
No wondur is he herde it al þe day
And eek þe knowe wel how þat a lay
Can clepe watte as wel as can þe pope
But who-so wolde in opur þing him grope 644
Thanne hadde he spent al his philosophie
Ay questio quid Iuris wolde he crye
He was a gentil harlot and a kynde [leaf 9, back]
A better felaw schulde men nowher fynde 648
He wolde suffre for a quart of wyn
A good felawe han his concubyn
A .xij. moneth and excuse him atte fulle
And pryuely a Fynch eek cowde he pulle 652
And if he fond owher a good felawe
he wolde teche him for to haue non awe
In such a caas of þe archedeknes curs
But if a mannes soule were in his purs 656
For in his purs he scholde punysshed be
Purs is the Ercedeknes helie quod he
But wel I woot he lyeth right in dede
Of cursyng oweth ech gulty man to drede 660
For curs wol slee. right as assoillyng saueth
And also ware him of a Significaut
In daunger he hadde at his owne assise
The ȝonge gurlles of the Diocise 664
And knew here counseil and was al here red
A garland had he set vpon his heed
As gret as it were for an ale stake
A bokeler had he maad him of a cake 668
With him þer rood a gentil Pardoner
Of Rounciual his frend and his comper
That strayt was comen from þe court of Rome
Ful lowde he sang com hider loue tome 672
The sompnour bar to him a stif burdoun

was neuere trompe of half so gret a soun
 This pardoner hadde heer as ȝelwe as wex
 But smothe it hengt as doth a strike of Flex 676
 By vucces hynges his lokkes þat he hadde
 And þerwith he his schuldres ouerspradde
 Ful thenne it lay by culpons on and oon
 And hood for Iolites ne wered he noon 680
 For it was trussud vp in his walet
 Him þought he rood al of þe newe get
 Discheuele sauf his cappe he rood al bare
 Suche glaryng eyzen hadde he as an hare 684
 A vernicle hadde he sowed on his cappe (leaf 10)
 His walet lay byforn him in his lappe
 Bret ful of pardoun come from Rome al hoot
 A voys he hadde as smal as eny goot 688
 No berd ne hadde he ne neuer scholde haue
 As smothe it was as it ware late I-schaue /
 I trowe he were a geldyng or a mare
 But of his craft fro Berwyk vnto ware 692
 Ne was þer such another pardoner
 For in his male he hadde a pilwebeer
 which þat he saide was oure lady veyl
 he saide he hadde a gobet of þe seyl 696
 That seynt Petur hadde whan he wente
 Vppon þe see til ihū crist him hente
 he hadde a cron of latoun ful of stones



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 21

But altherbest he sang an offertorie
For wel¹ he whan þat song was songe [¹ later wyrt at side]
he moste preche and wel affyle his tunge 712
To wynne siluer as he right wel cowde
Therefore he sang ful meriely and lowde
Now haue I told 3ou schortly in a clause
Thestat þarray þe nombre and eek þe cause 716
why þat assembled was þis companye
In Southwerk at þis gentil Ostelrie
That highte þe Tabbard faste by þe belle
But now is tyme to 3ow for to telle 720
how þat we bare vs in þat ilke night
whan we were in that Ostelrie alight
And aftur wol I telle of oure viage [ten/10, back]
And al þe remenaunt of oure pilgrimage 724
But ferst I pray 3ou of 3our curtesie
That 3e ne rette it nat my vilanye
Though þat I spake al pleyne in þis matere
And telle 3ou here wordes and here cheere 728
Ne though I speke here wordes propurly
For þis 3e knowen also wel as I
who-so schal telle a tale aftur a man
He moste reherce as neigh as euer he can 732
Euery word if it be in his charge
Al speke he neuer so Rudely ne large
Or elles he moot telle his tale vntrewe
Or feyne þing or fynde his wordes newe 736
He may not spare þough he were his broþur
He moste as wel sey oo word as anopur
Crist spak himself ful broode in holy writ
And wel 3e woot no vilanye is it 740
Eke Plato seith who-so þat can him rede
The wordes mot be cosyn to þe dede
Also I pray 3ou to for3ene it me
Al haue I folk nat set in here degre 744
Here in þis tale as þat þei schulde stonde

My wit is thynne. þe may wel vnderstonde

Greet cheere made oure ost vs euerichon

And to þe souper sette he vs anon 748

He serued vs with vitaille atte beste

Strong was þe wyn and wel to drynke vs leste

A semely man oure Ooste was wiþ alle

For to han been a Marchal in an halle 752

A large man was he with eyzen stepe

A fairere burgeys is þer noon in chepe

Bold of his speche and wys and wel I-taught

And of manhede lakkede he right naught 756

Eke þerto he was right a mery man

And after soper playen he bygan

And spak of myrthe. among our þinges

whan þat we hadde maad our rekenynges 760

And sayde þus. Lo lordynges trewely (ms. 11)

þe ben to me right welcome hertily

For by my trouthe if þat I schal not lye

I ne saugh þis ȝeer so mery a companye 764

At oones in this herbergh as is now

Fayn wold I do ȝow merthe wiste I how

And of a merthe I am right now bythought

To doon ȝou eece and it schal coste nought 768

þe goon to Caunturbury god ȝou speede

The blisful martir quyte ȝou ȝoure meede

And wel I woot/ as ȝe gon by þe weye

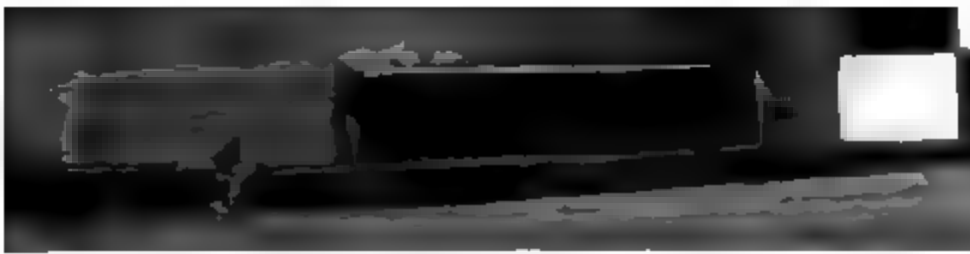
ȝe schal see how he is served and how he is kept 772



GROUP A § I. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 23

But 3e be merye smytē of myn heed
hold vp 3oure hond with-oute more speche
Oure counseil was not longe for to seche 784
vs þoughte it nas nat' worþ to make it wys
And graunted him wiþoute more avys
And bad him seie his verdite as him leste
LOrdynge quop he now herkenē for þe beste 788
But taketh not I pray 3ou in disdayn
This is þe poynt to speken schort' and playn
That ech of 3ow to schorte with 3oure weie /
In þis viage schal telle tales tweye 792
To Caunturburiward I mene it so
And homward he schal tellen oþur tuo
Of auentures þat þer han bifalle
And which of 3ow þat bereþ him best of alle 796
That is to seye þat telleþ in þis caas
Tales of best' sentence and of solas
Schal han a soper at 3our alþer cost (leaf 11, back)
Here in þis place sittyng by þis post 800
whan þat we comen ageyn from Canturbury
And for to make 3ou þe more mery
I wol my seluen gladly with 3ou ryde
Right at myn owen cost and be 3oure gyde 804
And who-so wole my Iuggement withseie
Schal paye for al we spenden by þe weye
And if 3e vouche sauf þat it be so
Telle me anon wiþouten wordes moo 808
And I wole ereþy schappe me þerfore
This þing was graunted and oure othus swore
with ful glad herte and prayden him also
That he would vouche sauf for to doon so 812
And þat he wolde ben oure gouernour
And of our tales Iugge and reportour
And sette a souper at a certayn prys
And we wolde rewled be at his deuys 816
In heygh and lowe. and þus by oon assent

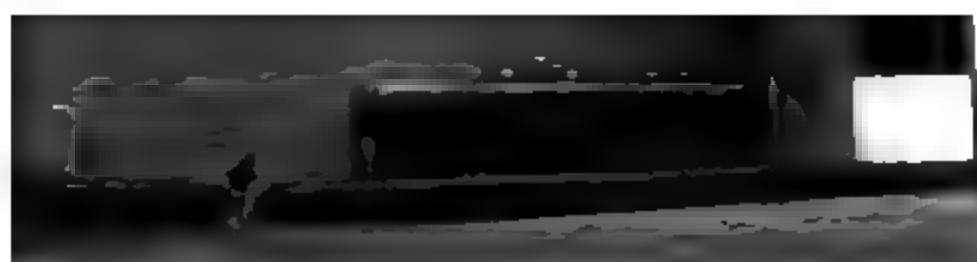
We been acorded to his Iuggement
 And þer-vpon þe wyn was fet anon
 we dronken and to reste wente echoon. 820
 wipouten eny lengere taryinge
 A morwe whan þat þe day bigan to sprynge
 vp from oure Ost and was oure althur cok
 And gadered us to-gidur alle in a flok 824
 And forth we riden a litel more þan þas
 vnto þe waterynge of seint Thomas
 And þere oure Ost bigan his hors areste
 And seyde lordus herkenþ if þow leste 828
 þe woot þoure forward and I it þou recorde
 If ouresong and morwesong acorde
 Let us now who schal telle ferst a tale
 As euere I moote drinke wyn or ale 832
 who-so he rebel to my Iuggement
 Schal paye for al þat by the weye is spent
 Now draweth Cut/ er þat we forther twynne
 which þat hath þe schortest schal bygynne 836
 Siro knight quop he maister and my lord (100/18)
 Now draweth Cut. for þat is myn acord
 Cometh ner quod he my lady prioresse
 And þe sir Clerk lat be þour schamfastnesse 840
 Ne studieth nat ley hand to euery man
 Anon to drawen euery wight bigan
 And schortly for to tellen as it was
 were it by quantite or sort of cas 844



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 25

what welcome be þou cut. a goddus name
Now lat vs ryde and herkneþ what I seye
And with þat word we riden forþ oure weye 856
And he bigan with right a merie chere!
His tale. and seide right in þis manere.
[break of one line in the MS.]

Whilom as olde stories tellen vs [on leaf 12]
 Ther was a Duk' þat highte Theseus 860
 Of Athenes he was lord and gouernour
 And in his tyme swich a conquerour
 That' gretter was ther non vnder þe sonne
 Ful many a Riche Contre hadde he wonne 864
 That' with his wisdom and his chivalrie
 He conquered al the regne of Femynye
 That' whilom was I-cleped Cithen
 And weddede the queen Ipolita 868
 And brought' hire hoom with him in his Contre
 with moche glorie and gret' solempnite
 And eek' hire ȝonge suster Emelye
 And þus with victorie and with melodye 872
 Lete I þis noble duk' to Athenes ryde /
 And al his Ost' in armes him biside [leaf 12, back]
 At' certes if it nere to long' to heere
 I wolde han told ȝow fully þe manere 876
 How wonnen was the regne of Femenye
 By Theseus and by his Chivalrye
 And of þe grete bataille for þe nones



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 27

lat' euery felawe telle his tale aboute
And lat' see now who schal þe soper wyne 891
And ther I lafte I wolde agayn begynne
[break of one line
in the MS]
This Duk' of whom I make mencionn
whan he was comen almost vnto þe toun
In al his wele and in his moeste pryde
he was war as he cast' his ey3e aside 896
wher þat' ther kneled in þe hye weye
A companye of ladies tweye and tweye
Ech after other clad in clopes blake
But' such a cry and such a woo þey make 900
That in þis world nys creature lyuyng
Ther herde such anoper weymentyng
And of þat' cry ne wolde þey neuer stenten
Til þey þe Raynes of his bridel henten 904
what' folk' be 3e þat' at' myn hom comyng
Partourben so my feste with cryenge
Quod Theseus, haue 3e so gret' enuye
Of myn honour þat' þus compleyne and crie 908
Or who hath 3ow mysboden or offendid
And telleþ me if it' may ben amendid.
And why þat 3e ben clad þus al in blak' [leaf 15]
The oldest' lady of hem alle spak' 912
whan sche had swowned with a dedly chere
That it was routhe for to seen or heere
And seyde lord to whom fortune haþ 3euene
victorie and as a conquerour to luyen 916
Nought' greueth vs 3oure glorie and honour
But we beseken mercy and socour
Haue mercy on oure woo and oure distresse
Som drope of pitee thurgh 3oure gentillesse 920
Vppon vs wrecchede wommen lat' þou falle
For certus lord. ther nys noon of vs alle
That' sche nath ben a duchesse or a queene
Now be we Caytifs as it is wel seene 924
Thanked be fortune. and hire false wheel

That noon estat assureth to ben weel
 And certus lord to abiden youre presence
¹Ther in þe temple of þe goddesse Clemence 928
 we han ben waytynge al þis fourtenight [¹ a later 'here' in margin]
 Now helpe vs lord syn it is in þy might
 I wrecche which þat wepe and waylle þus
 was whilom wyf to kyng Capaneus 932
 That starf at Thebes, cursed be þat day
 And alle we þat ben in þis array
 And maken alle þis larnentacioun
 we lesten alle oure housbondes at þe toun 936
 whil þat þe sege. þer aboute lay
 And yet þe olde Creon welaway
 That lord is now of thebes þe citee
 Fulfilde of Ire and of Iniquite 940
 He for despyt and for his Tyrannye
 To do þe deede bodyes vilonye
 Of alle oure lordes which þat ben I-slawe
 Hap alle þe bodies on an heep y-drawe 944
 And wol not suffren hem by noon assent
 Nother to ben y-buried nor I-brent
 But makeþ houndes ete hem in despite
 And with þat word withoute more respite 948
 They fillen gruf and criden pitously [leaf 18, back]
 haue on vs wrecched women som mercy
 And lat oure sorwe synken in thyn herte
 This gentil duke down from his courser sterte/ 952
 with herte pitous whan he herde hem speke
 him þoughte þat his herte wolde breke
 whan he seyh hem so pitous and so maat
 That whilom weren of so gret estat 956
 And in his armes he hem alle vp hente
 And hem confortep in ful good entente
 And swor his oth as he was trewe knight
 he wolde do so ferforþly his might 960
 vpon þe tyraunt Creon hem to wreke

That al þe poeple of greco scholde speke
 how Creon was of Theseus y-serued
 As he þat hap his deth right wel deserued 964
 And right anon wipoute eny abood
 his baner he displayeþ and forþ rood
 To Thebes-ward. and al his oost bysyde
 No ner athenes wolde he go ne ryde 968
 Ne take his eese fully half a day
 But onward on his way þat nyght he lay
 And sente anon ypolita þe queene
 And Emelye hir zonge suster schene 972
 vnto the toun of athenes to dwelle
 And forth he ryt þer is no more to telle
 The reede statue of mars with spere and targe
 So schyneþ in his white baner large 976
 That alle þe feeldes gliteren vp and down
 And by his baner was born his pynoun
 Of gold ful riche in which þer was I-beta
 The Minatour which þat he slough in Crete 980
 Thus ryt þis Duk þus ryt þis Conquerour
 And in his oost of Cheualrie þe flour
 Til þat he cam to Thebes and alighte
 Faire in a feeld wher as he þoughte to fighte / 984
 But shortly for to speken of þis þing
 with Creon which þat was of Thebes kyng
 He faught and slough him manly as a knight / (leaf 14)
 In playn bataille and putte his folk to flight / 988
 And by assaut he wan þe Cite astur
 And rente down boþe wal and sparre and raftur
 And to þe ladies he restored agayn
 The bones of here housbondes þat were slayn 992
 To do exequies as was þo þe gyse
 But it were al to long for to deuyse
 The grete clamour and þe waymentynge
 which þat þe ladies made at þe breannyng 996
 bodyes and þe grete honour

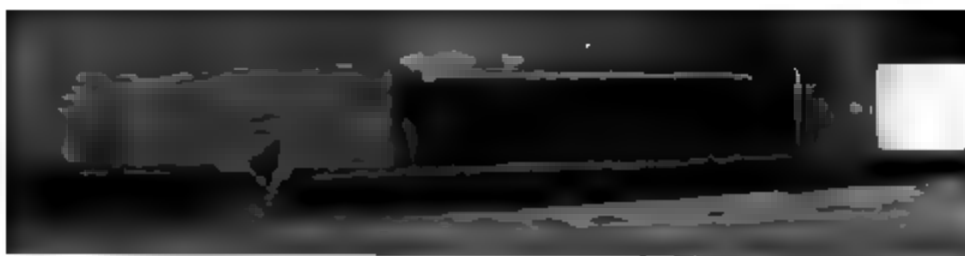
That Theseus the noble conquerour
 Doth to þe ladyes whan þey from him wente
 But shortly for to telle is myn entente 1000
 whan þat þis worthy Duk þis Theseus
 hath Creon slayn and Thebes wonne þus
 Stille in þe feelde he took al night his reste
 And dide with al þe contre as him leste 1004
TWO Ransake in þe cas of bodyes dede
 hem for to streepe of herneys and of wede /
 The pilours diden businesse and cure
 After þe bataile and discomfiture 1008
 And so byfil þat in þe cas þei founde
 Thurgh girt with many a greuous bloody wounde
 Two yonge knyghte liggyng by and by
 Boþe in oon armes clad ful richely 1012
 Of whiche two Arcite hight þat oon
 And þat oþur knyght hight Palamon
 Nat fully quyke ne fully deed þey were
 But by here coote armure and by here gere 1016
 Heraules knewe hem wel in special
 As þey þat weren of the blood real
 Of Thebes and of Sistren tuo I-born
 Out of þe chaas þe pilours han hem torn 1020
 And han hem caried softe vnto þe tente /
 Of Theseus and ful sone he hem sente
 Tathenem for to dwellen in prison



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALK. Harleian 7334. 31

Til it fel oones in a morwe of may
That Emelie þat fairer was to seene
Than is þe lillie on hire stalkes grene 1036
And frescher þan the may with floures newe
For with þe rose colour strof hire hewe
I not which was þe fyner of hem two
Er it was day as sche was wont to do 1040
Sche was arisen and al redy dight
For may wole haue no sloggardye anyght
The sesoun prikep euery gentil herte
And makeþ him out of his sleepe sterte 1044
And seith arys and do þin obseruance
This maked Emelye han remembrance
To do honour to May and for to ryse
I-cloþed was sche fresch for to deuyse 1048
hire þolwe heer was browdid in a tresse
Byhynde hire bak ajerde long I gesse
And in the gardyn at þe sonne vpriste
Sche walkep vp and doun wher as hire liste 1052
Sche gadereþ floures party whyte and reede
To make a certeyn gerland for hire heede
And as an aungel heuenly sche song
The grete tour þat was so pikke and strong 1056
which of þe castel was the cheef dongeoun
Ther as þis knightes weren in prisoun
Of which I tolde þow and telle schal
was euene Ioynnyng to þe gardeyn wal 1060
Ther as þis Emely hadde hire pleyynge
Bright was þe sonne and cleer þat morwenynge
And Palamon þis woful prisoner [leaf 16]
As was his wone by leue of his gayler 1064
was risen and romed in a Chambre on heigh
In which he al þe noble cite seigh
And eek þe gardeyn ful of braunches grene
Ther as þe fresche Emelye þe scheene 1068
was in hire walk/ and romed vp and doun

This sorweful prisoner þis Palamon
 Gooth in þe chambre romyng to and fro
 And to himself compleynyng of his woo 1072
 That he was born / ful ofte he seyde alas
 And so byfel by auenture or cas
 That þurgh a wyndow þikke and many a barre
 Of Iren greet and squar as eny sparre 1076
 he cast his eyen vpon Emelya
 And þer with al he bleynte and cryed .A.
 As þat he stongen were vnto þe herte
 And with þat crye arcite anon vp sterte 1080
 And seyde cosyn myn what eyleþ þe
 That art so pale and deedly for to see /
 why crydestow who haþ þe doon offence
 For goldeþ loue tak al in pacience 1084
 Oure prisoun for it may non opir be
 Fortune haþ ȝeuen vs þis aduersite
 Som wikke aspect / or disposicioun
 Of Saturne by sum constellacioun 1088
 Hath ȝeuen vs þis alþough we hadde it sworn
 So stood þe heuen whan þat we were born
 we moste endure it þis is þe schort and pleyn
 This Palamon answered and seyde ageyn 1092
 Cosyn for sothe of þis opynyoun
 Thou hast a veyn ymaginacioun
 This prisoun caused me not for to crye



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334 33

Biform me sorwful wrecched creature
Out of þis prisoun help þat we may scape
And if so be oure destyne be schape 1108
By eterne word to deyen in prisoun
Of oure lynage haueth sum compassioun
That is so lowe y-brought by Tyrannye
And with þat word Arcite gan espye 1112
wher as this lady romed to and fro
And with þat sight/ hire beaute hurt him so
That if þat Palamon was wounded sore
Arcite is hurt as moche as he or more 1116
And with a sigh. he seyde pitously
The freiasche beaute sleeth me sodeynly
Of hir that rometh 3onder in þe place
And but I haue hir mercy and hir grace 1120
That I may see hir atte leste weye
I nam but deed / ther nys no more to seye
This Palamon whan he tho wordes herde
Dispitously he loked and answerde 1124
whether seistow in earnest or in pley
Nay quop Arcite in earnest in good fey
God helpe me so me lust ful euele pleye
This Palamon gan knytte his browes tweye 1128
Hit nere quod he to the no gret honour
For to be fals ne for to be traytour
To me that am thy coeyn and thy broþer
I-swore ful deepe and ech of vs to oper 1132
That neuer for to deyen in þe payne
Til þat deeth departe schal vs twayne
Neyþer of vs in lande to hynder other
Ne in non other cas / my leue broþer 1136
But þou schuldest trewly forþer me
In euery caas and I schal forþer þe /
This was þyn othe / and myn eek certayn (leaf 16)
I wot right wel þou darst/ it nat wiþsain 1140
Thus art þou of my counseil out of doute

And now thou woldest falsly ben aboute
 To loue my lady whom I loue and serue
 And euere schal vnto myn herte sterue 1144
 Now certes fals arcite þou schal not so
 I loued hir first / and tolde the my woo
 As to my counseil / and to broþer sworn
 To forthere me as I haue told biforn 1148
 For which thou art I-bounden as a knight
 To helpe me / if it lay in þi might /
 Or elles art þou fals I dar wel sayn
 This Arcite ful proudly spak agayn 1152
 Thou schalt quop he be rather fals þan I
 But þou art fals / I telle þe vttrily
 For paramour I loued hir first þen þow
 what wolt þou sayn thou wost it not ȝit now 1156
 wheþer sche be a woman or goddesse
 Thyn is affeccoun of holynesse
 And myn is loue as of a creature
 For which I tolde þe myn aduenture 1160
 As to my cosyn / and my broþer sworn
 I pose þat þou louedest hire biforn
 wost þou nat wel the olde clerkes saw
 That who schal ȝeue a loue eny lawe 1164
 loue is a grettere lawe by my pan
 Then may be ȝeue / to eny erply man
 Therefore posityf lawe and such decre
 To þe þou schalt ful lawe as schal þe 1168

GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 35

They foughte alday and ȝit here part was noon
 Ther com a kyte whil þat þey were wrope
 That bar away the boon bitwixe hem bope 1180
 And þerfore at the kynges court my brother
 Eche man for himself þer is non other
 Loue if the list for I loue and ay schal
 And sothly leue brother þis is al 1184
 Eke in þis prisoun moote we endure
 And euery of vs take his auenture
 Gret was the stryf and long bytwixe hem tweye
 ȝif þat I hadde laysir for to seye 1188
 But to the effect it happed on a day
 To telle it ȝow as schortly as I may
 A worpy Duk þat highte Perotheus
 That felaw was to þe duk Theseus 1192
 Syn pilke day þat þey were children lyte
 Was come to Athenes his felawe to visite
 And for to pley as he was wont to do
 For in þis world he loued noman so 1196
 And he loued him as tendurly agayn
 So wel þey loued as olde bookes sayn
 That whan oon / was deed soþly to telle
 his felawe wente and sought him doun in helle 1200
 But of þat story lyst me nought to write
 Duk Perotheus loued wel Arcite/
 And hadde him knowe at Thebes ȝeer by ȝeer
 And fynally at requeste and prayer 1204
 Of Perotheus withoute any raunsoun
 Duk Theseus him leet out of prisoun
 Frely to go wher him lust ouer al
 In such a gyse as I ȝou telle schal 1208
 This was the forward playnly to endite
 Bitwixe Theseus and him Arcite
 That if so were þat Arcite were founde
 Euere in his lyf by daye night or stounde 1212
 In eny contre of þis Theseus

And he were caught it was acorded thus

That with a sword he scholde lese his heed [700/17]

Ther nas noon oþer remedy ne reed 1216

But took his leue and homward he him spedde

Lete him be war his nekke lip to wedde

HOw gret a sorwe suffreþ now Arcite

The deþ he feleþ þorugh his herte smyte 1220

He weepeth weyleth cryeth pitously

To slen himself he wayteþ pryuyly

he seyde alas þe day þat I was born

Now is my prisoun wese þan was biforn 1224

Now is me schape eternally to dwelle

Nought in purgatorie but in helle

Allas þat euer knewe I Perotheus

For elles had I dweld with Theseus 1228

I-fetered in his prisoun for euere moo

Than had I ben in blis and nat in woo

Oonly þe sight of hir whom þat I serue

þough þat I hir grace may nat deserue 1232

wold han sufficed right ynough for me

O dere Cosyn Palamon quod he

þyn is þe victoire of þis auenture

Ful blisfully in prisoun to endure 1236

In prisoun nay certes but in paradys

wel hath fortune y-torned þe dys

That hap þe sight of hir and I the absence

1240



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 37

Far wel my lyf and al my Iolynesse

Allas why playnen folk so in comune
Of purueance of god or of fortune 1252

That zeueth him ful ofte in many a gyse [leaf 17, back]
wel better þan þei can hemself deuysen

Som man desireþ for to haue richesse
That cause is of his morthre/ or gret seeknesse 1256

And som man wolde out of his prisoun fayn

That in his hous is of his mayne slayn

Infinite harmes ben in þis mateere

we wote neuere what þing we preyen heere 1260

we faren as he þat dronke is as a mowe

A dronke man wot wel he hap an hous

But he not nat which þe righte way is þider

And to a dronke man þe wey is slider 1264

And certes in þis world so faren we

we seeken faste after felicity

But we gon wrong ful ofte trewely

Thus may we seyen alle and namely I 1268

That wende haue had a gret opinioun

That ȝif I mighte skape fro prisoun

Than had I be in ioye and parfyt hele

Ther now I am exiled fro my wele / 1272

Syn þat I may not se ȝow Emelye

I nam but deed ther nys no remedye

Vppon þat oper syde Palomon
whan he wiste þat arcite was agoon 1276

Such sorwe makeþ þat þe grete tour

Resowneth of his grete ȝollyng and clamour

The pure fetures of his schynes grete

weren of his bitter salte teres wete 1280

Allas quod he arcita cosyn myn

Of al oure strif god woot þe fruyt is þin

Thow walkest now in Thebes at þi large/

And of my woo þou ȝeuest litel charge/ 1284

Thou maiste seen þou hast wysdom and manhede

Assemble al þe folk of oure kynrede
 And make a werre so scharpe in þis Cite
 That by som auenture or by som trete 1288
 þou mayst/ hire wyne to lady and to wyf
 For whom þat I most nedes leese my lyf
 For as by wey of possibilite [1289/10]
 Syn þou art at þi large of prisoun free 1292
 And art a lord gret is þin auantage
 More þan is myn þat sterue here in a kage
 For I moot weepe and weyle whil I lyue
 with al þe woo þat prisoun may me ȝyue 1296
 And eek with peyne þat loue me ȝeueþ also
 And doubleþ al my peyne and al my wo
 Ther with þe fuyr of Ielousye vpsterte
 wipinne his brest and hent him by þe herte 1300
 So wodly / þat lik was he to by-holde
 The box tree or þe aschen deed and colde
 Tho seyde he O goddes cruel þat gouerne
 This world with byndyng & wiþ word eterne 1304
 And writen in þe table of Athamaunte
 ȝoure parlement and ȝoure eterne graunte
 what is mankynde more to ȝow holde
 Than is a scheep þat roukep in þe folke 1308
 For slayn is man right as anoper beste
 And dwelleþ eek in prisoun and arreste
 And haþ seknesse and greet aduersite

wipouten doute it may stonde so
 The answer of þis I lete to diuinis
 But wel I woot þat in þis world gret pyne is 1324
 Allas I se a serpent or a þeeff
 That many a trewe man hap doon mescheef
 Gon at his large and wher him lust/ may turne
 But I moste be in prisoun þurgh saturne 1328
 And eek þorugh Iuno Ialous and eke wood (leaf 18, back)
 That hap destroyed wel neyh al þe blood
 Of Thebes wip his waste walles wyde /
 And venus sleep me on þat oþer syde / 1332
 For Ielousye and fere of him Arcyte
Now wol I stynte of Palamon a lite
 And lete him stille in his prisoun dwelle
 And of arcite for þan wol I telle 1336
 The somer passeþ and þe nightes longe
 Encrescen double wise the peynes stronge
 Bothe of þe lover and þe prisoner
 I noot which hath þe wofullere cheer 1340
 For schortly for to sey þis Palomon
 Perpetuelly is dampned in prisoun
 In cheynes and in feteres to be deed
 And Arcite is exiled vpon his heed 1344
 For eueremo as out of þat contre
 Ne neuere mo schal he his lady see
 Now louyeres / axe I þis question
 who hap þe worse Arcite or Palomon. 1348
 That on may se his lady day by day
 But in prisoun he moot dwelle alway
 That oþer may wher him lust ryde or go
 But seen his lady schal he neuer mo 1352
 Now deemeth as þou luste ȝe þat can
 For I wol telle forþ as I bigan

Whan þat arcite to Thebes come was
 Ful ofte a day he swelde and seyde alas 1356
 For seen his lady schal he neuer mo
 And schortly to concluden al his wo
 So moche sorwe had neuer creature
 That is or schal whil þat þe world wol dure 1360
 his aleep his mete his drynk' is him by-raft'
 That lene he wexe / and drye as eny schaft/
 his eyen holwe / grisly to biholde
 his hewe falwe and pale as aschen colde 1364
 And solitary he was and euer alone
 And dwellyng' al þe night' making his moone
 And if he herde song' or Instrument/ (leaf 79)
 Then wolde he wepe he mighte nought' be stent 1368
 So feble were his spirites and so lowe
 And chaunged so þat' no man couþe knowe
 his speche noþer his vois þough men it herde
 And in his gir for al þe world he ferde 1372
 Nought' oonly lyke þe louers maladye
 Of hercos but raper lik' manye
 Engendrud of' humour malencolyk'
 Byforne in his selle fantastyk' 1376
 And schortly turned was al vp so doun
 Bothe abytt' and eek' disposicioun
 Of' him þis woful louere daun arcite
 what' schulde I alway of' his wo endite 1380
 when he endured hadde a year or two



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 41

Arrayed was þis god as he took/ keepe
As he was whan þat Argous took' his aleep
And seyde to athenes schalt' þou wende
Ther is þe schapen of þy wo an ende 1392
And with þat word arcite wook' and sterte
Now trewely how sore þat me smerte
Quod he to athenes riȝt' now wol I fare
Ne for þe drede of deth schal I not spare 1396
To see my lady þat I loue and serue
In hire presence I recche nat to sterue /
And with þat word he caught' a gret myrour
And saugh þat chaunged was al his colour 1400
And saugh his visage was in anoþer kyng
And riȝt' anon it ran him into mynde
That seþþen his face was so disfigured
Of maladie the which he hap' endured 1404
he mighte wel if þat he bar him lowe (leaf 19, back)
lyue in athenes eueremore vnknowe
And see his lady wel neih day by day
And riȝt' anon he chaunged his aray 1408
And cloped him as a pore laborer
And al alone saue oonly a squyer
That knew his pryuyte and al his cas
which was disgysed pourely as he was 1412
To athenes is he go þe nexte way
And to þe court / he went vpon a day
And at þe ȝate he profred his seruyse
To drugge and drawe what so men wolde deuyse 1416
And schortly on þis matier for to seyn
he fel in office with a Chambirleyn
The which that dwellyng' was with Emelye
For he was wys and couthe sone aspye 1420
Of euery seruant which þat serued here
wel couþe he hewe woode and water bere /
For he was ȝonge and mighty for þe nones
And þerto he was long' and bygge of bones 1424

To doon þat eny wight can him deuyse
 A ȝeer or two he was in þis seruiſe
 Page of þe chambre of Emelye þe bright
 And Philostrate he seide þat he hight 1428
 But half so wel byloued a man as he
 Ne was þer neuer in court of his degree
 he was so gentil of his condicioun
 That þoruh out al þe court was his renoun 1432
 They seyde þat it were a charite
 That Theseus would enhaunsen his degree
 And putten him in worschipful seruyse
 Ther as he might his vertu excersise 1436
 And þus wipinne a while his name spronge
 Boþe of his dedes and of goode tonge
 That Theseus hap taken him so neer
 That of his Chambre he made him squyer 1440
 And ȝaf him gold to mayntene his degree
 And eek men brought him out of his countre
 From ȝeer to ȝer ful pryuyly his rente [leaf 20]
 But honestly and sleighly he it spente 1444
 That no man wondred how þat he it hadde
 And þre ȝeer in þis wise his lyf he ladde
 And bar him so in pees and eek in werre
 Ther nas no man þat Theseus hap so derre 1448
 And in þis blisse lete I now Arcite
 And speke I wole of Palomon alyte

GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 43

Therefore I passe as lightly as I may
 hit fel pat in þe sevenþe 3eer in May
 The þridde night as olde bookes seyn
 That al þis storie tellen more pleyne 1464
 were it by aventure or destene
 As whan a þing is schapen it schal be
 That soone aftur þe mydnyght Palamoun
 By helpyng of a freend brak his prisoun 1468
 And fleeth þe cite fast as he may goo
 For he had 3iue drinke his gayler soo
 Of a clarre maad of certeyn wyn
 with nercotykes and opye of Thebes fyn 1472
 That al þat night þough þat men wolde him schake
 The gayler sleep he mighte nou3t/ awake
 And þus he fleeth as fast as euer he may
 The night was schort and faste by þe day 1476
 That needes cost he moste himseluen hyde
 And til a groue ther faste besyde
 with dredful foot þan stalkep Palomoun
 For schortly þis / was his opynyoun 1480
 That in þat groue he wolde him hyde al day [leaf 20, back]
 And in þe night þen wolde he take his way
 To Thebesward his frendes for to preye
 On Thesens to helpe him to werreye / 1484
 And shortelich or he wolde lese his lyf
 Or wynnen Emelye vnto his wyf
 This is peffect of his entente playn.
 Now wol I torne vnto Arcite agayn. 1488
 That litel wiste how nyh þat was his care
 Til þat fortune hap brought him in the snare
The busy larke messenger of May
 Salueth in hire song þe morwe gray 1492
 And fyry Phebus ryseth vp so bright
 That þe orient laughet of þe light
 And wip his stremes dryeth in þe greues
 The siluer dropes hongyng in þe leues 1496

And arcite þat is in þe court ryal
 With Theseus his Squyer principal
 Is risen and loketh on þe mery day
 And for to doon his obseruance to May 1500
 Remembryng of þe poynt of his desire
 he on his courser stertyng as þe fire
 Is riden in to feeldes him to pleye
 Out of þe court were it a myle or tweye 1504
 And to þe groue of which þat I ȝow tolde
 By auenture his way he gan to holde
 To make him a garland of þe greues
 were it of woodewynde or hawþorn leues 1508
 And lowde he song aȝens þe sonne scheene
 May wiþ al þyn floures and þy greene
 welcome be þou wel faire freissche may
 In hope þat I som grene gete may 1512
 And fro his courser wiþ a lusty herte
 Into þe groue ful lustily he sterte
 And in a pathe he romed vp and donn
 Ther by auenture þis Palamoun 1516
 was in a busche þat no man might him see
 Ful sore afered of his deþ was he
 No þing ne knew he þat it was Arcite [leaf 21]
 God wot he wolde haue trowed it ful lite 1520
 But soþ is seyde goon ful many ȝeres
 That feld hap eyen and þe woode hap eeres

GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 45

Now vp now doun as boket in a welle
 Right as þe friday sople for to telle /
 Now it schyneþ now it reyneþ faste
 Right so gan gery venus ouercaste 1536
 The hertes of hire folk right as hir day
 Is grisful right so chaungeþ hire aray
 Selde is þe fryday al þe wyke I-like
 whan þat arcite hadde songe he gan to sike 1540
 And sette him doun wiþouten eny more
 Alas quod he þat day þat I was bore
 how longe Iuno thurgh þy cruelte
 wiltow werreyen Thebes þe Citee 1544
 Allas I-brought is to confusioun
 The blood royal of Cadme and Amphion
 Of Cadynus / þe which was þe furst man
 That Thebes bulde or first þe toun bygan 1548
 And of þat Cite first was crowned kyng
 Of his lynage / am I and his ofspring
 By verray line and of his stok ryal
 And now I am so caytyf and so þral 1552
 That he þat is my mortal enemy
 I serue him as his squyer pourely
 And yet doth Iuno me wel more schame
 For I dar nought byknowe myn owne name 1556
 But þer as I was wont to hote arcite [leaf 21, back]
 Now hote I Philostrate nougt worth a myte
 Allas þou felle mars allas Iuno
 Thus hap þoure lre owre lynage fordo 1560
 Saue oonly me and wrecchid Palomoun
 That Theseus martyreþ in prisoun
 And ouer al this to slee me vtterly
 Loue hap his fyry dart so brennyngly 1564
 I stykid þorugh my trewe careful herte
 That schapen was my deth erst þan my scherte
 þe slen me with þoure eyhen Emelye
 þe ben þe cause wherfore þat I dye 1568

Of al þe remenant of al myn oþer care
 Ne sette I nouȝt þe mounlaunce of a tare
 So þat I coupe do ought to ȝoure pleasaunce
 And with þat word he fel down in a traunce 1572
 A longe tyme and aftirward vpsterte
 This Palamon þat þouȝte þurgh his herte
 he felt a cold aword sodeynliche glyde
 For Ire he quook/ he nolde no lenger abyde 1576
 And whan þat he hap herd arcites tale
 As he were wood wip face deed and pale
 he sterte him vp out of þe bussches pikke
 And seyde arcyte / false traitour wikke/ 1580
 Now art þou hent/ þat louest my lady so.
 For whom þat I haue al þis peyne and wo.
 And art my blood and to my counseil sworn
 And I ful ofte haue told þe heere byforn 1584
 And hast by-laped here þe duke Theseus
 And falsly chaunged hast þy name þus
 I wol be deed or elles þou schalt dye
 þou schalt not loue my lady Emelye 1588
 But I wil loue hire oonly and nomo
 For I am Palamon þy mortal fo
 And þough þat I no wepen haue in þis place
 But out of prison am y-stert by grace 1592
 I drede not þat oþer þou schalt dye
 Or þou ne schalt not loue Emelye

which þat þou seyst I haue maad to þe
 For verray fool / þenk þat loue is fre
 And I wol loue hire mawgre al þy might
 But for þou art a gentil parfyzt knight 1608
 And wenest to dereyne hire by batayle
 haue heere my troupe to morwe I nyl not fayle
 wipouten wityng of eny oþer wight
 That heer I wol be founden as a knight 1612
 And bryngen harneys right I-nough for þe
 And ches þe best and lef þe worst for me
 And mete and drynke / þis night wil I bryng
 Inough for þe and cloþ for þy beddyng 1616
 And if so be þat þou my lady wynne
 And sle me in þis wood þat / I am Inne
 Thou maist wel haue þy lady as for me
 This Palomon answerþ I graunt it þe 1620
 And þus þey ben departed til a morwe
 whan ech of hem had leyd his feith to borwe
 O Cupide / out of al charite
 O regne þat wolt no felaw haue with þe 1624
 Ful soþ is seyde / þat loue ne lordschipe
 wol not his þonkes haue no felaschipe
 wel fynden þat arcite and Palamoun
 Arcite is riden anon to þe toun 1628
 And on þe morwe or it were day light
 Ful priuely two harneys haþ he dight
 Boþe sufficaunt and mete to darreyne
 The batayl in þe feeld betwix hem tweyne 1632
 And on his hors alone as he was born
 he caryed al þis harneys him byforn
 And in þe groue at tyme and place I-sette
 This arcite and þis Palamon ben mette 1636
 Tho chaungen gan here colour in here face
 Right as þe honterus in þe regne of Trace
 That stondeþ in þe gappe with a spere
 whan houted is þe lyoun or þe bere 1640

[leaf 22, back]

And hereþ him / comyng' in þe greues
 And brekeþ hope þe bowes and þe leues
 And þenkeþ here comeþ my mortel enemy
 wiþoute faile he mot be deed or I 1644

For eyþer I mot' slen him at' þe gappe
 Or he moot' alee me if' it' me myshappe
 So ferden þey in chaungyng' of' here hew

AS fer as eyþer of' hem oþer knew 1648
 Ther nas no good day ne no saluyng'

But' streyt' wiþouten wordes rehersyng'
 Euery of' hem helpeþ to armen oþer
 As frendly as he were his owen broþer 1652

And þanne wiþ / here scharpe speres stronge
 They foyneden ech at oþer longe
 Tho it semed þat' þis Palomon
 In his fightyng' were a wood lyoun 1656

And as a cruel tygre was arcite
 And as wilde boores gonne þey amyte
 That' froþen white as fome froþe wood
 vp to þe ancle þey faught' in here blood 1660

And in þis wise I lete hem fiztyng' well
 And forþere I wol of Theseus telle

The destyne mynistre general 1664
 That' excused in þe world ouer al

The purueans þat' god haþ seye byforn
 So strong' it is þat þey þe world had sworn



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 49

That he nys clad and redy for to ryde
with hont/ and horn and houndes him byside
For in his hontyng' hap he such delyt
That is his ioye and his appetyt 1680
To been him self þe grete hertes bane
For after may he serueþ now Dyane
Cleer was þe day as I haue told or þis
And Theseus with alle Ioye and blys 1684
with his ypolita þe fayre queene
And Emelye cloþed al in greene
On hontyng' be þay riden ryally
And to þe groue þat stood þer faste by 1688
In which þer was an hert' as men him tolde
Duk' Theseus þe streyte wey hap holde
And to þe launde he rydeþ him ful right
There was þe hert' y-wont to haue his flight 1692
And ouer a brook' and so forþ in his weye
This duk' wol haue of him a cours or tweye
wip houndes which as him lust to comaunde
And whan þis Duk' was come in to þe launde 1696
vnder þe sonne he lokeþ right anon
he was war of arcite and Palomon
That foughten breeme as it were bores tuo
The brighte swerdes wente to and fro 1700
So hidously þat with þe leste strook'
It seemeþ as it wolde felle an (okk
But what þey were nuping' ȝif he woot
This duk' wip spores / his courser he smoot 1704
And at a stert' he was bitwix hem turn
And pullid out a sword and cryde he
Nomore vp peyne / of leeyng' of þour heed
By mighty mars anon he schal be deed 1708
That amyteþ eny strook' þat I may noon (1709, 1710)
But telleþ me what mostir men ȝe haue
That ben so hardy for to fighten heere
wipoute Iugge or oþer officers 1712

As it were in a lyste really
 This Palamon answerde hastily
 And seyde sire what nedep wordes mo
 we han þe dep deserued bope tuo 1716
 Tuo woful wrecches been we and kaytyues
 That ben encombred of oure owne lyues
 And as þou art a rightful lord and Iuge
 Ne ȝeue vs neyþer mercy ne refuge/ 1720
 But sle me first for seynte Charite
 But sle my felaw eek as wel as me
 Or sle him first for þough þou knowe him lyte
 This is þy mortal fo þis is arcite 1724
 þat fro þy lond is banyscht/ on his heed
 For which he hap I-serued to be deed
 For þis is he þat come to þi gate
 And seyde þat / he highte Philostrate 1728
 Thus hap he laped þe many a yer
 And þou hast maad of him þy cheef squyer
 And þis is he þat loueth Emelye
 For siþ þe day is come þat I schal dye 1732
 I make pleyuly my confessioun
 þat I am / þe woful Palamoun
 That hap þi prisoun broke wikkedly
 I am þy mortal foo and it am I 1736
 That louch so hoote / Emely þe bright
 That I wol dye present in hire sight

Gan for to wepe and so dede Emelye
 And alle þe ladies in companye
 Great pite was it as it þought hem alle
 That euere such a chaunce schulde falle 1752
 For gentil men þei were and of gret estate
 And noþing but for loue was þis debate
 And saw here bloody woundes wyde and sore
 And alle þey cryde lesse and þe more 1756
 Haue mercy lord vpon vs wommen alle
 And on here bare knees anoon þey falle
 And wolde haue kissed his bare feet right as he stood
 Till atte laste aslaked was his mood 1760
 For pite renneþ sone in gentil herte
 And þough he for Ire quok and sterte
 he hap it al considered in a clause
 The trespass of hem boþe and here cause 1764
 And al-þough his Ire here gylt accused
 þet he in his resoun hem boþe excused
 And þus he þought þat euery maner man
 wol help himself in loue if þat he can 1768
 And eek delyuer himself out of prisoun
 And eek in his hert/ had compassioun
 Of wommen for þey wepen euere in oon
 And in his gentil hert he þought anoon 1772
 And soþly he to himself seyde fy.
 vpon a lord þat wol haue no mercy
 But be a lyoun boþe in word in dede
 To hem þat ben in repentaunce and drede 1776
 As wel as to a proud dispitious man
 That wol maynteyne þat he first bigan
 That lord hap litel of discrecioun
 That in such caas can no diuisioun 1780
 But wayteþ pride and humblenesse after oon
 And schortly whan his Ire is ouer gon
 He gan to loke on hem with eyen blake and light
 And spak þese same wordes al in hight 1784

The god of loue a benedicite [leaf 24, back]
 how mighty and how gret a lord is he
 Agayns his might' per gayneth non obstacle
 He may be cleped a god of his miracle 1788
 For he can maken at his owen gyse
 Of euery herte / as him lust' deuyse
 Lo her is arcite and Palomon
 That quyte / were out of my prisoun 1792
 And might' haue lyued in Thebes ryally
 And witen I am here mortal enemy
 And þat' here deþ lith in my might also
 And ȝet' haþ loue maugre here eyȝen tuo 1796
 I-brought hem hider bope for to dye
 Now lokeþ is nat þat' an heih folȝe
 who may be a fole if þat he loue
 Byholde for goddes þaþ sitteþ aboue 1800
 Se how þey blede be þey nought' wel arrayed
 Thus haþ here lord þe god of loue hem payed
 here wages and here fees for here seruise
 And ȝet' wenen they to ben wise / 1804
 That' seruen loue for ought' þat may bifalle
 But' þis is ȝette / þe beste game of alle
 That' sche for whom þey haue þis Ielousye
 ¶ Can hem þerfore as moche þank' as me 1808
 Sche woot' no more of al þis hote fare
 By god þan wot' a Cuckow or an hare

And 3e schullen bope anon vnto me swere
 That neuer 3e schullen my corowne dere
 Ne make warre on me night ne day [leaf 25]
 But be my freendes alle þat 3e may 1824
 I 3ou forȝeue þis trespas euery dele
 And þey him swore his axyng euery dele
 And him of lordschip and of mercy prayde
 And he hem graunted mercy and þus he sayde 1828
TO speke of real lynage and riches
 Though þat sche were a queen or a prynces
 Ilk of 3ow bope is worþy douteles
 To wedde when tyme is but napeles 1832
 I speke as for my suster Emelye
 For whom 3e haue þis stryft and Ielousye
 3e woot 3oure self sche may not welde two
 At oones þough 3e faughten euer mo 1836
 That oon of 3ow or be him loth or leef
 he may go pypen in an Iuy leef
 This is to say sche may nought haue bope
 Al be 3e neuer so Ielous ne so lope 1840
 For-þy I put 3ou bothe in þis degre
 That ilk of 3ou schal haue his destyne
 As him is schape / and herken in what wyse
 Lo here 3our ende of þat I schal deuyse 1844
My wil is þis for playn conclusioun
 wipouten eny repplicacioun
 If þat 3ou liketh tak it for þe best
 That euery of 3ou schal go wher him leet 1848
 Frely wipouten raunsoun or daungeor
 And þis day fyfty wykes fer ne neer
 Euerich of 3ou schal bryng an hundred knightes
 Armed for lystes vp at alle rightes 1852
 Al redy to derayne hir by batayle
 And þus byhote I 3ou wipouten fayle
 vpon my trouthe and as I am a knight
 That whepir of 3ow bope þat haþ might 1856

This is to seyn that' wheþir he or þou
 May wiþ his hundred as I spak' of' now
 Sle his contrary or out' of lyses dryue
 Him schal I ȝeue Emelye to wyue 1860
 To whom þat fortune ȝeueþ so fair a grace [leaf 25, back]
 The lyste schal I make in þis place
 And god so wisly on my sowle rewe
 As I schal euen iuge ben and trewe 1864
 ȝe schul non opir ende wiþ me make
 That' oon of ȝow schal be deed or take
 And if ȝou þinkeþ þis is wel I-sayde
 Say ȝoure avys and holdeþ ȝow a-payde 1868
 This is ȝoure ende and ȝoure conclusioun
 who lokeþ lightly now but Palamoun
 who spryngeþ vp for ioye but arcite
 who coupe telle or who coupe endite 1872
 The ioye þat is made in þis place
 whan Theseus haþ don so fair a grace
 But down on knees wente euery wight
 And þanked him with al here hertes might 1876
 And namely þe thebanes ofte siþe
 And þus wiþ good hope and herte bliþe
 They taken here leue and hom-ward þey ryde
 To Thebes / wiþ olde walles wyde 1880
 [.

Ful of degre þe height of sixty paas
 That whan a man was set in o degre
 he letted nought his felaw for to se 1892

Estward þer stood a gate of marbul whit
 westward such anoþer in opposit/
 And schortly to conclude such a place
 was non in erþe in so litel space 1896

In al þe lond þer nas no craftys man
 That geometry or arismetrike can
 Ne purtreyour ne keruer of ymages (leaf 26)
 That Theseus ne ȝaf hem mete and wages 1900

The theatre for to maken and deuyse
 And for to don his right and sacrifice
 he Estward hap vpon þe gate aboue
 In worschip of venus goddes of loue 1904

Don make an auter and an oratory
 And westward in þe mynde and in memory
 Of mars he hap I-maked such an oþer
 That coste largely of gold a foper 1908

And northward in a toret on þe walle
 Of alabaster whit and reed coralle
 An oratory riche for to see

In worschip of Dyane goddes of chastite 1912
 hath Theseus I-wrought in noble wise
 But ȝit/ had I forgeten to deuyse /

The nobil keruyng and þe purtretures
 The schap þe contynaunce of þe figures 1916
 That weren in þe Oratories þre

Furst in þe temple of venus þou may se
 wrought in þe wal ful pitous to byholde
 Thre broken slopes and þe sykes colde 1920

The sacred teeres and þe waymentyng
 The fuyry strokes and þe desiryng
 That loues servauntz in þis lyf enduren
 The oþes þat by her couenantz assuren 1924
 Plesance and hope desyr fool-hardynesse

Beaute and ȝouȝe baudery and riches
 Charmes and sorcery lesynges and flatery
 Dispense busynes and Ielousy 1928
 That werud of ȝolo guldes a garland
 And a cukkow sitting on hire hand
 Festes instrumentȝ carols and daunces
 Lust and array and al þe circumstaunces / 1932
 Of loue which I rekned and reken schal
 Ech by oȝer / were peynted on þe wal
 And mo þan I / can make of mencion
 For sothly al þe mount of Setheroun 1936
 Ther Venus hath hir principal dwellyng [leaf 24, back]
 was schewed on þe wal here portrayng
 wiȝ alle þe Gardyn and al þe lustynes
 Nought was forȝete þe porter ydelnes 1940
 Ne Narcisus þe fayr of ȝore agon
 Ne ȝet þe folȝ of kyng Salomon
 Ne eek þe strengþe / of him hercules
 Thenchautementȝ of Medea and Cerces 1944
 Ne of turnus of which þe hard fuyry corage
 The riche Cresus caytif in seruage
 Thus may we see þat wisdom and riches
 Beaute ne sleight strengþe ne hardynes 1948
 Ne may wiȝ venus holde champartye
 For as sche lust þe world þan may sche gye
 lo al þis folk I-caught were in hire trace

The first of the four is a list of the names of the

And abowen hire heed downes fleyng
 Bifore hir stood hir some Cupido
 vpon his schuldres were wynges two 1964

And blynd he was as it is often seene
 A bowe he bar and arwes fair and greene

Why schuld I nought as wel telle you alle
 The portraiture þat was vpon þe walle 1968

wip in þe temple of mighty mars þe reede
 Al peynted was þe wal in lengþ and breede
 loke to þe Estres of þe grisly place

That hight þe gret tempul of mars in trace 1972
 In þat colde and in þat frosty region

Ther as mars hap his smereyn maner

First on þe wal was peynted a foreste (see 197)

In which þer dwelled neyther man ne beste / 1976
 wip knotty knarry bareyn trees olde

Of stubbes scharpe and hilous to byholde

In which þer ran as wymbul in a swough

As it were a storme schuld herst every bough 1980

And downward on an hil vnder a bent /

Ther stood þe tempul of mars; armypant /

wrought al of burned steel of which þe dore

was long and streyt and gastly for to see 1984

And þer out/ came a rage of such a sprise

That it maad al þe gates for to rise

The norþen light in at þe dore schyn

For wyndow on þe walle was þer noon 1988

Thorugh þe which men might no light discerne

The dores wer alle, ademantz eterne

I-clenched ouer thward and endelong/

with Iren tough / and for to make it strong 1992

Euery piler þe tempul to susteene

was tonne greet of Iren bright and schene

Ther saugh I furst þe derk ymaginyng

Of felony and al the compassyng 1996

The cruel Ire as reed as eny gleede

The pike-purs and eek' þe pale drede
 The smyler wiþ þe knyft vnder his cloke
 The schipne brennyng' with þe blake smoke 2000
 The tresoun of' þe murþeryng' in þe bed
 The open werres wiþ woundes al bibled
 kuttud with bloody knyft and scharp manace
 Al ful of chirkyng' was þat sory place 2004
 The sleer of himself' 3et saugh I þere
 here herte blood hap baped al his here
 The nayl y-dryue in þe schode a-nyght
 The colde deþ with mouþ gapyng' vpright 2008
 A-myldes of' þe tempul set/ meschaunce
 wiþ sory comfort' and euel contynaunce
 I saugh woundes laughyng' in here rage
 The hunt' strangled with wilde bores corage 2012
 [.

 no gap in the MS.]
 The sowe freten þe child right in þe cradel (leaf 37, back)
 The cook' I-skalded for al his longe ladel 2020
 Nought' beþ forgeten þe infortune of' mart
 The carter ouer-ryden wiþ his cart'
 vnder þe whel ful lowe he lay a down

The 2024
 The 2028
 The 2032
 The 2036
 The 2040
 The 2044
 The 2048
 The 2052
 The 2056
 The 2060
 The 2064
 The 2068
 The 2072
 The 2076
 The 2080
 The 2084
 The 2088
 The 2092
 The 2096
 The 2100
 The 2104
 The 2108
 The 2112
 The 2116
 The 2120
 The 2124
 The 2128
 The 2132
 The 2136
 The 2140
 The 2144
 The 2148
 The 2152
 The 2156
 The 2160
 The 2164
 The 2168
 The 2172
 The 2176
 The 2180
 The 2184
 The 2188
 The 2192
 The 2196
 The 2200

3et' was here deth depeynted þer tyfien
 By manasyng' of marcs right by figure
 So was it schewed right in þe purtreure 2036
 As is depeynted in sterres above
 who schal be slayn or elles deed for loun
 Sufficeth oon ensample in stories old

[A break of one line in the MS.]

The statue of mars vpon a carle ston
 Armed and loked grym as he were wood
 And ouer his heed þer schyned two figures
 Of sterres þat been cleped in scriptures 2044
 That oon puella þat ofur Italus
 This god of armes was arayed þus
 A wolf þer ston byforn him at his feet
 wip eyen reed and of a man he wet 2048
 wip sotyl pencil depeynted was þis storie
 In redoutyng' of mars and of his glorie

Now to þe temple of Dyane þe chaste
 As shortly as I can I wol me haste 2052
 To telle þou al þe descripcioun
 Depeynted ben þe walles vp and down
 Of huntynge and of schamefast' chastite
 Ther saugh I how woful Calystope / 2056
 whan þat Dyane was agreued with here *[leaf 19]*
 was turned from a woman to a bere

And after was sche maad þe loode-sterre
 Thus was it peynted I can say no ferre 2060
 hire son is eek' afir as men may see
 Ther saw; I dyane turned in til a tree
 I mene nouȝt þe goddes Dyane
 But Peneus douȝter / þe whiche hight dane 2064
 Ther saugh I atheon an hert' I-maked
 For vengeance þat he saugh Dyane al naked
 I saugh how þat his houndes han him caught'
 And freten him for þat þey knew him naught 2068
 3it' I-peynted was a litel forþer more

how atthalaunce huntyd þe wilde bore
 And Melyagre / and many anoper mo
 For which Dyane wrought him care and woo 2072
 Ther saugh I eek many anoper story
 The which me list not drawe in to memory
 This goddess son / an hertful hy he seet
 with smale boundes at hire feet 2076
 And vnder-neþe hir feet sche had þe moone
 wexyng it was and schulde wane soone
 In gaude greene hire statue cloþed was
 wip bowe in hande and arwes in a cas 2080
 hir eyzen caste sche ful lowe adoun
 Ther Pluto hap his derke regioun
 A womman trauallyng was hire biforn
 But for hire child so longe was vnborn 2084
 Ful pitously lucyna gan she calle
 And seyde help / for þou mayst best of alle /
 wel couþe he peynte lyfly þat it wrouzt
 wip many a floren he þe hewes bought 2088
 Now been þise listes maad and Theseus /
 That at his grete cost arayed þus
 The temples and þe Theatres euery del
 whan it was don it liked him right wel 2092
 But stynt I wil of Theseus a lile
 And speke of Palomon and of Arcite

The day approcheþ of her attournyng [leaf 88, back]

For euery wight þat loneþ chyualry
 And wold his þankes haue a passant name
 he preyed þat he might be of þat game 2108
 A wel was him þat þerto chosen was
 For if þer felle to morwe such a caas
 I knowe wel þat euery lusty knight/
 That loneþ paramours and hath his might 2112
 were it in Engelond or elles where /
 They wold here þankes wilne to be þere
 To fight for / a lady benedicite
 It were a lusty sighte for to see 2116
 And right so ferden þey with Palomon
 wip him þer wente knyghtes many oon
 Some wol ban armed in an haburgoun
 In a bright brest plat and a gypoun 2120
 And som wold haue a peyre plates large
 And som wold haue a prys scheld or a targe
 Som wol been armed on here legges weel
 And haue an ax and eek a mace of steel 2124
 Ther nys no newe gyse þat it nas old
 Armed were þey as I haue told
 Euerich after his owen opinioun
 Ther maistow se comyng wip Palomoun 2128
Thigurge himself þe grete kyng of Trace
 Blak was his berd and manly was his face
 The carcles of / his eyen in his heed
 They gloweden bytwixe ȝolw and reed 2132
 And lik a griffoun loked he aboute (104/20)
 with kempe heres on his browes stowte
 his lymes greet his brawnes hard and stronge
 his schuldres brood his armes rounde and longe 2136
 And as þe gyse was in his contre
 Ful heye vpon a chare of gold stood he
 wip foure white boles in a trays
 In stede of cote armour in his harnays 2140
 wip nayles ȝolwe and bright as eny gold

he had a bere skyn cole-blak' for oid
 his lange heer y-kempt' byhynd his bak'
 As eny rauen fether it schon for blak' 2144
 A wreþe of gold arm-gret' and huge of wight/
 Vpon his heed set' ful of stoon'es bright
 Of fyne rubeus and of fyn dyamaunt;
 Aboute his chare wente with white alaunt; 2148
 Twenty and mo as grete as eny stere
 To hunt at þe lyoun or at þe bere
 And folwed him with mosel fast' I-bounde
 Colerd of gold and torett; fyled rounde 2152
 An hundred lordes had he in his route
 Armed ful wel wip hertes stern and stonte
With arcita in stories as men fynde
 The gret' Emetreus þe kyng' of ynde 2156
 Vppon a steede bay trapped in steel
 Couered wip cloþ and of gold dyapred wel
 Cam rydyng' lyk' / þe god of armes mare
 his coote armour was of a cloþ of Tars 2160
 Cowched of perlys whyte round and grete
 his sadil was of brend gold newe bete
 A mantelet vpon his schuldre hangyng
 Bret-ful of Rubies reed and fir sparclýng 2164
 His crispe her lik' rynges was I-ronne
 And þat' was þalwe and gliteryng' as þe sonne
 his nose was heigh his eyen were cytryne

An Egle tame as eny lylie whyt
 An hundred lordes had he with him þer
 Al armed sauf here hedes in here ger 2180
 Ful richely in alle maner þinges
 For trusteþ wel þat dukes Erles kynges
 were gadred in þis noble companye
 For loue and for ences of Chiuallrye / 2184
 Aboute þe kyng þer ran on euery part
 Ful many a tame lyoun and lepart
 And in þis wise þis lordes alle and some
 Been on the sonday to þe cite kome 2188
 Aboute prime and in þe toun alight
 This Theseus þis duk þis worþy knight
 whan he had brought hem in to þis cite
 And ynned hem euerich at his degre 2192
 he festep hem and doþ so gret labour
 To esen hem and do hem al honour
 That ȝit men wene þat no mannes wyt/
 Of non estat þat cowde amenden it/ 2196
 The mynstralcye þe seruyce at þe festa
 The grete ȝiftes to þe most and leste
 The riche aray of Thebes his paleys
 Ne who sat first ne last vpon þe deys 2200
 what ladies fayrest ben or best daunsyng
 Or which of hem can daunce best or syng
 Ne who most felyngly spekep of lone
 what haukes sitten on þe perche aboue 2204
 what houndes lyen in þe floor a-doun
 Of al þis make I now no mencion
 But of þeffect þat þinkeþ me þe beste /
 Now comth þe poynt and herkneth if ȝou leste 2208
 The sonday night or day bigan to springe [See 30]
 when Palomon þe luke herde synge
 Al þough it were nought day by houres tuo
 ȝit sang þe larke and Palomon also / 2212
 with holy herte and with an heih corage

He roos to wenden on his pilgrymage
 Vnto þe bliaful Cithera benigne
 I mene Venus honorable and digne 2216
 And in here hour he walkeþ forþ a pass
 Vnto þe lystes þer hir temple was
 And down he kneleþ and wiþ humble cheer
 And her sore and seide as 3e schal heer 2220
FAirest O fairest / O lady myn Venus
 Doughter of Ioue and spouse to Vleanus
 Thon glader of þe mount/ of Citheron
 For þilke loue þou haddest to adeoun 2224
 haue pite on my bitter teeres smarte
 And tak' myn humble prayer to þin herte
 Allas I ne haue no langage for to telle
 Theffectes ne þe tormentz of myn helle 2228
 Myn herte may myn harmes nat bewreie
 I am so confus þat I may not seie
 But mercy lady bright þat knowest wel
 My þought' and felest' what harm þat I fel 2232
 Consider al þis and rew vpon my sore
 As wisly as I schal for euermore /
 Enforce my might' þi trewe seruant' to be
 And holde werre alday wiþ chastite 2236
 That' make I myn avow so 3e me helpe
 I kepe nat of armes for to 3elpe
 Ne nat' I aske to morn to haue victorie



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 63

Your vertu is so gret in heven above
 Thy temple wel I worschipe evermo
 And on þin auter wher I ryde or go 2252
 I wol do sacrifice and fyres beete
 And if þe wol nat so my lady sweete
 Than pray I þe to morwe with a spere
 That arcite me þurgh the herte here / 2256
 Thanne rekke I nat when I have lost my lyf
 Though þat arcite have hir to his wyf
 This is pfect. and ende of my prayere
 Ȝif me my love my blisful lady deere 2260
 when thorisoun was doon of Palomon
 his sacrifice he dede and þat anon
 Ful pitously with alle circumstances
 Al telle I nat as now his observances 2264
 But at þe last þe statu of venus schook
 And made a signe wherby þat he took
 That his prayer accepted was þat day
 For pough þe signe schewed a delay 2268
 Ȝet wist he wel þat graunted was his boone
 And wip glad herte he went him hom ful soone
 The þrid hour in equal þat Palomon
 Ȝigan to Venus temple for to goon 2272
 vp roos þe sonne and vp roos Emelye
 And to þe temple of Dian gan sche hye
 Hir maydens þat sche wip hir þider ladde
 Ful redily wip hem þe fyr þey haddo 2276
 Thencens / þe clopes and þemenant al
 That to þe sacrifice longon schal
 The hornes ful of meth as is þe gyse /
 Ther lakkeþ nouȝt to do here sacrificie 2280
 Smokyng þe temple ful of clopes faire
 This Emelye wip herte dobonaire
 Hir body wesch wip wtir of a welle
 But how sche dide I ne dar nat telle 2284
 But it be any þing in general

(1167 11)

And ȝet it were a game to here it al
 To him þat meneth wel it were no charge
 But it is good a man be at his large 2288
 hir brighte her was kempt vntressed al

A Corone of a grene Ok' cerial
 vpon hir heed was set ful fair and meete
 Tuo fyres on þe auter gan sche beete .2293

And did hir þinges as men may biholde
 In state of Thebes and þe bokes olde
 whan kynled was þe fyre wiþ pitous cheere /
 vnto Dyan sche spak' as ȝe may heere 2296

O chaste goddes of þe woodes greene
 To whom boþe heuen and erþe and see is scene
 Queen of þe regne of pluto derk' and lowe
 Goddes of maydenes þat myn hert has knowe 2300

Ful many a ȝeer / ȝe woot' what I desire
 As keep me fro þe vengans of þilk' yre
 That' atheon aboughte trewely
 Chaste goddesse wel wost' þou þat I 2304

Desire to ben a mayden al my lyf
 Ne neuer wol I be no loue ne wyf
 I am ȝit' þou wost' of þi company
 A mayden and loue huntynge and venery 2308

And for to walken in þe woodes wylde
 And nought' to ben a wyf and be with chyld
 Nouȝt' wol I knowe þe company of man

Nouȝt' wol I knowe þe company of man 2310

And if so be þou wol do me no grace
 Or if my destyne be schapid so [leaf 31, back]
 That I schal needes haue on of hem two 2324
 So send me him þat most desireþ me
 Biholde goddes of clene chastite
 The bitter teeres þat on my choekes falle
 Syn þou art mayde and keper of vs alle 2328
 My maydenhode þou kepe and wel conserue
 And whil I lyue a mayde I wil þe serue /
The fyres bren vpon þe auter cleer
 whil Emelye was in hire preyer 2332
 But sodeinly sche saugh a sighte queynt
 For right anon on of þe fyres queynt
 And quyked agayn and after þat anon
 That oper fyr was queynt and al a-gon 2336
 And as it queynt it made a whistelyng
 As dop a wete brond in his brennyng
 And at þe brondes end out ran anoon
 As it were bloody dropes many oon 2340
 For which so sore agast was Emelye
 That sche wel neih mad was and gan to crie
 For sche ne wiste what it signified
 But oonely for feere þus sche cryed 2344
 And wepte þat/ it was pite to heere
 And þer-wip-al Dyane gan appeere
 wip bow in hond right as a hunteresse
 And seyde a doughter stynt þyn heuynesse 2348
 Among þe goddes hye it is affermed
 And by eterne word write & confermed
 Thou schalt be wedded vnto oon of þe
 That haue for þe so moche care and wo 2352
 But vnto which of hem may I nat telle
 Far wel for I may her no lenger dwelle
 The fyres which þat on myn auter bren
 Schuln þe declare or þat þou go hen 2356
 Thyn aduenture of loue and in þis caas

And wip þat word þe arwes in þe cass
 Of þe goddesse clatren faste and rynges
 And forþ sche went and made a vanysschynges 2360
 For which this Emelye astoneyd was [leaf 32]

And seide what amountep þis allas
 I put me vnder þy proteccioun
 Dyane and in þi disposicioun 2364
 And hoom sche goþ anon þe nexte way
 This is þeffect/ þer nys no mor to say

The nexte houre of mars folwynges þis
 Arcite to þe temple walkyd is / 2368

To fyry mars to doon his sacrifice /
 with al þe rightes of his payen wise
 with pitous herte and heih deuocioun
 Right thus to mars he sayd his orisoun 2372

O stronge god þat in þe reynes cold
 Of trace honoured and lord art þou hold
 And hast in euery regne and euery land
 Of armes al þe bridel in þy hand 2376

And hem fortunest as þe lust denyse
 Accept/ of me my pitous sacrifice
 If so be þat my ȝouthes may deserue
 And þat my might be worþi to deserue 2380

Thy godhed þat/ I may be on of þine
 Then pray I þe / to rewe on my pyne
 For þilke peyne and þat hoots fuyre

The which whelpe þou breedest for deuere 2384

And as I trowe / wiþ loue offendid most /
 That euere was eny lyues creature /
 For sche þat doth me / al þis wo endure 2396
 Ne rekkeþ neuer wheþer I synke or flete
 And wel I woot or sche me mercy heete
 I moot wiþ strengþe wyn hir in þe place (2401/22, 2402)
 And wel I wot / wiþouten help or grace 2400
 Of þe / ne may my strengthe nought auayle
 Then help me lord to morn in my batayle
 For þilke fyr that whilom brende þe
 As wel as þis fire now brenneþ me 2404
 And do to morn þat I haue þe victorie
 Myn be þe trauail al þin be þe glorie
 Thy souerein tempul wol I most honouren
 Of any place / and al way most labouren 2408
 In þy plesauce / and þy craftes strong
 And in þy tempul I wol my baner hong
 And alle þe armes of my companye
 And euermore vnto þat day I dye 2412
 Eterne fyr I wol bifore þe fynde
 And eek to þis / avow I wol me bynde
 My berd myn heer þat hangeth longe a doun
 That neuer ȝit ne felt offensioun 2416
 Of rasour ne of schere I wol þe ȝine
 And be þy trewe seruaunt whiles I lyue
 lord haue rowþe vppon my sorwes sore
 ȝif me þy victorie I aske no more 2420
 The preyer stynt / of Arcita þe strange
 The rynges on þe tempul dore þat hange
 And eek the dores clatereden ful fast
 Of which arcita som what was agast 2424
 The fires brenden on þe auter bright
 That it gan al þe tempul for to light
 A swote smel anon þe ground vp ȝaf
 And arcita anon his hand vp haf 2428
 And more encens in to þe fyr ȝet cast

with opir rightes and þan atte last
 The statu of mars bigan his hauberk^t ryng^t
 And with þat soun / he herd a murmyng^t 2432
 Ful lowe and dym / and sayde þis victorie
 For which he ȝaf to mars honour and glorie
 And þus with ioie and hope wel to fare
 Arcite anon / vnto his Inne is fare / 2436
 As fayn as foul is of þe bryghte sonne (40a/25)
 And right anon such stryf^t is bygonne
 For þat grauntyng^t in þe heuen aboue
 Bitwix venus and þe goddes of loue 2440
 And marcz þe sterne god armypotent^t
 That Iupiter was busy it to stent^t
 Til þat þe pale Saturnes þe colde
 That knew so many of auentures olde 2444
 Fond in his experiens an art/
 That he ful sone hap plesyd euery part^t
 And soþ is sayd eelde hap gret anantage
 In eelde is bope wisdom and vsage 2448
 Men may þe eelde at-ten but nat at-rede
 Saturne anon to stynte stryf^t and drede
 Al be it þat / it be agayns his kynde
 Of al þis stryf^t he can remedy fynde 2452
 My deere douȝter venus quod Satourne
 My cours þat hap so wyde for to tourne
 hap more power þan woot any man

Men may be dr. wylful in þe goddys name

2456

I slowh Sampson in schakyng' þe piler
 And myne ben þe maladies colde
 The derke tresoun and þe castes olde 2468
 Myn lokyng' is þe fadir of pestilens
 Now wepe nomore I schal do my diligence
 That Palomon þat is myn owen knight
 Schal haue his lady as þou him bihight 2472
 þow marcz schal kepe his kniȝt ȝet' neuerþeles
 Bitwixe ȝou þer moot som tyme be pees
 Al be ȝe nouȝt of oo complexioun (leaf 22, back)
 That ilke day causeþ such diuisioun 2476
 I am þi ayel redy at þy wille
 wepe þou no more I wol þi lust' fulfille
 Now wol I stynt' of þe goddes aboue
 Of mars and of venus goddes of loue 2480
 And telle ȝou as plainly as I can
 The grete effecte for þat' I bigan
 [.

 no gap in the MS.]
G Ret' was þe fest' in Athenus þat' day
 And eok' þat' lusty sesoun of þat' may 2484
 Made enery wiȝt to ben in such plesaunce /
 That' al the monday iousten þey and daunce
 And sponde hit' in venus heigh seruise /
 But' by þe cause þat' þey schuln arise 2488
 Erly a morwe for to see þat' fight'
 vnto þeir rest' wente þey at' nyght'
 And on þe morwe whan þe day gan spryng'
 Of hors and hernoys noys and clateryng' 2492
 Ther was in þe coostes al aboute
 And to þe paleys rood þer many a route
 Of lordes vpon steede and on/palfreys
 Ther mayst' þou see deuyayng' of hernoys 2496
 So vucowþ and so riche wrought' & wel
 Of goldsmithry of browdyng' and of steel

The scheldes bright / testers and trappures
 Gold-beten helmes / hauberks and cote armures 2500
 lordes in paramantz on her coursers
 knightes of retenu and eek squyers
 Rayhyng' þe speres and helmes bokelyng'
 Girdyng' of schoeldes wip layneres lasyng' 2504
 Ther as need is / þey were noþing' ydel
 Ther fomen steedes on þe golden bridel:
 Gnawyng' and faste / armurers also
 with fyle and hamer prikyng' to and fro 2508
 ȝemen on foote / and knaues many oon
 wip schorte stanes as pikke as þey may goon
 Pypes trompes nakers and Clariounes
 þat' in þe batail blawe bloody sownes / 2512
 The paleys ful of pepul vp and doun (100/24)
 heer þre / þer / ten / haldyng' her question
 Dyunyng' of þis Theban knightes two
 Som seyden þus / som seyð it' schal be so 2516
 Som heelde with him with þe blake berd
 Som wip þe ballyd som wip pikke hered
 Som sayd he loked grym as he wold fight
 he haþ a sparth of .xxⁱⁱ pound of wight 2520
 Thus was þe halle ful of deuynyng'
 Lang' after þat' þe sonne gan to spryng'
 The gret' Theseus / þat' of his sleep is awaked
 with menstralcy and noyse þat' was maked 2524

And whan he sawh þe pepul of noyse al stille
 Thus schewed he þe mighty dukes wille 2536
The lord hap of his heih discrecioun
 Considered þat it were destruccioun
 To gentil blood to fighten in þis wise
 Of mortal batail now in þis Emprise 2540
 were for to schapen þat þey schuld not dye
 he wol his firste purpos modifye
 No man þerfore vp peyne of los of lyf
 No maner schot/ ne pollax ne schort knyf 2544
 In to þe lystes sende or þider bryng
 Ne schorte sword for to stoke þe bytyng
 No man ne drawe ne bere by his side /
 Ne noman schal to his felawe ryde 2548
 But oon cours with a scharpe spere
 Feyne if him lust on foote himself to were
 And he þat is at meschief schal be take / [leaf 24, back]
 And nat alayn but be brought to þe stake 2552
 That schal be ordeyned on eyþer syde
 But þider he schal by force and þer abyde /
 And if so falle a cheuenten be take
 On eyþer side or elles sle his make / 2556
 No lenger schal þe turneyng laste
 God spede þou goþ forþ and ley on faste
 wiþ long sword and wiþ mace fyt þour fille
 Goþ now þour way þis is þe lordes wille 2560
The voice of þe poepul touchip heuen
 So lowde cried þei with mylde steuen
 God saue such a lord þat is so good
 he wilneþ no destruccioun of blood 2564
 vp goþ þe trompes and þe malodye
 And to þe lystes ryde þe companye /
 By ordynaunce þurgh þe cite large
 Hangyng wiþ cloþ of gold and not wiþ Sarge 2568
 Ful lik a lord þis nobul Duk cam ryde
 These tuo Thebans on eyþer side

And after rood þe queen and Emelye
 And after hem of ladyes anoper companye 2572
 And after hem of comunee after here degre
 And þus þey passeden þurgh þat cite
 And to þe lystes come þei by tyme
 It nas not of þe day ȝet fully pryme 2576
 whan sette was Theseus riche and hye
 ypolita þe queen and Emelye
 And oper ladyes in here degrees aboute
 vnto þe settes passeþ al þe route 2580
 And westward þorugh þe ȝates of mart
 Arcite and eek þe hundred of his part
 with baners ys I-entred right anon
 And þat selue moment Palomon 2584
 Is vnder Venus Estward in þat place
 with baner whyt and hardy cheer of face
IN al þe world to seeke vp and doun
 So euen wipoute Variacioun 2588
 Ther nere suche companyes tweye [leaf 36]
 For ther nas noon so wys þat cowþe seye
 That any had of oper auauntage
 Of worthines ne staat/ ne of visage 2592
 So euene were þey chosen for to gesse
 And in two Renges faire þey hem dresse
 And whan he names I-rad were enerychon
 That in here nombre gile were þer noon 2596
 The more he entere schett and armed hande



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 75

vp sprengen spares on twenty foot on hight
Out goon þe swardes as þe siluer bright 2608
The helmes þer to-hewen and to-schrede
Out brast þe blood wip stoute stremes reede
with mighty maces þe bones þay to-breste
he þurgh þe pikkest of þe þrong gan þreaste 2612
Ther stomblen steedes strong and doun can falle /
he rolled vnder foot as dop a balle
he feyneþ on his foot wip his tronchoun
And him hurteleþ with his hors a doun 2616
He þurgh þe body hurt is and sipþen take
Maugre his heed and brouȝt vnto þe stake /
As forward was right þer he most abyde /
Anoper lad is on þat oper syde 2620
And som tyme dop Theseus hem to rest
hem to refreissche and drinke if hem leest
Ful ofte a-day haue þis Thebans twoo
Togider y-met and wrought his felaw woo 2624
vnhorsed haþ ech oper of hem tweye
Ther nas no Tygyr in þe vale of Galgopleye
whan þat hir whelp is stole whan it is lite [fear 35, back]
So cruel on þe hunt/ as is arcite 2628
For Ielous hert vpon þis Palomon
Ne in Belmary þer is no fel lyoun
That hunted is or for hunger wood
Ne of his prey desireþ so þe blood 2632
As Palomon to sle his foo arcite
This Ielous strokes on here helmes byte
Out renneþ blood on boþe here sides reede
Som tyme an ende þer is on enery dede 2636
For er þe sonne vnto þe reaste went
The strang kyng Emetreus gan hent
This Palomon as he faught wip arcite
And his sward in his fleissch he did byte 2640
And by þe force of .xx. he is take
Vnȝolden and I-drawe vnto þe stake

And in þe Rescous of þis Palomon
 The stronge kyng · ligurgius is born a down 2644
 The kyng Emetreus for al his strengþe
 Is born out of his sadel his swerdea lengþe
 So hit him palamon er he were take
 But al for nouȝt he was brought to þe stake / 2648
 his hardy herte might him helpe nouȝt
 He most abyde whan þat he was caught
 By force and eek by compositioun
 who sorweþ now but Palomoun 2652
 That moot no more gon agayn to fight
 And whan þat Theseus had seen þat sight
 he cryed hoo / nomore for it is doon
 Ne noon schal lenger vnto his falaw goon 2656
 I wol be trewe Iuge and nouȝt partye
 Arcyte of Thebes schal haue Emelye
 That hap by his fortune hire I-wonne
 Anoon þer is noyse bygonne 2660
 For ioye of þis so lowde and heye with alle
 It semed þat þe listes wolde falle
 what can now fayre Venus doon aboue
 what seiþ sche now what doþ þis queen of loue / 2664
 But wepeþ so for wantyng of hir wille (leaf 30)
 Til þat hire teeres in þe lystes fille
 Sche sayde I am aschamed douteles
 Satournus seyde douȝter hold þy pees 2668

Must hit his wille his hand hit his haue



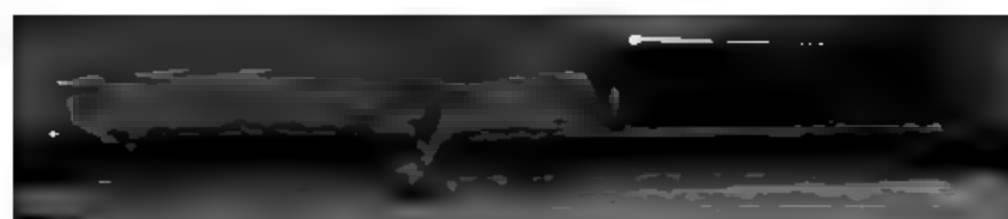
BOOK A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. MARLOWE 1594. 77

looking upward upon his Emperour
 And sche agayn him cast a friendly yee 2682
 For women as for to speke in courtene
 pay folwe alle þe favour of fortune
 And was alle his cheer and in his heart
 Out of þe ground a fyr infernal stert 2684
 From Pluto send at þe request of Saturne
 For which his heart for feere gan to turne
 And keep a syde and founn ierd as he keep 2686
 And or þat anye may take keep
 he pight him on þe pomel of þe heed
 That in þat place he lay as he were deed
 his breast tobroken with his sadil bowe
 As blak he lay as eny col or crowe 2692
 So was þe blood y-ronne in his face
 Anon he was y-born out of þe place
 with herte sore to Theseus paleys
 Tho was he coruen out of his harneys 2696
 And in a bed y-brought ful fair and blyue
 For þit he was in memory and on lyue
 And alway cryeng after Emelye
 Duk Theseus and al his companye 2700
 Is comen hom to Athenes his Cite
 with alle blys and gret solempnite
 Al be it þat þis auenture was falle 2702
 he nolde nought discomfort hem alle /
 Men seyde eek þat arcita schuld nought dye
 he schal be helyd of his maladye
 And of anoper þing þey were as fayn
 That of hem alle þer was noon y-slayn 2708
 Al were þey sore hurt and namely oon
 That wip a spere was pired his breast boon
 To oper woundes and to broken armes
 Some hadde salve and some hadde charmes 2712
 Fermacyes of herbes and eek saue
 They dronken for þey wolde here lyues haue

For which þis noble duk' as he wel can
 Comforteþ and honoureþ euery man 2716
 And made reual al þe lange night
 vnto the straunge lordes as it was right
 Ne þer was holden to discomfityng'
 But' as a Iustes or as a turmentyng' 2720
 For sople þer was no discomfiture
 For fallyng' is but' an aduenture
 Ne to be lad wip fore vnto þe stake
 Vnfolden and wip twenty knightes take 2724
 A person allone wipouten moo
 And rent' forþ by arme foot' and too
 And eek' his steede dryuen forþ wip staues
 wip foote men boþe ȝemen and knaues 2728
 It' was aretted him no vylonye
 Ne no maner man held it' no cowardye
For which Theseus lowd anon leet crie
 To stynten al rancour and al enuye 2732
 The gree as wel on o syde as on oþer
 And euery side lik' as oþeres broþer
 And ȝaf hem ȝiftes after here dogre
 And fully heeld a feste dayes þre 2736
 And conueyed þe knightes worþily
 Out' of his toun a iournee largely
 And hom went' euery man þe righte way
 Ther was no more but' far wel haue good day 2740

Ne may þe venym voyde ne expelle
 The pypes of his lounge gan to swelle 2752
 And euery lacerte in his brest adoun
 Is schent with venym and corrupcioun
 Him gayneþ noþer for to get his lyf
 Vomyt vp-ward ne downward laxatif / 2756
 Al is to-broken pilke regioun
 Nature hap now no dominacioun
 And certeynly wher nature wil not wirche
 Far wel phisik go bere þe man to chirche 2760
 This al and som þat arcyte moste dye
 For which he sendeþ after Emelye
 And Palomon þat was his coasyn deere
 Thanne seyde he þus as þe schul after heere 2764
 Naught may þe woful spirit/ in myn herte
 Declare a poynt of my sorwes smerte
 To þou my lady þat I loue most
 But I byquethe þe seruice of my gost 2768
 To þou abouen euery creature
 Syn þat my lyf may no lenger dure
 Allas þe woo allas þe peynes stronge
 That I for þou haue suffred and so longe 2772
 Allas þe deþ allas myn Emelye
 Allas departyng of our companye
 Allas myn hertes queen allas my wyf
 Myn hertes lady ender of my lyf 2776
 what is þis world what asken men to haue
 Now wiþ his loue now in his colde graue
 Allone wiþouten eny companye [leaf 32, back]
 Far wel my swete far wel myn Emelye 2780
 And softe take me in þour armes tweye
 For loue of god and herkneþ what I seye
 I haue heer with my coasyn Palomon
 had stryf and rancour many a day I-gon 2784
 For loue of þow and eek for Ielousie /
 And Iupiter so wis my sowle gye

To speken of a seruaunt proprely
 with alle circumstaunces trewely 2788
 That is to seyn troupe honour and knighthede
 wysdom humblesse astat. and by kynrede
 Fredam and al þat longeþ to þat art
 So Iupiter haue of my soule part 2792
 As in þis world right now ne know I non
 So worthy to be loued as Palomon
 That serueth þou and wol do al his lyf
 And if þat þe schul euer be a wyf 2796
 Forȝet not Palomon þat gentil man
 And with þat word his speche faile gan
 For fro his herte vp to his brest was come
 The cold of deþ þat him had ouercome 2800
 And ȝet more ouer in his armes twoo
 þe vital strengþ is lost and al a-goo
 Only the intellect wipouten more
 That dwelled in his herte sik and sore 2804
 Can fayle whan þe herte felte deth
 Duskyng his eyzen two and fayled breth
 But on his lady ȝit he cast his ye
 his laste word was mercy Emelye / 2808
 His spiryte chaunged was and wente þer
 As I cam neuer I can nat tellen wher
 Therefore I stynte I nam no dyuynistre /
 Of soules fynde I not in þis registre 2812
 Ne me list nat thowprouys to telle



GROUP A § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 81

when þat here housbonds ben from hem ago
 That for þe more part þey sorwen so 2824
 Or elles fallen in such maladye
 That atte laste certeynly þey dye
 Infynyt been þe sorwes and þe teeres
 Of olde folk þat ben of tendre yeeres 2828
 So gret a wepyng was þer noon certayn
 when Ector was I-brought al freisch I-layn
 As þat þer was for dep of þis Theban
 For sorwe of him þer weeped boþe child and man 2832
 At troye alas þe pite þat was þere
 Cracchyng of cheekes rendyng eek of here
 why woldist / þou be deed þis wommen crye
 And haddest gold ynow; and Emelye 2836
 No man mighte / glade Theseus
 Sauyng his olde fader Egeus /
 That knew þis worldes transmutacioun
 As he hadde seen it torne vp and down 2840
 Ioye after woo and woo aftir gladnesse
 And schewed him ensample and likenesse
Right as þer deyde neuer man quod he
 That he ne lyued in erþe in som degree 2844
 Ȝit þer ne lyuede neuer man he seyde
 In al þis world þat som tyme he ne deyde
 This world nys but a þurghfare ful of woo
 And we ben pilgryms passyng to and fro 2848
 Dep is an ende of euery worldly sore
 And ouer al þis Ȝit seide he mochi more
 To þis effect // ful wysly to enhort
 The peple þat schulde him recomforte 2852
Duk Theseus with al his busy cure
 Cast busily wher þat þe sepulture
 Of good arcyte may bent y-maked be [leaf 80, b. col.]
 And eek most honorable in his degre 2856
 And atte last he took conclusioun
 That ther as first Arcite and Palomon

hadden for loue þe batail hem bytwene
 That in the selue groue soote and greene 2860
 Ther as he hadde his amorous desires
 His compleynt and for loue his hoots fyres
 he wolde make a fyr in which thoffice
 Funeral he might al accomplice 2864
 And leet comaunde anon to hakke and hewe /
 The Okes olde and lay hem on a rewe
 In culpouns wel arrayed for to brenne
 his officers wip swifte foot þey renne 2868
 And ryde anon at his comaundement
 And after þis Theseus hath I-sent
 After a beer and it al ouer spradde
 wip cloþ of golde þe richest þat he hadde 2872
 And of þe same sute he clad arcyte
 vpon his hondes were his gloues white
 Eke on his heed a croune of laurer grene /
 And in his hond a swerd ful bright and kene 2876
 He leyde him bare þe visage on þe beere
 Ther wip he weep þat pite was to heere
 And for þe poeple schulde see him alle /
 whan it was day he brought hem to þe halle 2880
 That roreth of þe cry and of þe soun
 Tho cam þis woful Theban Palomoun
 wip flotery berd and ruggy assly heeres
 In cloþis blak y-dropped al wip teeres 2884



GROFF A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 83

The priddy bar with him his bowe turkeys
Of brend gold was þe caas and eek' þe herneys 2896
And riden forth a paas with sorwful chore
Toward þe grone as ȝe schul after heere
The noblest' of þe grekes þat' þer were
vpon here schuldres carieden þe beere 2900
with alak' paas and eyhen reed and wete
Thurgh-out' þe cite by þe maister streete
That' sprad was al with blak' and wonder hye
Right' of þe same is al þe stret' I-wrye 2904
vpon þe right' hond went' olde Egeus
And on þat' oþer syde duk' Theseus
with vessels in here hand with gold wel fyn
As ful of hony mylk' and blood and wyn 2908
Eke Palomon with a gret companye
And after þat' com woful Emelye
with fyr in hond as was þat' tyme þe gyse /
To do þoffice of funeral seruiſe 2912
Heyȝ labour and ful gret apparailynge
was at þe seruice and at þe fyr makynge
That' with his grene top þe heuen raughte
And twenty fadme of brede tharme straughte / 2916
This is to seyn þe boowes were so brode
Of stree first' was þer leyd ful many a loode
but' how þe fyr was makyd vpon highte
Ne eek' þe names how þe trees highte 2920
As Oak' · fyr · birch · asp · aldir · holm · popler ·
wilw. elm plane. assch. box. chesteyn lynde laurer.
Mapul. thorn · beech · hasil · ew · wyppyltre
how þey weren felde schal nouȝt be told for me 2924
Ne how þe goddes ronnen vp and down
Discheryt of here habitacioun
In which þey whilom woned in rest, and pees
Nymphes. Faunes and Amadryes 2928
Ne how þe beestes and þe briddes alle
Fledden for feere / whan þe woode was falle /

Ne how þe ground agast' was of þe light' (leaf 22, back)

That' was nought' wont' to see no sonne bright' 2932

Ne how þe fyr was couchid first' wip stree

And þanne with drye stykkes clouen in three

And þanne wip grene woode and spicerie

And þanne wip cloth of gold and wip perrye 2936

And gerlandes hangyng' with ful many a flour

The myrre thensens wip also gret' odour

Ne how arcyte lay among' al þis

Ne what' richesse / aboute his body is 2940

Ne how þat' Emely as was þe gyse

Putt' in þe fyr of funeral seruise

Ne how she swowned whan sche made þe fyre

Ne what' sche spak' ne what' was hire desire 2944

Ne what' iewels men in þe fyr þo cast'

whan þat' þe fyr was gret' and brente fast'

And how sum caste hir scheeld and summe her spere

And of here vestimentz which þat' þey were 2948

And cuppes ful of wyn and mylk' and blood

Vnto þe fyr þat' brent' as it were wood

Ne how þe gregoyas wip an huge route

Thre tymes ryden al þe fyr aboute 2952

vpon þe lefte hond with an heih schoutyng'

And pries wip here speres clateryng'

And pries how þe ladyes gan to crye

Ne how þat' lad was homeward Emelye 2956

By proces and by lengþe of certeyn ȝeres
 Al styntyd is þe mornynge and þe teeres 2968
 Of alle grekys by oon general assent
 Than semed me ther was a parlement [leaf 40]
 At athenes on a certeyn poynt / and cas
 Among þe whiche poyntes spoken was 2972
 To han wiþ certeyn contrees alliaunce /
 And haue fully of Thebens obeissance
 For which þis noble Theseus anon
 let senden after gentil Palomon 2976
 Vnwist of him what was þe cause and why
 But in his blake cloþes sorwfully
 he cam at his comaundement in hye
 Tho sente Theseus for Emelye 2980
 whan þey were sette and husslit was al þe place
 And Theseus abyden hadde a space
 Or eny word cam fro his wyse brest
 His eyen set he þer as was his lest 2984
 And wiþ a sad visage he syked stille
 And after þat right þus he seide his wille
The firste moeuere of þe cause aboue
 whan he first made þe fayre cheyne of loue 2988
 Gret was theeffect / and heigh was his entente /
 wel wist he why and what þerof he mente
 For which þat faire cheyne of loue he bond
 The fyr þe watir eyr and eek þe lond 2992
 In certeyn boundes þat þey may not flee
 That same prynce and moeuere eek quod he /
 hap stabled in þis wrecched world a doun
 Certeyn dayes and duracioun 2996
 To alle þat er engendrid in þis place
 Ouer þe day þey may nat pace
 Al mowe they ȝit wel here dayes abregge
 Ther needeþ non auctorite tallegge 3000
 For it is preued by experience
 But þat me lust declare my sentence

Than may men wel by þis ordre discerne
 That þilke moeuere stabul is and eterne 3004
 wel many men knewe but it be a fool

That euery partye dyryueþ from his hool
 For nature haþ nat take his bygynnyng'
 Of no partye ne cantel of a þing' [leaf 60, back] 3008

But of a þing' þat parfyt is and stable /
 Descendyng' so til it be corumpable
 And þerfore of his wyse purueaunce /
 He hath so wel biset his ordenaunce 3012

That spices of þinges and progressiouns
 Schullen endure by successiouns
 And nat eterne be wipoute lye
 This maistow vnderstand and se at ye 3016

LO þe Ook þat haþ so long' norisschyng'
 Fro tyme þat it gynneþ first to spring'
 And as so long' a lyf as we may see
 Ȝet atte laste wasted is þe tree 3020

Considereþ eek' how þat þe harde stoon
 vnder oure foot / on which we trede and goon
 Ȝit wasteth it as it lip by þe weye
 The brode Ryuer som tyme wexeþ dreye 3024

The grete townes see we wane and wende
 Than may I see þat al þing' haþ an ende
OF man and womman se we wel also /
 That wendeþ in oon of þis termes two 3028

That is to sayn in souþe or elles in nort

And here agayn no creature of lyue
 Of no degre auayleþ for to stryue 3040
Than is it wisdom as þenkeþ me
 To maken vertu of necessite
 And take it wel þat we may nat eschewe
 And namely þat þat to vs alle is dewe / 3044
 And who-so gruccheþ aught he doþ folye
 And rebel is to him þat al may gye [leaf 41]
 And certeynly a man haþ most honour
 To deyen in his excellence and flour 3048
 whan he is siker of his goode name
 Than haþ he doon his freend ne him no schame
 And gladder ought his freend ben of his dep
 whan with honour is ȝolden vp þe breth 3052
 Thanne whan his name appeled is for age
 For al forgeten is his vasselage
 Thanne is it best as for a worþi fame
 To dye whan a man is best of name 3056
 The contrary of al this is wilfulnesse
 why grucchen we why haue we heynnesse /
 That good arcyte of chyualry þe flour
 Departed is with worschip and honour 3060
 Out of þis foule prisoun of þis lyf
 why gruccheþ heer his cosyn and his wyf
 Of his wel fare þat louen him so wel
 Can he hem thank / nay / god woot neuer a del 3064
 That boþe his soule and eek hem self offende
 And ȝet þey may here lustes nat amende
That may I conclude of þis longe serye
 But aftir wo I rede vs to be merye 3068
 And þanke Iubiter al of his grace
 And or þat we departe fro þis place /
 I rede þat we make of sorwes two
 O parfyt ioye lastyng euer mo 3072
 And lokeþ now wher most sorwe is her-Inne /
 Ther wol we first amenden and bygynne /

Sustyr quod he þis is my ful assent
 wip al thauys heer of my parlement 3076
 That gentil Palomon þour owne knight
 That serueþ þow with herte wil and might
 And euer haþ doon syn fyrst tyme þe him knewe
 That þe schul of þour grace vpon him rewe 3080
 And take him for þour housbond and for lord
 Lene me þoure hand for þis is oure acord
 let see now of þour wommanly pite
 he is a kynges broþir sone pardee (leaf 41, back) 3084
 And þough he were a pore bachiller
 Syn he haþ serued þou so many a þeer
 And had for þou so gret aduersite
 hit moste be considered trusteþ me 3088
 For gentil mercy aughte passe right
 Than seyde he þus to Palomon ful right
 I trowe þer needeþ litel sermonyng
 To make þou assente to þis þing 3092
 Com neer and tak þour lady by þe hond
 Bitwix hem was I-maad anon þe bond
 That highte matrimoyn or mariage
 By alle þe counseil and þe baronage 3096
 And thus with blys and eek wip melodye
 Haþ Palomon I-wedded Emelye
 And god þat al þis wyde world haþ wrought
 Send him his loue þat haþ it deere I-bought 3100
 For now is Palomon in al his wele

[No break in the MS.]

¶ And þus bygynneþ þe prologe of þe myllere

WHan þat þe knight had þus his tale I-told
In al þe route nas þer 3ongt ne old
That he ne seyde it was a noble story

And worþi to be drawn in memory 3112

And namely þe gentils euerich oon

Oure host þo lowh and swoor so moot I goon

This gop right wel vnbokeled is þe male /

Let se now who schal telle anoper tale 3116

For trewely þis game is wel bygonne /

Now telleþ now sir monk if þat 3e konne

Som what to quyte wiþ þe knightes tale /

The Myller þat for drunken was al pale 3120

So þat vnnethe vpon his hors he sat [leaf 42]

he wold auale nowþer hood ne hat

Ne abyde no man for his curtesye

But in Pilates voys he gan to crye 3124

And swor by armes and by blood and bones

I can a noble tale for þe noones

with which I wol now quyte þe knightes tale

Oure hoost saugh wel how dronke he was of ale 3128

And seyde Robyn abyde my leue broþer

Som better man schal telle vs first anoper

Abyd and let vs worken þriftyly

By goddes soule quod he þat wol nat I 3132

For I wol speke or elles go my way

Oure host answered / tel on a deuel way

Thou art a fool þy witt is ouercome /

¶ Now herkneþ quod þis myller al and some 3136

But first I make a protestacioun

That I am dronke I knowe wel by my soun

And þefore if þat I mys speke or seye

wyte it þe ale of Southwerk I 3ou preye 3140

For I wol telle a legende and a lyf
 Bothe of a Carpenter and of his wyf
 how þat þe clerk hap set þe wrytes cappe /
The reue answered and seyde stynt þi clappe / 3144
 let be þy lewed drunken harlottrye
 It is a synne and eek a greet folye
 To speyren eny man or him defame
 And eek to brynge wyues in ylle name 3148
 Thou mayst ynow of oþer þinges seyn
 This dronken Miller spak ful sone a-geyn
 And seyde leene brother Ossewold
 who hath no wyf he is no Cokewold 3152
 But I seye not þerfore þat þou art oon
 Ther been ful goode wyues many oon
 And euer a þousand goode agayns oon badde
 That knowest þou wel þy self but if þou madde 3156
 why art þou angry with my tale now /
 I haue a wyf þar de as wel as thou
 3it nolde I for the oxen in my plough [leaf 42, back]
 Take vpon me more þan ynough 3160
 Though þat þou deme þiself þat þou be oon
 I wol bileene wel þat I am ¹oon [1 a later n. added]
 An housbond schal not be inquisityf
 Of goddes prynete ne of his wyf 3164
 So þat he fynde goddes foyssoun þere
 Of þe remenaunt needeþ nought enquere /

what he hold I am but þat þe Miller

GROUP A. § 8. KNIGHT-MILLER LINK. Harleian 7334. 91

Turne ouer þe leef and cheese anoþer tale
For he schal fynde ynowe bothe gret and smale
Of storial þing þat toucheþ gentilesse
And eek more ryalte and holynesse 3180
Blameþ nat me If þat ȝe cheese amys
The Miller is a cherl ȝe know wel þis
So was þe reene and opir many mo
And harlotry þey tolden boþe two 3184
Anyseþ ȝou and put me out / of blame
And men schulde nat make earnest of game
Here endeþ þe prologe of þe Miller

[*No break in the MS.*]

¶ And bygynneth his tale

Whilom þer was dwellyng^t at Oxenford
 A riche gnof^t that^t gestes heeld to boorde
 And of his craft^t he was a Carpenter 3189
 wip^t him þer was dwellyng^t a pore scoler
 had lerned art^t but^t al his fantasye

was torned for to lerne astrologye 3192

An cowde a certeyn of^t conclusiouns

To deme by interrogaciouns

If^t þat men axed him in certeyn houres [? *tenf* 48]

⁊ whan þat men schuld han drough^t or ellys schoures 3196

Or if^t men axed him what schulde bifalle

Of euery þing I may nouȝ^t reken hem alle

This clerk^t was cleped heende Nicholas

Of derne loue he cowde and of solas 3200

And þer wip^t he was sleigh and ful priue

And lik^t amayden meke for to se

A chambir had he in his hostillerye

Alone wipouten eny compaignye 3204

Ful fetisly I-dight^t with herbes soote /

And he himself^t as swete as is þe roote

Of lokorys or eny Cetewale

his almagest^t and bookes gret and smale 3208

his controuerse booke of astrologye

And þus þis sweete clerk' his tyme spente
 After his frendes fyndyng' and his rente 3220
This carpenter had weddid newe a wyf'
 which þat' he loved more þan his lyf'
 Of eyzteteene ȝeer sche was of age
 Gelous he was and heeld hir narwe in cage 3224
 For sche was wilde & ȝong' and he was old
 And demed himself' be lik' a Cokewold
 he knew nat Catoun for his wit' was rude
 That' bad man schulde wedde his similitude 3228
 Men schulde wedde aftir here astaat'
 For eelde and ȝoupe ben often at' debaat'
 But ayn þat' he was brouȝt' in to þe snare
 He moste endure as opere doon his care 3232
Fair was þe ȝonge wyf' and þer wiþ al
 As eny wesil hir body gent and smal [leaf 48, back]
 A seynt' sche wered barred al of silk'
 A harmclop eek' as whit' as morne mylk' 3236
 vpon hir lendes ful of many a gore
 whit' was hir smok' and browdid albyfore
 And eek' bylynde on hir coler aboute
 Of coleblak' silk' wipinne and eek' wipoute 3240
 The tapes of hir white voluper
 weren of þe same sute of hire coler
 hir filet' brood of silk' y-set ful heye
 And certeynly sche hadd a licorous eyȝe 3244
 Ful smal y-pulled weren hir browes two /
 And þe were bent as blak' as a elo
 Sche was wel more blisful on to see
 Than is þe newe perionette tree 3248
 And softer þan þe wol is of a weþir
 And by hir gurdil lyng a purs of leþir
 Tassid wiþ silk' and perled wiþ latoun
 In al þis world to seken vp and down 3252
 Ther nys no man so wys þat coupe þenche /
 So gay a popilot' or such a wenche /

For brighter was þe smylyng' of hir hewe
 Than in þe tour þe noble I-forged newe 3256
 But of hir song' it' was as lowde and ȝerne
 As eny swalwe chiteryng' on a berne
 Ther to sche cowde skippe and make game
 As eny kyde or calf folowyng' his dame 3260
 hir mouth was sweete as bragat' is or meth
 Or hoord of apples layd in hay or heth
 wynsyng' sche was as is a Ioly colt'
 long' as a mast' / and vpright' as a bolt / 3264
 A broch sche bar vpon hir loue coleer
 As brod as is þe bos of a bocleer
 hir schos were laced / on hir legges heyȝe
 Sche was a primerole¹ a pigges neyȝe 3268
 For eny lord haue liggyng' in his bedde [*a later & is put in here*]
 Or ȝet' for eny good ȝeman to wedde
 Now sir and eft' sir / so bifel þe cas
 That on a day þis heende Nicholas [*leaf 44*] 3272
 Fil wip þis ȝonge wyf' to rage and pleye
 whil þat' hir housbond was at Oseneye
 As clerkes ben ful sotil and ful queynte
 And pryuely he caught hir by þe queynte 3276
 And seyde I-wis but if I haue my wille
 For derne loue of þe lemman I spille /
 And heeld hir harde by þe haunche boones
 And seyde lemman loue me al at ones 3280

On I-wis þis was the first of the Miller's Tale.

And swor hir oth / by seynt thomas of kent
 That sche wol be at his comaundement 3292
 whan þat sche may hir leysir wel aspye
 Myn housbond is so ful of Ielousie /
 That but ȝe wayten wel and be pryue
 I woot right wel I am but deed quod sche 3296
 ȝe mosten be ful derne as in þis caas
 Ther of ne care þe nought quod Nicholas
 A clerk hap litherly byset his while
 But if he cowde a carpenter bygyle 3300
 And þus þey ben acorded and I-sworn
 To wayte a tyme as I haue told biforn
Whan Nicholas had doon þus euery del
 And thakked hire aboute þe lendys wol 3304
 he kist hir sweet / and takeþ his sawtrye
 And pleyeþ fast and makeþ melodye
 Than fyl it þus / þat to þe parisch chirche /
 Cristes owen werkes for to wirche 3308
 This goode wyf / went on an haly day
 Hir forheed schon as bright as eny day [traf 44, barð]
 So was it waisschen whan sche leet hir werk
Now þer was of þat chirche a parisch clerk 3312
 The which þat was I-cleped Absolon
 Crulle was his heer and as þe gold it schon
 And strowted as a fan right large and brood
 Ful streyt and euene lay his ioly schood 3316
 his rode was reed his eyzen gray as goos
 with Powles wyndowes coruen in his schoos
 In his hoses reed he went fetusly
 I-clad he was ful smal and propurly 3320
 Al in a kirtel of a fyn wachet
 Schapen with goores in þe newe get
 And þer vpon he had a gay surplys
 As whyt as is þe bloame vpon þe rys 3324
 A mery child he was so god me saue
 wel coupe he lete blood and clippe and schane

And make a chartre of lond and acquitaunce
 In twenty maners he coude skip and daznce 3328
 After þe scole of Oxenforde þo
 And wip his legges casten to and fro
 And playen songes on a smal rubible
 Therto he sang som tyme a lowde quynyble 3332
 And as wel coude he pleye on a giterne /
 In al þe toun nas brewhous ne tauerne
 That he ne visited with his soles
 Ther as any gaylard tapster was 3336
 Bot sop to say he was som del squaymous
 Of fartyng / and of speche daungerous
 This abaolon þat ioly was and gay
 Gop wip a senser on þe haly day 3340
 Sensyng þe wyues of þe parisch fast
 And many a louely look on hem he cast
 And namely on þis Carpenteres wyf
 To loken on hire him þought a mery lyf 3344
 Sche was so propre sweete and licorous
 I dar wel sayn if sche had ben a mous
 And he a cat he wold hir hent anon
This parisch clerk this Ioly Abaolon (leaf 48) 3348
 Hap in his herte such a loue longyng
 That of no wyf ne took he noon offryng /
 For curtesy he seyde he wolde noon
 The moone at night ful cleer and brighte schoon 3352
 And abeolon his senser þat Ioly

Ful wel accordyng to his gyternyng
 This carpenter awook and herde him syng 3364
 And spak vnto his wyf and sayde anon
 what alisoun herestow not absolon
 That chaunteþ þus vnder oure boure smal
 And sche answerd hir housbond þer wip al 3368
 þis God woot Iohn I heere it euery del
This passeþ forth what wil 3e bet þan wel
 Fro day to day þis Ioly Absolon
 So woweþ hire þat him is wo bigon 3372
 he wakeþ al þe night and al þe day
 To kembe his lokkes brode and made him gay
 he wowitz hire by mene and by brocage
 And swor he wolde ben hir owne page / 3376
 he syngeþ crowyng as a nightyngale
 And sent hire pyment meth and spiced ale /
 And wafres pypyng hoot out of þe gleede
 For þat sche was of toun he profred meede 3380
 For som folk wol be wonne for richesse
 And som for strokes som for gentillesse
 Som tyme to schewe his lightnes and maistrye
 he pleyeth herod; on a scaffold hye 3384
 But what avayleþ him as in þis caas /
 Sche loueþ so þis heende Nicholas [leaf 45, back]
 That absolon may blowe þe bukkes horn
 he ne had for al his labour but a skorn 3388
 And þus sche makeþ absolon hir ape
 And al his earnest torneþ to a lape
Ful soþ is þis prouerbe it is no lye
 Men seyn right þus alway þe ney aye 3392
 Makeþ þe forre leef to be loþ
 For þough þat absolon be wood or wroth
 By cause þat he fer was from here sight
 This Nicholas hap stonden in his light 3396
 Now bere þe wel þou heende Nicholas
 For absolon may wayle and synge alas

¶ And so bifell it on a Satyrday
 This Carpenter was gon to Osenay 3400
 And heende Nicholas and alisoun
 Acordid ben to pis conclusioun
 That Nicholas schal schapen hem a wyle
 This sely Ielous housbond to begyle / 3404
 And if so were pis game wente aright
 Sche schulde slepe in his arm al night
 For pis was hire desir and his also
 And right anon wipouten wordes mo 3408
 This Nicholas no lenger wold he tarye
 But dop ful softe in to his Chambur carye
 Boþe mete and drynke for a day or tweye
 And to hir housbond bad hir for to seye 3412
 If þat he axed after Nicholas
 Sche schulde seye sche wiste nat wher he was
 Of al þat day sche saw him nat with eye
 Sche trowed he were falle in som maladye 3416
 For no cry þat hir mayden cowde him calle
 he nolde answere for nought þat may bifalle
This passeþ forþ al þat ilke satyrday
 Tha Nicholas in his chambre lay 3420
 And eet and drank and dede what/ him leste
 Til soneday þe sonne was gon to reste
 This sely carpenter hap gret meruaile [leaf 46]
 Of Nicholas or what þing may him ayle 3424

And at þe chambir dore whil he stood
 he cryed and knocked as þat he were wood 3436
 what how what do 3e mayster nicholay
 how may 3e slepen al þis longe day
 But al for nought he herde nat o word
 An hole he fond right lowe vpon a boord 3440
 Ther as þe cat was wont in for to creepe /
 And at þat hole he loked in ful deepe /
 And atte laste he hadde of him a sight
 This nicholas sat euer gapyng vpright 3444
 As he had loked on þe newe moone
 Adoun he goþ and tolde his mayster soone
 In what aray he sawh þis ilke man
 This carpenter to blessen him bygan 3448
 And seyde now help vs seynte Frideswyde
 A man woot litel what him schal betyde
 This man is falle with his astronomye
 In som woodnesse or in som agonye 3452
 I thought ay wel how þat it schulde be
 Men schulde nought knowe of goddes pryuyte
 ¶ 3e blessed be alwey a lewed man
 That nat but oonly his bileene can 3456
 So ferde anoper clerk with astronomye /
 he walked in the feeldes for to pryve
 vpon þe sterres what þer schulde bifalle
 Til he was in a marle pit I-falle / 3460
 he saugh nat þat but 3et by seint Thomas /
 Me reweth sore for heende nicholas [leaf 68, back]
 he schal be ratyd of his studyyng
 If þat I may by ihū heuen kyng 3464
 Gete me a staf þat I may vnder spore
 whil þat þou Robyn heuest vp þe dore
 he schal out of his studyyng as I geese
 And to þe chambir dore he gan him drease / 3468
 his knaue was a strong karl for þe noones
 And by þe hasp he haf it vp at oones

And in þe floor þe dore fil doun anoon
 This nicholas sat stille as eny stoon 3472
 And euer he capyd vpward to þe eyr
 This Carpenter wende he were in despair
 And hent him by þe schuldres mightily
 And schook him harde and cryed spitously 3476
 what Nicholas what how man loke a doun
 A-wake and þynk on cristes passioun
 I crowche þe from Elues and from wightes
 Ther-with þe night-spel seyde he anon rightes 3480
 On þe foure halues of þe hous aboute /
 And of þe þreissfold of þe dore wipoute
 lord Ihū crist and seynte bendight
 Blesse þis hous from euery wikkede wight 3484
 for nyghtes verray þe white pater-noster
 wher wonestow now, seynte petres soster
 And atte laste heende Nicholas
 Gan for to syke sore and seyde alas 3488
 Schal al þe world be lost eft sones now
 This Carpenter answerde what seystow /
 what þenk on god as we doon men þat swynke
 This Nicholas answerde fette me drynke 3492
 And after wol I speke in prynyte
 Of certeyn þing þat toucheþ þe and me
 I wol telle it non oþer man certayn
 This Carpenter goþ forth and comp agayn 3496

STANFORD LIBRARY

GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7834. 101

That if þou wreye me þou schalt be wood
 Nay crist forbede it for his holy blood 3508
 Quod þo þis sely man I am no labbe
 Though I it say I am nought leef to gabbe /
 Say what þou wolt I schal it neuer telle /
 To child ne wyf by him þat harwed helle 3512
Now Iohan quod nicholas I wol not lye
 I haue I-founde in myn astrologye
 As I haue loked in þe moone bright
 That now on monday next at quarter night 3516
 Schal falle a reyn and þat so wilde and wood
 That half so gret was neuer Noes flood
 This worlde he seyde more þan an hour
 Schal ben I-dreynt so hidous is þe schour 3520
 Thus schal mankynde drenche and leese his lyf
 This Carpenter answered allas my wyf
 And shal she drenche allas myn alisoun
 For sorwe of þis he fel almost adoun 3524
 And seyde is þer no remedy in þis caas
 whe þis for gode quod heende Nicholas
 If þou wolt werken aftir lore and reed
 Thou maist nought worke after þin owen heed 3528
 For þus seip Salomon þat was ful trewe
 werke by counseil / and þou schalt nat rewe
 And if þou worken wolt by good counsail
 I vndertake wipouten mast and sail 3532
 3et schal I sauen hir and þe and me
 hastow nat herd / how saued was Noe
 whan þat our lord had warned him biforn
 That al þe world wip watir schulde be lorn 3536
 3is quod þis Carpenter ful 3ore ago
 hastow nought herd quod Nicholas also (leaf 47, back)
 The sorwe of Noe wip his felaschipe
 That he hadde or he gat his wyf to schipe 3540
 him hadde wel leuer I dar wel vndertake /
 At þilke tyme þan alle his weperes blake

That sche hadde a schip hir self allone
 And perfore wostow what is best to doone / 3544
 This axep hast and of an hasty ping
 Men may nought preche or make taryyng
 Anon go gete vs fast in to pis In
 A knedyng trowh or elles a kemelyn 3548
 For ech of vs but loke þat þey be large
 In which þat we may rowe as in a barge
 And haue þer In vitaille sufficient
 But for o day, fy on þe remenant 3552
 The water schal aslake and gon away
 Aboute prime vppon þe nexte day
 But Robyn may not wite of þis þy knaue
 Ne ek þy mayde Gille I may not saue 3556
 Aske nought why for þough þou aske me
 I wol nat tellen goddes pryete
 Sufficeth þe but if þat þy witt/ madde
 To haue as gret a grace as noe hadde / 3560
 Thy wyf schal I wel sauen out of doute /
 Go now þy wey and speed þe heer aboute
 And whan þou hast for hir and þe and me /
 I-goten vs þis knedyng tubbes þre 3564
 Than schalt þou hange hem in þe roof ful hie
 That no man of oure purueaunce aspye
 And whan þou þus hast doon as I haue seyde
 And best our vitaille fure in hem I leyd 3568

And þou wolt' seye heyl maister nicholay
 Good morn I see þe wel for it is day 3580
 And þan schul we be lordes al oure lyf
 Of al þe world as noe and his wyf
 But of oo þing I warne þe ful right
 Be wel auysed of þat ilke nyght 3584
 That we ben entred in to schippes boord
 That not of vs ne speke not a word
 Ne clepe ne crye but be in his preyere
 For it is goddes owne heste deere 3588
 Thy wyf and þou most hangen fer a-twynne
 For þat bitwixe 3ou schal be no synne
 No more in lokyng þan þer schal in dede /
 This ordynaunce is seyde, so god me speede / 3592
 To morwe at night whan men ben a slepe /
 In to our knedyng tubbes wol we crepe /
 And sitte þer abydyng goddes grace /
 Go now þy way I haue no lenger space 3596
 To make of þis no lenger sermonyng
 Men seyn þus / send þe wyse and sey no þing
 Thou art so wys it needeth nat þe teche
 Go saue oure lyf and þat I þe byseeche / 3600
This seely carpenter goþ forþ his way
 Ful ofte he seyde alas and weylaway
 And to his wyf he told his pryuate
 And sche was war and knew it bet þan he / 3604
 what al this wente cast was for to seye /
 But napeles sche ferd as sche schuld deye
 And seyde alas go forth þy way anon
 help vs to skape or we be ded echon 3608
 I am þy verray trewe wedded wyf
 Go deere spouse and help to saue oure lyf
 lo which a gret þing is affeccioun
 A man may dye for ymaginacoun 3612
 So deepe may impressioun be take
 This seely Carpenter bygynneth quake

him þenkeþ verrayly þat he may se
 Noes flood come walkyng' as þe see / 3616
 To drenchen alisoun his hony deere
 he weepeth wayleþ he maketh sory cheere
 he sikeþ with ful many a sory swough
 And goth and geteth him a knedyng' trough 3620
 And after þat a tubbe and a kymelyn
 And pryuely he sent hem to his In
 And heng' hem in þe roof in pryuate
 His owne hond þan made laddres þre 3624
 To clymben by þe ronges and þe stalkes
 vnto þe tubbes hangyng' in þe halkes
 And hem vitayled boþe trough and tubbe
 with breed and cheese wiþ good ale in a lubbe 3628
 Suffiayng' right ynough as for a day
 But or þat he had maad al þis array
 he sent his knaue and eek' his wenche also
 vpon his neede to londoun fer to go 3632
 And on þe monday whan it drew to nyght
 he schette his dore wiþouten candel light
 And dressed al þis þing' as it schuld be
 And schortly vp þey clumben alle þre 3636
 They seten stille wel a forlong' way
 Now pater noster clum quod Nicholay
 And Clum quod Ion and Clum . quod. Alisoun
 This Carpenter seyde his deuocioun 3640

Ther as þe Carpenter was wont to lye
 Ther was þe Reuel and þe melodye [1007 49] 3652
 And þus lith alisoun and Nicholas
 In busynesse of myrþe and of solas
 Til þat þe belles of laudes gan to ryng
 And freres in þe Chauncel gan to synge 3656
This parissch clerk þis amorous abeolon
 That is for loue so harde and woo bygon
 vpon þe Monday was at Osenay
 with company him to desporte and play 3660
 And axed vpon caas a cloysterer
 Ful pryuely after þe carpenter
 And he drough him a part out of þe chirche
 And sayde nay I say him nat here wirche 3664
 Syn satirday I trow þat he be went
 For tymber þer our abbot hath him sent/
 For he is wont for tymber for to goo
 And dwellen at þe graunge a day or tuo 3668
 Or elles he is at his hous certayn
 wher þat he be I can nat soþly sayn
This absolou ful ioly was and light
 And thoughte now is tyme wake al night 3672
 For sikerly I sawh him nought styryng
 Aboute his dore syn day bigan to spryng
 So mote I pryue I schal at Cokkes crowe
 Ful pryuely go knocke at his wyndowe 3676
 That stant ful lowe vpon his bowres wal
 To alisoun þan wol I tellen al
 My loue-longyng for ȝet I schal not myse
 That atte leste wey I schal hir kisse 3680
 Som maner comfort schal I haue þer fay
 My mouth hap icched al þis longe day
 That is a signe of kissyng atte leste
 Al nyght I mette eek I was at a feste 3684
 Ther fore I wol go slepe an hour or tweye
 And at þe night þan wol I wake and pleye

whan þat þe firste cok' haþ crowe anon
 vp ryst þis Iolyf' loue absolon 3688
 And him arrayeþ gay at poynt' deys
 But first' he cheweþ greyn and lycoris (leaf 49, back)
 To smellen swete or he hadde kempt' his heere
 vnder his tunge a trewe loue he beere / 3692
 For þer by wende he to be gracious
 he romeþ to þe carpenteres hous
 And stille he stant' vnd þe schot' wyndowe /
 vnto his brest' it' raught/ it' was so lowe / 3696
 And soft' he cowhip with a semy soun
 what' do 3e hony comb swete alisoun
 My fayre bryd my swete Cynamome
 Awake lemman myn and spekeþ tome 3700
 wel litel þynke 3e vpon my wo
 That' for 3oure loue I swelte þer I go
 No wonder is if þat I swelte and swete /
 I morne as doþ a lamb after þe tete 3704
 I-wis lemman I haue such loue-longyng'
 That' like a turtil trewe is my moornyng'
 I may not' ete no more þan a mayde /
 ¶ Go fro þe wyndow lakke fool sche sayde / 3708
 As help me god it wol not' be com paine
 I loue anoþer and elles were I to blame
 wel bet' þan þe by Ihū absolon
 Go forþ þy wey or I wol cast' a stoon 3712
 And let me slepe a twenty deulway

And seide I am a lord at alle degrees 3724

For after þis I hope þer comen more

Lemman þy grace / and swete bryd þyn ore

The wyndow sche vndyd and þat in hast

haue doon quod sche com of and speed þe fast 3728

lest þat our neyghebores þe aspye

This absolon gan wipe his mouþ ful drye (100/10)

Derk was þe night as picche or as a cole /

Out atte wyndow putte sche hir hole / 3732

And absolon him fel no bet ne wers

But wip his mouth he kist hir naked ers

Ful sauorly, whan he was war of þis

Abak he sterte and þought it was amys 3736

For wel he wist a womman hap no berd

he felt a þing al rough and long I-herd

And seyde fy alas what haue I do

Tehee quod sche / and clapt þe wyndow to 3740

And absolon goþ forþ a sory paas

A berd a berd / quod heende Nicholas

By goddes corps þis game goþ fair and wel

This seely absolon herd euery del 3744

And on his lippe he gan for angir byte

And to himself he seyde I schal þe quyte

Who rubbiþ now who froteth now his lippes 3747

wip dust wip sand wip straw wip cloth wip chippes

But absolon þat seith fulofte alas

My soule bytake I vnto Sathanas

But me were lener þan alle þis toun quod he

Of þis dispit awroken for to be 3752

Allas quod he alas I nadde bleynt

his hote loue was cold and al I-queynt

For fro þat tyme þat he had kist hire ers

Of paramours ne sette he nat a kere 3756

For he was helyd of his maledye

Fulofte paramours he gan deffye

And wept as dop a child þat is I-bete

A softe paas went he ouer þe strete / 3760

Vnto a smyth men clepith daun Gerueys
 That in his forge smythed plowh harneys
 He scharpeth schar and cultre byaily
 This absolon knokkeþ al esily 3764
 And seyde vnto Geruays and þat anoon
 what' who art' thou? it' am I Absolon
 what' Absolon what' ¹cristes swete tree [*a later line to put here*]
 why ryse þe so rathe benedicite [*leaf 54, back*] 3768
 what' eyleþ þou some gay gurl god it woot
 hap brought' þou þus vpon þe verytrot
 By seinte noet / þe wot' wel what I mene
 This absolon ne roughste nat' a bene 3772
 Of al þis pley no word agayn he ȝaf
 For he hadde more tow on his distaf
 Than Gerueys knew and seyde freend so deere
 That hote cultre in þe Chymney heere 3776
 As lene it' me I haue þer wip to doone
 I wol it bring' agayn to þe ful soone
 Gerueys answerde / certes were it' gold
 Or in a poke nobles al vntold 3780
 þe schul him haue as I am trewe smyth
 Ey cristes fo¹ what wil þe do þer wip [*a later line to be added*]
 Ther of quod absolon be as be may
 I schal wel telle it' þe to morwe day 3784
 And caughte þe cultre by þe colde stole
 Ful soft' out at þe dore he gan it' stole /

GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 109

This wol I giue þe / if þou me kisse
 This Nicholas was rise for to pyse
 And þought he wold amenden al þe lape
 he schulde kisse his ers or þat he skape 3800
 And vp þe wyndow dyde he hastily
 And out his ers putteþ he pryuely
 Ouer þe buttoke to haunche bon
 And þer wiþ spak þis clerk þis absoloun 3804
 Spek' sweete bryd I wot nat wher þou art /
 This Nicholas anon let fle a fart' [1007/11]
 As gret as it had ben a thundir dent
 And with þat strook he was almost I-blent' 3808
 And he was redy with his yren hoot
 And Nicholas amyð þe ers he smoot
 Of goþ þe skyn an hande brede aboute
 The hoots cultre brente so his toute 3812
 And for þe smert' / he wende for to dye
 As he were wood anon he gan to crye
 help watir watir / help for goddes herte
 This Carpenter out of his slumber sterte 3816
 And herd on crye watir as he were wood
 He þought' allas for now comeþ Noes flood
 he sit him vp wiþoute wordes mo
 And wiþ his ax he smot þe corde a-two 3820
 And down he goþ he fond nowthir to selle /
 No bred ne ale til he com to þe selle/
 Vpon þe floor and þer aswoun he lay
 vp styrt' hir alisoun and Nicholay 3824
 And cryden out and harrow in þe strete /
 The neyghebours boþe smal and grete /
 In ronnen for to gauren on þis man
 That a swowne lay boþe pale and wan 3828
 For with þe fal he brosten had his arm
 But stond he muste to his owne harm
 For whan he spak' he was anon born down
 with heende Nicholas and alisoun 3832

They tolden euery man þat he was wood
 he was a gast and feerd of Noes flood
 Thurgh fantasie þat of his vanite /
 he hadde I-bought him knedyng tubbes þre / 3836
 And hadde hem hanged in þe roof aboue /
 And þat he preyed hem for goddes loue /
 To sitten in þe roof par compaignye
 The folk gan lawhen at his fantasye / 3840
 In to þe roof þey kyken and þey gape
 And torne al his harm in to a lape
 For what so euer þe carpenter answerde
 Hit was for nought no man his resoun herde (vs. 12) 3844
 wiþ opis greet he was so sworn a doun
 That he was holden wood in al þe tonn
 For euery clerk anon right heeld wiþ opir
 They seyde þe man was wood my leue broþer 3848
 And euery man gan lawhen at his stryf
 Thus swyued was þe Carpenteres wyf
 For al his kepyng and his gelousye
 And absolon hap kist hir neþir ye 3852
 And Nicholas is skaldid in his towte
 This tale is doon and god saue al þe route
 Here endeth þe Millers tale

[No break in the MS.]



¶ And bygyneþ þe prologe of þe Reeue

Whan folk' hadde lawhen of þis nyce caas
Of Absolon and heende Nicholas 3856
Dyuere folk' dyuersely þey seyde
But for þe moste part þey lowh and pleyde /
Ne at þis tale I sawh no man him greue
But it' were oonly Osewald þe Reeue 3860
By cause he was of Carpentrye craft
A litel Ire is in his herte is laft
He gan to grucche and blamed it a lite
So theek' quod he ful wel coude I þe quyte 3864
with bleryng' of a prowð mylleres ye
If þat me luste speke of Ribaudye
But yk' am old me list not pley for age 3868
Gras tyme is doon my foddur is now forage
My whyte top writen myn olde 3eeres /
Myn hert is al so moulid as myn heeres /
And 3it I fare as dop an open-ers
That ilke fruyt' is euer lenger þe wers 3872
Til it be rote in mullok' or in stree
we olde men I drede so fare we /
Til we be roten can we nat be rype
we hoppen alway whil þe world wol pype 3876
For in oure wil þer stikeþ euer a nayl
To haue an hoor heed and a greene tayl
As bath a leek' for þough oure might' be doon
Oure wil desireþ folye euer in oon 3880
For whan we may nat do þan wol we speke / (leaf 12)
3et in oure aisschen old is fyr I-reke /
Foure gledys haue we which I schal deuyse
Anantyng' / lyyng' / angur coueytise 3884
This foure sparkys longen vnto eelde /
Oure olde lymes mowen be vnweelde /

But wil ne schal nat fayle vs þat is sop
 And ȝet I haue alwey a coltes toþ 3888
 As many a ȝeer as it is passed henne
 Syn þat my tappe of lyf hygan to renne /
 For sikirlik whan I was born anon
 Deth drough þe tappe of lyf and leet it goon 3892
 And now so longe / haþ þe tappe I-ronne
 Til þat almost al empty is þe tonne
 The stream of lyf now droppeth on þe chymbe
 The sely tonge may wel rynge and chimbe¹ 3896
 Of wrecchednes þat passed is ful ȝoore [? first chymbe]
 with olde folk / sauf dotage is no more
Whan þat oure host had herd oure sermonyng
 he gan to speke as lordly as a kyng 3900
 And seyde what amounteþ al þis wit
 what schul we speke alday of holy wryt
 The deuyl made a Reue for to preche
 Or of a sowter schipman or a leche / 3904
 Say forþ þi tale and tarye nat þe tyme
 Lo heer is Depford / and it is passed prime
 Lo Grenewich þer many a schrewe is Inne
 It were al tyme þi tale to bygynne 3908
Now sires quod þis Osewold þe Reue
 I pray ȝow alle // þat noon of ȝou him greeue
 Though I answeere and somewhat sette his howue
 For leeful is wiþ force force to showue 3912

And here bygynneþ his tale

AT Trompyngtoun nat' fer fro Cantebrigge
 Ther goth a brook' and ouer þat a brigge
 Vpon þe whiche brook' þer stant' a melle
 And þis is verray soþ þat I ȝou telle / 3924
 A meller was þer dwellyng many a day
 As any Pecok' he was prowde and gay
 Pipen he coude and fisch and nettys beete
 And turne cuppes wrastle wel and scheete 3928
 Ay by his belt' he bar a long' panade
 And of a sward ful trenchaunt' was þe blade
 A Ioly popper bar he in his pouche
 Ther was no man for perel durst' him touche / 3932
 A Scheffeld thwitel bar he in his hose
 Round was his face and carmois was his nose
 As pyled as an ape was his skulle/
 he was a market' beter at' þe fulle 3936
 Ther durste no wight' hand vpon him legge
 That' he ne swor anon he schuld abegge /
 A þeeft' he was for-soþ of corn and mele
 And þat a sleigh and vsyng' for to stele / 3940
 his name was hoote deynous Symekyn
 A wyf' he hadde / come of noble kyn
 The parson of the toun hir fader was
 with hire he ȝaf ful many a panne of bras 3944
 For þat' Symekyn schuld in his blood allye
 Sche was I-fostryd in a Nonnerye
 For Symekyn wolde no wyf' as he sayde
 But' sche were wel I-noriasched and a mayde / 3948
 To sauen his estaat' and ȝomanrye
 And sche was proud and pert/ as is a pye
 A ful fair sighte was þer on hem two /
 On haly dayes bifore hir wolde he go 3952

with his typet ybounde aboute his heed
 And sche cam aftir in a gyte of reed
 And Symkyn hadde hosen of þe same / [leaf 53]
 Ther durste no wight clepe hir but ma dame / 3956
 was noon so hardy walkyng by þe weye
 That with hir dorste rage or elles pleye
 But if he wold be slayn of Symekyn
 wip panade or with knyft or boydekyn 3960
 For gelous folk ben perilous eueremo
 Algate þey wolde here wyues wende so
 And eek for sche was somdel smoterlich
 Sche was as deyne as water in a dich 3964
 As ful of hokir and of bissemare
 hir thoughte ladyes oughten hir to spare /
 what for hir kynreed and hir nortelrye
 That sche had lerned in þe Nonnerye 3968
 A douȝter hadden þey betwix hem two
 Of .xx. ȝeer wipouten eny mo
 Sauyngt a child that was of half ȝer age
 In cradil lay and was a proper page / 3972
 This wenche pikke and wal I-growen was
 wip Camoys nose and eyȝen gray as glas /
 And buttokkes brode and brestes round and hye
 But right fair was hir heer I wol nat lye / 3976
 The parson of þe toun for sche was feir
 In purpos was to maken hir his heir /
 But he fel so nat he wold hir marrye /

GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 115

And namely þer was a gret Collegge
 Men clepe it þe Soler hall of Cantebregge
 Ther was here whete and eek here malt I-grounde /
 And on a day it happed on a stounde / 3992
 Syk lay þe mauncyple on a maledye (see/58, back)
 Men wenden wisly þat he schulde dye
 For which þis meller stal both mele & corn
 A þousend part more þan byforn 3996
 For þer biforn he stal but curteysly
 But now he is a þeef outrageously
 For which þe wardeyn chidde and made fareo
 But ther of sette þe meller not a tare 4000
 he crakked boost and swor it was nat so
 Thanne weren þere poore scoleres tuo
 That dwelten in þe halle of which I seye
 Testyf þey were and lusty for to playe 4004
 And oonly for here mirþe and reuelrye¹ [the 1 is later]
 Vppon þe wardeyn bysily þey crye
 To ȝeue hem leue but a litel stounde /
 To go to melle and see here corn I-grounde 4008
 And hardily þey dursten ley here nakke /
 The meller schuld nat stel hem half a pakke
 Of corn by sleighte ne by force hem reue
 And atte last þe wardeyn ȝaf hem leue 4012
 Iohn hight þat oon and Alayn hight þat oper
 Of o toun were þey born þat highte Strothir /
 Fer in þe north I can nat telle where /
 This aleyn makeþ redy al his gere 4016
 And on an hors þe sak he cast anoon
 Forþ goþ aleyn þe clerk and also Ion
 wiþ good awerd and wiþ bocler by her side
 Iohn knew þe way þat hem needith no gyde / 4020
 And at þe mylle þe sak a-doun he layth
 Alayn spak first al heil Symond in faith
 how fares þy faire doughter and þy wyf
 aleyn welcome quod Symond by my lyf 4024

And Iohn also how now what do ȝe heere
 By god quod Iohn, Symond, neede has na peere
 him falles serue himself þat has na swayn
 Or elles he is a fon as clerkes sayn 4028
 Our mancyples as I hope wil be deed
 Swa werkes ay þe wanges in his heed
 And therefore I is come and eek aleyn [long sig.]
 To grynde oure corn and carie it / ham ageyn 4032
 I prey ȝou speed vs in al þat ȝe may
 It schal be doon quod Symkyn by my fay
 what wol ȝe do whil þat it is in hande
 By god right by þe hoper wol I stande 4036
 Quod Iohn and se how þat þe corn gas Inne
 ȝet sawh I neuer by my fader kynne /
 how þat þe hoper waggis to and fra
 Aleyn answerde / Iohn and wiltow swa 4040
 Than wol I be by-nepe by my croun
 And se how þat þe mele fallys down
 In to þe trough þat schal be my desport /
 For Ion in faith I may be of ȝour sort 4044
 I is as ille a meller as ere ȝe
 This meller smyleth for here nycete
 And þought al þis is doon but for a wyle
 They wenen þat no man may hem bigile 4048
 But by my þrift ȝet schal I blere here ye
 For al here sleight and al here philosophie /

Behynde þe mylle vnder a leuesel
 And to þe hors he goþ him faire and wel
 He strepeth of þe bridel right' anon
 And whan þe hors was loos he gan to goon 4064
 Toward þe fen þere wilde mares renne
 For wiþ wihe / þurgh pikke and eek' þurgh þenne
 This meller goth agayn and no word seyde
 But' doth his note and wiþ þe clerkes pleyde / 4068
 Til þat' her corn was fair and wel I-grounde [*leaf 54, back*]
 And whan þe mele was sakked and I-bounde /
 This Iohn goþ out' and fynt his hors a-way
 And gan to crye harrow and weylaway 4072
 Oure hors is lost' aleyn for goddes banes
 Step on þy feet' cum on man al at anes
 Aleyn þour wardeyn hap his parfray lorn
 This aleyn al forgeteþ mele and corn 4076
 Al was out' of his mynd his housbondrye
 what' wikked way is he gan gan he crye
 The wyf' cam lepyng' inward wiþ a ren
 Sche seyde allas þour hors goþ to þe fen 4080
 wiþ wyld mares as fast' as he may go /
 vnþank' come on his heed þat' hand him so /
 And he þat' bettir schuld han knyht' þe Reyne
 Allas quod Iohan aleyn / for cristes peyne 4084
 Leg' down þi sward and I sal myn alswa /
 I is ful wight' god wat' as is a Ra
 By goddes hart/ he sal nat' scape vs bathe
 why nad þou put þe capil in þe lathe 4088
 Ilhail aleyn by god þou is a fon
 This eely clerkes speeden hem anon
 Toward þe fen boþe aleyn and eek' Ion
 And whan þe myller sawh þat' þey were gon 4092
 he half' a busschel of þe flour hap take
 And bad his wyf' go knede it in a cake
 he seyde I trowe þe clerkes ben a ferd
 3et' can a Miller make a clerkes berd 4096

For al his art/ 3e lat hem go here way
 lo wher þey goon // 3e lat þe children play
 They get hym nat so lightly by my crown
 This seely clerkes ronnen vp and down 4100
 wip keep / keep. stand stand Iossa ware derere
 Ga wightly þou and I sal keep him heere /
 But schortly til þat it was verray night /
 They cowde nat þough þey did al here might 4104
 here capil cacche it ran away so fast /
 Til in a dicke þey caught / him atte last/
 wery and wete as bestys in þe Reyn - [leaf 66]
 Comth sely Iohn and wip him comp aleyn 4108
 Allas quod Iohn þat day þat I was born
 Now are we dryue til heping and to scorn
 Oure corn is stole men woln vs folcs calle /
 Bathe þe wardeyn and eek our felaws alle / 4112
 And namely þe myller weyloway
 Thus pleyneth Iohn as he goþ by þe way
 Toward þe mylle and bayard in his hand
 The myller sitting by þe fyr he fand 4116
 For it was night and forþer might þey nought
 But for þe loue of god þey him bisought
 As herberwñ and of ese as for her peny
 þe myller sayd agayn if þer be eny 4120
 Swich as it is 3it schul 3e haue 3our part
 Myn hous is streyt. / but 3e han lerned art/
 3e conne by argumentes make a place

GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 119

And we wol paye trewly at þe fulle
 wiþ empty hand men may na hawkes tulle
 Lo heer our siluer redy for to spende
 This meller in to toun his doughter sende 4136
 For ale and breed and rosted hem a goos
 And band her hors he schold no more go loos
 And in his owne chambir hem made a bed
 with schetys and with chalounes fair I-spred 4140
 Nat from his owen bed ten foot or twelue /
 his doughter had a bed al by hir selue
 Right in þe same chambre by and by
 Hit mighte be no bet and cause why / 4144
 Ther was no rommer herberw in þe place [leaf 85, back]
 They sowpen and þey speke hem to solace
 And dronken euer strong ale atte beate
 Aboute mydnyght wente þey to reaste 4148
 wel haþ þe myller vernysshed his heed
 Ful pale he was for dronken and nat reed
 he 3oxeth and he spekeþ þurgh þe nose /
 As he were on þe quakke or on þe pose / 4152
 To bed he goþ and wiþ him goþ his wyf
 As eny lay sche light was and iolyf
 So was his ioly whistel wel y-wet
 The cradil at hire beddes feet is set 4156
 To rokken and to 3ine þe child to souke /
 And whan þat dronken was al in þe crouke
 To bedde went the dou3ter right anon
 To bedde goþ aleyn and also Ion 4160
 Ther nas no more him needed no dwale
 This meller haþ so wysly bibbed ale /
 That as an hors he snortith in his sleep
 Ne of his tayl bilynd took / he no keap 4164
 his wyf burdown a ful strong
 Men might her rowtyng heeren a forlong
 The wenche routeþ eek par companye
 Aleyn þe clerk þat herd þis melodye 4168

He pokyd Iohn / and seyde slepistow
 Herdistow euer slik' a sang' er now
 Lo slik' a couplyng' is betwix hem alle
 A wilde fyr vpon þair bodyes falle 4172
 wha herkned euer swilk' a ferly þing' /
 3e þei sul haue þe flour of ille endyng'
 This lange night' þer tydes me na rest'
 But' 3et' na fors al sal be for þe best' 4176
 For Iohn sayd he as euer mot' I pryue
 If' þat' I may 3one wenche sal I swyue
 Som esement hap lawe schapen vs
 For Iohn þer is a lawe þat says þus 4180
 That if' a man in a poynt be agreued
 That in anoper he sal be releued
 Oure corn is stoln soþly it' is na nay
 And we haue had an ylle fitt' to day
 And syn I sal haue nan amendement
 Agayn my los I wol haue esement /
 By godde sale it' sal nan oper be /
 This Iohn answerd / aleyn auyse þe 4188
 The Miller is a parlous man he sayde
 And if' þat' he out' of his sleep abrayde
 he mighte do vs boþe a vilonye
 Aleyn answerd I count it' nat' a flye 4192
 And vp he roos and by þe wenche crepte
 This wenche lay vpright' and faste slepte
 Til he so neib. was or sche might aspye

¶ Qui in vno peccatore
in alio debet releuari

[100/16]

4184

4188

4192

GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 121

he aunted him and has his needes sped
 And I lye as a draft sak' in my bed
 And when þis lape is tald anoper day
 I sal be held a daf' a cokenay 4208
 vnhardy is vnsely as men saith
 I wol arise and aunte it in good faip
 And vp he ros and softely he wente /
 vnto þe cradil and in his hand it hente 4212
 And bar it softe vnto his beddis feet
 Soone after þis þe wyf' hir routyng' leet /
 And gan awake and went' hir for to pisse
 And cam agayn and gan hir cradel mysee 4216
 And groped heer and þer but' sche fond noon
 Alias quod sche / I had almost' mys goon
 I had almost' goon to þe clerkes bed
 Ey bendicite þan had I foule I-sped 4220
 And forþ sche goþ til sche þe cradil fand [long' to, back]
 Sche gropith alway forther with hir hand
 And fand þe bed and þoughte nat' but' good
 By cause þat' þe cradil by hit' stood 4224
 Nat' knowyng' wher sche was for it' was derk'
 But' fair and wel sche creep in to þe clerk'
 And lith ful stille and wolde han caught' a sleep
 wipinne a while Iohn þe clerk' vp leep 4228
 And on this goode wyf' leyþ on ful sore
 So mery a fytt/ ne hadd sche nat' ful zore
 he prikeþ harde and deepe as he were mad
 This Ioly lyf' han þis twey clerkes had 4232
 Til þat' þe bridde cok' bygan to synge
 Aleyn wax wery in þe dawenyng
 For he had swonken al þe longe night/
 And seyð far wel malyn my sweete wight 4236
 The day is come I may no lenger byde /
 But' euermo wher so I go or ryde
 I am þin owen clerk' so haue I seel
 Now deere lemman quod sche go far wol 4240

But or þou go o thing I wol þe telle
 whan þat þou wendist homward by þe melle
 Right at þe entre of þe dore byhynde
 Thou schalt a cake of half a busshel fynde 4244
 That was I-maked of þyn owen mele
 Which þat I hilp myn owen self to stele
 And goode lemman god þe saue and kepe
 And wip þat word almost sche gan to weepe 4248
A leyn vprist and þought er þat it dawe
 I wol go crepen in by my felawe
 And fand þe cradil wip his hand anon
 By god þought he al wrong I haue I-goon 4252
 My heed is toty of my swynk to nyght
 That / makes me þat I ga nouȝt aright
 I wot wel by þe cradel I haue mys go
 heer lith þe myller and his wyf also 4256
 Forþ he goþ in twenty deuelway
 vnto þe bed þer as þe Miller lay
 he wende haue crope by his felaw Ion [Ion/87]
 And by þe myller in he creep anon 4260
 And caught him by þe nekke and soft he spak
 And seyde Ion þou swyneshed awak
 For cristes sowle and here a noble game
 For by þat lord þat cleped is seynt Iame 4264
 As I haue þries in þis schorte nyght
 Swyued þe myllers douȝter bolt vpright
 whiles þou hast as a coward hen a cast

GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 123

And in þe floor wiþ nose and moup to-broke
 They walweden as pigges in a poke
 And vpon þay goon and down þey goon anon
 Til þat þe Millner stumbled at a ston 4280
 And doun he felle / bakward on his wyf
 That wyste noþing of þis nyce stryf
 For sche was falle a sleepe a litel wight
 wiþ Ion þe Clerk þat waked al þe night 4284
 And wiþ þe falle right out of slepe sche brayde
 help holy croys of Bromholme sche sayde
 In manus tuas lord to þe I calle /
 Awake Symond þe feend is in þin halle 4288
 My hert is broken help I am but deed
 Ther lythe vpon my wombe and on myn heed
 Help Symkyn for þis false clerkes fight
 This Iohn stert vp as fast as euer he might 4292
 And grasped by þe walles to and fro
 To fynde a staf & sche sturt vp also
 And knewe þe estres bet þan dede Ion
 And by þe wal sche took a staf anon 4296
 And sawh a litel glymeryng of light (leaf 67, back)
 For at an hool in schon þe moone light
 And by þat light she saugh hem boþe two
 But sikirly sche wiste nat who was who 4300
 But sche saugh a whit þing in hir ye
 And whan sche gan þis white þing aspye
 Sche wend þe clerk had wered a volupeer
 And wiþ a staf sche drough hir neer and neer 4304
 And wend haue hit þis Aleyn atte fulle
 And smot þis meller on þe piled sculle
 And doun he goþ and cryeþ harrow I dye
 This clerkes beeten him wel and leet him lye 4308
 And greyth hem wel and take her hors anon
 And eek / here mele and hoom anon þey goon
 And at the Millen dore þey tok here cake
 Of half a buissel flour ful wel I-bake 4312

Thus is þe prowde' Miller wel I-bete
 And haþ I-lost' þe gryndyng' of' þe whete /
 And payed for þe soper euerydel
 Of' aleyn and of' Iohn þat' beten him wel 4316
 His wyf' is swyued and his doughter als
 Lo such it' is a Miller to be fals
 And þerto þis prouerbe is seyð ful soþ
 he þar nat' weene wel þat' euyl doþ 4320
 A gylour schal him self' bygiled be
 And god þat' sittest' in þy mageste
 Saue al þis compaignie gret' and smale / 4323
 Thus haue I quit' þe Miller in his tale / ¶ her' endeþ þe
 Reeues tale

[*Break of one line in the MS.*]



GROUP A. § 7. REEVE-COOK LINK. Harleian 7334. 125

The Cook of londoun whil þe Reene spak
For Ioye he pought / he clawed him on þe bak
ha ha quod he / for cristes passioun
This meller hap a scharp conclusioun / 4328
vpon his argument of herburgage
wel seyde Salomon in his langage /
Ne bryng nat euery man in to þyn hous
For herburgage by night is perilous 4332
wel aught a man avised for to be
whom þat he brought in to his pryuyte [leaf 68]
I pray to god so gyf my body care /
þif euer sippe I highte hogge of ware 4336
herd I better myller set a werke /
he hadde a Iape of malice in þe derke /
And þerfore if 3e fouche sauf to heere
But god forbede þat we stynten heere / 4340
A tale of me þat am a pouer man
I wol 3ow telle as wel as I kan
A litel Iape þat fel in oure cite
Oure host seyde I graunt it the 4344
Now telle on Roger & loke it be good
For many a pastey hastow lete blood
And many a Iakk of doner hastow sold
That hap be twyes hoot and twyes cold 4348
Of many a pilgrym hastow cristes curs
For þy paraly þey faren 3et þe wore
That they haue eten wip þe stubbil goos
For in þy schoppe is many a flye loos 4352
Now goode / gentil Roger by þy name /
But 3it I pray þe be nought wroþ for game
[. No gap in the MS.]
Thow saist ful soþ quod Róger by my faith 4356

But soth play quad play as þe flem yng' saith

[. *No gap in the MS.*]

Be thou nat wroþ or we departe her

Though þat my tale be of an hostyler 4360

But napeles I wol not telle it ȝit/

But or we departe it schal be quyt/

And þer wiþ al he lowh / and made chere

And seyde his tale as ȝe schal after heere 4364

[*No break in the MS.*]

A Prentys dwelled whilom in oure Citee,
 Of a craft of vitailers was he
 Gaylard he was as goldfynch in þe schawe /
 Broun as a bery and a propre felawe 4368
 wiþ lokkes blak and kempt ful fetously
 Dāuncen he cowde wel and prately
 That he was cloped Perkyn reuellour
 he was ful of loue and paramour 4372
 As is þe hony combe of hony swete
 wel were þe wenche þat mighte him meete [leaf 66, back]
 [.
 *No gap in the MS.*] 4376
FOr whan þer eny rydyng was in cheepe /
 Out of þe schoppe pider wolde he lepe /
 Tyl he hadde al þat sight I-seyn
 And daunced wel he nold nat come ageyn 4380
 And gadred him a meyne of his sort
 To hoppe and synge and make such disport
 And þer þey setten steuene for to meete
 To pleyen atte dys in such a strete 4384
 For in þe toun ne was þer no prentys
 That fairer cowde caste a peyre dys
 Than Perkyn couþe and þerto he was free /
 Of his diapence in place of pryuyte 4388
 That fand his mayster wel in his chaffare
 For often tyme he fond his box ful bare
 For such a ioly prentys reuelour
 That haunteþ dys Renel or paramour 4392
 his maister schal it in his schoppe abyē
 Al haue he no part of þe mynstralcyē
 For þeste and ryot be conuertible
 Al can þey pley on giterne and rubible 4396

Reuel and troupe as in a lowe degre
 They ben ful wroþ al day as ȝe may see
 This Ioly Prentys with his mayster bood
 Til he was oute neyȝ of his prentys hood 4400
 Al were he snybbyd boþe erly and late
 And som tyme lad with reuel in to Newgate
 But atte laste his mayster him bythought
 vpon a day whan he his papyr sought 4404
 Of a prouerbe þat siþ þis same word
 wel bette is roten appul out of hord
 Than it rote al þe remenaunt/
 So fareth it by a ryotous seruaunt 4408
 hit is ful lasse harm to late him þaȝ
 Than he schend al þe seruautes in þe place
 Therefore his mayster ȝaf him acqueyntaunce
 And bad him go wiþ sorwe and wiþ meschaunce 4412
 And þus þe ioly prentys had his leue //
 Now let hym ryot al þe night or leue.
 [*Lines 4413, 4414 form the last line of the page in the MS.*]

APPENDIX TO GROUP A.

[THE SPURIOUS TALE OF GAMELYN.]

L Itheth and lestneþ and herkneþ aright [1007 10] 1
 And ȝe schul heere a talkyng of a doughty knight
 Sire Iohn of Boundys was his right name
 he cowde of/ norture ynough & mochil of game 4
 Thre sones þe knight þat with his body he wan
 The eldest was a moche schrewe / and sone he bygan
 his breþeren loned wel here fader / and of him were agast /
 The eldest deserued his fadres cure / and had it at þe last / 8
 The goode kniȝt his fader lynede so ȝore
 That deth was comen him to and handled him ful sore
 The goode knight cared sore . sik þer he lay
 how his children scholde lynen after his day 12
 he hadde ben wyde wher . but non housbond he was
 Al þe lond þat he had / it was verrey purchas
 Fayn he wold it were dressed / amonges hem alle
 That ech of hem had his part / as it might falle / 16
 Tho sent he in to cuntre after wise knightes
 To helpe delen his londes / and dressen hem to rightes
 he sent hem word by lettres / þey schulden hye blyue
 yf þey wolde speke with him whil he was on lyue / 20

¶ Tho þe knyghtes herden / sik þer he lay
 hadde þey no reste noþer night ne day
 Til þey comen to him þer he lay stille /
 On his deþ bedde . to abyde goddes wille 24
 þan seyde þe goode knight syk þer he lay
 lordes I 3ou warne for soþ wiþoute nay
 I may no lengere lyuen heer in þis stounde
 For þurgh goddes wille deþ draweth me to grounde 28
 Ther nas non of hem alle . þat herd him aright
 þat þey hadden reuþe of þat ilke knight
 And seyde sir for goddes loue ne dismay 3ou nought
 God may do bote of bale þat is now I-wrought 32
 ¶ Than spak þe goode knight syk þer he lay
 Boote of bale god may sende I wot it is no nay
 But I byseke 3ou knyghtes for þe loue of me
 God and dresseþ my lond among my sones þre 36
 And sires for þe loue of god deleþ hem nat amys
 And forgetiþ nat Gamelyn my 3onge sone þat is
 Takeþ heed to þat on as wel as to þat oþer (leaf 59, back)
 Selde 3e see ony Eyr helpen his broþer 40
 ¶ þo leete þey þe knight lyen þat was nought in hele /
 And wenten in to counseil his lordes for to dele /
 For to delen hem alle /. to oon þat was her þought
 And for Gamelyn was 3ongest / he schuld haue nouȝt 44
 Al þe lond þat þer was þey dalten it in two
 And lesten Gamelyn þe 3onge wiþoute lond go
 And ech of hem to seyle to oþer ful lowde

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 131

Iohan myn eldeste sone / schal haue plowes fyue
 That was my fadres heritage whil he was on lyue
 And my myddeleste sone / fyf plowes of lond
 That I halp for to gete wip my right hond 60
 And al myn other purchas / of londes and leedes
 þat I byqueþe gamelyn / and alle my goode steedes
 And I byseke þow goode man þat lawe couns of londe
 For Gamelynes loue þat my queste stonde 64
 Thus dalte þe knight his lond by his day
 Right on his deþ bed / sik þer he lay
 And sone aftirward he lay stoon stille /
 And deyde whan tyme com / as it was cristes wille 68
 And anon as he was deed and vnder gras I-graue /
 Sone þe elder broþer gyled þe þonge knaue
 He took in to his hond / his lond as his leede
 And Gamelyn himsele / to clothen and to feede 72
 He clothed him and fed him yuel and eek wroþe
 And leet his londes forfare and his houses boþe
 his parkes and his woodes / and dede noþing wel
 And seþþen he it abought on his faire fel 76
 So longe was Gamelyn in his broþeres halle (leaf 69)
 For þe strengest of good wil þey doutiden him alle /
 þer was non þer Inne nowþer þong ne olde
 That wolde wrappe Gamelyn were he neuer so bolde / 80
 Gamelyn stood on a day in his broþeres þerde
 And bygan wip his hond to handlen his berde
 he þought on his londes þat layen vnsawe
 And his faire Okes þat down were I-drawe 84
 his parkes were I-broken / and his deer byresued
 Of alle his goode steedes noon was him byleued
 his howses were vnhyled / and ful yuel dight
 The þoughte Gamelyn it wente nought aright 88
 Afterward cam his broþer walkynge þare
 And seyde to Gamelyn is our mete þare /
 Tho wrapped him gamelyn and swor by goddes book
 Thou schalt go bake þi self / I wil nouȝt be þy cook 92

how broþer Gamelyn / how answerest þou now /
 þou spake neuer such a word as þou dost now /
 By my faith seyde Gamelyn now me þinkeþ neede /
 Of alle þe harmes þat I haue I tok neuer ar heede 96
 My parkes ben tobroken and my deer byreued
 Of myn armure and my steedes nought is me biloued
 Al þat my fader me byquap al goþ to achame /
 And þerfor haue þou goddes curs broþer by þy name 100
 Than byspak his broþer þat rape was of rees /
 Stond stille gadelyng / and hold right þy pees /
 Thou schalt be fayn for to haue þy mete and þy wede /
 what spekest þou Gamelyn of lond oþer of leede 104
 Thanne seyde Gamelyn þe child þat was ying
 Cristes curs mot he haue þat clepeþ me gadelyng
 I am no worse gadelyng ne no worse wight
 But born of a lady and geten of a knight 108
 Ne durst he nat to Gamelyn ner a foote go
 But clepide to him his men and seyde to hem þo
 God and beten þis boy and reueþ him his wyt /
 And lat him leron anoþer tyme to answer me bet 112
 Thanne seyde þe child 3onge Gamelyn
 Cristes curs mot þou haue broþer art þou myn
 And if I schal algate be beten anon [leaf 60, back]
 Cristes curs mot þou haue but þou be þat oon 116
 And anon his broþer in þag grete hete
 Made his men to sette staues Gamelyn to bete
 what he wold do to him a staff had Luene

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 133

Some for Gamelynes loue / and some for his eyȝe /
 Alle þay drowe by halues // þo he gan to pleyȝe /
 what how now sayde Gamelyn euel mot ȝe thee
 wil ȝe bygynne contek' and so sone flee / 132
 Gamelyn sought' his broþer / whider he was flowe
 And saugh wher he loked out' / at a wyndowe /
 Broþer sayde Gamelyn com a litel ner
 And I wil teche þe a play atte bokeler 136
 his broþer him answerde and swor by seynt' Rycher
 whil þe pestel is in þin hond I wil come no neer
 Broþer I wil make þy pees / I swere by cristes ore
 Cast' away þe pestel and wrappe þe nomore / 140
 I mot' neede sayde Gamelyn wrappe me at oones
 For thou wolde make þy men to breke myne boones
 Ne had I hadde mayn and might' in myn armes
 To haue I-put' hem fro me he wolde haue do me harmes 144
 Gamelyn sayde his broþer be þou nought' wroþ
 For to seen þe haue harm it were me right' loþ
 I ne dide it nouȝt' broþer but' for a fondyng'
 For to loken or þou were strong' and art' so ying' 148
 Com a down þan to me and graunte me my bone
 Of þing' I wil þe aske / and we schul saughte sone
 Doun þan cam his broþer þat' fykil was and felle
 And was swiþe sore agast' of þe pestelle 152
 he sayde broþer Gamelyn aake me þy boone (leaf 61)
 And loke þou me blame but' I graunte sone
 Thanne sayde Gamelyn broþer I-wys
 And we schulle ben at oon þou most' me graunte þis 156
 Al þat' my fader me byquath whil he was on lyue /
 þou most' do me it haue ȝif we schul nat' stryue /
 That' schalt' þou haue Gamelyn I swere by cristes ore
 Al þat' þi fader the byquaþ þough þou woldest' haue more 160
 Thy lond þat lyp laye ful wel it schal be sowe
 And þyn howses reysed vp þat' ben leyd so lowe
 Thus seyde þ' knight' to Gamelyn wiþ mowthe /
 And þought' eek' of falanes / as he wel couþe / 164

The king þought on tresoun / and Gamelyn on noon
 And went and kist his broþer / and whan þey were at oon
 Allas þonge Gamelyn noþing he ne wiste /
 wip which a false tresoun his broþer him kiste / 168

L Ipeth and lestnep and holdeþ þour tonge
 And ȝe schul heere talkyng of Gamelyn þe yonge
 Ther was þer bysiden cryed a wrastlyng

And þerfor þer was sette vp a Ram and a Ryng 172
 And Gamelyn was in good wil / to wende þerto /
 For to prenen his might what he cowþe do

Broþer seyde Gamelyn by seynt Richer
 Thou most lene me to nyȝt // a litel Courser 176

That is freisch to the spore on for to ryde

I most on an Erande a litel her byside

By god seyð his brother of steedes in my stalle
 Go and chese þe þe best and spare non of alle 180

Of steedes or of course þat stonden hem bisyde

And tel me goode broþer whider þou wolt ryde

¶ her byside broþer is cryed a wrastlyng

And þerfor schal be set vp a Ram and a Ryng 184

Moche worschip it were broþer to vs alle

Might I þe Ram and þe Ryng bryng home to þis halle

A steede þer was sadeled smertely and skeet

Gamelyn did a paire spores fast on his feet 188

he set his foot in styrop / þe steede he bystrood

And toward þe wrastelyng þe þonge child rood

¶ her byside broþer is cryed a wrastlyng

Allas seyde þis Frankeleyn þat euer was I bore
 For tweye stalworþe sones / I wene þat I haue lore
 A Champion is in þe place / þat hap I-wrought me sorwe
 For he hap slayn my two sones / but if god hem borwe / 204
 I wold geue ten pound by ihū crist and more
 wiþ þe nones I fand a man to handil him sore
 Goode man seyde Gamelyn wilt þou wel doon
 hold myn hors whil my man draweþ of my schoon · 208
 And help my man to kepe my cloþes and my steede /
 And I wil in to place go / to loken if I may speede /
 By god sayde þe Frankeleyn anon it schal be doon
 I wil my self be þy man / and drawen of þy schoon 212
 And wende þou in to þe place / ihū crist þe speede /
 And drede not of þy cloþes nor of þy goode steede /
BArfoot and vngert. Gamelyn in cam
 Alle þat weren in þe place heede of him þey nam 216
 how he durst aunte him of him to doon his might
 That was so doughty champion in wrastlyng and in fight
 vp sterte þe Champion raply and anon
 Toward þonge Gamelyn / he bigan to goon 220
 And sayde who is þy fader and who is þy sire
 For soþe þou art a gret fool þat þou come hire
 Gamelyn answerde þe champion tho
 þou knowe wel my fader / whil he couþe go 224
 whiles he was on lyue / by seint martyn
 Sir Iohā of Boundys was his name and I gamelyn
 Felaw seyde þe champion al so mot I pryue
 I knew wel þy fader whil he was on lyue 228
 And þiself Gamelyn I wil þat þou it heere (leuf 112)
 whil þou were a þong boy a moche schrewe þou were
 þan seyde Gamelyn and swor by cristes ore
 Now I am older woxe þou schalt me fynd a more 232
 By god sayde þe Champion welcome mote þou be
 Come þou ones in myn hond schalt þou neuer þe
 It was wel wiþinne þe night and þe moone schon
 whan Gamelyn and þe Champion to-gider gon to goon 236

The champion was wroth to knowe that was prync
 And gamelyn was stille and he was in his hand
 Thanne seyde gamelyn to the champion
 Thou art a good man and a good man
 240
 Now I have I-given many a man of myne
 Thou shalt be myne prync in it and of myne
 Gamelyn to the champion was swerthly anon
 Of all the world that he sawe he answered him best
 244
 And thus he was in the last syde that he was
 And perre his son was that was a good man
 Thanne seyde gamelyn swerthly anon
 Schal I be hille for a cast or elles for noon
 248
 By god sey I the champion whiche that is he
 he that comes ones in his hand schal he never see
 Than seyde the frankleyn that had his sonne pere
 Blessed be thou gamelyn that ever thou bore were
 252
 The frankleyn seyde to the champion of him stood him noon
 This is yonge gamelyn that taughte the his pleye [eye
 Ayein answerd the champion that liked no thing well
 he is a lier mayster and his pley is ryght fell
 256
 Hip I wrahtled first / it is I-go ful sore
 But I was neuere my lyf handled so sore
 Gamelyn stood in the place allone wipoute serk
 And seyde if per be eny mo lat hem come to werk
 260
 The champion that peyned him to werke so sore
 It cometh by his contenance that he wil nomore
 Gamelyn in the place that was stille as stoon

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 137

Tho seyde þe Champioun so brouk I my sweere
 he is a fool þat þer of beyeþ / þou sellest it so deere
 Tho seyde þe Frankeleyn þat was in moche care
 Felaw he seyde / why lakkest þou his ware / 276
 By seynt Iame in Galys þat many man haþ sought
 Jet it is to good cheep þat þou hast I-bought
 Tho þat wardeynes were of þat wrastlyng
 Come and broughte Gamelyn þe Ram and þe Ryng 280
 And seyden haue Gamelyn þe Ryng and þe Ram
 For þe best wrasteler þat euer here cam
 Thus wan Gamelyn þe Ram and þe Ryng
 And wente wiþ moche ioye home in þe mornyng 284
 His broþer seiþ wher he cam with þe grete rowte /
 And bad schitte þe gate and holde him wiþoute
 The porter of his lord was ful sore agast
 And stert anon to þe gate and lokked it fast 288
Now litheþ and lestneþ boþe 3ong and olde
 And 3e schul heere gamen of Gamelyn þe bolde
 Gamelyn com þerto for to haue comen In .
 And þanne was it I-schet faste wiþ a pyn 292
 Than seyde Gamelyn porter vndo þe yate
 For many good mannes sone stondeþ þer-ate
 Than answerd þe porter and swor by goddes berd
 Thow ne schalt Gamelyn come in to þis 3erde 296
 Thow list sayde Gamelyn so browke I my chyn
 he smot þe wyket wiþ his foot and brak away þe pyn
 The porter seyþ þo it might no better be
 He sette foot on erþe he bigan to flee 300
 By my faip seyde Gamelyn þat trauail is I-lore
 For I am of foot as light as þou þough þou haddest swore
 Gamelyn ouertook þe porter and his teene wrak
 And gert him in þe nekke þat þe bon tobrak 304
 And took him by þat oon arm and þrew him in a welle (c. 63)
 Seuen fadmen it was deep . as I haue hard telle /
 whan Gamelyn þe yonge þus hadde pleyd his play
 Alle þat in þe 3erde were drewen hem a way 308

þey dredden him ful sore for werkes þat he wrouȝte
 And for þe faire company þat he þider broughte
 Gamelyn ȝede to þe gate / and leet it vp wyde
 he leet in alle maner men þat gon in wold or ryde 312
 And seyde ȝe be welcome wipouten eny greene /
 For we wiln be maistres heer / and aske no man leue /
 ȝestirday I lefte / seyde ȝonge Gamelyn ·
 In my broȝer Sellar .v. tonne of wyn 316
 I wil not þat þis compaignye parten a-twynne /
 And ȝe wil doon after me while eny sope is þynne
 And if my broȝer grucche or make foul cheere 319
 Oȝer for spense of mete or drynk þat we spenden heere /
 I am oure catour / and here oure aller purs /
 he schal haue for his grucchyng seint maries cure
 My broȝer is a nyggoun / I swer by cristes ore
 And we wil spende largely þat he haȝ spared ȝore / 324
 And who þat makeȝ grucchyng / þat we here dwelle
 he schal to þe porter in to þe draw-welle
 vij. dayes and .vij. nyght Gamelyn held his feste
 with moche myrȝ and solas / þat was þer and no cheste / 328
 In a litel toret his brother lay I-steke
 And sey hem wasten his good but durst he not speke
 Erly on a mornyg on þe viij^e day
 The gastes come to Gamelyn and wolde gon here way 332
 Lordes seyde Gamelyn / wil ȝe so bye
 Al þe wyn is not ȝet y-dronke so brouk I myn ye
 Gamelyn in his herte was ful of

Al þe whil þat Gamelyn heeld his mangerye
 his broþer þought on him be wreke / wiþ his treeccherie
 Tho Gamelyns gestes were riden and I goon
 Gamelyn stood allone frendes had he noon 348
 Tho after ful soone wiþinne a litel stounde
 Gamelyn was I-take and ful hard I-bounde
 Forþ com þe fals knight out of þe selleer
 To Gamelyn his broþer he ȝede ful neer 352
 And sayde to Gamelyn who made þe so bold
 For to stroye my stoor of myn household
 Broþer seyde Gamelyn wrappe þe right nouȝt
 For it is many day I-gon siþþen it was bouȝt 356
 For broþer þou hast I-had by seynt richer
 Of xv. plowes of lond þis .xvj. ȝer
 And of alle þe beestes þou hast forþ bred
 That my fader me biquath on his deth bed 360
 Of al þis xvj. ȝeer I ȝeue þe þe prow
 For þe mete and þe drynk þat we haue spendeð now /
 Thanne seyde þe fals knyȝt enel mot he the
 Herkne broþer Gamelyn what I wol ȝeue þe 364
 For of my body broþer geten heir haue I noon
 I wil make þe myn heir I swere by seint Iohn
 Par ma foy sayd Gamelyn and if it so be
 And þou þenke as þou seyst god ȝelde it þe 368
 No þing wiste Gamelyn of his broþeres gyle
 Therefore he him bigyled in a litel while
 Gamelyn seyde he o thing / I þe telle
 Tho þou þrewe my porter in þe draw-welle 372
 I swor in þat wrappe and in þat grete moot
 That þou schuldest be bounde boþe hand and foot
 Therefore I þe biseche brother Gamelyn
 Lat me nouȝt be forsworn broþer art þou myn 376
 lat me bynde þe now boþe hand and feet
 For to holde myn avow as I þe biheet
 Broþer seyde Gamelyn also mot I þe
 Thou schalt not be forsworen for þe loue of me 380

Tho made þey Gamelyn to sitte might' he nat' stonde [1347 64]
 Til þey had him bounde boþe foot' and honde /
 The fals knight' his broþer of' Gamelyn was agast'
 And sent' aftir feteres to feteren him fast' 384
 His broþer made lesynges on him þer he stood
 And told hem þat' comen In þat' Gamelyn was wood
 Gamelyn stood to a post' bounden in þe halle /
 Tho þat' comen in þer loked on him alle / 388
 Euer stood Gamelyn euen vpright'
 But' mete ne drynk' had he non neiþer day ne night
 Than seyde Gamelyn broþer by myn hals
 Now I haue aspied þou art' a party fals / 392
 had I wist' þat' tresoun þat' þou haddest' y-founde
 I wolde haue ȝeue þe strokes or I had be bounde /
 Gamelyn stood bounden stille as eny stoon'
 Two dayes and two nightes mete had he noon 396
 Thanne seyde Gamelyn þat' stood y-bounde stronge /
 Adam Spencer me þinkþ I faste to longe
 Adam Spencer now I byseche þe
 For þe mochel loue my fader loued þe/ 400
 yf' þou may come to þe keyes lese me out' of' bond
 And I wil parte wiþ þe of' my free lond
 Thanne seyde adam þat' was þe Spencer
 I haue serued þy broþer þis xvj. ȝeer 404
 If I leete þe goon out' of' his hour
 he wolde say afterward I were a traytour
 Adam sayde Gamelyn so brouk' I myn hals
 þou schalt' fynde my broþer atte laste fals 408
 Therfor broþer adam louse me out' of' bond
 And I wil parte wiþ þe of' my free lond
 vp swich a forward seyde adam I-wys
 I wil do þerto al þat' in me is 412
 Adam seyde Gamelyn al so mot' I þe
 I wol hold þe couenaunt' and þou wil me
 Anon as adames lord to bedde was I-goon
 Adam took' þe keyes and leet' gamelyn out' anoon 416

He vnlokkeð Gamelyn boþe hand and feet
 In hope of auancement þat he him byheet
 Than seyde Gamelyn þanked be goddes sonde [leaf 104, back]
 Now I am loosed boþe foot and honde / 420
 had I now eten and drunken aright
 Ther is noon in þis hous schuldre bynde me þis night
 Adam took Gamelyn as stille as ony stoon
 And ladde him into spence rapely and anon 424
 And sette him to soper right in a priue stede
 he had him do gladly and Gamelyn so dede
 Anon as gamelyn hadde eten wel & fyn
 And þerto y-dronke wel of þe rede wyn 428
 Adam seyde Gamelyn what is now þy reed
 wher I go to my broþer and girde of his heed
 Gamelyn seyde adam it schal not be so
 I can teche þe a reed þat is worþ þe two 432
 I wot wel for soþe þat þis is no nay
 we schul haue a mangery right on sonday
 Abbotes and priours many heer schal be
 And oþer men of holy chirche as I telle þe / 436
 Thow schalt stonde vp by þe post as þou were hond-fast/
 And I schal leue hem vnloke away þou may hem cast
 whan þat þey haue eten and waisschen here hondes
 Thou schalt biseke hem alle to bryng þe out of bondes 440
 And if þey wille borwe þe þat were good game
 Then were þou out of prisoun and I out of blame
 And if euerich of hem say vnto vs nay
 I schal do anoper I swere by þis day 444
 Thou schalt haue a good staf and I wil haue anoper
 And cristes curs haue þat oon þat faileþ þat oþer
 3e for gode seyde Gamelyn I say it for me
 If I fayle on my syde yuel mot I þe 448
 If we schul algate assoile hem of here synne
 warne me broþer adam whan I schal bygynne
 Gamelyn seyde adam by soynthe charite
 I wil warne þe byforen whan þat it schal be 452

whan I twynk' on þe loke for to goon
 And cast' away þe feteres and com to me anon.
 Adam seide Gamelyn blessed be þy bones
 That' is a good counseil ȝeuyng' for þe nones 456
 If þey werne me þanne to brynge me out' of bendes (104/05)
 I wol sette goode strokes right' on here lendes
 Tho þe sonday was I-come and folk' to þe feste /
 Faire þey were welcomed hope lest' and meste 460
 And euer as þey atte halle/ dore comen In.
 They caste þeir eye on ȝonge Gamelyn
 The fals knight' his broþer ful of trechery
 Alle þe gestes þat' þer wer atte mangery 464
 Of Gamelyn his broþer he tolde hem with mouþe
 Al þe harm and þe schame þat he telle couþe
 Tho þey were serued Of messes tuo oþer þre
 Than seyde Gamelyn how serue ȝe me 468
 It' is nouȝt' wel serued by god þat al made
 That' I sytte fastyng' and oþer men make glade
 The fals knight' his broþer þer þat' he stood
 Tolde alle his gestes þat Gamelyn was wood 472
 And Gamelyn stood stille and answerde nouȝt'
 But adames wordes he held in his þought' /
 Tho Gamelyn gan speke dolfully wiþ alle /
 To þe grete lordes þat' saten in þe halle 476
 lordes he seyde for cristes passioun
 helpeþ brynge Gamelyn out' of prisoun
 Then seyde an abbotte serue on his cheeke

APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 143

Ow . seyde Gamelyn so brouk I my bon
 Now I haue aspyed þat freendes haue I non
 Cursed mot he worpe boþe fleisch and blood
 That euer do Priour or abbot ony good 492
 Adam þe Spencer took vp þe cloþ
 And loked on Gamelyn and say þat he was wrqth
 Adam on þe pantrye litel he þought / (leaf 65, back)
 But tuo goode staues to haft dore he brouȝt 496
 Adam loked on Gamelyn and he was war anoon
 And cast away þe feteres and he bigan to goon
 Tho he com to adam he took þat oo staf
 And bygan to worche and goode strokes ȝaf 500
 Gamelyn cam into þe halle and þe spencer boþe
 And loked hem aboute as þey had be wroþe
 Gamelyn sprenged holywater wiþ an Oken spire ./
 That some þat stooðe vpright fel in þe fire 504
 Ther was no lewede man þat in þe halle stood
 That wolde do Gamelyn eny þing but good
 But stood besyde and leet hem boþe werche
 For þey hadde no rewþe of men of holy cherche 508
 Abbot or priour monk or Chanoun
 That Gamelyn ouertok anon þey ȝeeden doun
 Ther was non of hem alle þat wiþ his staf mette
 That he made him ouerprowe and quyt him his dette 512
 Gamelyn seyde adam for seynte charite
 Pay large lyuerey for þe loue of me
 And I wil kepe þe dore so euer here I masse /
 Er þey ben assoyled þere schan noon passe 516
 Downt þe nought seyde Gamelyn whil we ben in feere
 kep þou wel þe dore / and I wol werche heere
 Stere þe good adam and lat þer noon flee
 And we schul telle largely how many þer be 520
 Gamelyn seyde adam do hem but good
 þey ben men of holy chirche / draw of hem no blood
 Saue wel þe croune and do hem non harmes
 But brek boþe her legges and sippen here armes 524

whan I twynk on þe loke for to go
 And cast away þe fetures and com to
 Adam seide Gamelyn blessed be þu
 That is a good counseil ȝeuyng for þu
 If þey werne me þanne to bryng to
 I wol sette goode strokes right on þe
 Tho þe sonday was I-come and folk
 Faire þey were welcomed hope lest
 And euer as þey atte halle/ dore com
 They caste þeir eye on ȝonge Gamelyn
 The fals knight his broþer ful of trechery
 Alle þe gastes þat þer wer atte manger
 Of Gamelyn his broþer he tolde hem
 Al þe harm and þe schame þat he telle
 Tho þey were serued Of messes two of
 Than seyde Gamelyn how serue ȝe me
 It is nouȝt wel serued by god þat al to
 That I sytte fastyng and oþer men may
 The fals knight his broþer þer þat he
 Tolde alle his gastes þat Gamelyn was
 And Gamelyn stood stille and answerd
 But adames wordes he held in his pouȝht
 Tho Gamelyn gan speke dolfully wiþ al
 To þe grete lordes þat saten in þe halle
 lordes he seyde for cristes passioun
 helpeþ bryng Gamelyn out of prisoun
 Than seyde an abbot sorwe on his chek
 he schal haue cristes curs and seynte
 That þe out of prisoun beggeþ oþer lorde
 But euer worthe hem wel þat doþ þe
 After þat abbot þan spak an oþer
 I wold þin heed were of þough þou wert
 Alle þat þe borwe / foule mot hem fals
 Thus þey seyde alle þat were in þe hall
 Than seyde a priour yuel mot he þryu
 It is moche skape boy þat þou art on þe

Thus Gamelyn and adam wroughte right fast
 And pleyden wiþ þe monkes and made hem agast
 Thider þey come rydyng iolily wiþ swaynes
 And hom aȝen þey were I-lad in cartes and in waynes 528
 Tho þey hadden al y-don þan seyde a gray frere
 Allas sire abbot what dide we now heere
 Tho þat comen hider it was a cold reed
 vs hadde ben better at home wiþ water and breed 532
 Whil Gamelyn made ordres of monkes and frere / [leaf 53]
 Euer stood his broþer and made foul chere /
 Gamelyn vp wiþ his staf þat he wel knew
 And gert/ him in þe nekke þat he ouerþrew 536
 Alitel aboue þe girdel þe Riggebon tobarst/
 And sette him in þe feteres þer he sat arst
 Sitte þer broþer sayde Gamelyn
 For to colyn þy blood as I dide myn 540
 As swiþe as þey hadde / I-wroken hem on here foon
 They askeden watir and wisschen anoon.
 what some for here loue and some for awe /
 Alle þe seruantz serued hem of þe beste lawe / 544
 The scherrene was þennes but a fyue myle
 And al was y-told him in a litel while
 How Gamelyn and adam had doon a sory rees
 Bounden and I-wounded men aȝein þe kinges pees 548
 Tho bigan sone strif for to wake /
 And þe scherref aboute Gamelyn for to take /

Now lythep and lestnep so god ȝif þou goode fyn
 And ȝe schul here read some of þe Gamelyn 552

The porter hadde byholde hem a litel while /
 he loued wel Gamelyn and was adrad of gyle
 And leet þe wyket stonden y-steke ful styлле
 And asked hem wipoute what was here wille 564
 For al þe grete company þanne spak but oon
 Vndo þe gate porter and lat vs in goon
 Than seyde þe porter so brouke I my chyn
 3e schul sey 3our erand er 3e comen In 568
 Sey to Gamelyn and adam if here wille be
 we wil speke wip hem wordes two or þre
 Felaw seyde þe porter stond þere stille [leaf 66, back]
 And I wil wende to Gamelyn to witen his wille 572
 In went þe porter to Gamelyn anoon
 And seyde sir I warne 3ou her ben come 3our foon
 The scherreues meyne ben atte gate /
 For to take 3ou boþe schul 3e na skape / 576
 Porter seyde Gamelyn so moot I wel þe /
 I wil allowe þe þy wordes whan I my tyme se
 Go agayn to þe 3ate and dwel wip hem a while
 And þou schalt se right sone porter a gyle 580
 Adam sayde Gamelyn looke þe to goon
 we haue foomen atte gate and frendes neuer oon
 It ben þe schirrefes men þat hider ben I-come /
 They ben swore to-gidere þat we schul be nome / 584
 Gamelyn seyde adam hye þe right blyue /
 And if I faile þe þis day euel mot I þryue
 And we schul so welcome þe scherreues men
 That som of hem schul make here beddes in þe den 588
 Atte posterne gate Gamelyn out went /
 And a good cart staf in his hand he hente
 Adam hente sone anoþer gret staf
 For to helpe Gamelyn and goode strokes 3af 592
 Adam felde tweyne and Gamelyn felde þre
 The oþer setten feet on erþe and bygonne fle
 what seyde adam so euer here I masse
 I haue a draught of good wyn / drynk er 3e passe / 596

- Nay by god sayde þay ' þy drynk' is not good
 It wolde make mannes brayn to lien in his hood
 Gamelyn stood stille and loked him aboute
 And seih þe scherreue come with a gret route / 600
 Adam seyde Gamelyn what be now þy reedes
 Here comþ þe scherreue and wil haue oure heedles
 Adam seyde Gamelyn my reed is now þis
 Abide we no longer lest we fare amys 604
 I rede þat we to wode goon ar þat we be founde
 Better is vs þer loos þan in town y-bounde /
 Adam took by þe hond yonge Gamelyn
 And euerich of hem tuo drank a draught of wyn • 608
 And after took her coursers and wenten her way [over]
 This lord þe scherreue nest but non ay
 The scherreue lighte a-down and went in to þe halle /
 And found þe lord y-fetered faste wip alle 612
 The scherreue vnfetered him sone and þat anon
 And sent after a leche to hele his rigge boon
 Ete we now þis fals knyght lyen in his care
 And talke we of Gamelyn and loke how he fare 616
 Gamelyn in to þe wode stalle stille
 And Adam þe Spenser liked þis ylle
 Adam swor to Gamelyn by myght Richer
 Now I see it is mery to be a Spenser 620
 That leuer me were / kepen for to here /
 Than walken in þis wilde wode my clothes to tere /
 Adam seyde Gamelyn damage þe right nought
 Many good mannes child in care is I brought 624
 And as þey stoodo talkyng toþen in feere /
 Adam herd talkyng of men and nygh him þought þei were
 This Gamelyn vnder þe wode loked aright
 Of some of yonge men he saugh wel a dight 628
 Alle sette alle mete compas aboute /
 Adam seyde Gamelyn now haue we no doute
 After take comþ boote þurgh grace of god almight
 To þurp of mete and drynk þat I haue a sight 632

Adam lokede þo vnder woode bow;
 And whan he seyh mete he was glad ynough
 For he hopede to god for to haue his deel
 And he was sore alonged after a good meel 636
 As he seyde þat word þe mayster outlawe
 Saugh Gamelyn and adam vnder woode schawe /
 3onge men seyde þe maister by þe goode roode
 I am war of gastes / god send vs non but goode 640
 3onder ben tuo 3onge men wonder wel adight
 And paraventure þer ben mo / who-so loked aright
 Ariseþ vp 3e 3onge men and fetter hem to me /
 It is good þat we witen what men þey bee / 644
 Vp þer sterten seuene / fro þe dyner
 And metten with Gamelyn and adam Spenseer
 whan þey were neyh hem þan seyde þat oon (leaf 67, back)
 3eldeth vp 3onge men 3our bowes and 3our floon · 648
 Thanne seyde Gamelyn þat yong was of elde
 Moche sorwe mot he haue þat to 3ou hem 3elde /
 I curse non oþer but right my selue
 þey 3e fette to 3ow fyue þanne 3e be twelue / 652
 Tho þey herde by his word þat might was in his arm
 Ther was non of hem alle / þat wolde do him harm .
 But sayd vnto gamelyn myldely and stille
 Com afore our maister and sey to him þy wille 656
 yonge men sayde Gamelyn by 3our lewte
 what man is 3our maister þat 3e wiþ be
 Alle þey answerde wiþoute lesyng
 Oure maister is I-crouned of outlawes kyng 660
 Adam seyde Gamelyn gowe in cristes name /
 he may neyþer mete ne drynk werne vs for schame /
 If þat he be heende and come of gentil blood
 he wol 3eue vs mete an drynk and doon vs som good 664
 By seynt Iame seyð adam / what harm þat I gete /
 I wil aunte to þe dore þat I hadde mete
 Gamelyn and adam wente forþ in feere
 And þey grette þe maister þat þey founde þere 668

Than seide þe maister kyng^t of outlawes
 what^t seeke 3e 3onge men vnder woode schawes
 Gamelyn answerde þe kyng^t wip his croone /
 he moste needes walke in woode þat^t may not walke in towne /
 Sire we walke not^t heer noon harm for to do 673
 But^t if^t we meete wip a deer to scheete þerto /
 As men þat^t ben hungry and mow no mete fynde
 And ben harde bystad vnder woode lynde 676
 Of Gamelynes wordes þe maister hadde rouþe /
 And seyde 3e schal haue ynough haue god my trouþe /
 he bad hem sitte þer adoun for to take reste / [17 MS. etc]
 And bad hem ¹ete and drynke and þat^t of þe beste / 680
 As þey sete and eeten and dronke wel and fyn ·
 Than seyde þat^t oon to þat^t oþer / þis is Gamelyn ·
 Tho was þe maister outlawe in to counseil nome
 And told how it was Gamelyn þat^t þider was I-come / 684
 Anon as he herde how it^t was bifalle (leaf 68)
 he made him maister vnder him ouer hem alle /
 wipin þe þridde wyke him com tydyng^t
 To þe maister outlawe þat^t þo was her kyng^t 688
 That^t he schulde come hom his pees was I-made
 And of þat^t goode tydyng^t he was þo ful glad
 Tho seyde he to his 3onge men soþ for to telle /
 Me ben comen tydynges I may no lenger dwelle / 692
 Tho was Gamelyn anon wipoute taryyng^t
 Made maister outlawe and crowned her kyng^t



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 149

¶ whan þey had him founde on knees þey hem sette /
And a-down wiþ here hood and here lord grette /
Sire wrappe þou nought for þe goode roode /
For we haue brought þou tydynges but þey be nat goode 708
Now is þy broþer scherrene and haþ þe baillye
And he haþ endited þe and wolues-heed doþ þe crie
¶ Allas seyde Gamelyn þat euer I was so slak'
þat I ne hadde broke his nekke þo his Rigge brak' 712
Goþ greteth hem wel myn housbondes and wyf
I wol ben atte nexte schire haue god my lyf
Gamelyn came wel redy to þe nexte schire/
And þer was his broþer boþe lord and sire / 716
Gamelyn com boldelych in to þe moot halle
And put a doun his hood among þe lordes alle
God saue þou alle lordynges þat now here be
But Brokebak' Scherreue enel mot þou þe / 720
why hast þou do me þat schame and vilonye /
For to late endite me and woluesheed me crye
Tho þought þe fals knight for to ben awreke [leaf 80, back]
And leet take Gamelyn most he nomore speke 724
Might þer be nomore grace but Gamelyn atte last
was cast in to prisoun and fetered ful fast
Gamelyn haþ a broþer þat highte sir Ote
As good a knight and heende as mighte gon on foote 728
Anon þer ȝede a messenger to þat goode knight
And told him altogidere how Gamelyn was dight
Anon as sire Ote herde how Gamelyn was a dight
he was wonder sory was he no þing light' 732
And leet saddle a steede and þe way he nam
And to his tweyne breþeren anon right he cam
Sire seyde sire Ote to þe scherrene þo /
we ben but thre breþeren schul we neuer be mo 736
And þou hast y-prisoned þe best of vs alle /
Swich anoper broþer yuel mot him bifalle
Sire Ote seide þe fals knight lat be þi curs /
By god for þy wordes he schal fare þe wurs 740

To þe kynges prisoun anon he is y-nome
 And þer he schal abyde til þe Iustice come /
 Par de seyde sir Ote better it schal be
 I bidde him to maympria þat þou graunt him me 744
 Til þe nexte sittinge of delyueraunce
 And þanne lat Gamelyn stande to his chaunce
 Broþer in swich a forthward I take him to the /
 And by þi fader soule þat þe bygat and me 748
 But if he be redy whan þe Iustice sitte /
 Thou schalt bere þe Iuggement for al þi grete witte
 I graunte wel seide sir Ote þat it so be
 Let delyuer him anon and tak him to me / 752
 Tho was Gamelyn delyuered to sire Ote his broþer
 And þat night dwelledon þat on wip þat oþer
 On þe morn seyde Gamelyn to sir Ote þe heende
 Broþer he seide I moot / forsothe fro þe wende 756
 To loke how my zonge men leden here lyf
 whether þey lyuen in Ioie or elles in stryf
 By god seyde sire Ote / þat is a cold reed .
 Now I see þat al þe cark schall fallen on myn heed 760
 For whan þe Iustice sitte and þou be nought I-founde
 I schal anon be take and in þy stede I-bounde / (lost 65)
 Broþer seyde Gamelyn dismaye þe nought
 For by seint Iame in gales þat many man hap sought 764
 If þat god almighty hold my lyf and witt
 I wil be þer redy whan þe Iustice sitt
 Than seide sir Ote to Gamelyn god schilde þe fro schame

They tolden him of auentures þat þey hadde founde /
 And Gamelyn hem tolde aȝein how he was fast I-bounde
 whil Gamelyn was outlawed had he no cors
 There was no man þat for him ferde þe wors 780
 But abbotes and priours monk and Chanoun
 On hem left he no þing whan he might hem nom
 whil Gamelyn and his men made merþes ryue
 The fals knight his broþer yuel mot he pryue / 784
 For he was fast about boþe day and oper
 For to hyre þe quest to hangen his broþer
 Gamelyn stood on a day and as he biheeld
 The woodes and þe schawes in þe wilde feeld 788
 he þought on his broþer how he him beheet
 That he wolde be redy whan þe Iustice seet
 he þoughte wel þat he wolde wiþoute delay
 Come afore þe Iustice to kepen his day 792
 And seide to his ȝonge men dighteþ ȝou ȝare /
 For whan þe Iustice sitt we moote be þare /
 For I am vnder borwe til þat I come /
 And my broþer for me to prisoun schal be nome / 796
 By seint Iame seyde his ȝonge men and þou rede þerto
 Ordeyne how it schal be and it schal be do /
 whil Gamelyn was comyng þer þe Iustice sat/
 The fals knight his broþer forȝat he nat þat [leaf 69, back] 800
 To huyre þe men on his quest to hangen his broþer
 Though he hadde nought þat oon he wolde haue þat oper
 Tho cam Gamelyn fro vnder woode Rys
 And broughte wiþ him / his ȝonge men of prys 804
 ¶ I se wel seyde Gamelyn þe Iustice is sette
 Go aforȝ adam and loke how it spette /
 Adam went in to þe halle and loket al aboute
 he seyð þere stonde lordes gret and stoute / 808
 And sir Ote his broþer fettered wel fast
 þo went adam out of halle as he were agast
 Adam said to Gamelyn and to his felaws alle
 Sir Ote stant I-fettered in þe moot halle 812

Jonge men seide Gamelyn þis 3e heeren alle
 Sir Ote stant I-fetered in þe moot halle
 If God 3if vs grace wel for to doo
 he schal it abegge þat broughte þerto 816
 Thanne seyde adam þat lokkes hadde hore /
 Cristes curs most he haue þat him bond so sore
 And þou wilt Gamelyn do after my red
 Ther is noon in þe halle schal bere a-vey his heed 820
 Adam seyde Gamelyn we wilne nought don so /
 we wil alee þe giltyf and lat þe oþer go
 I wil in to þe halle /and wiþ þe Iustice speke /
 On hem þat ben giltyf I wil ben a-wreke 824
 lat non skape at þe dore take jonge men 3eme /
 For I wil be Iustice þis day domes to deme
 God spede me þis day at my newe werk
 Adam com on with me / for þou schalt be my clerk 828
 His men answereden him and bad him doon his best
 And if þou to vs haue neede þou schalt fynde vs prest
 we wiln stande with þe whil þat we may dure
 And but we werke manly pay vs non hure / 832
 yonge men seyde Gamelyn so mot I wel þe
 As trusty a maister 3e schal fynde of me /
 Right þere þe justice sat in þe halle
 In wente Gamelyn amonges hem alle 836
 ¶ Gamelyn leet/ vnfetere his broþer out of beende
 Thanne seyde sir Ote his broþer þat was beende [lost 70]

The Iustice sat stille and roos nought anon
 And Gamelyn cleuede his cheeke boon
 Gamelyn took him in his arm and no more spak
 But prew him ouer þe barre and his arm tobrak 852
 Durste non to Gamelyn seye but good
 For fered of þe company þat wipoute stood
 Gamelyn sette him doun in þe Iustices sete /
 And sire Ote his broþer by him / and adam at his feet 856
 whan Gamelyn was I-set in þe Iustices sete
 her kneþ of a bourde þat Gamelyn dede /
 he leet fetre þe Iustice and his fals broþer
 And dede hem come to þe barre þat oon wip þat oper 860
 Tho Gamelyn hadde þus y-doon had he no rest
 Til he had enquired who was on þe quest
 For to deme his broþer sir Ote for to honge /
 Er he wiste which þey were he þoughte ful longe 864
 But as sone as Gamelyn wiste wher þey were
 he dede hem euerichone fetere in feere /
 And bringen hem to þe barre and sette hem in rewe /
 By my faip seyde þe Iustice þe Scherreue is a schrewe 868
 Than seyde Gamelyn to þe Iustise
 Thou hast y-geue domes of þe wors assise
 And þe .xij. sisours þat weren of þe queste /
 They schul ben hanged þis day so haue I reste 872
 Thanne seide þe scherreu to 3onge Gamelyn
 Lord I crie þe mercy broþer art þou myn
 Therefore seyde Gamely haue þou cristes curs
 For and þou were maister 3it I schulde haue wors [470, 48] 876
 For to make schort tale and nouzt to tarie longe
 he ordeyned him a queste of his men so stronge
 The Iustice and þe scherreu boþe honged hye
 To weyuen wip ropes and wip þe wynd drye 880
 And þe .xij. sisours sorwe haue þat rekke
 Alle þey were hanged faste by þe nekke /
 Thus ended þe fals knight wip his trecherie
 That euer had I-lad his lyf in falsnes and folyc 884

He was hanged by þe nek' and nouȝt' by þe purs
 That was þe meedo þat' he had for his fadres curs
 Sir Ote was eldest' and Gamelyn was ȝing'
 þey wenten wiþ here freendes euen to þe kyng' 888
 They made pees wiþ þe kyng' of þe best' assise
 The kyng' loued wel sir Ote and made him Iustise
 And after þe kyng' made Gamelyn boþe in Est' and west
 Chef' Iustice of al his fre forest' 892
 Alle his wighte ȝonge men þe kyng' forȝaf' here gilt'
 And sitthen in good office þe kyng' hem hath I-pilt'
 Thus wan Gamelyn his lond and his leede 895
 And wrak' him of his enemys and quyt' hem here meede
 And sire Ote his broþer made him his heir
 And siþþen wedded Gamelyn a wyf boþe good and feyr
 They lyueden to-gidere / whil þat crist' wolde.
 And siþen was Gamelyn granen vnder molde 900
 And so schal we alle may þer no man fle
 God bryng' vs to þe loye þat' euer schal be / A M E N

[The rest of the page, eleven lines, is blank in the MS.]

GROUP B. (FRAGMENT II.)

§ 1. MAN OF LAW'S HEAD-LINK.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

Owre Hoste sawh þat þe brighte sonne [leaf 71]
 The arke of his artificial day hap I-ronne
 The fourþe part of half an hour and more /
 And þough he were nat depe in lore 4
 he wist it was þe prettenþe day
 Of april þat is messanger to may
 And sawe wel þat þe schade of euery tree
 was in þe lengthe þe same quantite 8
 That was þe body erecte þat caused it
 And þerfore by þe schadwe he took his wit
 That Phebus which þat schoon so fair and bright
 Degrees was .xlv. clombe on hight 12
 And for þat day as in þat latitude
 Hit was ten of þe klokke he gan conclude /
 And sodeynly he plight his hors aboute
LOrdynge quod he I warne þou al þe route 16
 The fourþe party of þis day is goon
 Now for þe loue of god and of seint Ion
 leseþ no tyme as forþe as þe may
 lordynge þe tyme passeþ night and day 20
 And steliþ fro vs what pryuely slepyng
 And what þurgh negligence in oure wakyng
 As dop þe streem þat torneþ neuer agayn
 Descandyng fro þe mounteyn in to playn 24
 wel can senek and many philosopher
 Bywaylen tyme more þan gold in cofre
 For losse of catel may recouered be /
 But losse of tyme schendeth vs quod he 28

It wil nat come agayn wipoute drede
 Nomore þan wol malkyns maydenhede
 whan sche had lost it in hir wantownesse /
 let vs nat mowlen þus in ydelnesse 32

SIr man of lawe quod he so haue 3e blisse
 Telle vs a tale anon as forward ys
 3e be submitted purgh our fre assent/
 To stonden in þis cas at my Iuggement 36
 Acquyteþ 3ow and holdeþ 3oure byheste /
 Than haue 3e doon 3our deuour atte leste

HOst quod he depardeux I assent [leaf 71, back]
 To breke forward is nat myn entent/ 40

Byheste is dette and I wol holde fayn
 Al my byhest I can no better sayn
 For such lawe as a man 3eueth anoper wight
 he schuld him selue vsen hit by right 44

Thus wol oure text but napeles certeyn
 I can right now non oper tale seyn
 That Chaucer þey he can but lewedly
 On metres and on Rymyng certeynly 48

Hap seyð hem in such englich as he can
 Of olde tyme as knowep many man
 And 3if he haue nouȝt seyð hem lesue brother
 In O bok he hap seyð hem in anoper 52

For he hap told of louers vp and down
 Moo þan Ovide made of mencion

The tree of philles for hir demophon
 The pleynt of Dyane and of Ermyon
 Of Adrian and of ysyphilee
 The barren yle stondyng in þe see / 68
 The dreynt leander for hir Erro
 The teeres of Eleyne and eek þe woo
 Of bryxseyde and of ledomia
 The cruelte of þe queen Medea 72
 The litel children hangyng by þe hals
 For þilke Iason þat was of loue so fals
 O ypermystre penollope and alceste /
 þoure wyfhood he comendeth wip þe beste 76
 But certeynly no worde writen he [leaf 72]
 Of þilke wikked ensample of Canace
 That loued hir owen broþer synfully
 On whiche corsed stories I seye fy 80
 Or elles of Tyro appoloneus
 how þat þe cursed kyng Antiochus
 Byreft his doughter of hir maydenhede
 That is so horrible a tale as man may recde 84
 whan he hir þrew vpon þe pavement
 And þerfore he of ful auysement
 wolde neuer wryte in non of his sermouns
 Of such vnkynde abhominaciouns 88
 Ne I wol non reherse if þat I may
 But of my tale how schal I do þis day
 Me were loth to be lykned douteles /
 To muses þat men clepen Pyerides 92
 Methamorphoseos wot what I mene
 But napeles I recche nat a bene
 They I come after him with hawe-bake /
 I speke in prose¹ and let him rymes make 96
 And wip þat word he wip a sobre cheere
 Bygan his tale as þe schal after heere ¶ Explicit prologus
 [No break in the MS.]

¹ Was *Melibe* first meant for the Man of Law?

[*The Proem*]

incipit fabula /

O Hateful harm condicioñ of pouert' (on leaf 72) 99
 wiþ þurst wiþ cold wiþ hunger so confoundyd
 To asken help it schameþ in þin hert
 If þou non aske wiþ neede so art þou woundyd
 That verray neede vnwrappeþ al þy woundes hyd

Maugre þyn heed þou most for Indigence

Or stele or begge or borwe þy dispence 105

Thow blamest crist and seyst ful bitterly 106

he mys departeþ riches temporal

And þyn neyhebour þou wytes synfully

And seyst þou hast to litel and he haþ al 109

Parfay seystow som tyme he rekne schal

whan þat his tayl schal brennen in þe gleede

For he nought helpeþ þe needful in his neede 112

Her kneþ what is þe sentens of þe wyse 113

Beþ is to dye þan haue indigence

Thy selue neyghebour wol þe despyse (leaf 72, back)

If þou be pore far wel þy reuerence 116

3et of þe wyse man tak þis sentence

Alle þe harm of pouert' and hunger

	SIX-TEXT	133
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334.		159
3 e seeke land and see for 3our wynnynge		127
As wyse folk' as 3e knowe alle pastates		
Of regnes / 3e be fadres of tydynge		
Of tales bope of pees and of debates /		130
I were right' now of tales desolat		
Nere þat' a marchaunt' gon sippen many a 3ere /		
Me taught' a tale which 3e schal after heere		133

[*The Tale*]

- I**N Surrie dwelled whilom a companye [see V 72, 11.] 134
 Of Chapmen riche and þerto sad and trewe
 That wyde where sent her spycere
 Clopes of gold and satyn rich of hewe / 137
 her chaffar was so prifty and so newe
 That euery wight had deynte to chaffare
 wip hem and eek to selle hem of here ware / 140
- Now fel it þat þe maystres of þat sort 141
 han schapen hem to Rome for to wende
 were it for chapmanhode or for disport
 Non oþer message nolde þey þider sende / 144
 But came hemself to Rome þis is þe ende
 And in such place /as þought hem ananntage
 For here entent þey tooke her herburgage 147
- Soiourned naue þese marchauntz in þe toun 148
 A certeyn tyme as fel to here plesaunce
 But so bifell þat þexcellent renoun
 Of þemperoures doughter dame Custaunce 151
 Reported was with euery circumstance

SIX-TEXT 135

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 161

In hire is hye bewte wipoute pryde 162

3owþe wipoute grefhed or folye

To alle here werkes vertu is hire gyde /
humblesse haþ slayne in hir tyrrannye / 165

Sche is myrour of alle curtesye /
hir herte is verrey chambre of holynesse
hir hond mynistræ of fredom and almesse 168

And al þis voys is soþ as god is trewe 169

But now to purpos let vs turne azein

These marchantz haue don fraught here schippes newe /
And whan þey haue þis blisful mayde seyn · 172

Home to Surrey be þey went azein /
And doon here needes as þey haue don 3ore
And lyuen in wele I can 3ou say no more / 175

Now fel it þat þese marchauntz stoden in grace / 176

Of him þat was þe Sowdan of Surrye

For whan þey come fro eny straunge place /
he wolde of his benigne curtesye 179

Make hem good chere and busily aspye
Tydynges of sondry regnes for to lere/
The wordes þat þey mighte seen and heere / 182

Among oþer þinges specially 183

These marchauntz him told of dame Constaunce

So gret noblesse in earnest so ryally

That þis Sowdan haþ caught so gret plesaurunce 186

To haue hir figure in his remembraunce

And al his lust and al his besy cure
was for to loue hir whiles his lyf may dure 189

Par auenture in pilke large booke / 190

which þat is cleped þe heuen I-write was [leaf 73, back]

wip sterres whan þat he his burþe took

That he for loue schulde haue his depþ alas / 193

For in þe sterres clerere þen is glas /
 Is wryten god woot' who-so cowþe it rede
 The dep of euery man wipouten drede 196

In sterres many a wynter þer byfore 197
 was write þe dep of Ector and Achilles /
 Of Pompe Iulius er þey were I-bore /
 The stryf of Thebes and of Ercules / 200
 Of Sampson Turnus and of Socrates
 The dep but mennes wittes ben so dulle /
 That no wight can wel rede it at þe fulle 203

This sowdan for his pryue counseil sent 204
 And schortly of þis mater for to pace /
 he hap to hem declared his entent'
 And seyde hem certeyn but he might haue grace / 207
 To haue Constance wipinne a litel space
 he nas but deed and charged hem in hyȝe
 To schapen for his lyf som remedye 210

Dyuere men dynere þinges seyde 211
 The argumentes casten vp and down
 Many a subtyl resoun forþ þey leyden
 They spekyn of magike and of ambusioun 214
 But finally as in conclusioun

They can naught seen in bat non advantage

SIX-TEXT 137

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334 163

And he answerde raper þan I lese 225
 Constance I wol be cristen douteles /
 I moot be heres I may non oþer cheese /
 I pray ȝou haldeth ȝour arguments in pees / 228
 Sauþ my lyf and bep natʰ recheles / [leaf 74]
 Gop geteþ hire þat hap my lyf in cure /
 For in þis wo I may no lenger dure / 231

Whatʰ needeþ gretter dilatacioun 232
 I say by tretys and ambassatrye
 And by þe popes mediacioun
 And al þe chirche and al þe chyualrye / 235
 Thatʰ in destruccioun of mawmetrye
 And in encrease of cristes lawe deere /
 They ben acordid as ȝe schal after heere/ 238

How þatʰ þe Soudan and his baronage 239
 And alle his lieges schuld I-crystned be /
 And he schal haue Constance in mariage/
 And certeyn gold I notʰ whatʰ quantite 242
 And þerfore founden þey suffisantʰ seurte
 This same acord was sworn on euery syde/
 Now fair Constance almighty god þe guyde / 245

Now wolde som men wayten as I gesse 246
 Thatʰ I schulde tellen al þe puruyauunce /
 Thatʰ þemperourʰ of his gretʰ noblesse /
 Hap schapen for his doughter dame Constaunce / 249
 wel may men knowe þatʰ so gretʰ ordynaunce
 May no man telle in so litel a clause ,
 As was arrayed for so high a cause / 252

Bisschops ben schapen with hir for to wende 253
 lordes ladyes and knightes of renoun
 And oþer folkʰ ynowe þis þis is þe ende
 And notefied is þurgh out þe toun 256

That euery wight wip gret deuocioun
 Schulde preye crist þat he þis mariage
 Receyue in gree and spede þis viage 259

The day is come of hire departyng 260
 I say þe woful day þat þan is come
 That þer may be no lenger tarryyng
 But forþeward þey dresse hem alle & some / 263
 Constance þat with sorwe is ouercome
 Ful pale arist and dresseþ hir to wende /
 For wel sche saugh þer nas non oþer ende 266

Allas what wonder is it/ þough sche wepte [leaf 74, back] 267
 That schal be sent to straunge nacioun
 Fro freendes þat so tenderly hir kepte /
 And to be bounde vndur subieccioun 270
 Of oon sche knew nat his condicioun
 Housbondes ben al goode and han be þore
 That knowen wyfes I dar say no more / 273

Fader sene seid þy wrecched child Costance 274
 Thy þonge doughter fostred vp so softe /
 And ȝe my mooder my souerayn plesauce
 Ouer al þing outaken crist on lofte / 277
 Constance þour child hir recomaundeth ofte
 Vnto þour grace / for I schal in to Surre

SIX-TEXT 139

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 165

I trowe at Troye whan Pirrus brak' þe wal 288
 Or yleon þat' brend Thebes þe Citee
 Ne at' Rome for þe harme þurgh hanibal
 'That' Romayns han venquysshed tymes þre 291
 Nas herd such tender wepyng' for pite
 As in þe Chambur was for hir partyng'
 But' forþ sche moot' wheþer sche weep or syng 294

O firste meuyng' cruel firmament 295
 with þi diurnal swough þat' crowdest' ay
 And hurlest' al fro Est' to Occident
 That' naturally wold hold anoþer way 298
 Thyn crowdyng' sette þe heuen in such array
 At' þe bygynnyng' of þis fiers viage
 That' cruel marc3 haþ slayn þis marriage 301

Infortunat ascendent tortuous 302
 Of which þe lordes helpees falle alas
 Out' of his angle in to þe darkest hous
 O . Mari3 attegere as in þis caas [leaf 7b] 305
 O feble moone vnhappy been þi paas /
 Thou knettest' þe þer þou art' nat' receyued
 Ther þou were wel fro þennes artow weyued 308

Inprudent' Emperour of Rome alas 309
 was þer no philosopher in al þy toun
 Is no tyme bet' þan oþer in such caas
 Of viage is þer noon eleccioun 312
 Namly to folk' of heigh condicioun
 Nought' whan a roote is of a birthe I-knowe
 Allas we ben to lewed and eek' to slowe / 315

[To Shipe] is brought' þis woful faire mayde / ^[? In a later hand.]
 Solempnely with euery circumstaunce /
 Now Ihū crist' so be wiþ þou sche sayde /
 Ther nys nomor but' far wel fair Custaunce 319

She peyneth hire to make good contenaunce
 And forþ I lete hire sayle in þis manere /
 And torne I wol aȝein to my matiere / 322

The moder of þe Sawdan ful of vices 323
 Aspyed hap hir sones playn entent/
 how he wol lete his olde sacrifices
 And right anon sche for hir counseil sent 326
 And þey ben come to knowe what sche ment
 And whan assembled was þis folk in fere
 Sche sette hir down and sayd as ȝe schal heere / 329

Lordes quod sche ȝe knowen euerichon 330
 how þat my sone in poynt is for to lete
 The holy lawes of our alkaron
 ȝe ben goddes messangere makamete / 333
 But oon avow to grete god I hete
 The lyf schuld raper out of my body start
 Or makametes law go out of myn hert 336

What schal vs tyden of þis newe lawe 337
 But þraldam to oure body and penance
 And afterward in helle to be drawe /
 For we reneyed mahound oure creaunce 340
 But lordes wol ȝe maken assuraunce
 As I schal say assentyng to my lore

SIX-TEXT 141

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 167

W e schul first feyne ous cristendom to take	351
Cold watir schal nat greue vs but a lite /	
And I schal such a fest and Renel make /	
That as I trow I schal þe Sowdan quyte	354
For þough his wyf be cristned neuer so white	
Sche schal haue need to waisache away þe rede	
They sche a font of watir wip hir lede	357
O Sowdones root of iniquite	358
Virago þou Semyram þe secounde	
O serpent vnder feminite	
Lyk to þe serpent deep in helle I-bounde	361
O feyned woman alle þat may confounde	
Vertu and Innocence þurgh þy malice /	
Is bred in þe as nest of euery vice	364
O Satan enuyous syn pilke day	365
That þou were chased fro ourc heritage	
wel knewest þou to women þe olde way	
Thou madest Eue to bryng vs in seruage	368
Thou wolt fordoon þis cristen mariage	
Thyn instrument so weylaway þe while	
Makestow of women whan þou wolt bygile	371
T his Sawdones whom I þus blame and wary	372
let pryuely hir counseil gon his way	
what schuld I in þis tale lenger tary	
Sche rideþ to þe Soudan on a day	375
And seyð him þat sche wold reney hir lay	
And cristendani of prestes handes fonge	
Repentyng hir sche hethen was so longe	378
B ysechyng him to doon hir þat honour	379
That sche most haue þe cristen men to feste /	
To plesen hem I wil do my labour	[text 76]
The sawdan seith I wol do at þour heste	382

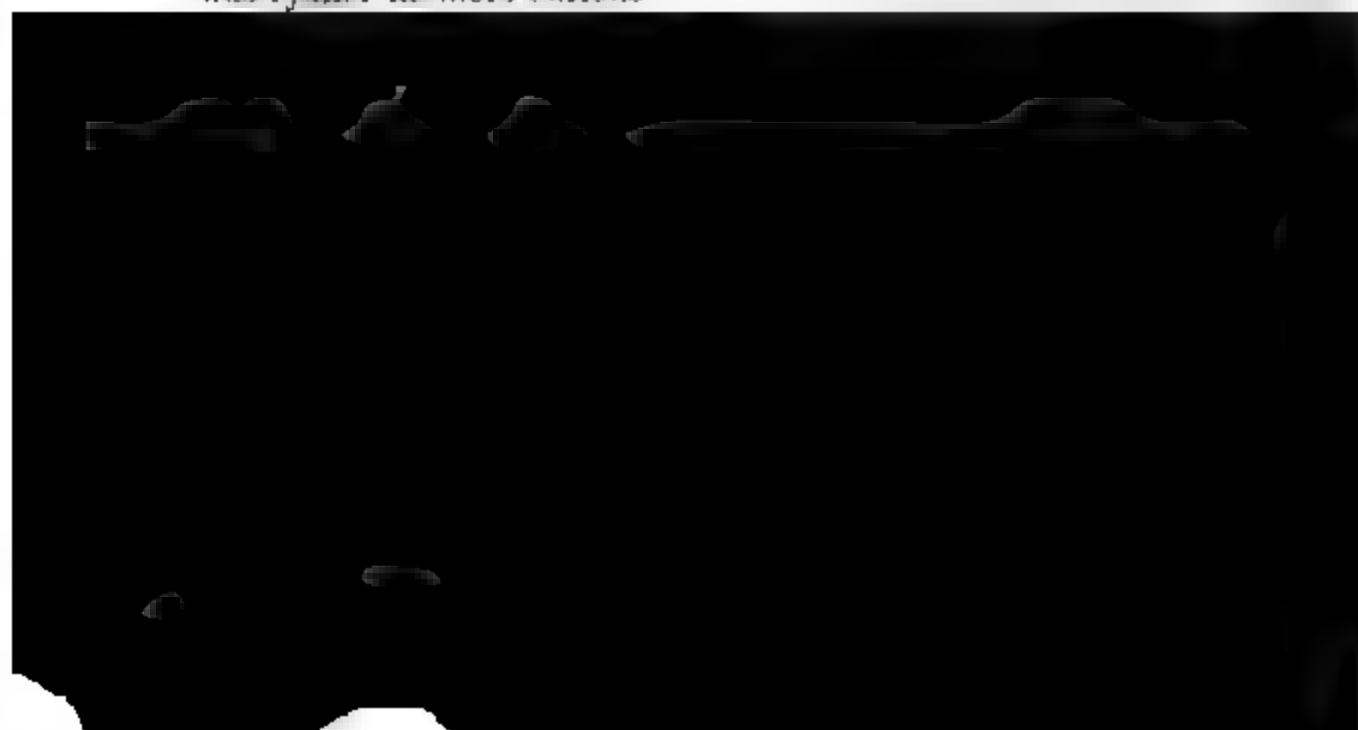
And knelyng þankeþ hir of þat requeste
 So glad he was he nyst nat what to seye
 Sche kyst hir sone and hom sche goþ hir weye 385

{PART II.}

Arryued ben þe cristen folk to londe / 386
 In Surry with a gret solempne route
 And hastily þis soudan sent his sonde
 First to his moder and al þe regne aboute 389
 And seyde his wyf was comen out of doute
 And preyed hir for to ride aȝein þe queene
 The honour of his regne to sustene / 392

Gret was þe pree and riche was tharray 393
 Of Surriens and Romayns mette in feere
 The moodur of þe Sowdan riche and gay
 Receyued hir with al so glad a cheere 396
 As eny modir might hir doughter deere
 And to þe nexte Citee þer bysyde
 A softe paas solempnely þay ryde 399

Nought trow I þe triumphe of Iulius 400
 Of which þat lukan makeþ moche best
 was ryaller no more curious



SIX-TEXT 143

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 169

The fruyt of þis matier is þat I telle
 whan tyme com men þought it for þe best
 That reuel stynt and men goon to her rest 413

The tyme com þe olde Sowdonesse 414
 Ordeyned hap þis fest of which I told
 And to þe feste cristen folk hem dresse
 [. no gap in the MS.] 417
 Ther men may fest and realte byholde
 And deyntes mo / þan I can of deuyse
 But al to deere þey bought it ar þey ryse [leaf 76, back] 420

O sodeyn wo þat euer art successour 421
 ¶ To worldly blis spreynð is wiþ bitternesse /
 The ende of oure ioie of oure worldly labour
 wo occupieth þe fyn of oure gladnesse 424
 herken þis counseil for thyn sikernesse
 vpon þyn glade dayes haue in þi mynde
 The vnwar woo þat cometh ay bihynde 427

For schortly for to tellen at o word 428
 The Sawdan and þe cristen euerichone
 Ben al to-hewe and stiked atte bord
 But it were Dame Constaunce allone 431
 This olde Sowdones þis cursed crone
 hap wiþ hir frendes doon þis cursed dede
 For sche hir self wold al þe contre lede 434

Ne þer was surrien noon / þat was conuerted 435
 That of þe counseil of þe Sawdon woot
 That he nas alto-hewe or he asterted
 And Constaunce haue þey take anon foot-hoot 438
 And in a schippe / steleres god it woot
 They haue hir set. and bad hir lerne to sayle
 Out of Surry ageinward to ytaile 441

- A** certein tresour þat sche þider ladde 442
 And soþ to sayn vitaile gret' plente
 They haue hir ȝeuen and cloþes eek' sche hadde
 And forþ sche sayleþ to þe salte see 445
 O my Constaunce ful of' benigne
 O Emperoures ȝonge doughter deere
 he þat is Lord of' fortun be þi steere 448

 Sche blesseþ hir and with ful pitous voys 449
 Vnto þe croys of' crist' þan seyde sche
 O cler o welful auter holy croys
 Itlood of' þe lambes blood ful of' pite 452
 That' wiesh þe world fro old iniquite
 Me fro þe feend and fro his clowes keepe
 That' day þat I schal drenchen in þe deepe 455

 Victorious tre proteccioun of' trewe 456
 That' oonly were worthy for to bere
 That' kyng' of' heuen with his woundes newe [leaf 77]
 The white lamb þat hurt' was with a spere 459
 Elemer of' feendes out of' him and here /
 On which þy lymes feithfully extenden
 Me kepe and ȝif me might' my lyf to menden 462

 Ȝeres and dayes flette þis creature 463
 Thurghout þe see of' Grece in to þe strayte

SIX TEXT 145

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. **Harleian 7334.** 171

That euery wight sauf he mayster or knaue
 was wip þe lioun frete or he asterte
 No wight but god þat he bar in his herte 476

God lust to schewe his wondrousful miracle 477
 In hir for sche schuld seen his mighty werkes
 Crist which þat is to euery harm triacle
 By certeyn menes ofte as knowen clerkes 480
 Doth þing for certeyn ende þat ful derk is //
 To mannes witt / þat for our ignorance
 Ne can nought knowe his prudent purveyance 483

Now sith sche was nat at þe fest I-slawe / 484
 who kepte hir fro drenching in þe see /
 who kepte Ionas in þe fisches mawe
 Til he was spouted vp at Ninive 487
 wel may men knowe it was no wight but he
 That kept þe pepul Ebrayk fro her drenchyng
 wip drye feet / þurghout þe see passyng 490

Who hadde foure spiritz of tempest 491
 That power han to noyen land and see
 Boþe norþ and souþ and also west and Est
 Anoyþ neyþer londe / see ne tree / 494
 Soply þe comander of þat was he
 That fro þe tempest ay þis womman kepte *[leaf 77, back]*
 As wel when sche awok as when sche alepte 497

Wher might þis womman mete and drinke haue / 498
 Thre þer and more / how lasteþ hir vitaille
 who fedde þe Egipcien marie in þe Caue
 Or in desert no wight but crist saunþ faile 501
 Fyf þousand folk / it was a gret meruaile/
 wip loues fyf and fisches tuo to feede
 God sent his foyssoun at her grete needs 504

Sche dryuþ forþ in to cure thowen 805

Thurghout cure wilde son til alle last

vnder an hulle þat men nought can

For in Northumberland þe wawe hir cast 808

And in þe sand þe schip styked so fast

That þenne wold it nouȝt in al a tyde

The wille of crist was þat sche schold abyde 811

The Constabl of / þe castel doun in fere / 812

To se þis wreke / and al þe schip he soughte

And found þis wery woman ful of care

And found also þe treasour þat sche broughte 815

In hir langage mery sche brouȝte

The lif out of her body for to wyne

hir to deliuer of woo þat sche was inne / 818

A maner latyn corrupt was hir speche 819

But algates / þer by sche was vnderstonde

The constabl when him hat no longer seeke

This woful woman brouȝte he to londe / 822

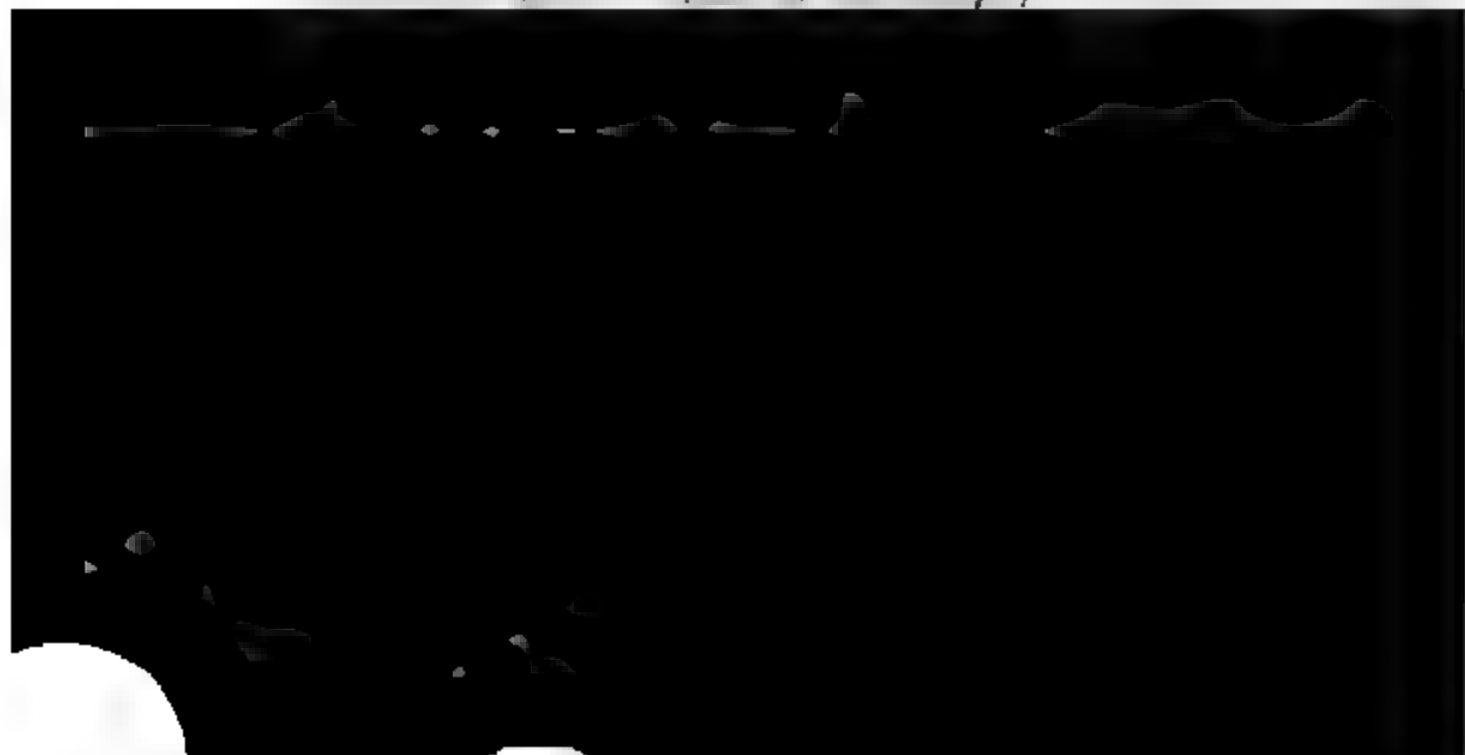
Sche knelap doun and thanketh godles soules

But what sche was sche wold no man seye

For foul no faire / þough sche scholde deye 825

Sche was sche seyde an maad in þe son 826

That sche forȝot hir mynde by hire trouwe /



SIX-TEXT 147

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. **Harleian 7334.** 173

In orisoun wiþ many a bitter teere /
 Til ihū haþ conuerted þurgh his grace
 Dame hermegyld þe Constables wif of þe place 539

In al þe lond no cristen men durst route 540
 Al cristen men ben fled from þat contre
 Thurgh payens þat conquered al a-boute /
 The places of þe north by land and see 543
 To wales fled þe cristianite
 Of olde britouns dwellyng in þis yle /
 Ther was hir refut for þe mene while 546

But/ ȝit nere cristen britouns so exiled 547
 That þer / nere some in here pryuite /
 honoured crist and heþen men bygiled
 And neigh þe Castel such þer dwellid þre 550
 That oon of hem was blynd and might nat se /
 But if it were wiþ eyen of his mynde
 wiþ which men seen after þat þey ben blynde 553

Bright was þe sonne as in someres day 554
 For which þe constable and his wif also
 And Constaunce had take þe righte way
 Toward þe see a forlong wey or two 557
 To playen and to Romen to and fro
 And in þat/ walk the blynde men þey mette
 Croked and olde with eyen fast y-schette 560

In name of crist / cryed þis old britoun 561
 Dame hermegyld ȝif me my sight aȝeyn
 This lady wax affrayed of þe soun
 lest þat hir houseband schortly to sayn 564
 wold hir for ihū cristes loue haue slayn
 Til Constaunce made hir bold and bad hir werche
 The wil of crist as douȝter of holy chirohe 567

- The Constable wax abaissed of þat sight 568
 And sayde what amounteþ al þis fare
 Constaunce answered / sir it is cristes might
 That helpeth folk out of þe feendes snare / 571
 And so ferforþ sche gan hir lay declare/ [leaf 76, back]
 That sche þe Constable er þat it was Eue
 Conuerted and on crist made him bileue 574
- This Constable was no þing lord of þe place 575
 Of which I speke þer he Constance fond
 But kept it strongly many a wynter space
 vnder alla kyng of Northumberlond 578
 That was ful wys and worpy of his hond
 Aȝein þe scottes as men may wel heere
 But tourne aȝein I wil to my mateere 581
- Satan þat euer vs wayteþ to begile / 582
 Sawe of Constaunce þe persecucioun
 And cast anon how he might quyt hir while /
 And made a ȝong knight þat dwelt in þe toun 585
 Loue hir so hoot of foul affeccoun
 That verrayly him þouȝt he schulde spille
 But he of hire / oones had his wille 588
- He wowith hir but it avayleþ nought 589
 Sche wolde do no synne by no weye

SIX-TEXT 149

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 175

And kutte þe prote of hermegild a two /
 And leyde þe bloody knyfe by dame Constaunce
 And went his way þat god ȝeue him meschaunce 602

Sone after com þis Constable hom agayn 603
 And eek alle þat was kyng of þat lond
 And say his wyf dispitously I-slayn
 For which ful oft / he wepte and wrong his hond 606
 And in þe bed þe blodly knyfe he fond
 By Dame Custaunce allas what might he say
 For verray woo / hir witt was al a-way 609

To king Alla was told al þis meschaunce [leaf 79] 610
 And eek / þe tyme and wher and eek þe wyse
 That in a schip was founden þis Constaunce
 As here bifore ȝe haue herd me deuyse / 613
 The kinges hert of pite gan agrise
 whan he saugh so benigne a creature
 Falle in disese and in mysauenture 616

For as þe lomb toward his deþ is brought / 617
 So stant þis Innocent bifore þe kyng
 This false knight þat hap þis tresoun wrought
 Bereþ hir an hand þat sche hath don þis þing 620
 But neuer þe les þer was gret mornyng
 Among þe people and seyn þey can not geese
 That sche had doon so gret a wikkednese 623

For þey han seyen hir so vertuous 624
 And louyng hermegyld right as hir lyf
 Of þis bar witnesse euerich in þat hous
 Saue he þat slowȝ hermegyld with his knyfe 627
 This gentil kyng hap caught a gret motyf
 Of his witnesse and þought / he wold enquire
 Deppere in þis cas a troupe to lere 630

- A**llas Constaunce þou ne has no champioun 631
 Ne fighte canstow nat' so welaway
 But' he þat' for oure redempcioun
 Bonde Sathan and ȝit' liþ þer he lay 634
 So be þy stronge champioun þis day
 For but crist' vpon þe miracle kythe
 withouten gilt' þou schalt' be slayn as swithe 637
- Sche set' hir doun on knees and þan sche sayde 638
 Immortal god þat' sauedest' Susanne
 For false blame and þou mercyful mayde
 Mary I mene doughter of seint' Anne 641
 Bifore whos child aungeles syng' Osaune
 If I be gultles of þis felonye
 My socour be for elles schal I dye 644
- H**aue ȝe not' seye somtyme a pale face 645
 Among' a press of him þat' haþ be lad
 Toward his deþ wher him geyneþ no grace /
 And such a colour in his face haþ had (leaf 73, back) 648
 Men mighte knowe his face was so bysted
 Among' alle þe faces in þat route
 So stant Constance and lokeþ hire aboute / 651
- O** queenes lyuyng' in prosperite 652
 Duchesses and ȝe ladies everychon



SIX-TEXT 151
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 177

And if þis knight wil swere how þat sche /
This womman slowȝ ȝet wol we us avyse
whom þat we wille schal be oure iustise 665

A britoun book I-write wiþ enaungiles 666
was fette and on þis book/ he swor anon
Sche gultif was and in þe mene whiles
An hond him smot vpon þe nekke boon 669
That down he fel anon right at a stoon
And boþe his yen brast out of his face
In sight of euery body in þat place 672

A vois was herd in general audience 673
And seist þou hast disclaundred gulteles
The doughter of holy chirche in hire presence
Thus hastow doon & ȝit I holde my pees 676
Of þis meruaile agast was al þe prees
As mased folk þey stoden euerychon
For drede of wreche saue Custaunce allon 679

Gret was þe drede and eek þe repentaunce 680
Of hem þat hadden gret suspeccioun
vpon þe sely Innocent Custaunce
And for þis miracle in conclusioun 683
And by Custaunces mediacioun
The kyng and many oþer in þe place
Conuerted was / thanked be cristes grace [100/80] 686

This false knight was slayn for his vntroupe / 687
By Iuggement of Alla hastyly
And ȝit Custaunce hap of his dep gret roupe
And after þis ilus of his mercy 690
Made alla wedde ful solempnely
This holy mayde þat is bright and schene /
And þus hap crist I-maad Constance a queene 693

But who was woful if I schal not lye / 694

Of þis weddyng but Domegild and þo

The kynges mooder ful of tyrannye

hir þought hir cursed herte brast a-two 697

Sche wolde nat hir sone had I-do so

hir þought despyte / þat he schulde take

So straunge a creature vnto his make 700

Me lust not of þe cas ne of þe stree 701

Make so long a tale as of þe corn

what schuld I telle of þe realte

Of mariage / or which cours god biforn 704

who bloweth in a trompe or in an horn

The fruyt of euery tale is for to seye

They ete & drynk / and daunce / and synge & pleye 707

They gon to bed as it was skile & right 708

For þough þat wyfes ben ful holy þinges

They moste take in pacience a night

Such maner necessaries as ben plesynges 711

To folk that han I-wedded hem wiþ rynges

And haluendel her holynesse ley a side

And for þe tyme it may non oper betyde 714

On hire he gat a knaue child anon 715

And to a bisschop & a Constable eke



SIX-TEXT 153

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 179

how þat þis blisful tydyng^t is bifalle
And oþer þinges spedful for to seye
he takeþ þe lettre and forþ he goþ his weye 728

This messenger to doon his auauntage 729
vnto þe kynges moder he goþ ful swiþe
And salueth hire / fair in his langage
Ma dame quod he 3e may be glad and bliþe 732
And þanke god an hundred þousand siþe
My lady queen haþ child wipouten doute
To ioye and blis of al þe reame aboute 735

Lo heer þe lettres sealed of þis þing^t 736
That I mot^t bere with al þe haat^t I may
If 3e wole ought^t vnto 3oure sone þe kyng^t
I am 3oure seruaunt^t boþe night^t and day 739
Doungyld answerde as now þis tyme nay
But here al nyght^t I wol þou take þy rest^t
To morwen I wil say þe what^t me lest^t 742

This messenger drank^t sadly ale and wyn 743
And stolen were his lettres pryuely
Out^t of his box whil he sleep as a swyn
And countrefest^t þey were subtilly 746
Anoþer sche him wroot^t ful synfully
vnto þe kyng^t direct^t / of þis matiere
Fro his Constable as 3e schul after heere 749

The lettre spak^t þe queen delyuered was 750
Of so orryble and feendly creature
That in þe castel noon so hardy was
That any while dorste þerin endure / 753
The mooder was an Elf by auenture
Bycome by charmes or by sorcerie
And euery man hatip hir companyne 756

- W**o was þis kyng' whan he þis letter had sein 757
 But to no wight' he told his sorwes sore
 But of his owen hand he wrot' agayn .
 welcome þe sond of crist' for eueremore 760
 To me þat' am now lerned in his lore
 lord welcome be þy lust' and þy pleasaunce [leaf 81]
 My lust' I putte al in þyn ordinaunce 763
- K**epeth þis child al be it foul or fair 764
 And eek' my wyf' vnto myn hom comyng'
 Crist' whan him lust' may sende me an hair
 More agreable þan þis to my likyng' 767
 The lettre he selet' pryuyly wepyng'
 which to þe messenger he took' ful sone
 And forþ he goth þer nys no more to done 770
- O** messenger fulfild of dronkenesse 771
 Strong' is þy brep þy lymes faltren ay
 And þou bywreyst' alle sykernesse
 Thy mynde is lorn þou ianglest' as a lay 774
 Thy face is torned al in a newe array
 Ther drunkenesse regnep' in eny route
 Ther is no counseil hid wipouten doute 777
- O** Domegyld I haue non englich digue 778
 vnto þy malice and þy tyrannye
 And þerfor to þe feend I þe resigne
 let' him endyten of þi treccherie 781
 Fy mannyasch fy .o. nay by god I lye
 Fy feendly spirit' for I dar wel telle
 Though þou here walke þy spirit' is in helle 784
- T**his messenger comp' fro þe kyng' agayn 785
 And at þe kinges modres court' he light'
 And sche was of þis messenger ful fayn
 And pleseth him in al þat' euer sche might' 788



SIX-TEXT 155

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 181

he drank' and wel his gurdel vnderpight'
he alepeþ and he fareþ in his gyse
Al nyght' vnto þe sonne gan arise 791

Eft' were his lettres stolen euerichon 792
And countrefeted lettres in þis wise
The kyng' comaundeþ his constable anon
vp peyne of hangyng' of an heiȝ Iustise 795
That' he schulde suffre in no maner wyse
Constaunce in his regne for to abyde
Thre dayes and a quarter of a tyde 798

But' in þe same schip as he hir fond 799
hire and hir zonge sone and al hire gere [leaf 81, back]
he schulde putte and crowde fro þe londe
And charge hire þat' sche neuer eft' come þere 802
'O. my Constaunce wel may þy goost' haue fere
And alepyng' in þy drem ben in penaunce
whan Domegyl cast' al þis ordynaunce / 805

This messenger a-morwe whan he awook' 806
vnto þe castel held þe nexte way
And to þe constable he þe lettre took'
And whan þat' he þe pitous lettre say 809
Ful ofte he seyð allas and welaway
Lord crist' quod he how may þis world endure
So ful of synne is many a creature 812

O mighty god if' þat' it be þy wille 813
Sep þou art' rightful iugge how may þis be /
That' þou wolt' suffre Innocentȝ to spille /
And wikked folk' regne in prosperite 816
'O good Constance allas so wo is me
That' I moot' be þy tormentour or deye
On schamful dep þer is non oper weye 819

Wepynge boþe ȝong' & olde in al þat' place 820
 whan þat' þe kyng' þis corsed lettre sent'

And Constance with a dedly pale face
 The fayre day toward hir schip sche went 823

But neuerþeles sche takeþ in good entent
 The wil of crist' / and knelyng' on þe grounde
 Sche sayde lord ay welcome be þy sonde 826

He þat' me kepte fro þe false blame 827
 whil I was on þe lond amonges ȝou

He can me kepe from harm & eek' fro schame
 In þe see al þough I se nat' how 830

As strong' as euer he was he is right' now
 In him trust' I. & in his mooder deere
 That' is to me my sayl and eek' my steere / 833

Hir litel child lay wepyng' in hir arm 834

And knelyng' pitoualy to him sche sayde /
 Pees litle sone I wol do þe noon harm
 wiþ þat' hir kerchef' of hir hed' sche brayde 837

And ouer his litel yȝen sche it layde [ten/08]

And in hir arm sche lullith it wel faste

And vnto heuen hir eyȝen vp sche caste 840

Moder quod sche and mayde bright' marie 841

Sop is þat' þurgh wommannes eggement

SIX-TEXT 157

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 183

Thou heuen of refute brighte sterre of day
 Rewe on my child þat of þyn gentilnesse /
 Rewest on euery synful in destresse 854

O litel child alas what is þi gilt 855
 That neuer wroughtest synne as ȝet þar de
 why wil þyn harde fader han þe spilt
 O. mercy deere and Constable seyde sche 858
 And let my litel child here dwelle with þe
 And if þou darst not sauē him for blame /
 So kys him oones in his fadres name 861

Ther wiþ sche loked bakward to þe lond 862
 And seyde far wel housbond rewþeles
 And vp sche rist and walkep down þe stronde
 Toward þe schip hir folweþ al þe prees 865
 And euer sche preyep hir child to hold his pees
 And took hir leue and wiþ an holy entent
 Sche blessep hire and to þe schip sche went 868

Vytailled was þe schip it is no drede 869
 Abundauntly for hire ful longe space
 And oþer necessities þat schulde nede
 Sche had ynowȝ heryed be cristeȝ grace 872
 For wynd and water almighty god purchace
 And bryngt hir hom I can no bettre say
 But in þe see sche dryueþ forþ hir way 875

[PART III.]

Alla þe kyngt comþ hom soon after þis (leaf 82, back) 876
 vnto þe Castel of þe which I tolde
 And askep wher his wyf and his child ys
 The Constable gan aboute his herte colde 879

And playnly al þe maner he him tolde
 As ȝe han herd / I can telle it no better
 And schewed þe kynges seal and his letter 882

And seyde lord as ȝe comaunded me 883
 vp peyne of deþ so haue I do certayn
 This messenger tormented was til he
 Mooste biknowe and telle it plat and playn · 886
 Fro nyght to night in what place he had layn ·
 And þus by witt/ and subtil enquiryng
 ymaged was by wham þis gan to spryng 889

The hand was knowen þat þe lettre wroot 890
 And al þe venym of þis cursed dede
 But in what wyse certeynly I noot
 Theffect is þis þat alla out of drede 893
 his moder slough as men may pleynly reede /
 For þat sche traytour was to hir ligeaunce
 Thus ended olde Domegild wip meechaunce 896

The sorwe þat/ þis alla night and day 897
 Makþ for his wyf and for his child also
 Ther is no tonge þat it telle may
 But now I wol vnto Custaunce go 900
 That fleetetþ in þe see in peyne and wo



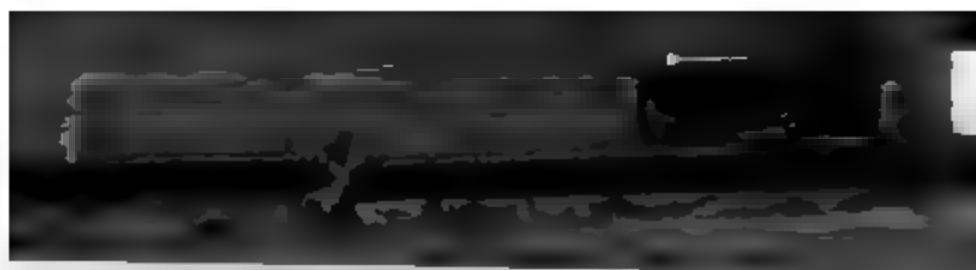
	SIX-TEXT	159
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334.		185
Down fro þe Castel comp þer many a wight		911
To gawren on þis schip and on Constaunce		
But schortly fro þe castel on a night		
The lordes styward God ȝine him meschaunce	(244r/25r)	914
A þeeft þat had reneyed oure creaunce		
Com in to schip alone and seyde he scholde		
hir lemman be wheþir sche wold or nolde		917
Who was þis wrecched womman þe bigoon		918
hire childe crieþ and sche pytously		
But blisful mary hilp hir right anon		
For wiþ hir strengþe wel and mightily		921
The theef fel ouer boord al sodeinly		
And in þe see he drenched for vengauce		
And þus haþ crist vnwemmed kept Constance		924
O foule lust/ O luxurie lo þin ende /		925
Nought oonly þat þou feyntest mannes mynde		
But verrayly þou wolt his body schende		
The ende of þyn werk or of þy lustes blynde		928
his compleynyng how many may men fynde		
That nought for werk som tyme but/ for þentent		
To doon his synne ben eyþer slayn or schent /		931
How may þis weyke womman han þe strengþe		932
hir to defende aȝein þe renegat		
O Goliath vnmesurable of lengþe		
how mighte dauid make þe so mate		935
So ȝong and of armure so desolate		
how dorst he loken vpon þyn dredful face		
wel may men seyn it nas but goddes grace		938
Who ȝaf Iudith corage or hardynesse /		939
To slen him Osefernes in his tent		
And to delyueren out þe wrecchednes		
The peple of god I say in þis entent		942

That right as good spiryte vigor sent
 To hem and saued hem out of meschaunce /
 So sent he might and vigor to Constaunce 945

Forth goþ hir schip purghout þe narwe mouth 946
 Of Iubalter and Septe dryuyng ay
 Somtyme west som tyme north and south
 And sountyme Est ful many a wery way 949
 Til cristes mooder blessed be sche ay
 hap schapen þurgh hir endeles goodnesse
 To make an ende of hir heuynesse (100v/101, back) 952

Now let vs stynt of Constance but a þrowe 953
 And speke we of / þe Romain Emperour
 That out of Surrye hap by lettres knowe
 The slaughter of cristen folk and deshonour 956
 Doon to his douȝter by a fals traytour
 I mene þe cursed and wikked sowdenesse
 That at þe fest leet slee boþe more and lease 959

For which þis Emperour hap sent anon 960
 his senatours with real ordynaunce
 And oþer lordes got wot many oon
 On surriens to take high vengauce 963
 They brenne / sleen / and bringen hem to meschaunce



	SIX-TEXT 161
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	187
He bryngeþ hir to Rome and to his wyf	974
he ȝaf hir and hir ȝonge sone also	
And wiþ þe Senatour lad sche hir lyf	
Thus can our lady. bryngen out of woo	977
woful Constance and many anoþer moo	
And longe tyme dwelled sche in þat place	
In holy werkes. as euer was hir grace /	980
The Senatoures wif hir aunte was	981
But for al þat sche knew hir neuer more	
I wol no lenger taryen in þis cas	
But to kyng Alla which I spak of ȝore /	984
That for his wyf wepeþ and sikeþ sore /	
I wol retorne / and lete I wol Constaunce	
vnder þe Senatoures gouernaunce	987
Kyng alla which þat had his mooder slayn	988
vpon a day fel in such repentaunce /	
That if I schortly telle schal and playn	[leaf 84]
To Rome he comeþ to receyue his penaunce	991
And putte him in þe popes ordynaunce	
In heigh and lowe and ihū crist bysought	
Forȝef his wikked werkes þat he wrought	994
The fame anon purgh Rome toun is born	995
how alla kyng schal come in pilgrymage	
By herberiouȝ þat wenten him biforn	
For which þe Senatour as was vsage	998
Rood him aȝein and many of his lynage	
As wel to schewen his magnificence	
As to doon eny kyng a reuerence	1001
Gret cheere doþ þis noble Senatour	1002
To kyng Alla and he to him also	
Euerich of hem doþ oþer gret honour	
And so bifel þat on a day or two	1005

This Senatour is to kyng^t Alla go
 To fest^t and schortly if I schal not lye
 Constances sone / went in his companye 1008

Som men wold seyn at request^t of Custaunce 1009
 This Senatour hap^t lad^t þis child to feste
 I may not telle euery circumstaunce
 Be as be may þer was he atte leste 1012
 But soth it is right^t at his modres heste
 Byforn hem alle duryng^t þe metes space
 The child stood loking^t in þe kynges face 1015

This alla kyng^t hap^t of þe child gret^t wonder 1016
 And to þe Senatour he seyð anoon
 whos is þat^t faire child þat^t stondeþ ȝonder
 I not^t quod he by god and by seynt^t Ion 1019
 A moder he hap^t but fader hap^t he non
 That I of^t woot^t and schortly in a stounde
 he told Alla how þat^t þis child was founde / 1022

But god woot quod þis senatour also 1023
 So vertuous a lyuer in my lyf^t
 Ne saugh I neuer such as sche nomo
 Of worldly womman mayden or of wyf^t 1026
 I dar wel say sche hadde leuer a knyf^t

- Par fay þought he fantom is in myn heed 1037
 I ought to deme of rightful Iuggement
 That in þe salte see my wyf is deed
 And afterward he made þis argument 1040
 what woot I wher crist hap hider sent
 My wyf by see as wel as he hir sent
 To my contre fro þennes þat sche went 1043
- And after noon home wip þe senatour 1044
 Goth alla for to see þis wonder chaunce
 This Senatour dop alla gret honour
 And hastely he sent after Custaunce 1047
 But trusteþ wel hir luste nat to daunce /
 whan þat sche wiste wherfore was þat sonde
 'vnnethe on hir feet/ sche mighte stonde / 1050
- Whan alla saugh his wyf sayre he hir grette 1051
 And wepte þat it was rewpe to so
 For at þe firste look he on hir sette
 he knew wel verrely þat it was sche 1054
 And for sorwe as domb sche stant as tre
 So was hire herte schett in his distresse
 whan sche remembred his vnkynnesse 1057
- Twice sche swowned in his owen sight 1058
 he wept and him excuseþ pitously
 Now god quod he and alle his halwes bright
 So wisly on my soule haue mercy 1061
 That of þoure harm as gulteles am I
 As is maurence my sone so lyk þoure face
 Elles þe feend me fecche out of þis place / 1064
- Long was þe sobbyng and þe bitter peyne 1065
 Or þat here woful herte mighte cease [1065/66]
 Gret was þe pite for to here hem playne
 Thurgh whiche playnt gan here wo encrease 1068

I pray ȝou alle my labour to release
 I may not telle al here sorwe vnto morwe
 I am so wery for to speke of þe sorwe / 1071

But fynally whan þat the soþ is wist 1072
 That alla gyltes was of hir woo
 I trowe an hundred tymes þey ben kist
 And such a blys is þer bitwix hem tuo 1075
 That saue þe ioys þat lasteþ eueremo
 Ther is noon lyk þat any creature
 hap seyn or schal. whil þat þe world may dure 1078

The prayde sche hir housbond meekely 1079
 In þe relees of hir pytous pyne
 The he wold preye hir fader specially
 That of his maieste he wold enclyne 1082
 To vouche sauf som tyme with him to dyne
 Sche preyed him eek he schulde by no weye
 Vnto hir fader no word of hir seye 1085

Som men wold seye þat hir child Maurice 1086
 Dop his message vnto þe Emperour
 But as I geasse alla was nat so nyce
 To him þat is so souerayn of honour 1089
 As he þat is of cristes folk þe flour

Sent out schold þat it is best to doun



	SIX-TEXT 165
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	191
The morwe cam and alla gan him dresse	1100
And eek ^t his wyf ^e þe Emperour for to meete	
And for þey ryde in ioie and in gladnesse /	
And whan sche saugh hir fader in þe streete	1103
Sche light ^e a doun and falleþ him to feete	(leaf 25, back)
Fader quod sche þour þonge child Constance	
Is now ful clene ou of þour remembraunce	1106
I am þour doughter Custaunce quod sche	1107
That ^e whilom ȝe haue sent ^e vnto Surrye	
It ^e am I fader þat ^e in þe salte see	
was put ^e alloon and dampned for to dye	1110
Now goode fader mercy I þou crye	
Send me no more vnto noon hethenesse	
But þanke my lord her of his kyndenesse	1113
Who can þe pytous Ioye telle al	1114
Bitwix hem þre siþ þey be þus I-mette	
But ^e of my tale make an ende I schal	
The day goþ fast ^e I wol no lenger lette	1117
This glade folk ^e to dyner þey ben sette	
In ioie and blys at ^e mete I let ^e hem dwelle	
A þousand fold wel more þan I can telle .	1120
This child Maurice was siþþen Emperour	1121
I-maad by þe pope and lyued cristenly	
To cristes chirche dede he gret ^e honour	
But ^e I let ^e al his story passen by	1124
Of Custaunce is my tale specially	
In olde Romain gestes men may fynde	
Maurices lyf ^e I bere it nought ^e in mynde	1127
This kyng ^e alla whan he his tyme say	1128
with his Constance his holy wyf ^e so swete	
To Engelond þey com þe righte way	
wher as þey lyue in ioie and in quyete	1131

But litel whil it last I ȝou biheete!
 Ioy of þis world // for tyme wol not abyde
 Fro day to night it chaungeth as þe tyde 1134

Who lyued euer in such delyt a day 1135
 That him ne meued eyþer his conscience
 Of Ire or talent / or som maner affray
 Enuy or pride or passioun or offence 1138
 I ne say but for þis ende þis sentence
 But litel whil in ioye or in plesaunce
 lasteþ þe blis / of alla with Custaunce 1141

For deth þat takþ of heigh & low his rent *[lost an]* 1142
 whan passed was a ȝeere as I gesse /
 Out of þis worlde / kyng alla he hent
 For whom Custaunce. haþ ful gret henynesse / 1145
 Now let vs pray. þat god his soule blesse /
 And dame Custaunce fynally to say
 Toward þe toun of Rome goþ hir way 1148

To Rome is come þis nobil creature 1149
 And fynt hir freendes þer boþe hool & sound
 Now is sche skaped al hir auenture
 And whanne sche hir fader had I-founde 1152
 Doun on hir knees falleþ sche to grounde



SIX-TEXT 167
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S END-LINK. **Harleian 7334.** 193

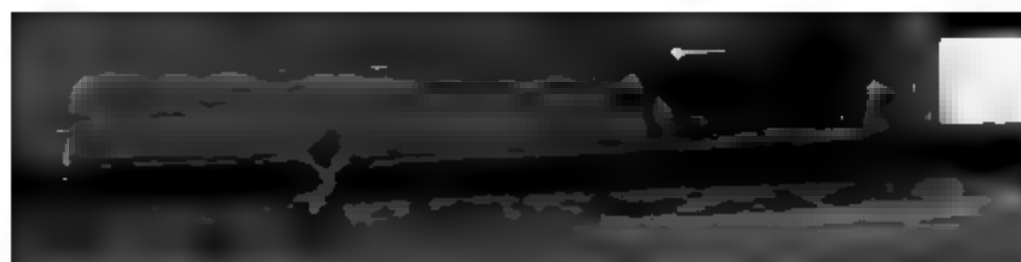
Our Ost' vppon his styrops stood anon.
And seyde good men herkneth euerychoon.
This was a prifty tale for þe noones
Sir parissch prest' quod he for goodes boones 1166
Tel out' a tale / as was þy forward þore
I see wel þat ȝe lered men in lore
Can moche good by goddes dignete
The parson him answerde ben dicite 1170
what' eyleþ þe man so synfully to swere
Our Ost' answerd. O Iankyn be ȝe þere
I smel a loller in þe wynd quod he
Now good men quod our Oste / herkneþ me 1174
[*A break of one line in the MS.*]
For we schul haue a predicacioun
This loller wolde prechen vs heer som what /
Nay by my fader soule þat' schal he nat/ 1178
Sayde the sompnour he schal heer nauȝt' preche
he schal no gospel preche here ne teche [leaf 86, back]
we leuyn alle in þe grete god quod he
He wolde schewen som difficulte 1182
Or springen cokkil in our elene corn
And þerfor ost' I warne þe byforn
My ioly body schal a tale telle
¶ Here endith þe man of lawe his tale.

GROUP D. FRAGMENT V.

§ 1. WIFE OF BATH'S PREAMBLE.

¶ Here bygynneth the prologe of the wyf of Bathe

Experiens þough noon auctorite
 were in þis world . it were ynough for me
 To speke of wo þat is in mariage
 For lordyngs syns I twelfþ ȝer was of age 4
 I thank it god þat is eterne on lyue
 housbondes atte chirch dore . I haue had fyue
 For I so ofte might haue weddid be
 And alle were worþy men in here degre 8
 But me was taught nought longe tyme goon is
 That synnes crist went neuer but onys
 To weddyng in þe Cane of Galile
 That by þe same ensampul taught he me 12
 That I ne weddid schulde be but ones
 Herken such a scharp word for þe nones



SIX-TEXT 335

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 195

Vppon þis noumbre diffinicioun
Men may diuine and glooen vp and doun
But wel I wot wipouten eny lye
God had vs for to. wax and multiplie 28
That gentil tixt. can I wel vnderstonde
Ek wel I wot he sayd myn housebonde
Schuld lete fader and moder and folwe me (leaf 67)
But of no noumber mencion made he 32
Of Bygamy. or of Octogomye /
why schuld men speken of þat vilonye /
lo hier þe wise kyng Daun Salamon
I trow he hadde wyfes mo þan oon. 36
As wold god it were leful vnto me
To be refreissed half so oft as he
which gift of god had he for alle his wyues
No man haf such þat in þe world on lyue is 40
God wot þis nobil king as to my wit
The firste night had many a mery fit/
with ech of hem so wel was him on lyue
I-blessid be god þat I haue weddid fyue 44
welcome þe sixte whan þat euer he schal
For sothe I nyl not kepe me chast in al
whan myn housbond is fro þe world I-gon
Som cristne man schal wedde me anon 48
For þan papostil saith þat I am fre
To wedde a goddis haf wher so it be
he saith þat to be weddid is no synne
Bet is to be weddid þan to brynne 52
what recchith me what folk sayn viloyne
Of schewith lameth or of Bigamy /
I wot wel abram was an holy man
And Iacob eek as ferforth as I can 56
And ech of hem had wyues mo than tuo
And many another holy man also
whan sawe 3e in eny maner age
That highe god defendid mariage 60

By expres word I pray ȝow tellith me
 Or wher comaunded he virginite
 I wot as wel as ȝe it is no drede /
 Thapostil whan he spekþ of maydenhede 64
 he sayd þat precept þer of had he noon
 Men may counseil a womman to be oon
 But counselyng nys no comaundement
 He put it in our owne Iuggement / 68
 For hadde god comaundid maydenhede / (leaf 87, back)
 Than had he dampnyd weddyng with þe dede
 And certes if þer were no seed I-sowe /
 Virginite · wher-on schuld it growe 72
 Poul ne dorst not comaunde atte lest
 A þing of which his maister ȝaf non hest
 The dart is set vpon virginite
 Cach who-so may who rennith best / let se 76
 But þis word is not taken of euery wight
 But þer as god list ȝiue it of his might/
 I wot wel þat þapostil was a mayde
 But napeles pough þat he wrot or sayde 80
 he wolde þat euery wight were such as he /
 Al nys but counseil vnto virginite
 And for to ben a wyf he ȝaf me leue
 Of indigence . so nys it to repreue 84
 to wedde me if þat my make deye
 withoute excepcioun of bigamy



SIX-TEXT 337

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Harleian 7334.** 197

It likeþ hem to be clene in body and gost
Of myn estate I nyl make no bost
For wel 3e wot a lord in his household
He nath not euery vessel ful of gold 100
Som ben of tre and don her lord seruise
God clepeth folk to him in sondry wise
And euery haþ of god a propre 3ifte
Som þis som þat as him likith to schifte 104
Virginite is gret perfeccioun
And continens eek wip gret deuocioun
But crist þat of perfeccioun is wella [leaf 98]
Bad nouȝt euery wight schuld go and selle 108
Al þat he had and ȝiue it to þe pore
And in such wise folwe him and his fore /
he spak to hem þat wolde lyue parfytly
But lordyngs by ȝour leue þat am not I 112
I wol bystowe þe flour of myn age /
In þe actes and in þe fruytes of mariage
Tel me also to what conclusioun
were membres maad of generacioun 116
And in what wise was a wight y-wrouȝt
Trustith right wel þay were nouȝt maad for nouȝt
Glose who-so wol and say boþe vp and doun
þat þay were made for purgacioun 120
Oure boþe vryn and þinges smale /
was eek to knowe a femel fro a male
And for non oþer cause say 3e no
Therperiens wot wel it is not so / 124
So þat þese clerke ben not with me wroþe /
I say þis þat þay makid ben for boþe
þat is to say for office and for ease
Of engendrure þer we god nouȝt displease 128
why schuld men ellis in her bokes sette
That man schal ȝelde to his wif his dette
Now wher-wip schuld he paye his payement
If he ne used his eely instrument 132

Than were þay maad vp a creature
 To purge vryn and eek for engendrure
 By I say not þat enery wight is holde
 That haþ such harneys as I to ȝow tolde 136
 To gon and vsen hem in engendrure
 Than schuld men take of chastite no cure
 Crist was a mayde and schapen as a man
 And many a seynt sin þat þe world bygan 140
 ȝit lyued þay euer in parfyt charite
 I nyl enuye no virginite
 let hem be bred of pured whete seed
 And let vs wyues eten barly breed 144
 And ȝet wiþ barly bred men telle can (lras 88, 4ech)
 Oure lord refreisschid many a man
 In such astat as god haþ cleped ous
 I wil perseuer I am not precious 148
 In wyfhode I wil vse myn instrument
 Als frely as my maker haþ me it sent
 If I be daungerous god ȝine me sorwe
 Myn housbond schal han it at eue and at morwe 152
 whan þat him list com forth and pay his dette
 An housbond wol I haue I wol not lette /
 which schal be boþe my dettour and my þral
 And haue his tribulacioun wiþ al 156
 vpon his fleissch whil þat I am his wyf
 I haue þe power duryng al my lif

Abyd quod sche my tale is not bygonne /
 Nay þou schalt drinke of anoper tonne
 Er þat I go schal sauere wors þan ale
 And whan þat I haue told þe forþ my tale 172
 Of tribulacioun in mariage
 I which I am expert/ in al myn age
 This is to say my self haþ ben þe whippe
 Than might þou chese wheþir þou wilt sippe 176
 Of þilke tonne þat I schal abroche
 Be war of it er þou to neigh approche
 For I schal telle ensamples mo þan ten
 who-so þat nyl be war by oper men 180
 By him schal oper men corrected be
 The same wordes writes protholome
 Rede in his almagest and tak it þere [leaf 80]
 Dame I wold pray 3ow. if þat 3oure wille were 184
 Sayde þis pardonere as 3e bigan
 Tel forth 3oure tale sparith for no man
 Teche vs 3onge men of 3oure practike
 Gladly quod sche syns it may 3ow like 188
 But þat I pray to al þis companye /
 If þat I speke after my fantasie
 As takeþ nouȝt agreef of þat I say
 For myn entente is nought but/ to play / ¶ Harriet 192
Now sires now wol I telle forth my tale
 As euer mote I drinke wyn or ale
 I schal say sop of housbondes þat I hadde
 As þre of hem were goode and tuo were badde 196
 Tuo of hem were goode riche and olde
 Vnnethes mighte þay þe statute holde
 In which þat þay were bounden vnto me
 3e wot wel what I mene of þis par de 200
 As help me god I laugh whan þat I pinke
 how pitously on night I made hem swynke /
 But by my fay I told of it no stoor
 Thay had me 3iue her lond and her tresor 204

Me nedith not no lenger doon diligence
 To wyne her loue or doon hem reuerence
 Thay loued me so wel by god aboue
 That I tolde no deynte of her loue 208
 A wys womman wol bysi hir euer in oon
 To gete hir loue þere sche hath noon
 But synnes I had hem holly in myn hond
 And synnes þay had me þeuen al her lond 212
 what schuld I take keep hem for to please
 But it were for my profyt and myn ease /
 I sette hem so on werke by my fay
 That many a night þay songen weylaway 216
 The bacoun was nought fet for hem I trowe
 That som men fecche in Essex an donmowe
 I gouerned hem so wel after my lawe
 That ech of hem ful blisful was and fawe 220
 To bringe me gaye þinges fro þe faire (leaf 69, back)
 þay were ful glad whan I spak to hem faire
 For god it woot I chidde hem spitously
 Now herkeneth how I bar me proprely 224
 þe wise wyues þat can vnderstonde
 þus scholde þe speke and bere hem wrong on honde
 For half so boldely can þer no man
 Swere and lye as can a womman 228
 I say not by wyues þat ben wise
 But if it be whan þay ben mysauise
 I wis a wif if þe scholde can þe word

SIX-TEXT 341

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 201

what' rounne 3e wiþ hir maydenes benedicite
 Sir olde lecchour let' þi iapes be
 And if I haue a goosib or a frend
 wiþouten gilt' þou chideest' as a fend 244
 If þat I walk' and play vnto his hous
 þou comest' hom as dronken as a mous
 And prechiest' on þy bench wiþ eucl pree.
 þou saist' to me it is a gret' meschief' 248
 To wedde a pouer womman for costage /
 And if þat sche be riche and of' parage
 Thanne saist' þou it/ is a tormentrie
 To suffre hir pride and hir malencolie 252
 And if þat sche be fair þou verray knaue
 þou saist' þat euery holour wol hir haue
 Sche may no while in chastite abyde
 That' is assayled þus on eche syde 256
 þou saist' þat som folk' desire vs for riches
 Som for our schap and som for our fairnes
 And some for þat' sche can synge and daunce (leaf 90)
 And some for gentillesse or daliaunce 260
 Som for hir handes and hir armes smale /
 Thus goth al to þe deuel by þi tale
 Thou saist' men may nought' kepe a castel wal
 Hit' may so be biseged ouer al 264
 And if sche be foul. þanne þou saist' þat' sche
 Coueitith euery man þat' sche may se /
 For as a spaynel sche wol on him lepe
 Til þat' sche fynde som man hire to chepe 268
 Ne noon so gray a goos gop in þe lake /
 As sayest' þou wol be wiþouten make /
 And saist' it is an hard þing' for to wolde
 Thing' þat' no man wol. his willes holde 272
 Thus seistow lorel whan þou gost' to bedde
 And þat' no wys man nedith for to wedde /
 Ne no man þat' entendip vnto heuene
 wiþ wilde þunder dynt and fuyry leuene 276

Mote þi wicked necke be tobroke /
 þou saist þat droppynge hous and eek smoke /
 And chydyng wyues maken men to fle
 Out of here oughne hous a benedicite 280
 what eylyth such an old man for to chyde /
 þou seist we wyues woln oure vices hide /
 Til we ben weddid and þan we wil hem schewe
 wel may þat be a prouerbe of a schrewe 284
 Thou saist þat assen . oxen and houndes
 þay ben assayed at diners stoundes
 Basyns laours eek er men hem bye
 Spones . stooles . and al such housbondrie 288
 Also pottes clopes and array
 But folk of wyues maken non assay
 Til þay ben weddid olde dotard schrewe .
 And þanne saistow we woln oure vices schewe 292
 þou saist also þat it displesith me
 But if þat þou wilt praysen my beaute
 And but þou pore alway in my face
 And clepe me faire dame in euery place 296
 And but þou make a fest on pilke day! [lca/28, back]
 þat I was born and make me freisch and gay
 And but þou do my norice honoure
 And to my chamberer wiþinne þy boure 300
 And to my fadres folk and myn allies
 Thus saistow olde barel ful of lies



SIX-TEXT 343

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 203

Thow schalt not bothe pough þou were wood
Be maister of my body and of my good
That oon þou schalt for-go maugre þin yen
what helpeth it on me tenqueren or espien 316
I trowe þou woldest lokke me in þy chest
Thou scholdist say. wif go wher þe lest
Take þoure disport I nyl lieue no talis
I know þow for a trewe wif dame alis 320
we loueþ no man þat takith keep or charge
wher þat we goon. we loue to be at large
¶ Of alle men I-blessed most he be
þe wise astrologe daun protholome 324
That saith þis prouerbe. in his almagest
Of alle men his wisdom is highest
þat rekkith not who hap þe world in honde
By þis prouerbe. þou schalt vnderstonde / 328
Have þou ynough what þar þe recch or care
How merily þat oþer folkes fare
For certes olde dotard wip þour leue
þe schul haue queynte right ynough at ene 332
he is to gret a nygard þat wol werne ¶ note
A man to light a candel at his lanterne
he schal haue neuer þe lasse light par do [leaf 91]
Haue þou ynough þe thar not playne þe ¶ note 336
Thou saist also þat if we make vs gay
with cloþing and with precious array
þat it is peril of our chastite
And ȝit wip sorwe þou most enforce þe 340
And say þese wordes in thapostles name
In abytt maad wip chastite and schame
þe wommen schuld apparayl þow quod he /
And nought wip tressed her. and gay perre / 344
As perles ne with golden cloþis riche
After þy text ne after þin rubriche
I wol nouȝt wirche as moche as a gnat
Thow saist þus þat I was lik a cat 348

But who-so wolde senge the cattes skyn
 Than wold þe catte . duellen in his In
 And if þe cattes skyn be slyk' and gay
 Sche wol not' duelle in house half a day 352
 But forth sche wil er eny day be dawet'
 To schewe hir skyn and goon a caterwrawet'
 This is to say if I be gay sir schrewe /
 I wol renne aboute my borel for to schewe 356
 Sir olde fool what' helpith þe to asprien
 þough þou praydest argus wiþ his hundrid yen
 To be my warde corpe as he can best'
 In faith he schuld not' kepe me but' if me lest' 360
 3it coupe I make his berd þough queynte he be
 þou saydest' eek' þat' þer ben þinges þre/
 The whiche þinges troublen al þis erþe
 And þat' no wight' may endure þe ferþe 364
 O leue sire schrewe ihu schorte þy lif'
 3it prechestow and saist' an hateful wif'
 I-rekened is for oon of þese meschaunces
 Ben þer noon oþer of þy resemblaunces 368
 þat' 3e may liken 3oure parables vnto
 But' if a cely wyf' be oon of þo
 Thow likenest' wommannes loue to helle
 To bareyn lond þer water may not' duelle 372
 Thou likenest' it/ also to wilde fuyr
 The more it brenneth þe more it hap desir (leaf 91, back)

SIX-TEXT 345

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 205

Ful gultes by goddes swete pyne
 For as an hors I couþe boþe bite and whyne
 I couþe pleyne and ȝet I was in þe gilt
 Or elles I hadde often tyme be spilt 388
 who-so first comeþ to þe mylle first grynt
 I playned first so was oure werre stynt/
 Thay were ful glad to excuse hem ful blyue
 Of þing þat þay neuer agilt in her lyue 392
 And wenches wold I beren hem on honde
 whan þat/ for seek þay might vnnethes stonde
 ȝit tykeled I his herte for þat he
 wende I had of him so gret/ chierete 396
 I swor þat al my walkyng out a nyght
 was for to aspie wenches þat he dight
 vnder þat colour had I many a mirthe
 For al such witte is ȝeuen vs of birthe 400
 Deceipt wepyng. spynnyng. god haþ ȝiue
 To wymmen kyndely whil þay may lyue
 And þus of o thing I auaunte me /
 And þende I had þe bet in ech degre 404
 By sleight or fors or of som maner þing
 As by continuel murmur or chidyng
 Namly on bedde haddon þay meschaunce
 Ther wold I chide and do hem no plesaunce 408
 I wold no lenger in þe bed abyde /
 If þat I felt his arm ouer my eyde
 Til he had maad his raunsoun vnto me [leaf 92]
 Than wold I suffre him doon his nycete 412
 And þerfor euery man þis tale telle
 wyne who-so may for al is for to selle
 wiþ empty hond men may noon haukes lure
 For wynnyng wold I al his lust endure 416
 And make me a feyned appetyt/
 And ȝit in bacoun had I neuer delyt
 That made me þat euer I wold hem chyde
 For þough þe pope had seten hem bisyde 420

I nold not spare hem at her oughne bord
 For by my troupe I quyt hem word for word
 Als help me verray god omnipotent /
 þough I right now schuld make my testament 424
 I owe hem nought a word þat it nys quitte
 I brought it so aboute by my witte
 þat þay most zeue it vp as for þe best
 Or ellis had we neuer ben in rest 428
 For þough he loket as a grym lyoun
 3it schuld he fayle of his conclusioun
 Than wold I say. now goode leef tak keep
 how mekly lokith wilkyn oure scheep 432
 Com ner my spouse let me be þy cheke
 3e schulde be al pacient and make
 And haue a swete spiced consciens
 Sippen 3e preche so of Iopes paciens 436
 Suffreth alway syns 3e so wel can preche
 And but 3e do certeyn we schul 3ow teche /
 That it is fair to haue a wyf in pees
 On of vs tuo mot bowe doutales 440
 And sippen man is more resonable
 Than womman is. 3e moste be suffrable
 what aylith 3ow. þus for to grucche and grone
 Is it for 3e wold haue my queynt allone / 444
 why tak it al. lo haue it euery del
 Peter I schrewe 3ow but 3e loue it wel

SIX-TEXT 347

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. *Harleian 7334.* 207

how coupe I daunce to an harpe smale
 And syngge y-wys as eny nightyngale
 whan I had dronke a draught of swete wyn
 Metillius þe foule cherl þe swyn 460
 That with a staf byraft his wyf hir lyf
 For sche drank wyn þough I had ben his wif
 Ne schuld nouȝt haue daunted me fro drink
 And after wyn on venus most I pink 464
 For also siker as cold engendrith hayl
 A likorous mouth most haue a licorous tail
 In wymmen vinolent is no defens
 This knowen lecchours by experiens 468
 But lord crist whan þat it remembrith me
 vpon my ȝouthe and on my iolite
 It tikelith me aboute myn herte roote
 Vnto þis day it dop myn herte boote 472
 That I haue had my world as in my tyme
 But age alas þat al wol enuenyme
 Hap me bireft my beaute and my pith
 Let go far wel. þe deuyl go þer wip 476
 The flour is goon þer nis no more to telle
 The bran as I best can now mot I selle
 But ȝit to be mery wol I fonde /
 Now wol I telle of my fourt housbonde 480
 I say I had in herte gret despyt
 That he of eny oþer had delit
 But he was quit/ by god and by seint Iocce
 I made him of þe same woode a croce 484
 Nought of my body in no foul manere
 But certeynly I made folk such chere
 That in his owne grees I made him frie [144/96]
 For anger and for ialousie 488
 By god in erpe I was his purgatory
 For which I hope his soule be in glory
 For god it wot. he sat ful stille and song
 whan þat his scho ful bitterly him wrong 492

Ther was no wight sauf god and he pat wist/
 In many wyse how sore I him twist
 I sayde whan I cam fro Ierusalem
 And lith I-graue vnder þe roode beam 496
 Al is his tombe nought so curious
 As was þe sepulcre of him Darius
 which pat appallus wrought so subtilly
 It nys but wast to burie him preciously 500
 let him far wel god ȝiue his soule rest
 he is now in his graue and in his chest
 ¶ Now of my fife housbond wol I telle /
 God let his soule neuer come in helle / 504
 And ȝit was he to me þe moste schrewe /
 That fele I on my ribbes alle on rewe /
 And euer schal vnto myn endyng day
 But in oure bed he was so freisch and gay 508
 And þer with al so wel he coupe me glose /
 whan pat he wolde haue my bele chose /
 That þough he had me bete on euery boon
 he coupe wyne my loue right anon 512
 I trowe I loued him beste for pat he
 was of his loue daungerous to me
 we wymmen han if pat I schal nouȝt lye
 In þis matier a queynte fantasie 516
 wayte what þyng we may not lightly haue
 Ther after wol we sonnest crie and craue



SIX-TEXT 349
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 209

wip my gossib duellyng^r in oure toun
God haue hir soule . hir name was Alisoun
Sche knew mys herte and my priuite
Bet^r þan oure parisch prest^r so mot^r I the / 532
To hir bywreyed I my counseil al
For had myn housbond pissed on a wal
Or don a þing^r þat^r schuld haue cost^r his lif^r
To hir and to anoper worþy wyf^r 536
And to my neece which I loued wel
I wold haue told his counseil euery del
And so I did ful ofte god it woot
That^r made his face ofte reed and hoot 540
For verry schame . and blamyd himself^r þat^r he /
had told to me so gret^r a priuete
And so byfel þat^r oones in a lent^r
So ofte tyme to my gossib I went^r 544
For euer ȝit^r I loued to be gay
And for to walk^r in march aueril and may
From hous to here sondry talis
þat^r Iankyn Clerk^r and my gossib dame alis 548
And I my self^r in to þe felde went^r
Myn housbond was at londone al þat^r lent^r
I had þe bettir leysir for to pleye
And for to see and eek^r for to be seye 552
Of lusty folk^r . what^r wist^r I wher my grace
was schapen for to be or in what^r place
Therefore I made my visitaciouns
To vigiles and to processiouns 556
To prechings eek^r and to þis pilgrimages
To pleyes miracles and mariages
And wered vpon my scarlet^r gytes
þese wormes þese moughtes ne þese mytes 560
Vpon my perel fretith hem neuer a deel
And wostow why . for þay were vsed wel
Now wol I telle forþ what happid me
I say þat^r in þe felde walkid we 564

[leaf 94]

350 SIX-TEXT

210 GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE Harleian 7334.

Til trewely we had such dalisaunce
This Clerk and I þat of my puruyaunce
I spak to him and sayde how þat he
If I were wydow schulde wedde me 568
For certeynly I say for no bobaunce
3it was I neuer wipouten purueyaunce
Of mariage ne of no þingee eke
I hold a mouses hert not worþ a leek 572
That hap but oon hole to starte to
And if þat faile þan is al I-do
[.
. 576
.
.
.
. 580
.
.
.
.
. no gap in the MS.] 584
But now sir let me se what I schal sayn
A ha by god I haue my tale agayn
¶ whan þat my fourþe housbond was on bere
I wept algate and made a sory cheere 588



SIX-TEXT 351
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7394. 211

And I was fourty I schal say þe sothe
But ȝit I had alway a Coltis tope
Gattothid I was and þat bycom me wel
I had þe prynte of seynt Venus sel 604
[.
.
.
. 608
.
.
.
. no gap in the MS.] 612
Myn ascent was taur. and mars þer Inne /
Allas alas þat euer loue was synne
I folwed ay myn inclinacioun
By vertu of my constillacioun 616
That made me þat I couþe nouȝt wiþdrawe /
My chambre of venus from a good felawe /
[.
. 620
.
.
.
. 624
.
. no gap in the MS.]
what schuld I say but at þe monthis ende [leaf 94, back]
This ioly clerk Iankyn þat was so heende 628
Hap weddid me with gret solempnitee
And to him ȝaf I al þe londe and fee
That euer was me ȝiue þer bifore
But aftirward repented me ful sore 632
he nolde suffre noȝing of my list
By god he smot me oones wip his fist
For I rent oones out of his book a lef
That of þat strok myn cere wax al deef 636

Styborn I was as is a leones
 And of my tonge a verray iangleres
 And walk' I wold as I had don biforn
 Fro hous to hous al þough he had it sworn 640
 For which he ofte tyme wolde preche
 And me of olde Romain gestes teche /
 How he Simplicius gallus left' his wyf
 And hir forsok' for terme of al his lyf 644
 Nought' but' for open heedid he hir say
 lokyng' out at his dore vpon a day
 Anoper Romain told he me by name
 That' for his wyf was at a somer game 648
 wipout' his wityng'. he forsok' hir eeke
 And þanne wold he vpon his book' seeke
 That' ilke prouerbe of Ecclesiaste
 wher he comaundith and forbedith faste 652
 Man schal not' suffre. his wyf go roule aboute /
 Than wold he say right' þus wipouten doute
 ¶ Who þat' buyldith his hous al of salwes
 And priketh his blynde hors ouer the falwes 656
 And suffrith his wyf. to go seken halwes
 Is worpy to ben honged on þe galwes
 But' al for nought' I sette nought' an hawe
 Of his prouerbe. ne of his olde sawe 660
 Ne I wolde not' of him corrected be
 I hate him þat' my vices tellith me.
 And so doon mo. god it' wot' þan I.
 This made him wip me wood al outerly 664
 I nolde not' forbere him in no cas [leaf 95]
 Now wol I say ȝow soth by seint' Nicholas
 why þat' I rent' out of þe book' a leef
 For which he smot' me þat' I was al def' 668
 he had a book' þat' gladly night' and day
 For his desport' he wolde rede alway
 he clepyd it' Valelye and theofrast'
 At which book' he lough' alway ful fast' 672



SIX-TEXT 353
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 213

And eek' þay say þer was som tyme at Rome
A clerk' a Cardynal þat' heet seint Ierome
That' made a book' ajens Iouynyan
In which book' eek' þer was terculan 676
Crisippus tortula and eek' helewys
That' was abbas not' fer fro paris
And eek' þe parablis of Salamon
Ouydes art' and bourdes many oon 680
And alle þese were bounde in oo volume
And euery night' and day was his custume
whan he had leysir and vacacioun
From oþer worldes occupacioun 684
To reden in þis book' of wikked wyues
he knew of hem mo legendes and lyues
þan ben of goode wyues in þe bible
For trustith wel it is an impossible 688
That' any clerk' schal speke good of wyues
But' if it be of holy seintes lyues
Ne of noon oþer wyfes neuer þe mo
who peyntid þe leoun tel me who 692
By god if women hadde writen stories
As clerkes haue wipinne her oratories
Thay wold haue write of men more wickidnes
Than al þe mark' of Adam may redres 696
These children of mercury and of venus
Ben in her werkyng' ful contrarius
Mercury louith wisdom and science
And venus loueth ryot' and dispense 700
And for her diuers disposicioun
Ech fallith in opes exaltacioun
And þus god wot' mercury is desolate [leaf 95, back]
In pisses wher venus is exaltate 704
And venus faylith wher Mercury is reysed
Therfor no womman of clerkes is preised
The clerk' whan he is old and may nouȝt do
Of venus werkis is not' worþ a scho 708

Than sit he doun and writ in his dotage
 That women can nought kepe here mariage
 But now to purpos why I tolde þe
 That I was beten for a leef par de 712
 vpon a night Iankyn þat was oure sire
 Rad on his book as he sat by þe fyre
 Of Eua first þat for hir wikkidnes
 was al mankynde brought to wrecchednes 716
 [.

 no gap in the MS.] 720
 Tho rad he me how Sampson left his heris
 Slepynge his lemman kut it wip hir scheris
 Thurgh which tresoun lost he boþe his yen
 Tho rad he me if þat I schal not lyen 724
 Of Ercules and of his deianyre
 That caused him to sette himself on fuyre
 No þing forȝat he þe care and wo
 þat Socrates had wip his wyues tuo 728
 How exantipa cast piase vpon his heed
 þis seely man sat stille as he were deed
 he wyped his heed no more durst he sayn
 But er þunder stynte þer comen rayn 732
 Of phasipha þat was þe queen Creete.
 For schrewednes him þought þe tale sweete.
 Fy spek no more it is a grisly þing
 For her horribil lust and her likyng 736
 Of Clydemystra for hir lecherie
 That falsly made hir housbond for to dye
 he rad it with ful good deuocioun
 he told me eek for what occasioun 740
 Amphiores at Thebes left his lif
 Myn housbond had a legend of his lyf
 Exiphilem þat for an ouche of gold
 hap prively vnto þe Grekes told 744



wher þat hir housbond hyd him in a place [leaf 96]
For which he had at thebes sory grace
Of lyma told he me and of lueye
Thay boþe made her housbondes for to dye / 748
That oon for loue · þat' oþer was for hate
Lyma hir housbond on an euen late
Empoysond hath. for þat' sche was his fo
Lucia licorous loued hir housbond so 752
For þat' he schuld alway vpon hir þink'
Sche ȝaf' him such a maner loue-drink'
That' he was deed er it was by þe morwe
And þus algates housbondes had sorwe 756
Than told he me how oon latumys
Compleigned vnto his felaw arrius
That' in his gardyn growed such a tre
On which he sayde how þat' his wyues þre / 760
Honged hem selfe / for herte despitous
O leue broþer. quod þis arrius
ȝif' me a plant' of þilke blessid tre
And in my gardyn schal it' plantid be 764
Of latter date of wyues hap he red
That' som han slayn her housbondes in her bed
And let' her lecchour dighten al þe night'
whil þat' þe corps lay in þe flor vpright' 768
And som han dryuen nayles in her brayn
whiles þay aleepe and þus þey han hem slayn
Som haue hem ȝiue poyson in her drink'
he spak' more harm þan herte may byþynk' 772
And þer wiþ al he knew mo prouerbes
þan in þis world þer growen gres or herbes
Better is quod he thyn habitacioun
Be with a leoun or a foul dragoun 776
Than with a womman vsyng' for to chyde
Better is quod he hiþe in þe roof' abyde
Than wiþ a wikked womman down in a hous
Thay ben so wicked and so contrarious 780

þay haten þat her housbondes louen ay
 He sayd a womman cast hir schame away
 whan sche cast of hir smok', and forþer mo [leaf 22, back]
 A fair womman but sche be chast also 784
 Is lyk' a gold ryng' in a sowes nose
 who wolde wene or who wolde suppose /
 The wo þat in myn herte was and pyne
 And whan I saugh he nolde neuer fyne 788
 To reden on þis cursed book' al night
 And sodeinly þre leues haue I plight
 Out of þis booke þat he had and eeke
 I with my fist so took' him on þe cheeke 792
 That in oure fuyr he fel bakward adoun
 And he vstert' as dop a wood leoun
 And wip his fist he smot me on þe hed
 That in þe floor I lay as I were deed 796
 And whan he saugh so stille þat I lay
 he was agast' and wold haue fled away
 Til atte last' out of my swown I brayde
 O hastow slayn me false þef' I sayde 800
 And for my lond þus hastow mourdrid me
 Er I be deed ȝit wol I kisse þe
 And ner he cam and knelith faire a doun
 And sayde deere suster alisoun 804
 As help me god I schal þe neuer smyte
 That I haue doon it is þiself' to wite /
 Forþe it is and þat I to þe seke



SIX-TEXT 357
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 217

And whan I hadde gotten vnto me
By maistry al þe souereynete
And þat he sayde myn owne trewe wif
Do as þe list in term of al þy lif 820
kepe þyn honour and kep eek myn estat [leaf 97]
And after þat day we neuer had debat
God help me so I was to him as kynde
As eny wyf fro Denmark vnto Inde 824
And also trewe was he vnto me
I pray to god þat sitte in mageste
So blesse his soule for his mercy deere
Now wol I say my tale if ȝe wol heere 828

[No gap in the MS.]

[The Wrangle between the Summoner and Friar.]

¶ The Frere lough when he had herd al þis
Now dame quod he so haue I ioye or blis
This is a long preamble¹ of a tale
And whan þe Sompnour herd þe frere gale 832
Lo quod þe sompnour for goddes armes tuo
A frer wol entremet him euermo
lo goode men a flie and eek a frere
woun falle in euery disache and matiere 836
what spekest þou of. perambulacioun
what ambil. or trot. or pees or go sit doun
Thou lettest oure disport in þis matere
ȝe woltow so sir sompnour quod þe frere 840
Now by my fay I schal er þat I go
Telle of a sompnour such a tale or tuo
That alle þe folk/ schuln laughen in þis place /
Now ellis frere I byschrew þy face 844
Quod þis Sompnour and I byschrewe me
But / if I telle tales tuo or þre
Of freres er I come to Sydingborne
þat I schal make þin herte fur to morne 848

¶ Here makith þe
frere an interpre-
tacion of þe wyfes
tale /

(¹ or perambel)

For wel I wot þy paciens is goon
Oure hoste cride pees and þat anoon
And sayde let þe womman telle hir tale /
þe fare as folkes þat dronken ben of ale 852
Do dame tel forth þour tale and þat is best/
Al redy sir quod sche right as þou lest/
If I haue licence of þis worthy frere
þis dame quod he tel forþ and I schal heere 856

[*Break of two lines in the MS.*]

[leaf 97, back]

<p>IN olde dayes of þe kyng' arthour Of which þat' britouns speken gret' honour Al was þis lond fulfilled of' fayrie The elf' queen wip' hir ioly compaignye Daunced fuloft' in many a grene mede This was þe old oppynyoun as I rede I speke of' many hundrid ȝer ago But' now can no man see noon elues mo For now þe grete charite and prayeres Of lymytours and oþer holy freres That' sechen euery lond and euery streem As thik' as motis in þe sonne beem Blessynge halles. chambres. kichenes. boures Citees. burghes. castels. hihe and toures. Thropes. bernes. schepnes. and dayeries That' makith þat' þer ben no fayeries For þer as wont' was to walken an elf' Ther walkith noon. but' þe lymytour himself' In vndermeles and in morwenynges And saith his matyns and his holy þinges As he goþ in his lymytacioun wommen may go saufly vp and doun In euery bussch or vnder euery tre þer is non oþer incumbent' but/ he / And ne wol but' doon hem dishonour And so bifel it / þat' þis king' arthour had in his hous a lusty bachelor That' on a day com rydyng' fro ryuer</p>	<p>¶ Narrat</p> <p>860</p> <p>864</p> <p>868</p> <p>872</p> <p>876</p> <p>880</p> <p>884</p>
--	--

And happed al alone as sche was born
 heough a maye walkyng him byfore
 Of which mayden noon mangre hir heed
 By verray fers byraffir hir maydenhed 888
 For such oppressioun was such clamour
 And such pursuete vnto kyng arthour
 That dampned was þe knight and schuld be ded
 By cours of lawe and schuld haue lost his heed 892
 Parauenture such was þe statut þo
 But þat þe queen and oþer ladye mo
 So longe preyeden þat þe kyng of grace (longer)
 Til he his lif has graunted in þe place 896
 And þat him to þe queen al at hir wille
 To chese wethir sche wolde him saue or spille
 The queen thanked þe kyng wip al hir might
 And after þus sche spak vnto þe knight 900
 whan þat sche saugh hir tyme vpon a day
 'Thow stondest þet quod he in such array
 þat of þy lyf hastow no sewerte
 I graunte þy lif if þou canst telle me 904
 what þing is it þat women most desiren
 Be war and keep þy nek bon fro þe Iren
 And if þou canst not tellen it anon
 þet wol I giue þe leue for to goon 908
 A twelf month and a day it for to lere
 An answer suffisaunt in þis matiere



To lerne what þing' wommen louen most
But he ne coupe arryuen in no cost'
wher as he mighte fynde þis matiere
To þese þinges accordyng' in fere 924
Somme sayden womme louen best' richesse
Somme sayde honour and some sayde iolynesse
Somme sayde riche array some sayden lust' on bedde
And ofte tyme to be wydow and wedde 928
Somme sayden oure herte is most' I-cased
whan we ben y-flaterid and y-pleased
He goþ ful neigh þe soth I wil not lye
A man schal wynne vs best' wip flaterye 932
And with attendaunce and busynesse (leaf 96, back)
Ben we y-limed hope more and lesse /
And somme sayen þat' we louen best'
For to be fre and to doon as vs lest' 936
And þat' no man repreue vs of' oure vice
But say þat' we ben wys and no þing' nyce
For trewely þer is noon of' vs alle
If eny wight' wold claw vs on þe galle / 940
That' we nyl like for he saith vs soþ
Assay and he schal fynd it' þat' so doþ
For be we neuer so vicious wipinne
we schuln be holde wys and clene of' synne 944
And somme sayn þat' gret' delit' han we
For to be holden stabil and secre /
And in oon purpos stedfastly to duelle /
And nought' bywreye þing' þat' men vs telle / 948
But þat' tale is not'. worth a rakes stole
Par dy we wymmen. can right' no þing' hele
witness on myda wil þe here þe tale /
Ouyd among' his oper þinges smale 952
Sayde Myda had. vnder his lange heris
Growyng' vpon his heed tuo asses eeris
The whiche vice he hid as he best' might
Ful subtilly fro euery mannes sight 956

That saue his wyf þer wist of þat no mo
 he loued hir most. and trusted hir also /
 he prayed hir. þat to no creature
 sche schulde tellen. of his disfigure / 960
 Sche swor him nay for al þis world to wynne
 Sche nolde do þat vilony or synne
 To make hir housbond haue so foul a name
 Sche wold not tel it for hir oughne schame 964
 But natheles hir þoughte þat sche dyde
 That sche so long a counseil scholde hyde
 hir þought it swal. so sore about / hir hert
 That needely som word hir most astert 968
 And sins sche dorst not tel it vn-to man
 Doun to a marreys faste by sche ran
 Til sche cam þer hir herte was on fuyre [leaf 99]
 And as a bytoure bumblith in þe myre 972
 Sche layd hir mouth vnto þe water doun
 Bywrey me not þou watir with þi soun
 Quod sche to þe I telle it and no mo
 Myn housbond hap long asse eeris tuo 976
 Now is myn hert al hool now is it oute
 I might no lenger kepe it out of doute
 Her may ȝe se þeigh we a tyme abyde
 ȝet out it moot we can no counseil hyde 980
 The remenaunt of þe tale if ȝe wil here /
 Redith ovid. and þer ȝe mow it leere
 ¶ This knight of which my tale is specially
 whan þat he saugh he might nouȝt come þerby 984
 This is to say what women louen most
 wipinne his brest ful sorwful was þe gost/
 But hom he goþ. he might no lenger soiourne
 The day was come þat homward most he torne 988
 And in his way it hapnyd him to ride
 In al his care vnder a forest side
 wher as he saugh vpon a daunce go
 Of ladys four and twenty and ȝit mo 992

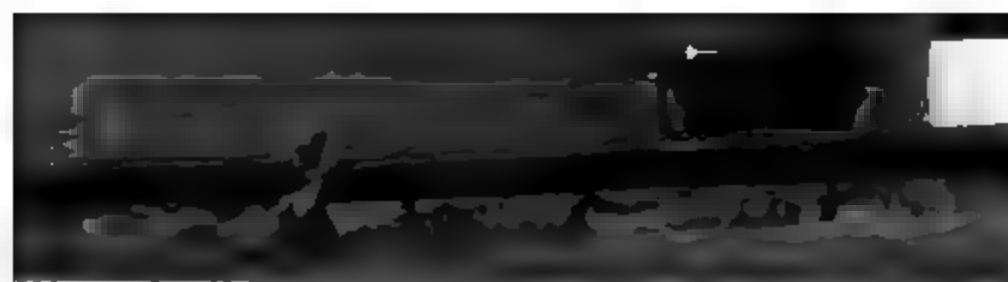


Toward þis ilke daunce I drough ful þerne /
In hope þat som wisdom schuld I lerne /
But carteynly er I com fully þere
Vanysshid was þis daunce he nyste where / 996
No creature saugh he þat bar lif
Sauf on þe greene he saugh sittynge a wyf /
A fouler wight þer may no man deuyse
Aþens þe knight þis olde wyf gan ryse 1000
And sayder sir knight heer forth lith no way
Tel me what. 3e seekyn by 3our fay
Par aduenture. it may þe better be /
Thise olde folk can mochil þinge quod sche 1004
My lieue modir quod þis knight certayn
I am but ded but if þat I can sayn
what þinge is it. þat women most desire
Couþe 3e me wisse. I wold wel quyt 3our huyre / 1008
Plight me þy trouth. her in myn hond quod sche (1008, 1009)
The nexte þinge þat I require þe
Thou schalt it doo if it be in þy might
And I wol telle it þe er it be night 1012
haue her my troupe quod þe knight I graunte
Thanne quod sche I dar me wel anaunte
þy lif is sauf for I wol atonde þer by
vpon my lif þe queen wol say as I 1016
let se which is þe proudest of hem alle
þat werith on a couerchief or a calle
þat dar say nay of þinge I schal þe teche
let vs go forth wipouten more speche 1020
Tho rowned sche a pistil in his eere
And bad him to be glad and haue no fere
whan þay ben comen to þe court þis knight
Sayd he had holde. þat day þat he hight 1024
Al redy was his answer as he sayde
Ful many a noble wyf and many a mayde
And many a wydow for þat þay ben wyse
The queen herself sittynge as a Iustise 1028

Assemblid ben his answer for to hie
 And afterward þis knight was bode appiere
 To euery wight comaundid was cilence
 And þat þe knight schuld telle in audience 1032
 what þing þat worldly wommen louen best
 ¶ þe knight ne stood not stille as doþ a best
 But to þe questioun anon answerde
 wiþ manly voys þat al the court it herde 1036
 My liege lady generally quod he
 wommen desiren to haue soueraynte
 As wel ouer hir housbond as ouer hir loue
 And for to be in maystry him aboue 1040
 This is þe most desir þough 3e me kille /
 Doþ as 3ow list I am heer at 3our wille
 In al þe court ne was þer wyf ne mayde
 Ne wydow þat contraried þat he sayde 1044
 But sayden he. was worpy haue his lif
 And wiþ þat word vp start þat olde wif
 which þat þe knight saugh sitting on þe grene (leaf 100)
 Mercy quod sche my soueraine lady queene 1048
 Er þat 3our court departe doþ me right
 I taughte þis answer vnto þe knight
 For which he plichte me his troupe there
 The firste þing þat I wold him requere 1052
 he wold it do if it lay in his might
 Bifore þe court þen pray I þe sir knight

That vnder erthe is graue or lith aboue
 But I þy wife. were and eek þy loue
 My loue quod he. nay nay. my dampnacioun
 Allas þat any of my nacioun 1068
 Schuld euer so foule disparagid be
 But/ al for nought. þe ende is þis þat he
 Constreigned was. he needes most hir wedde
 And takith his wyf and goþ wiþ hir to bedde 1072
 ¶ Now wolden som men say þat aduenture
 That for my neeglignce I do no cure
 To telle ȝow þe ioye and tharray
 That at þat fest was maad þat ilke day 1076
 To which þing schortly answeren I schal
 And say þer nas feste ne ioy at al
 Ther nas but heuynes and mochil sorwe
 For priuely he weddyd hir in a morwe 1080
 And alday huddle him. as dop an oule
 So wo was him his wyf loket so foule
 Gret was þe wo. þe knight had in his þought
 whan he was with his wyf on bedde brought 1084
 He walwith and he torneth to and fro [leaf 100, back]
 his olde wyf lay smylyng euer mo
 And sayd o deere housbond benedicite¹ [1 MS. benedicite]
 Fareth eury knight wiþ his wyf as ȝe / 1088
 Is þis þe lawe of king arthures hous
 Is eury knight of his þus daungerous
 I am ȝour oughne loue / and ȝour wyf
 I am sche þat hath sauȝd ȝour lyf 1092
 And certes ne dede I ȝow neuer vnright
 why fare ȝe þus with me þe firste night
 ȝe fare lik a man þat had left his wit/
 what is my gult. for godes loue tel me it 1096
 And it schal be amendid if þat I may
 Amendid quod þis knight allas nay nay
 It wol nought ben amendid neuer mo
 Thow art so loþly and so old also 1100

And þerto comen of so lowh a kynde
 That litil wonder is þough I walwe and wynde
 So wolde god myn herte wolde brest
 Is þis quod sche þe cause of þour vnrest? 1104
 Þe certeynly quod he no wonder is
 Now sire quod sche I coupe amende al þis
 If þat me list er it were dayes þre /
 So wel þe mighte bere þow to me 1108
 But for þe speken of such gentillesse
 As is descendit out of old richesse
 Therfor schuld þe. ben holden gentil men
 Such arrogaunce. is not worth an hen 1112
 lok who þat is most vertuons alway
 Priue and pert and most entendip ay
 To do þe gentil dedes þat he can
 Tak him for þe grettest gentil man 1116
 Crist wol we clayme of him oure gentillesse
 Nought of oure eldres for our gret richesse
 For þough þey giue vs al her heritage
 For which we clayme to be of high parage 1120
 Ȝit may þay not biqueþe for no þing
 To noon of vs so vertuons lyuyng
 That made hem gentil men y-callid be [leaf 101]
 And bad vs folwe hem in such degre 1124
 wel can þe wyse poet of Florence
 That hatte Daunt speke of þis sentence /



SIX-TEXT 367

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE OF BATH'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 227

To don of gentilesce þe fair office
Thay might nought doon no vileny or vice
Tak' fuyr and ber it in þe derkest hous
Bitwixe þis. and þe mount Cankasous 1140
And let men schiþ. þe dores and go þenne
3it' wol þe fuyr as fair and lighte brenne
As twenty þousand men might it biholde
his office naturel ay wol it holde 1144
vp peril on my lif til þat it dye
her / may 3e se wel how þat genterye
Is nought annexid to possessioun
Sithine folk' ne doon her operacioun 1148
Alway as doth þe fuyr lo in his kynde
For god it wot men may ful often fynde
A lordes sone do schame and vilonye
And he þat wol haue pris of his gentrie 1152
For he was boren of a gentil hous
And had his eldres noble and vertuou
And nyl himselue. doo no gentil dedis
Ne folw his gentil aunceter þat deed is 1156
he is nought gentil be he duk' or erl.
For vileyn synful deedes makeþ a cherl.
For gentillesse nys but renome
Of þin auncetres for her heigh bounte 1160
which is a straunge þing' to þy persone (leaf 101, back)
Thy gentilesce comeþ fro god alloone
Than comþ oure verray gentilesse of grace
It was no þing' biquethe vs wiþ oure place 1164
Thinkeþ how nobil as saith valerius
was þilke tullius hostilius
That out of pouert / ros to high noblesse
Redith Senek/. and redith eek/ Boece. 1168
Ther schuln 3e se expresse þat no dred is
þat he is gentil þat dop gentil dedis
And þerfor lieue housbond I conclude
Al were it that myn auncetres wer rude 1172

3it may þe highe god and so hope I
 Graunte me grace to lyue vertuously
 Than am I gentil whan þat I bygynne
 To lyue vertuously and weyuen synne 1176
 And þer as ȝe of povert me repreue
 The heighe god on whom þat we biliene
 In wilful povert ches to lese his lif
 And certes euery man . mayden or wif 1180
 May vnderstonde þat Ihesu heuen king
 Ne wold not chese . a vicious lyuyng
 Glad povert is an honest þing certayn
 This wol Senek and oþer clerkes sayn 1184
 who þat hold him payd of his povert
 I hold him riche . al had he nouȝt a schert
 he þat coueitith is a pore wight
 For he wold haue þat is not in his might 1188
 But he þat nouȝt haf . ne coueyteth nouȝt / to haue
 Is riche al þough ȝe hold him but a knaue
 Verray povert is synne proprely
 Iuuenal saith of povert merily 1192
 ¶ The pore man whan he goþ by þe way
 Bifore þe theues he may synge and play
 Pouert is hateful and as I gesse /
 A ful gret brynger out of busynesse / 1196
 A gret amender eek of Sapiens
 To him þat takith it in paciens

Pouert is hateful brynger of busynesse

(1196-1197)



SIX-TEXT 369

GROUP D. § 2. WIFE OF BATH'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 229

were in no book' 3e gentils of' honour
Sayn þat' men schuld an old wight doon fauour
And clepe him fader for 3our gentilesse
And certes I schal fynden as I gesse 1212
Than drede 3ow nought' to ben a cokewold
Now þer þat' 3e sayn I am foul and old
For filthe and elde also mot' I the
Ben grete wardeyns vpon chastite / 1216
But' natheles sith I knowe 3our delyt'
I schal fulfille 3oure worldly appetyt'
Chese now quod sche oon of' þese þinges tweye
To haue me foul and old til þat I deye 1220
And be to 3ow a trewe humble wyf'
And neuer 3ow displease in al my lyf'
Or elles 3e wol haue me 3ong' and fair
And take 3our auenture of' þe repair 1224
þat' schal be to 3our hous by cause of me
Or in som oþer place may wel be
Now chese 3our seluen whethir þat' 3ow likith
This knight' auysith him and sore sikith 1228
But' atte last' he sayd in þis manere
My lady and my loue. and my wif' so deere
I putte me in 3our wyse gouernaunce
Chesith 3our self' which may be most' pleasaunce 1232
And most' honour to 3ow and me also
I do no fors þe wheþer of' þe tuo
For as 3ow likith it' suffisith me
Than haue I gete of' 3ow þe maystry quod sche / 1236
Sith I may gouern and chese as me list/ [leaf 102, back]
3e certis wyf' quod he I hold it best'
kys me quod sche we ben no lenger wroþe
For by my trouþe. I wol be to 3ow boþe 1240
This is to say 3e boþe fair and good
I pray to god þat' I mot' sterue wood
But/ I be to 3ow also good and trewe
As euer was wyf' sippen þe world was newe 1244

And but/ I be to morow as fair to seen
 As eny lady emperesse or queen
 That is bitwixe thest and eek þe west
 Doth by my lyf. right euen as ȝow lest 1248
 Cast vp þe cortyns and look what þis is
 And whan þe knyght saugh verrayly al þis
 That sche so fair was and so ȝong þer to
 For ioye he hent hir in hir armes tuo 1252
 his herte bathid in a bath of blisse
 A thousand tyme on rowe he gan hir kisse
 And sche obeyed him in euery þing
 That mighte doon him pleisauns or likyng 1256
 And þus þay lyue vnto her lyues end
 In parfyt ioye and ihū crist vs sende
 housbondes make ȝonge and freissche on bedde
 And grace to ouerbyde hem þat we wedde 1260
 And eek I pray to Ihū schort her lyues
 That wil nought be gouerned after her wyues
 And old and angry nygardes of despense
 God send hem sone verray pestilence / 1264
 ¶ Here endith þe wif of Bathe hire tale

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Here bygyrneth þe prologe of þe Freres tale

THis worthy lymytour þis noble Frere
 he made alway a lourynge cheere
 vpon the sompnour. but for honeste /

No vileyna worde. ȝit to him spak he 1268

But atte last he sayd vnto þe wyf

Dame quod he. god ȝiue ȝow good lyf

ȝe han her touchid al so mot I the

In scole matier gret difficulte 1272

ȝe han sayd mochel þing right wel I say [leaf 108]

But dame right as we ryden by þe way

Vs needeþ nouȝt but for to speke of game

And lete auctorites in goddes name 1276

To preching and to scoles of clergie /

But if it like to þis companye /

I wil ȝow of a sompnour telle a game

Par de ȝe may wel knowe by þe name 1280

That of a sompnour may no good be sayd

I pray ȝow þat noon of ȝow be eual a-payd

A Sompnour is a renner vp and doun

wip maundementȝ for fornicacioun 1284

And is y-bete at euery tounes eende /

Our oste spak / a sir ȝe schold been heende /

And curteys as a man of ȝour estat

In company we wol haue no debat 1288

Telleþ ȝour tale and let þe sompnour be

Nay quop þe sompnour let him say to me

what so him list whan it comeþ to my lot

By god I schal him quyten euery grot 1292

I schal him telle which a gret honour

Is to ben a fals flater yng lymytour [Lines 1297-8 follow wrongly here in the Six Texts.]

And his offis I schal him telle I-wis

Our host answerd and sayd þe sompnour þis 1296

And after þis he sayd vnto þe Frere

Telleþ forþ ȝour tale my maister deere

[No gap in the MS.]

¶ **Narrat.**

Whilom þer was duellyngⁱ in my countre
 An erchedeken a man of gret^r degre 1300
 That boldely did execucioun
 In punyschyng^r of fornicacioun
 Of wiccheecraft^r and eek^r of Bauderye
 Of diffamacioun and auoutrie / 1304
 Of chirchereues and of testamentes
 Of contractes and of lak^r of sacraments
 And eek^r of many anoper cryme [These 3 lines are misplaced, as
1291-3, in the Six Texts.]
 which nedip^r not to reherse at^r þis tyme 1308
 Of vsur and of Symony also
 But^r certes lecchours did he grettest^r woo.
 Thay schulde synge if^r þay were hent^r [leaf 102, bent]
 And smale tybers þay were fouly schent^r 1312
 If eny persoun wold vpon hem pleyne
 Ther might^r astert^r him no pecunial peyne
 For smale types and for smal offrynge
 he made þe poeple pitously to synge 1316
 For er þe bisschop caught^r him in his hook^r
 þay weren in þe archedeknes book^r



SIX-TEXT 373

GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Harleian 7334 233

For we ben out of here correccioun
Thay haue of vs no iurediccioun
Ne neuer schul to terme of alle her lyues
Peter so been þe wommen of þe styues 1332
Thay beþ I-put out of oure cures
Pees with meschaunce and wiþ mesauentures
þus sayd our host and let him telle his tale /
Now telleþ forþ al þough þe sompnour gale 1336
Ne spareþ nought myn owne maister deere
þis false þeef þe sompnour quop þe frere ./
Had alway bawdes redy to his hond
As eny hauk to lure in engelond 1340
þat told him al þe secre þat þay knewe
For here acqueintaunce was not come of newe
þay were his approwours priuely
He took himself a gret profyt þer by 1344
His maister knew nat alway what he wan
wiþoute maundement / a lewed man
He couþe sompne vp peyne of cristes curs
And þay were glad to fille wel his purs ./ 1348
And make him grete festis atte nale / (leaf 104)
And right as Iudas hadde purses smale /
And was a theef. right such a þeef was he
his maister had not half his duete 1352
he was if I schal ȝiue him his laude .
A þeef a sompnour and eek a baude .
And he had wenches at his retenue
That wheþir þat sir Robert or sir hughe 1356
Or Iak or Rauf or who-so þat it were
That lay by hem þay told it in his eere
Thus was þe wenche and he of oon assent
And he wold fecche a feyned maundement 1360
And sompne hem to chapitre boþe tuo
And pyle þe man and let þe wenche go
Than wold he sayn I schal frend for þy sake
Don strike þe out of oure lettres blake 1364

The þar no more as in þis cas trauayle
 I am þy frend þer I þe may avayle
 Certeynly he knew of bribours mo
 Than possible is to telle in ȝeres tuo 1368
 For in þis world nys dogge for þe bowe
 þat can an hurt deer from an hol y-knowe
 Bet þan þis sompnour knew a leccheour
 Or auoutier or ellis a paramour 1372
 And for þat was þe fruyt of al his rent
 Therefore þer on he set al his entent
 And so bifel þat oones on a day
 This sompnour euer wayting on his pray 1376
 Rod forth to sompne a widew and old ribibe
 Feynyngt a cause for he wolde bribe
 And happed þat he say bifore him ryde
 A gay ȝeman vnder a forest syde 1380
 A bow he bar and arwes bright and kene
 He had vpon a courtepy of grene
 An hat vpon his heed wiþ frenges blake
 Sir quod þis sompnour heyl and wel ouertake 1384
 welcome quod he and euery good felawe
 whider ridestow vnder þis grene schawe
 Sayde þis ȝiman wiltow fer to day [leaf 184, back]
 This sompnour answerd and sayde nay 1388
 Her faste by quod he is myn entent
 To ryden for to reysen vp a rent



GROUP D. § 4. PRIAR'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 375
Harleian 7334. 235

If that þe hadde come in to oure schire
Al schal be þin right as þou wolt desire
Graunt mercy quod þis sompnour by my faith /
Euerich in otheres hond his trouthe laith 1404
For to be sworne breþeren til þay deyen
In daliaunce forþ þay ride and pleyen
This Sompnour which þat was as ful of iangles
As ful of vanym ben þese wery-angles 1408
And euer enquiring vpon euery þing
Broþer quod he wher now is þour dwellyng
Anoper day if þat I schuld þow seeche
This þiman him answerd in softe speche 1412
Broþer quod he fer in þe norþ contre
wher as I hope somtyme I schal þe se
Er we depart I schal þe so wel wisse
That of myn hous ne schaltow neuer misse 1416
Now broþer quod þis sompnour I þow pray
Teche me whil þat we ryden by þe way
Syn þat ȝe ben a baily as am I
Som subtilte as tel me faithfully 1420
In myn office. how þat I may wyne.
And spare not for consciens or for synne /
But as my broþer tel me how do ȝe
Now by my trouthe broþir myn sayd he / 1424
As I schal telle þe a faithful tale [leaf 105]
My wages ben ful streyt and eek ful smale
My lord to me is streyt and daungerous
And myn office is ful laborous 1428
And þerfor by extorciouns I lyue
For soþ I take al þat men wil me ȝiue
Algate by sleighte or by violence
Fro ȝer to ȝer I wyne my despence 1432
I can no better telle faithfully
Now certes quod þis sompnour so fare I
I spare not to take god it woot
But if it be to heuy or to hoot 1436

what I may gete . in counseil prively
 No more consciens of þat haue I
 Nere myn extorcions I might not lyuen
 Ne of such iapes I wil not be schriuen 1440
 Stomak ne conscience . know I noon
 I schrew þes schriftesadres euerychoon
 wel be we met by god and by seint Iame
 But leue broþer telle me þy name 1444
 Quod þis sompnour in þis mene while
 This ȝeman gan a litel for to smyle
 Broþir quod he woltow þat I þe telle
 I am a feend my dwellyng is in helle 1448
 And her I ryde about my purchasyng
 To wite wher men wol ȝiue me eny þing
 My purchas is þeffect of al my rent
 loke how þou ridest for þe same entent/ 1452
 To wyne good þou rekkist neuer how
 Right so fare I for ryde I wolde now
 vnto þe worldes ende for a pray
 A quod þe sompnour benedicite what ȝe say 1456
 I wende ȝe were a ȝeman trewely
 ȝe han a mannes schap as wel as I
 haue ȝe a figure . þan determinate
 In helle þer ȝe ben in ȝour estate / 1460
 Nay certeynly quod he þer haue we non
 But whan vs likith we can make vs on

what makith ȝow to haue al þis labour
 Ful many a cause lieue sir sompnour
 Sayde þis feend. but al þing hath a tyme
 þe day is schort and it is passed prime 1476
 And ȝit ne wan I no þing in þis day
 I wol entent to wynnyng if I may
 And not entende oure þinges to declare /
 For broþer myn þy wit is al to bare 1480
 To vnderstond al þough I told hem þe
 For but þou axid. whi laboure we /
 For som tyme we ben goddis instrumentes
 And menes to don his comaundementes 1484
 whan þat him list vpon his creatures
 In diuers act. and in diuers figures
 wipouten him we haue no might certeyn
 If þat him liste. stonde þer ageyn 1488
 And som tyme at our prayer haue we leue
 Only þe body and not þe soule greue /
 witnes on Iope whom we dide ful wo
 And somtyme haue we might of boþe tuo 1492
 This is to say of body and soule eke
 And som tyme be we suffred for to seeke
 vpon a man and doon his soule vnrest/
 And not his body and al is for þe best 1496
 whan he wipstondith oure temptacioun
 It is a cause of his sauacioun
 Al be it so. it was nought oure entent
 he schuld be sauf. but þat we wold him hent 1500
 And som tyme we ben seruaunt vnto man [100/106]
 As to tharchebischope seynt Dunstan
 And to thapostolis seruaunt was I
 ȝet tel me quod þe sompnour faithfully 1504
 Make ȝe ȝow. newe bodies alway
 Of elementȝ. þe fend answerde nay
 Som tyme we feyne. and somtyme we ryse
 wip dede bodies. in ful wonder wyse 1508

And speke renably . and as fair and wel
 As to þe Phitonissa dede Samuel
 And ȝit wol somme say . it was not he
 I do no fors . of ȝour diuinite 1512
 But oon þing warne I þe I wol not iape .
 þou wilt algates wite how we ben schape .
 Thow schalt her afterward my broþer deere
 Com wher þe nedith no þing for to leere 1516
 For thou schalt by þin oughn experience
 Conne in a chayer reden of þis sentence
 Bet þan virgile whils he was on lyue /
 Or Daunt also / now let vs ryde blyue 1520
 For I wol holde company with þe
 Til it be so þat þou forsake me
 Nay quod þe sompnour þat schal nought betyde
 I am a ȝiman þat knowen is ful wyde 1524
 My troupe wol I hold as in þis caas
 For þough þou be þe denyl Sathanas
 My troupe wol I holde . to þe my broþer
 As I am swore . and ech of vs to oþer 1528
 For to be trewe breþeren in þis caas
 For hope we goon abouten oure purchas
 Tak þou þi part and þat men wil þe ȝyuen
 And I schal myn þus may we hope lyuen 1532
 And if eny of us . haue more þan oþer
 Let him be trewe . and part it wip his broþer

As ferforthly as euer wer ȝe folid
 So moche wo as I haue with ȝow tholid
 The denyȝl haue al boȝe cart'. and hors and hay
 This sompnour sayde her schal we se play 1548
 And ner ȝe feend he drough as nouȝt ne were
 Ful priuely and rouned in his eere
 herke my broȝer herke by ȝi faith
 Ne herest' nouȝt' ȝou. what' ȝe carter saith 1552
 hent' it anon' for he haȝ ȝiuen it ȝe
 boȝe hay and caples and eek' his cart' parde
 ¶ Nay quod ȝe denyȝl god wot' neuer a del
 It is nouȝt' his entente trustith wel 1556
 Ask' it ȝiself' if ȝou not' trowist' me
 Or ellis stint' a while and ȝou schalt' se
 This carter thakketh his hors vpon the croupe
 And ȝay bygon to drawen and to stowpe 1560
 hayt' now quod he ther. Thu crist' ȝow blesse
 And al his hondwerk' boȝe more and lesse
 That' was wel twight' myn oughne lyard boy
 I pray god saue ȝy body and seint loy 1564
 Now is my cart' out' of ȝe sloo par de
 Lo broȝer quod ȝe feend what' told I ȝe
 Her may ȝe seen. myn owne deere broȝer
 The carter spak' oon ȝing'. and ȝought' anoȝer 1568
 Let' vs go forth. abouten our viage
 hier wynne I noȝing' vpon cariage
 whan ȝat' ȝay comen som what' out of tounne
 This sompnour to his broȝir gan to rounne 1572
 Brothir quod he. her wonyȝh an old rebekke
 That' had almost'. as lief' to leese hir necke /
 As for to ȝiue a peny of hir good
 I wolȝ pens ȝough ȝat' sche go wood 1576
 Or I wol somone hir to oure office (leaf 197)
 And ȝit' god wot' I know of hir no vice
 But for ȝou canst' not' as in ȝis contre
 wynne ȝy cost' tak' her ensample of me 1580

This sompnour clapped at þe widowes gate
 Com out quod he þou olde viritrate
 I trowe þou hast som frere or prest wip þe
 who clappith þer sayd þis widow benedicite 1584
 God saue þow sir. what is þour swete wille
 I haue quod he. a somonance of a bille
 vp payne of cursyng loken þat þou be
 To morwe biforn our erchedeknes kne 1588
 To answer to þe court of certeyn þinges
 Now quod sche Ihu crist and king of kinges
 So wisly helpe me as I ne may
 I haue ben seek and þat ful many a day 1592
 I may not goon so fer quod sche ne ryde
 But I be deed so prikith it in my syde
 May I nat aske a lybel sir Sompnour
 And answer þer. by my procuratour 1596
 To suche þing as. men wol oppose me
 þis quod þis sompnour. pay anon let se
 Twelf pens to me and I þe wil acquite
 I schal no profyt haue þer-by but lite 1600
 My mayster hath þe profyt and not I
 Com of and let me ryden hastily
 þif me my twelf pens I may no lenger tary
 Twelf pens quod sche. now lady seinte mary 1604
 So wisly help me. out of care and synne
 þis wyde world. þough þat I schulde wyne

I payd at hom for þi correccioun	
Thou list quod sche by my sauacioun	
Ne was I neuer er now wydow ne wyf	
Somound vnto þour court/ in al my lyf	1620
Ne neuer I was but of my body trewe	
vnto þe deuel rough and blak of hiewe	
þine I þy body and þe panne also	
And whan þe deuyl herd hir curse so	1624
vpon his knees he sayd in þis manere	
Now mabely myn owne modir deere	
Is þis þour wil in earnest þat/ 30 seye	
þe deuel quod he fecche him er he deye	1628
And panne and al but he wol him repente	
Nay olde stot þat is not/ myn entente /	
Quod þis sompnour to repente me	
For eny þing þat I haue had of þe	1632
I wold I had þy smok and euery cloth	
Now broþir quod þe deuyl be not wroþ	
Thy body and þis panne is myn by right	
Thou schalt wiþ me to helle 3it to night	1636
wher þou schalt knowen of our priuete	
More þan a maister of diuinite	
And wiþ þat word þe foule fend him hente	
Body and soule he wiþ þe deuyl wente	1640
wher as þe sompnoours han her heritage	
And god þat maked after his ymage	
Mankynde saue and gyde vs alle and some	
And leene þis sompnour good man to bycome	1644
lordyngs I coup han. told 3ow quod þe frere	
had I had leysir for þis sompnour here	
After þe text of crist powel and Ion	
And of oþer doctours many oon	1648
Such peynes þat our herte might agrise	
Al be it so no tonge may deuyse /	
Though þat I might a þousand wynter telle	
The peyn of þilke cursed hous of helle	1652

But for to kepe vs fro þat cursed place [665/108]
 wakiþ and prayeth iku for his grace
 So kepe vs fro þe temptour Sathanas
 herknith þis word. beþ war as in þis cas 1656
 The lyoun syt in his awayt alway
 To slen þe Innocent if þat he may
 Disposith ȝoure hertes to wipstonde
 The fend þat wolde make ȝow þral and bonde / 1660
 He may not tempte ȝow ouer ȝour might
 For crist wol be ȝour champioun and knight
 And prayeth þat oure sompnour him repente
 Of his mys dede. er þat þe fend him hente. 1664

¶ Here endith þe frere his tale

[No break in the MS.]

¶ And here begynneth þe sompnour his prologe

This sompnour in his styrop vp he stood
 vpon þe Frere his herte was so wood
 That lyk' an aspen leef/ he quok' for Ire
 lordyngs quod he. but' oon þing' I desire 1668
 I ȝow biseke þat' of ȝour curtesye
 Syn ȝe han herd þis false frere lye
 As suffrith me I may my tale telle
 This frere bosteth þat' he knowith helle 1672
 And god it' wot'. þat' is litil wonder
 Freres and feendes been but' litel asonder
 For pardy ȝe han often tyme herd telle /
 how þat' a frere rauyscht' was to helle 1676
 In spirit ones by a visioun
 And as an aungel. lad him vp and down
 To schewen him þe peynes þat' þer were
 In al þe place saugh he not' a frere 1680
 Of oþer folk' he saugh ynowe in wo
 vnto þis aungel spak' þis frere þo
 Now sire quod he han freres such a grace
 That' noon of hem schal comen in þis place 1684
 ȝis quod þis aungil many a mylioun
 And vnto Sathanas he lad him down
 And now hap sathanas saith he a tayl
 Broder þan of a Carrik' is þe sayl 1688
 hold vp þy tayl þou Sathanas quod he [leaf 100, back]
 Schew forth þyn ars and let þe frere se
 wher is þe nest' of freres in þis place
 And er þan half a forlong' way of space 1692

Right so as bees swarmen out of an hyue
Out of þe deueles ers þay gonne dryue
Twenty þousand freres on a route
And þorugh out helle swarmed al aboute 1696
And comen as fast as þay may goon
And in his ers þay crepen enerich oon ·
he clappid his tayl agayn and lay ful stille
This frere whan he loked had his fille 1700
Vpon þe torment of þis sory place
his spirit god restored of his grace
vnto his body agayn and he awook
But napeles for fere ȝit he quook 1704
So was þe deueles ers ȝit in his mynde
That is his heritage of verray kynde/
God saue ȝow alle saue þis cursed frere
My proloug wol I ende in þis manere 1708

[*No break in the MS.*]

¶ Narrat

LOrdynge þer is. in Engelond I gesse
 A merschly lond called holdernesse
 In which þer went a lymytour aboute
 To preche and eek to begge it is no doubte 1712
 And so bifel it. on a day þis frere
 had preched at a chirch in his manere
 And specially abouen euery þing
 Excited he þe poepul in his preching 1716
 To trentale and to ȝiue for goddis sake
 wher that men mighten holy soules make
 Ther as diuine seruys is honoured
 Nought þer as it is wasted and deuoured 1720
 Neither it needeþ not for to be ȝiue
 As to possessioneres þat mow lyue
 Thanked be god in wele and abundaunce
 Trentale sayd he delyuereth fro penaunce 1724
 her frendes soules as wel eld as ȝonge
 ȝe whanne þat þay hastily ben songe
 Nought for to hold a prest iolif and gay [leaf 100]
 he syngith not but oon masse in a day 1728
 Delyuerith out quod he þe soules
 Ful hard it is wip fleischhok or with oules
 To ben y-clawed. or brend or I-bake
 Now speed ȝow hastily for cristes sake 1732
 And whan þis frere had sayd al his entent
 with Qui cum patre. forþ he went
 whan folk in chirch had ȝiue him what hem lest
 he went his way no lenger wold he rest 1736

with scrip and pyked staf y-touked hye
 In euery hous and gan to pore and pry
 And beggyd mele or chese or ellis corn
 his felaw had a staf typped with horn 1740
 A payr of tablis al of yuory
 And a poyntel y-polischt fetisly
 And wroot þe names alway as he stood
 Of alle folk that gaf him eny good 1744
 Ascaunce þat he wolde for hem preye
 3if vs a busschel. whet or malt or reye
 A goddes kichil or a trip of chese
 Or elles what 3ow list we may not chese 1748
 A goddes halpeny or a masse peny
 Or 3if vs of 3oure braune if 3e haue eny
 A dagoun of 3our blanket leeuē dame
 Oure suster deer. lo her I write 3our name 1752
 Bacoun or beef or such þing as we fynde
 A stourdy harlot ay went hem by hynde
 That was her hostis man and bar a sak
 And what men gaf hem layd it on his bak 1756
 And whan þat he was out atte dore anon
 he planed out þe names euerychoon
 That he biforn had writen in his tablis
 He serued hem wiþ nyfles and wiþ fablis 1760
 Nay þer þou list þou sompnour sayd þe frere
 Pees quod our host for cristes moder deere
 Tel forþ þy tale and spare it not at al



haue I vpon þis bench I-fare ful wel
her haue I eten many a mery mel
And fro þe bench he drof away þe cat
And layd a-doun his potent' and his hat 1776
And eek' his scrip and set' him soft' a-doun
his felaw was go walkid in þe toun
Forth with his knane to þe ostelrye /
wher as he schop him þilke night' to lye 1780
O deere maister quod þe seeke man
how haue ȝe fare sippe march bygan
I saygh ȝow nouȝt þis fourtenight' or more
God wot quod he labord haue I ful sore 1784
And specially for þy saluacioun
haue I sayd many a precious orisoun
And for myn oþer frendes god hem blesse /
I haue to day ben at' your chirche at' messe 1788
And sayd a sermoun after my simple wit'
Nought' al after þe text' of' holy wryt'
For it' is hard for ȝow as I suppose
And þerfor wil I teche ȝow ay þe glose 1792
Glosyng' is a ful glorious þing' certayn
For letter aleȝ so as we clerkes sayn
þer haue I taught' hem to be chariteable
And spend her good. þer it is resonable 1796
And þer I seigh our dame wher is sche /
ȝond in þe ȝerd I trowe þat' sche be
Sayde þis man. and sche wil come anon
¶ Ey mayster welcome be ȝe by seint' Iohn 1800
Sayde þis wyf' how fare ȝe hertily
þe frere ariȝe vp ful curteysly
And hir embracith in his armes narwe [leaf 140
And kist' hir swete. and chirkith as a sparwe' 1804
with his lippes dame quod he right' wel.
As he þat' is ȝour seruant' euery del
Thankyd be god þat' ȝow ȝaf' soule and lif
ȝit' saugh I not' þis day so fair a wyf' 1808

In al þe chirche god so saue me.
 3e God amend defautes sir quod sche /
 Algates welcome be 3e by my fay
 Graunt' mercy dame þis haue I found alway 1812
 But of 3our grete goodnes by 3oure leue
 I wolde pray 3ow þat 3e 3ow not' greene
 I wil wip Thomas speke a litel þrowe
 These curates ben ful negligent' and slowe 1816
 To grope tendurly a conscience
 In schrifte and preching' is my diligence
 Study in petres wordes and in poules
 And walk' and fiasche cristen mennes soules 1820
 To 3elde Ihu crist' his propre rent
 To spreden his word is al myn entent
 Now by 3our leue o deere sire quod sche
 Chyd him right' wel for seinte trinite 1824
 he is as angry as a pissemyre
 Though þat' he haue al þat he can desire
 Though I him wrye on night' and make him warm
 And ouer him lay my leg' oþer myn arm 1828
 he groneth lik' our boor that' lith in sty.
 Othir disport' of him right' noon haue I
 I may please him in no maner caas.
 O Thomas Ieo vous dy Thomas Thomas. 1832
 This makþ þe feend. þis moete ben amendid
 Ire is a þing' þat' highe god defendid
 And þer of wold I speke a word or tuo



My spirit haþ his fostryng' on þe bible /
þe body is ay so redy and penyble
To wake þat' my stomak' is destroyed
I pray þow dame þat' ȝe be not' anoyed 1848
For I so frendly þow my counseil schewe
By I nold not' telle it but' a fewe /
Now sir quod sche but' o word er I go
My child is deed wipinne þise wykes tuo 1852
Soon after þat' ȝe went' out' of þis town
his deth saugh I by reuelacioun
Sayde þis frere at' hoom in oure dortour
I dar wel sayn er þat' half' an hour 1856
After his deth . I seigh him born to blisse
In myn aysacioun so god me wiase .
So did our sextein . and our fermerere
That' han ben trewe freres many a ȝere 1860
þay may now god be thanked of his lene
Maken her Iubile . and walk' alloone
But' vp I roos and al our couent' eeke
With many a teere trilling' on my cheeke . 1864
Te deum was our song' and no þing' ellis
wipouten noys or clateryng' of' bellis
Sawe þat' to crist' I sayd an orisoun
Thankyng' him of my reuelacioun 1868
For sire and dame trustith me right' wel
Our orisouns ben more effectuel
And more we se of goddis secre þinges
Than borel folk' alþough þat' þay ben kinges 1872
we lyue in pouert' and in abstinence
And borel folk' in riches and dispence
Of mete and drink' and in her ful delyt
we han al þis worldes delit' in despyt' 1876
lazar and Dines lyueden diuersely
And diuers guerdoun hadde þay þerby
who-so wol praye . faste . and be clene . [leaf 111]
And fatte his soule and make his body lene 1880

we faren as saith papostil clop and foode
 Sufficeþ vs . þough þay ben not goode
 The clenues and þe fastyng' of vs freres
 Makith þat crist' acceptith oure prayeres 1884
 lo moyses fourty dayes and fourty night
 Fasted er þat þe highe god of might
 Spak' wip him in . þe mount of Synay
 with empty wombe fastyng' many a day 1888
 Receyued he þe lawe þat was writen
 with goddis fynger and holy wel þe w
 In mounť oreb or he had any speche
 with highe god þat is oure lyues leche 1892
 He fastid and was in contemplacioun
 Aron þat had þe temple in gouernacioun
 And eek' þe oþer prestes euerychoon
 In to þe temple whan þay schulden goon 1896
 To preye for þe poeple and doon seruise
 Thay nolden drinken · in no maner wise /
 No drynke which þat' dronke might' hem make /
 But' þer in abstinence prey and wake 1900
 lest' þat' þay dedin . tak' heed what' I say
 But' þay ben sobre þat' for þe pepul pray
 war þat' I say no mor . for it' suffisith
 Oure lord Ihu as oure lore deuysith 1901
 3af' vs ensampil of fastyng' and prayeres
 perfore we mendinaunt; we cely freres



And chast^t was man in paradis certeyn (100/111, last)
But now herk/ thomas. what I schal þe seyn
I ne haue no tixt^t of it as I suppose :
But I schal fynd it in a maner glose / 1920
That specially our swete lord ihc^t
Spak^t þis by freres whan he sayde þus
Blessed be þay þat pouer in spirit ben
And so forþ in þe gospel ȝe may seen 1924
wheþer it be likir oure professioun
Or heris þat swymmen in possessioun
Fy on her pomp and on her glotenye
And on her lewydnesse I hem defye 1928
Me þinkith þay ben lik^t Iouynian
Fat as a whal and walken as a swan
Al vinolent^t as botel in þe spence
her prayer is of ful gret^t reuerence 1932
whan þay for soules sayn þe psalm of dauid
lo boef^t þay say. Cor meum eructauit
who folwith cristes gospel and his fore
But we þat humble ben and chast and pore 1936
workers of goddes word and auditours
Ther-for right^t as an hauk^t vpon a sours
vpspringeth in to þacr right^t so prayeres
Of charitabil and chaste busy freres 1940
Maken her sours to goddis eeres tuo
Thomas thomas so mote I ryde or go
And by þat lord þat clepid is scint^t lue
Ner þou oure broþer schuldestow neuer priue 1944
In oure chapitre pray we day and night^t
To crist^t þat he þe sende hele and might^t
Thy body for to welden hastily
God wot^t quod he þer-of^t nought^t feele I. 1948
As help me crist^t as I in fewe ȝeeres
haue spendid vpon many diuers freres
Ful many a pound ȝit^t fare I neuer þe bet^t
Certeyn my good haue I almost^t hyset/ 1952

Far wel my gold for it is almost a go
 The frere answerd // O thomas dostow so
 what needith ȝow dyuerse freres seche 1956
 what needith him þat haþ a parfyt leche /
 To sechen oþir leches in þe toun
 ȝoure inconstance is ȝoure confusioun
 holde ȝe þan me or oure couent
 To praye for ȝow insufficient 1960
 Thomas þat iape is not worth a myte
 ȝoure malady is for we haue to lite
 ¶ A ȝiue þat couent half a quarter otes
 A ȝiue þat couent four and twenty grotes 1964
 A ȝiue þat frere a peny and let him go.
 Nay nay thomas. it may nought be so
 what is a ferthing worth depart in tuelue
 lo ech þing þat is ooned in himselue 1968
 Is more strong þan whan it is to-skatrid
 Thomas of me þou schalt not ben y-flatrid
 Thow woldist haue our labour al for nought
 The hihe god þat al this world hath wrought 1972
 Saith þat a werkman is worpy his hyre
 Thomas nouȝt of ȝour tresor I desire
 For my self. but for that oure couent/
 To pray for ȝow is ay so diligent 1976
 And for to buylden cristes holy chirche
 Thomas if ȝe wil lerne for to wirche /
 Of buyldyng vp on chirches may ȝe fynde

¶ wipinne þin hous be þou no lyoun
To þy subiects . do noon oppressioun
Ne make þyn acqueyntis fro þe fle
And ȝit thomas eftsons I charge þe / 1992
Be war for hir þat in þy bosom slepith [leaf 112, back]
war for þe serpent þat so priuely crepith
vnder þe gras and styngith priuely
Be war my sone and werk' patiently 1996
For twenty þousend men han lost' her lyues
For stryuyng' wip her lemmans and her wyues .
Now syus ȝe han so holy and meeke a wif'
what' nedith ȝow thomas to make strif' 2000
Ther nys I-wis no serpent' so cruel
when men trede on his tail ne half so fel
As woman is when sche hap caught' an Ire
Vengeans is þanne . al þat þay desire 2004
Schortly may no man by rym and vers [Spurious] 2004b
Tellen her thoughtes þay ben so dyuers [„] 2004c
Ire is a þing' oon þe grete of' seuen
Abhominable to þe god of' heuene
And to himself' it is destruccioun
This euery lewed vicory or parsoun 2008
Can say how Ire engendrith homicide
Ire is in soth executour of' pride
I coupe of' Ire seyn so moche sorwe
My tale schulde laste til to morwe 2012
Ire is þe grate of' synne as saith þe wise [Spurious] 2012b
To fle þer fro ech man schuld him deuyse [„] 2012c
And þer-for pray I god boþe day and night'
An Irous man god send him litil might'
It is greet' harm . and also gret' pite
To set' an Irous man in high degre 2016
¶ whilom þer was an Irous potestate
As seith senek' þat duryng' his estaat' /
vpon a day out/ riden knyghtes tuo
And as fortune wolde right' as it were so 2020
That' oon of' hem cam home þat' oper nouȝt'
Anoon þe knyght' bifore the iuge is brouȝt'
That' sayde þus . þou hast' þy felaw slayn
For which I deme þe to deth certayn 2024

And to anothir knight comaundid he /
 Go lede him to þe deth I charge þe /
 And happed as þay wente by þe weye [leaf 112]
 Toward þe place þer he schulde deye 2028
 The knight com which . men wend hadde be deed
 Than þoughten þay it were þe beste reed
 To lede hem boþe to þe inge agayn
 Thay sayden lord þe knight hap not slayn 2032
 his felaw lo . heer he stont hool on lyue
 þe schal be deed quod he so mote I þrue
 That is to sayn boþe oon . tuo . and þre
 And to þe firste knyȝt right þus spak he 2036
 I deme þe þou most algate be deed
 Than þoughte þay it were þe beste rede [Spurious] 2037b
 To lede him forþ in to a fair mede [„] 2037c
 And quod þe inge also þou most lese þin heed
 For þou art cause why þy felaw deyth
 And to þe þridde felaw þus he seith 2040
 Thou hast nought doon þat I comaundid þe
 And þus he let don sle hem alle þre
 Irous Cambises was eek dronkelewe
 And ay delited him to ben a schrewe 2044
 And so bifel a lord of his meigne
 That loued vertues and eek / moralite
 Sayd on a day bitwix hem tuo right þus
 A lord is lost if he be vicious 2048
 An Irous man is lik a frentik best [Spurious] 2048b
 In which þer is of wisdom noon arrest [„] 2048c
 And dronkenes is eek a foul record



SIX-TEXT 395
GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334 255

And for despyt he dronke moche more [leaf 112, back]
An hundrid part þan he had doon byfore
And right anon þis irous cursid wrecche /
Let þis knightes sone anon biforn him fecche 2064
Comaundyng hem þay schuld biforn him stonde
And sodeinly he took his bowe on honde
And vp þe streng he pulled to his cere
And wip an arwe he slough þe child right þere 2068
Now wheþir haue I a sikur hond or noon
Quod he is al my mynde and might agoon
hath wyn byreuyd me myn eye sight
what schuld I telle þe answer of þe knight 2072
his sone was slayn þer is no more to say
Be war þerfor. wip lordes how 3e play
Syngith placebo. and I schal if I can
But if it be. vnto a pore man 2076
To a pore man men schuld his vices telle
But not to a lord þey he schuld go to helle
lo Irous Cirus pilke Percien
how he destroyed þe ryuer of Gysen 2080
For þat an hors of his was dreynt þer Iune.
whan þat he wente Babiloyne to wyne
he made þat þe ryuer was so smal
þat women mighte wade it ouer al 2084
lo what sayde he þat so wel teche can
Ne be no felaw. to an irous man
Ne with no wood man walke by þe way
lest þe repent I wol no lenger say 2088
Now thomas leue broþer leue þin Ire
Thow schalt me fynde as iust as is a squire
Thyn anger doth þe al to sore smerte
hald not þe deuiles knyft alway at þyn herte 2092
But schewe to me al þy confessioun
Nay quod þis syke man by seynt symoun
I haue ben schriuen þis day of my curate
I haue him told holly al myn estate/ 2096

Nedith no more to speken of it saith he /
 But if me list of myn humilite .
 3if me þan of þy good to make our cloyster [12m/114]
 Quod he for many a muscle and many an oyster 2100
 haþ ben oure foode our Cloyster to arreyse
 whan oþer men han ben ful wel at eyse
 And 3if god wot vnnethe þe foundement
 Performed is ne of oure payment 2104
 Is nought a tyle 3if wiþinne our wones
 By god we owe 3if fourty pound for stones
 Now help Thomas for him þat harewed helle
 Or elles moote we oure bookes selle 2108
 And 3if 3ow lakke oure predicacioun
 Thanne goþ þe world al to destruccioun
 For who-so wold vs fro þe world byreue
 So god me saue Thomas by 3oure leue 2112
 he wolde byreue out of þis world þe sonne
 For who can teche . and werken as we conne
 And þis is not of litel tyme quod he
 But sippen Elye was her or ele 2116
 han freres ben fynde I of record
 In charite I-þanked be oure lord
 Now Thomas help for seynte charite
 A-doun he sette him anon on his kne 2120
 This sike man wex welneigh wood for Ire
 he wolde þat þe frere had ben on fuyre

That þou depart is to my sore bryght
 That every freere here as much as oþer
 Thy schalow were on þy profession
 wyldeston frende or carllaston 2136
 I were it quod þis freere vpon my faith þer the best
 And þer-with his bond in his be hand
 to her myn hand in me schal be no lak
 Now þanne þer þyn bond down at my bak 2140
 Sayde þis man and grope wel byhynde
 Bynethe my buttok þere schaltow fynde
 A þing þat I have had in prynete
 A þough þis freere þat schal go with me 2144
 And down his bond he launched to þe clifte
 In hope for to fynde þer a gifte
 And when þis syke man felie þis freere
 Aboute his tuel grope þer and heere 2148
 Amyd his bond he lete þe freere a fart
 Ther is no capul drawyng in a cart
 That might haue let a fart of such a soun
 The freere vpstart as d th a wood lyoun 2152
 A false cherl quod he for godles bones
 This hastow in despit don for þe noones
 Thou schalt abyte þis fart if þat I may
 his meyne which þat herd of þis affray 2156
 Com lepard In and chased out þe freere
 And forth he goþ wip a foul angry cheere
 And fat þis felaw þere lay his stoor
 he lokid as it were a wylde boor 2160
 And grynte with his teep so was he wroth
 A stordy paas down to þe court he goth
 wher as þer wonyd a man of gret honour
 To whom þat he was alway confessour 2164
 This worþy man was lord of þat / village
 This freere com as he were in a rage
 wher þat þis lord sat styng at his bord
 Vnneþe might þe freere speke a word 2168

Til atte last he sayde god 3ow se
 This lord gan loke and sayde benedicite
 What frere Iohn what maner world is þis /
 I se wel. þat som þing is amys 2172
 3e loke as þough þe woode were ful of þenys
 Sit doun anon and tel me what 3our greif is
 And it schal ben amendit if þat I may [leaf 115]
 I haue quod he had a despit to day 2176
 God 3elde 3ow a-doun in 3oure vilage
 That in þis world is noon so pore a page/
 That he nold haue abhominacioun
 Of þat I haue receyued in 3oure toun 2180
 And 3et ne greuith me no þing so sore
 As þat þis elde cherl wiþ lokkes hore
 Blasphemed hap our holy couent eske
 Now maister quod þis lord I 3ow biseke 2184
 No maister sir quod he but seruitour
 þough I haue had in scole such honour
 God likith not þat Raby men vs calle
 Neither in market neyther in 3our large halle 2188
 No fors quod he tellith me al 3our greaf
 þis frere sayd sire an odious meschief
 This day bytid is to myn ordre and to me
 And so par consequens to ech degre 2192
 Of holy chirche god amend it soone
 Sir quod þe lord 3e wot what is to doone
 I haue þis day brought to þe þis confessor



SIX-TEXT 399

CHOUR B. § C. SCHNODDER'S TALE. *Harvard* 7394. 259

how þat' me þynkith quod sche so god me speede
 I say a cherl hap down a cherles deede
 what' schuld I say god let him neuer þe
 His syke heed is full of vanyte 2208
 I hold him in a maner frenesye
 Ma dame quod he I-wis I schal not lye
 But I in oþir wise may be wreke
 I schal defame him ouer al wher I speke 2212
 The false blasfememour þat' chargid me *[Marg. 115, last.]*
 To parten þat' wil not departed be
 To euery man yliche wip mencharnce
 The lord sat stille as he were in a traunce 2216
 And in his hert' he rollid vp and down
 How had þis cherl ymaginacioun
 So schewe such a probleme to þe frere
 Neuer eft' er now herd I of such matiere 2220
 I trowe þe deuel put it in his mynde
 In ars metrik / schal þer no man fynde
 Biforn þis day of such a questioun
 who schulde make a demonstracioun 2224
 That' euery man schuld hane a lyk' his part'
 As of a soun or of a sauour of a fart'
 O nyce proude cherl I schrew his face
 lo sires quod þe lord wip harde grace 2228
 who euer herde of such a þing' er now
 To euery man y-like tel me how
 It is impossible it may not' be
 Ey nyce cherl god let him neuer þe 2232
 The romblyng' of a fart' and euery soun
 Nis but an aier reuerberacioun
 And euer it' wastith lyte and lyt' away
 Ther nys no man can deme by my fay / 2236
 If þat' it' were departed equally
 what' lo my cherl what' lo how schrewedly
 vnto my confessour to day he spak'
 I hold him certainly demoniak' 2240

Now etith þour mete and let þe cherl go play /
 Let him go honge himself on donel way /

*[The Solution of the "Problems" by the Lord's Squire.
 No break in the MS.].*

Now stood þe lordes squier at þe bord	
That carf his mete and herde word by word	2244
Of al þis þing which þat I of haue sayd	
My lord quod he be ȝe nouȝt eucl payd	
I couȝe telle for a gowne cloth	
To ȝow sir frere so þat ȝe be not wroth	2248
How þat þis fart enen / departed schuld be	
Among ȝour couent if I comaunded be	
Tel quod þe lord and þou schalt haue anon	[2249 116]
A gounne cloþ by god and by seint Iohn	2252
My lord quod he whan þat þe wedir is fair	
wipoute wynd or pertourbyng of ayr	
let bring a large whel in to þis halle	
But þat it haue his spokes alle	2256
Twelf spokes hath a cart whel comunly	
And bring me . xij . freres wiȝ ȝe why	
For prettene is a couent as I gesse /	
ȝour noble confessour her god him blesse	2260
Schal parfourn vp þe nombre of þis couent	
Thanne schal þay knele doun by oon assent	

That equally þe soun of it wol wende /
 And eek þe stynt vnto þe spokes ende
 Saue þat þis worþy man ȝour confessour
 By cause he is a man of gret honour 2276
 Schal haue þe firste fruyt as resoun is
 The noble vsage of freres is þis
 The worthy men of hem first schal be serued
 As certeynly he haþ it wel deserued 2280
 he hath to day taught vs so mochil good
 with preching in þe pulpit þer he stood
 That I may vouche sauf I say for me
 He hadde þe firste smel of fartes þre 2284
 And so wold al his couent hardily
 he berith him so fair and holily
 The lord þe lady and ech man sauf þe frere
 Sayde þan Iankyn spak in þis matiere 2288
 As wel as euclide or elles protholome [leaf 116, back]
 Touchand þe clerk þay sayd þat subtilte
 An high wyt made him speken as he spak
 he nas no fool ne no demoniak / 2292
 And Iankyn haþ I-wonne a newe gowne
 My tale is don. we ben almost at tonne.
 ¶ Here endith the sompnours tale

[No break in the MS.]

GROUP E. FRAGMENT VI.

§ 1. THE CLERK'S HEAD-LINK.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

¶ And here bygynneth þe Clerk of Oxenford prologe

S Ir clerk of Oxenford our hoste sayde
 þe ryde as stille and coy as dop a mayde /
 were newe spoused sitting at a bord

This day ne herd I of þour mouth a word 4

I trowe þe study aboute som sophime

But Salomon saith euery þing hath tyme

For goddis sake as beth of better cheere

It is no tyme for to stody hie 8

Tel vs som mery tale by þour fay

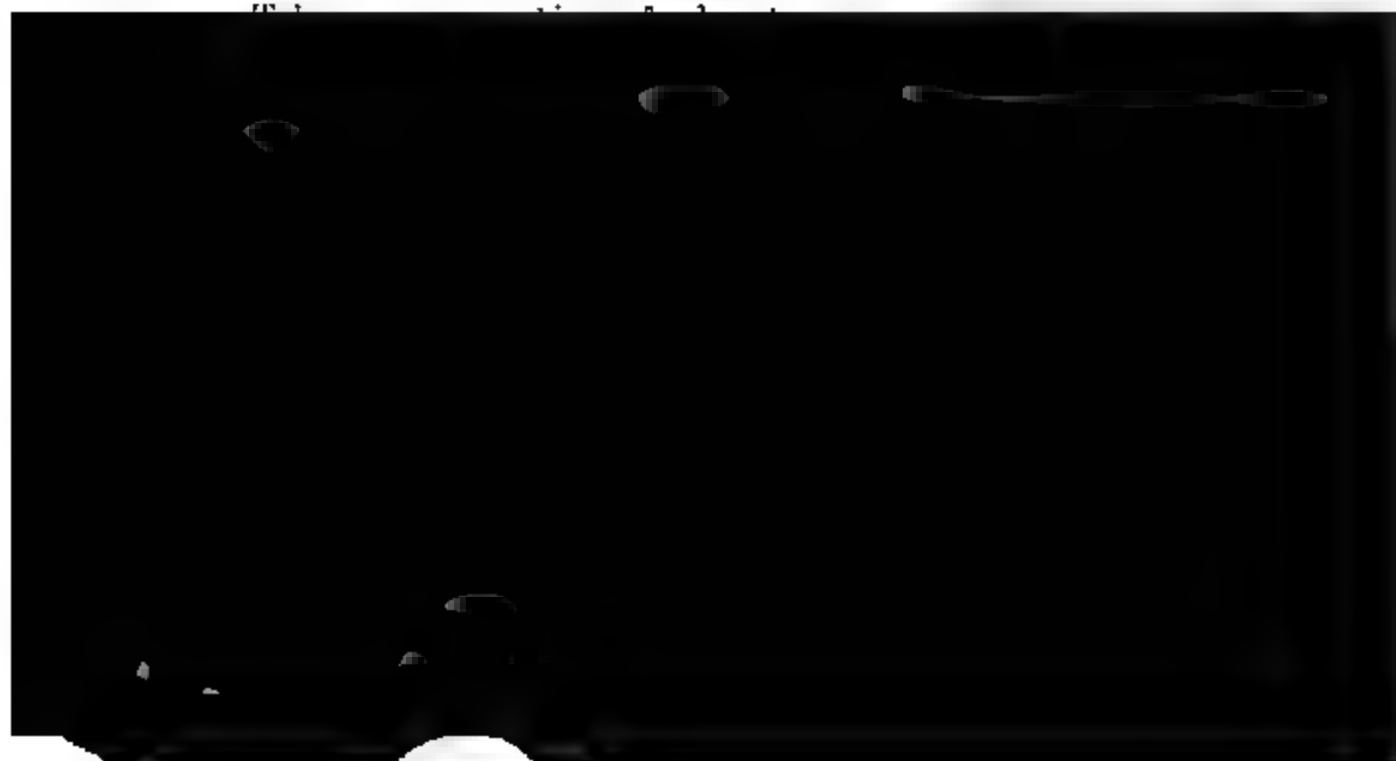
For what man is entred vnto play

he moot nedes vnto þat play assent

But prechith not as freres doon in lent 12

To make vs for our olde synnes wepe

Ne þat þy tale [1] tale make vs for to alepe ^{1 by carter's out}



Als fer as resoun askith hardily
 I wil ȝow telle a tale which þat I
 lerned at Padowe of a worpy clerk
 As prouyd by his wordes and his werk 28
 he is now deed and nayled in his chest
 Now god ȝiue his soule wel good rest
 Fraunces petrark þe laureat poete [leaf 117]
 highte þis clerk/. whos rethorique swete 32
 Enlumynd al ytail of poetrie
 As linian did of philosophie
 Or lawue or other art particulere
 But deth þat wol not suffre vs duellen heere 36
 But as it were a twyncling of an ye
 hem boþe hap slayn and alle schul dye
 But forth to telle of this worpy man
 That taughte me þis tale as I first bigan 40
 I say þat he first with heigh stile enditith
 Er he þe body of his tale writith
 A proheme in the which descriuith he
 The mounde and of Saluces þe contre 44
 And spekith of appenynne þe hulles hye
 That ben þe boundes of al west lombardye
 And of mount vesulus in special
 wher as þe poo out of a welle smal 48
 Takith his firste springyng and his sours
 That estward ay encreceth in his cours
 To Emyl-ward to ferard and to venise
 The which a long þing were to deuyse 52
 And trewely as to my Iuggement
 Me thinkith it a þing Impertinent
 Saue þat he wold conueyen his matiere
 But þis is þe tale which þat ȝe schuln heere 56

¶ Explicit prohemiũ

[No break in the MS. here, or between the Stanzas following.]

¶ Incipit narrare

Ther is at þe west / ende of ytaile 57
 Doun at þe root of vesulus þe colde
 A lusty playn abundaunt of vitaile
 whar many a tour and toun þou maist byholde.
 That foundid were in tyme of fadres olde. 61

And many anothir delitable sight
 And Saluces þis noble contray hight 63

A marquys whilom duellid in þat lond 64
 As were his worþy eldria him bifore
 And obeisaunt ay redy to his hond
 were alle his liegis bothe lesse and more (Reg 117, back)
 Thus in delyt he lyueth and hath don þore 68
 Biloued and drad purgh fauour and fortune
 Boþe of his lordes and of his comune 70

Ther with he was as to speke of lynage 71
 The gentileste born of lombardye
 A fair persone . and strong and yong of age
 And ful of honour and of curtesie
 Discret ynough his contre for to gye 75

Synne in contry he was to blame

SIX-TEXT 406

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALK. Harleian 7334. 265

Only þat poynt his poeple bar so sore	85
That flokkel on a day to him þay went	
And oon of hem that wisest was of lore	
Or elles þat þe lord wolde best assent	
That he schuld telle him what his poeple ment	89
Or ellis coupe he schewe wel such matiere	
he to þe marquys sayd as 3e schuln hiere	91
O noble marquys. 3oure humanite	92
Assureth vs and 3iueth vs hardynesse	
As ofte as tyme is of necessite	
That we to 3ow may telle oure heynesse	
Acceptith lord now. of 3our necessite	96
That we with pitous hert vnto 3ow playne	
And let 3oure eeries my vois not disdeyne	98
A nd haue I nought to doon in þis matere	99
More þan anoper man hap in þis place /	
3it for as moche as 3e my lord so deere	
han alway schewed me fauour and grace	
I dar þe better ask of 3ow a space /	103
And audience to asken oure request /	
And 3e my lord to doon right as 3ow lest	(leas 118) 105
F or certes lord so wel vs likith 3ow	106
And al 3our werk and euer han doon þat we	
Ne coupen not deuysen how	
we mighte lyue more in felicite	
Saue oon þing lord if þat 3our wille be	110
That for to be a weddid man 3ow list /	
Than were 3our peple in souereign hertes rest /	112
B owith 3our neck. vndir þat blisful 3ok	113
Of souereignete. nought of seruise	
which þat men clepe spousesail or wedlok	
And thenkith lord among 3our þoughtes wise /	

how þat our dayes passe in sondry wyse 117
 For þough we slepe or wake or rome aboute
 Ay fleth þe tyme it wil no man abyde. 119

And though þour grene þouþe floure as þit 120
 In crepith age alway as stille as stoon
 And deth manasith euery age and smyt
 In ech estat for þer ascapith noon
 And as certeyn as as we knowe euerychon 124
 That we schuln deye as vncarteyn we alle
 Ben of þat day þat dep schal on vs falle 126

Acceptith thanne of vs þe trewe entent 127
 That neuer þit/ refusid þoure hest
 And we wil lord if þat þe wil assent
 Chese þow a wyf in schort tyme atte lest
 Born of þe gentilest and þe heighest 131
 Of al þis lond so þat it oughte seme
 honour to god. and þow as we can deme 133

Deliuier vs out of al þis busy drede 134
 And tak a wyf fo hihe goddes sake /
 For if it so bifel as god forbede
 That þurgh þour dep þour lygnage schuld aslake
 And þat a straunge successour schuld take 138
 þour heritage. O. wo were vs on lyue

But natheles I se of ȝou þe trewe entent	148
And trust vpon ȝour witt and haue doon ay	
wharfor of my fre wil I wil assent/	
To wedde me as soon as euer I may	
But þer as ȝe haue profred me to day	152
To chese me a wyf I wol relese	
That choys and pray ȝow of þat/ profre cesse /	154
For god it woot þat childer ofte been	155
vnlik her worthy eldrie hem bifore	
Bounte cometh al of god nought of þe streen	
Of which thay ben engendrid and I-bore	
I trust in goddis bounte and þerfore	159
My mariage and myn estat and rest	
I him bytake . he may doon as him lest	161
Let me aloon . in chesyng of my wif	162
That charge vpon my bak I wil endure	
But I ȝow pray and charge vpon ȝour lyf	
That wyf þat I take ȝe me assure /	
To worschip / whil . þat hir lif may endure	166
In word and werk . boþe heer and euery where /	
As sche an Emperoures doughter were	168
And forthermor þus schal ȝe swer þat ȝe	169
Aȝeins my chois schuln neuer grucche ne stryue	
For sins I schal forgo my liberte	
At ȝour request as euer mot I þrise	
Ther as myn hert is set þer wil I wyue	173
And but ȝe wil assent in such manere	
I pray spek no more of þis matiere	175
With hertly wil . þay sworn and assentyn	176
To al þis þing þer sayde no wight nay	
Bysechyng him of grace er þat þay wentyn	
That he wol graunten hem a certeyn day	

Of his spousail as soone as euer he may 180
 For ȝit alway þe peple som what dredde [leaf 119]
 lest that the marquys wolde no wyf wedde 182

He graunted hem a day such as him lest 183
 On which he wolde be weddid sicurly
 And sayd he dede al þis at her requeste
 And þay with humble hert ful buxomly
 knelyng vpon her knees ful reuerently 187
 him þanken alle and þus þay haue an ende
 Of her entent. and hom aȝein þay wende 189

And her vpon he to his officeris 190
 Comaundith for the feste to puruaye
 And to his priue knightes and squyeres
 which charge ȝaf as him list on hem leye
 And thay to his comaundement obeye / 194
 And ech of hem doth his diligence
 To doon vnto þe feste reuerence 196

¶ Explicit prima pars.

[No more break in the MS.]

Nought fer fro þilke place honorable 197
 wher as this marquys schop his mariage
 Ther stood a thrope of sighte delitable
 In which þat pore folk of þat vilage
 hadden her bestes and her herburcage / 201

But for to speke of hir vertuous beaute 211

Than was sche oon þe fayrest vnder sunne

For purely I-fostered vp was sche

No licorous lust was in his body ronne

wel offer of þe weile þan of þe tounne 213

She drunk and for sche wolde vertu please

Sche knew wel labour but noon ydel ease 217

But þough þis mayden tender were of age 218

þet in þe brest of her virginite

Ther was enclosed rype and sad corrage

And in gret reuerence and charite

Hir olde pore fader fostred sche / 222

A fewe scheep spynnyng on þe feld sche kept

Sche nolde not ben ydel til sche slept 224

And whan sche com hom sche wolde brynge 225

wortis or oþer herbis tymes ofte

The which sche schred and seth for hir lynyng

And made hir bed ful hard and no þing softe

And ay sche kept hir fadres lif on lofte 229

with enery obeissance and diligence

That child may do to fadres reuerence 231

Vpon Grisildes þe pore creature 233

Ful ofte sithes þis marquys seth his ye

As he on huntyng rood par auenture

And whan it fel he mighte hir espye

he not with wantoun lokyng of folye 236

his eyzen cast vpon hir but in sad wyse

vpon hir cheer he wold him oft avise 238

Comendyng in his hert hir wommanhede 239

And eek hir vertu passyng any oþer wight

Of so jong age as wel in cheer as dede

For þough þe poeple haue no gret insight

In vertu he considereth aright 243
 Hir bounte and desposed þat he wolde
 wedde hir oonly if euer he wedde scholde 245

The day of weddyng cam but no wight can 246
 Telle what womman it schulde be /
 For which meruayle wondrith many a man
 And sayden whan þay were in priuete
 wol nought our lord ȝit leue his vanite 250
 wol he not wedde alas alas þe while
 why wol he þus himself and vs bigyle 252

But natheles þis marquys hap doon make 253
 Of gemmes set in gold and in asure
 Broches and rynges for Grisildes sake /
 And of hir clothing took he þe mesure (254/120)
 By a mayde y-lik to hir of stature 257
 And eek of oþer ornamentes alle /
 That vnto such a weddyng schulde falle / 259

The tyme of vndern of þe same day 260
 Approchith þat þis weddyng schulde be /
 And al þe palyz put was in array
 Boþe halle an chambur. ylik here degre
 houses of office stuffid with plente 264
 Ther maystow se of deynteous vitayle

SIX-TEXT 412

GROUP E § 2. CLERE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 271

Grysild of þis god wot ful Innocent /	274
That for hir schapen was al þis array /	
To fecche water at a welle is went /	
And cometh hom as soone as sche may	
For wel sche had herd sayd þat ilke day	278
The marquys schulde wedde and if sche might	
Sche wold haue seyen som what of þat sight	280
Sche sayd I wol with oþer maydenes stonde /	281
That ben my felawes . in oure dore and see /	
The marquys and þerfore wol I fonde /	
To don at hom as soone as it may be	
The labour which þat longeth vnto me	285
And þanne may I at leysir hir byholde	
And sche þe way in to þe castel holde /	287
And as sche wold ouer þe þreischfold goon	288
The marquys cam and gan hir for to calle	
And sche set down her water-pot anon	
Bisides þe þreischfold of þis oxe stalle /	
And doun vpon hir / knees . sche gan falle	292
And with sad countenance knelith stille	
Til sche had herd what was þe lordes wille <small>(/on/ 129, back)</small>	294
This þoughtful marquys spak vnto þis mayde	295
Ful soberly and sayd in þis manere	
wher is ȝour fader Grisildes he sayde	
And sche with reuerence and humble cheere	
Sayde lord he is al redy heere /	299
And in sche goth wiþouten lenger let	
And to þe marquys sche hir fader fet	301
He by þe hond þan takith þis olde man	302
And sayde þus . whan he him had on syde /	
Ianicula I neither may ne can	
lenger þe plesaunce of myn herte hyde	

If þat ȝe vouche sauf what so betyde / 306
 Thy doughter wil I take er þat I wende
 As for my wyf vnto hir lyues ende / 308

Thow louest me I wot it wel certeyn 309
 And art my faithful liege man I-bore /
 And al þat likith me I dar wel sayn
 It likith þe. and specially þefore
 Tel me þat poynt. as ȝe haue herd bifore 313
 If þat þow wolt vnto þat purpos drawe /
 To take me as for þy · sone in lawe 315

The sodeyn caas þe man astoneyd þo 316
 That reed he wax abaischt and al quakyng
 he stood vnneþe sayd he wordes mo
 But oonly þis. lord quod he my willyng
 Is as ȝe wol aȝenat ȝoure likyng 320
 I wol no þing ȝe be my lord so deere
 Right as ȝow list gouernith þis matiere 322

Ȝit wol I quod þis markys softely 323
 That in þy chambre I and þou and sche /
 haue a collacioun and wostow why
 For I wol aske if it hir wille be
 To be my wyf and reule hir after me 327



No wonder is þough þat sche were astoned 337

To seen so gret a gest come in to þat place /

Sche neuer was to suche gestes woned

For which sche loked with ful pale face /

But shortly þis matiere forth to chace 341

These arn þe wordes þat þe marquys sayde /

To this benigne verray faithful mayde 343

Grisyld he sayde ȝe schul wel vnderstonde / 344

It liketh to ȝour fader and to me

That I ȝow wedde and eek it may so stonde

As I suppose ȝe wil þat it so be /

But þese demaundes aske I first quod he / 348

That sith it schal be doon in hasty wyse

wol ȝe assent or elles ȝow auyse / 350

I say þis be ȝe redy with good hert/ 351

To al my lust and þat I frely may

As me best liste. do ȝow laughe or smert

And neuer ȝe to gruch it night ne day

And eek whan I say ȝe ȝe say not nay 355

Neyther by word ne frownyng contenaunce

Swer þis and here swer I oure alliaunce 357

Wondryng vpon þis word quakyng for drede 358

Sche sayde lord vndigne and vnworthy

I am to thilk honour. þat ȝe me bede

But as ȝe wil ȝour self right so wol I

And here I swere þat neuer wityngly 362

In werk ne thought I nyl ȝow disobeye

For to be deed þough me were loth to deye 364

This is ynough Grisilde myn quod he / 365

And forth goth he wip a ful sobre chere

Out at þe dore and after þat cam sche

And to þe pepul he sayd in þis manere

This is my wyf quod he þat stondith heere 369
 honoureth hir and loueth hir I ȝow pray (leaf 131, back)
 who so me loueth þer is no more to say 371

And for þat no þing of hir olde gere 372
 Sche schulde brynge vnto his hous he bad
 That wommen schuld despoilen hir right þere
 Of which þese ladyes were nought ful glad
 To handle hir clopes wher-in sche was clad 376
 But natheles þis mayde bright of hew
 Fro foot to heed þay schredde han al newe 378

Hir heeres han þay kempt þat lay vntressed 379
 Ful rudely and with hir fyngres smale
 A coroun on hir heed þay han I-dressed
 And set hir ful of nowches gret and smale
 Of hir array what schuld I make a tale / 383
 Vnnethe þe poeple hir knew for hir fairnesse /
 whan sche translated was in such richesse / 385

This marquis haþ hir spoused with a ryng 386
 Brought for þe same cause and þan hir sette
 vpon an hors snow-whyte and wel amblyng
 And to his palye er he lenger lette
 with ioyful poeple þat hir ladde and mette 390
 Conueyed hire and þus þe day þay spende

To enery wight sche waxen is so deere 400
 And worschipful þat folk þer sche was born
 And from hir burthe knew hir ȝer by ȝere
 Vnneth trowed þay but dorst han sworn
 That to Ianicle of which I spak biforn 404
 Sche doughter were . for as by coniecture
 Hem þought sche was anoper creature 406

For þough þat euer vertuous was sche 407
 Sche was encreased in such excellence [leaf 123]
 Of thewes goode i-set in high bounte
 And so discret and fair of eloquence
 So benigne and so digne of reuerence 411
 And couþe so þe poeples hert embrace
 That ech hir louþ þat lokith in hir face 413

Nought oonly of Saluce in þe toun 414
 Pupliashed was þe bounte of hir name
 But eek byside in many a regioun
 If oon sayd wel anoper sayd þe same
 So sprad of hire heigh bounte þe fame / 418
 That men and women as wel ȝong as olde
 Gon to Saluce vpon hir to byholde 420

This walter louly . nay but really 421
 weddid with fortunat honestete
 In goddes pees lyueth ful esily
 At home and outward grace ynough hap he
 And for he saugh þat vnder low degre 425
 was ofte vertu y-hid þe poeple him helde
 A prudent man and þat is seint ful selde 427

Nought oonly þis Grisildee purgh hit witte 428
 Couthe al þe feet of wifly humblesse /
 But eek whan þat þe tyme required it
 The comun profyt couthe sche redresse

Ther nas discord rancour ne heuynesse / 432
 In al þat lond þat sche ne couþe appese /
 And wisly bryng' hem alle in rest' and ese 434
 Though þat hir housbond absent' were anon 435
 If gentil men or oþer of hir contre
 were wroth sche wolde brynge hem at oon
 So wyse and rype wordes hadde sche
 And Iuggement' of so gret' equite 439
 That sche from heuen sent' was as men wende /
 Poeples to saue and euery wrong' to amende 441
 Nought longe tyme after þat þis Grisilde 442
 was wedded sche a douȝter hap I-bore
 Al had hir leuer han had a knaue childe
 Glad was þis marquis and þe folk' þerfore
 For though a mayden child come al byfore / [v. 133, 134] 446
 Sche may vnto a knaue child atteigne
 By liklihed and sche nys not' bareigne 448

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Incipit Tercia pars.

Ther fel as fallith many tymes mo 449
 whan þat þis child hap souked but' a þrowe
 This marquys in his herte longith so
 Tempte his wyf'. hir sadnesse for to knowe
 That he ne myȝt out of his herte þrowe 453

For which þis marquis wrouȝt in þis manere 463
 he com aloone a night þer as sche lay /
 wiþ sterne face and with ful trouble cheere
 And sayde þus Grisild quod he þat day /
 þat I ȝow took out of ȝour pore array / 467
 And putte ȝow in estat of heigh noblesse
 ȝe haue not þat. forgeten as I gesse / 469

I say Grisild þis present dignite 470
 In which þat I haue put ȝow as I trowe
 Makith ȝow not. forgetful for to be
 þat I ȝow took in pore estat ful lowe
 For eny wale ȝe moot ȝour selue knowe / 474
 Tak heed of euery word þat I ȝow say /
 Ther is no wight þat herith it but we tway / 476

Ȝe wot ȝour self. how ȝe comen heere 477
 In to þis hous it is nought long ago
 And þough to me þat ȝe be leef and deere
 vnto my gentils ȝe be no þing so
 Thay seyn to hem it is gret schame and wo 481
 For to ben subiect. and ben in seruage /
 To the þat born art of a smal village [*ms* 125] 483

And namely syn þy doughter was I-bore 484
 These wordes han þay spoken douteles
 But I desire as I haue doon byfore
 To lyue my lif with hem in rest and pees
 I may not in þis caas be reccholes 488
 I moot do with þy doughter for þe best /
 Not as I wolde but as my pepul leet 490

And ȝit god wot þis is ful loth to me 491
 But napeles wiþoute ȝoure witynge
 wol I not doon. but þis wold I quod he /
 That ȝe to me assent as in þis þing /

Schew now 3our paciens in 3our wirching' 495
 þat þou me hightest' and swor in 3on village
 That' day þat' maked was oure mariage 497

Whan sche had herd al þis sche nouȝt' ameenyd 498
 Neyþer in word in cheer or countenaunce
 For as it' semed sche was nought' agreed
 She sayde lord al lith in 3our plesaunce
 My child and I with hertly obeisaunce 502
 Ben 3oures al . and 3e may saue or spille
 3our oughne þing' . werkþ after 3our wille / 504

Ther may no þing' so god my soule saue 506
 liken to 3ow þat' may displesen me
 Ne I desire no þing' for to haue
 Ne drede for to lese saue conly 3e
 This wil is in myn hert' and ay schal be 509
 No length of tyme or deþ may þis deface /
 Ne chaunge my corrage to oþer place / 511

Glad was this marquis of hir answeryng' 512
 But' ȝit' he feyned as he were not' so
 Al dreery was his cheer and his lokyng'
 whan þat' he schold out' of þe Chambre go
 Soon after þis a forlong' way or tuo 516

he wrouȝt' had told al his intent

SIX-TEXT 420

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 279

Ma dame he sayd þe most forȝiue it me 526

Though I do þing. to which I am constreynit.

þe ben so wys þat ful wel knowe þe

þat lordes hestes mow not ben I-feynit

Thay mowe wel biwayl it or compleyn it/ 530

But men moot neede vnto her lust obeye

And so wol I þer is no more to seye 532

This child I am comaundid for to take / 533

And spak no more. but out þe child he hent

Dispitously and gan a chiere make

As þough he wold han slayn it er he went

Grisild moot al suffer and al consent 537

And as a lamb sche sitteth meeke and stille /

And let þis cruel sergeant doon his wille 539

Suspecious was þe defame of þis man 540

Suspect his face. suspect his word also /

Suspect þe tyme. in which he þis bigan

Allas hir doughter þat she loned so

Sche wend he wold han slayen it right þo 544

But napeles sche neyþer weep ne siked

Conformyng hir to þat þe marquis liked 546

But atte last speke sche bigan 547

And mekely sche to þe sergeant preyde

So as he was a worþy gentil man

That she most kisse hir child er þat it deyde

And on hir arm þis litel child sche leyde 551

wiþ ful sad face. and gan þe child to blesse

And lullyd it and after gan it keese / 553

And þus sche sayd in hir benigne vois 554

Far wel my child I schal þe neuer see /

But aith I þe haue marked wiþ þe croys /

Of pilke fader blessed mot þou be

That for vs deyde vpon a cros of tre 558
 Thy soule litel child . I him bytake (leaf 134)
 For þis night schaltow deyen for my sake / 560

I trowe þat to a norice in þis caas 561
 It had ben hard þis rewthe for to see
 wel might a moder þan haue cryed alas
 But napeles so sad stedefast was sche
 þat she endured al aduersite 565
 And to þe sergeant mekely sche sayde /
 Haue her agayn þour litel þonge mayde 567

Goth now quod sche and doþ my lordes heste 568
 But o þing wil I pray þow of þour grace
 þat but my lord forbede þow atte leste
 Burieth þis litel body in som place
 That bestes ne no briddes it to-race / 572
 But he no word wil to þe purpos say /
 But took þe child and went vpon his way 574

This sergeant com vnto þis lord agayn 575
 And of Grisildes wordes and hir cheere
 He tolde poynt for poynt in schort and playn
 And him presentith with his douȝter deere
 Som what þis lord hath rewthe in his manere 579

But at Boloyne to his suster deere 589
 That pilke tyme of panik' was Countesse
 He schuld it take and schewe hir þis matiere
 Byseching' her to doon hir busynesse
 This child to fostre in alle gentilesse 593
 And whos child þat it was he bad hir hyde
 From euery wight' for ought þat mighte bytyde 595
 The sergeant' goþ and hap' fulfild þis þing' 596
 But to þis marquys now retourne we [leaf 134, back]
 For now goþ he ful fast' ymaginyng'
 If by his wyues cher he mighte se
 Or by hir word apparceyue þat sche 600
 were chaunged. but he hir neuer coupe fynde
 But euer in oon y-like sad and kynde / 602
 As glad as humble as busy in seruise / 603
 And eek' in loue as sche was wont' to be
 was sche to him in euery maner wyse /
 Ne of hir doughter nouȝt' o word spak' sche
 Non accident/ for noon aduersite 607
 was seyn in hir ne neuer hir doughter name
 Ne nempnyd sche. in earnest' ne in game 609

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Incipit. Quarta pars.

IN þis estaat þer passed ben foure ȝer 610
 Er sche wiþ childe was. but as god wolde
 A knaue child sche bar by þis waltier
 Ful gracious and fair for to biholde
 And whan þat folk' it/ to his fader tolde 614
 Nouȝt' oonly he. but al his contre merye
 was for þis child and god þay þank' and herie 616
 When it' was tuo ȝer old and fro þe brest' 617
 Departed fro his noris vpon a day
 This markys caughte it another lest'

To tempt his wif ȝit after if he may
 O needles was sche tempted in assay 621
 But weddid men ne knowen no mesure
 whan þat þay fynde . a pacient creature 623

Wyf quod þis marquys ȝe han herd er þis 624
 My peple sekly berith oure mariage
 And namly syn . my sone y-boren is
 Now is it wore þan euer in al our age
 The murmur slep myn hert and my corrage 628
 For to myn eeris cometh þe vois so smerte
 þat it wel neigh destroyed hath myn herte . 630

Now say þay þus whan wauter is a goon 631
 Than schal þe blood of Ianicula succede
 And ben our lord for oþer haue we noon .
 Suche wordes saith my poeple out/ of drede / [leaf 125]
 wel ought I of such murmur taken heede 635
 For certeynly I drede such sentence
 þough þay not pleyndly speke in myn audience / 637

I wolde lyue in pees if þat I might 638
 wher for I am disposid outrelly
 As I his suster seruede by night
 Right so þynk I to serue him priuely
 This warn I ȝou þat ȝe not sodeinly 642

3e ben oure lord doth with 3our owne þing' 652
 Right' as 3ow list' axith no red of' me
 For as I left' at hom al my cloþing'
 whan I first' com to 3ow right' so quod sche
 Left' I my wille and my liberte / 656
 And took' 3our cloþing'. wher for I 3ow preye
 Dof 3oure plesaunce. I wil 3oure lust' obeye 658

And certes if' I hadde prescience 659
 3our wil to knowe. er 3e 3oure lust' me tolde
 I wold it doon wipoute negligence
 But' now I wot' 3our lust' and what' 3e wolde
 Al 3our plesaunce ferm and stable I holde 663
 For wist' I þat' my deth wold don 3ow ease
 Right' gladly wold I deye 3ow to please 665

Deth may make no comparisoun 666
 vnto 3our loue and whan þis marquys say
 The constance of' his wyf' he cast' a doun
 His eyzen tuo and wondrith þat' sche may
 In pacience suffre al þis array 670
 And forth he goþ with drery countenaunce
 But to his hert' it' was ful gret' plesaunce (*leaf 125, back*) 672

This Igly sergeaunt in þe same wise 673
 That' he hir doughter fette. right' so he
 Or worse if' men worse can deuyse
 hath hent hir sone þat' ful was of' beaute
 And euer in oon so pacient' was sche 677
 That' sche no cheere made of' heynesse
 But' kist' hir sone. and after gan him blesse 679

Saue þis sche prayed him if' þat' he mighte 680
 her litel sone he wold in eorþe graue
 His tendre lymes delicate to sight
 From foules and from bestes him to saue

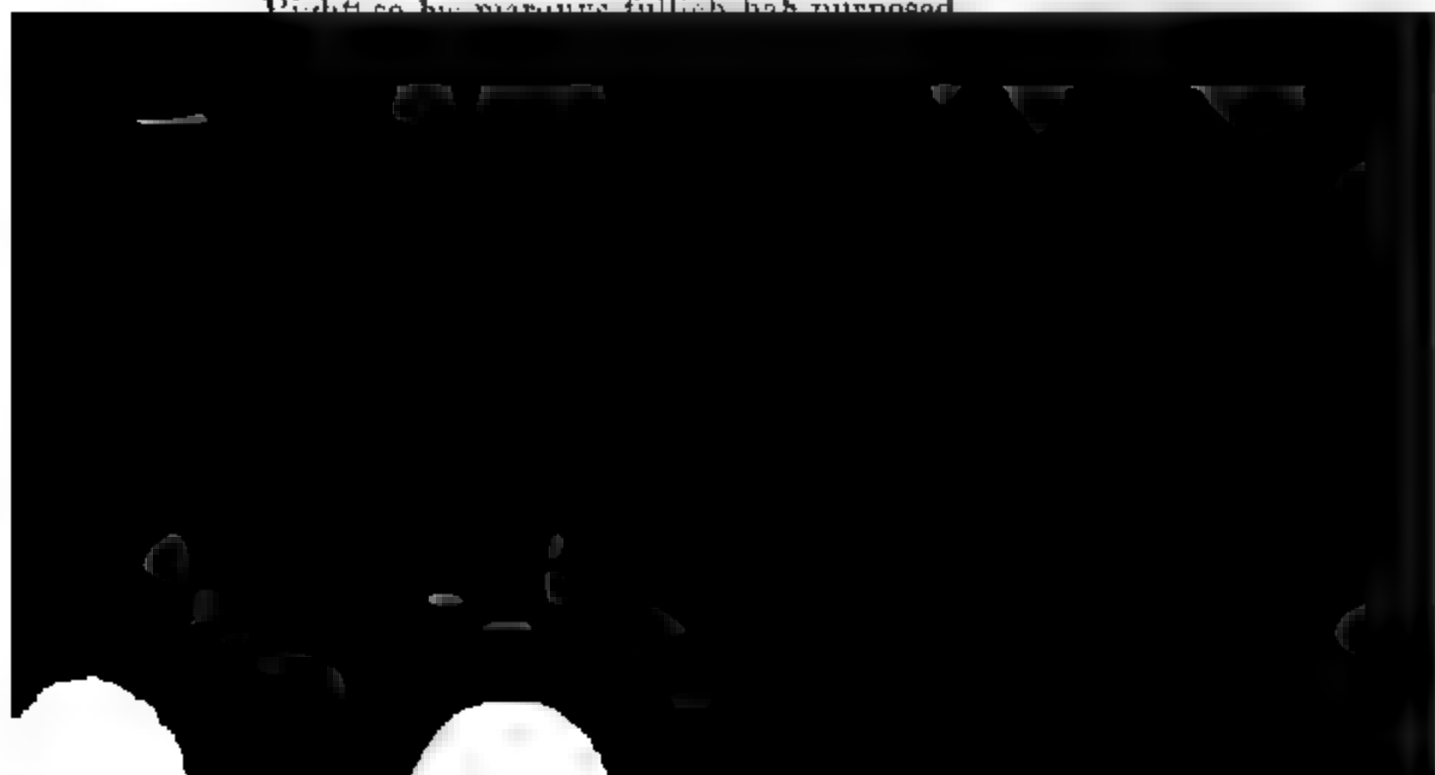
But sche noon answer of him mighte haue 684
 he went his way as him no þing ne roughit
 But to Boloyn he tenderly it brought 686

This marquis wondreth euer þe lenger þe more 687
 vpon hir pacience. and if þat he
 Ne hadde soply knowen þer bifore
 þat parfytylly hir children loued sche
 he wold haue wend þat of som subtilte 691
 And malice or of cruel corrage
 That sche had suffred þis wip sad visage 693

But wel he knew þat next himself certayn 694
 Sche loued hir children best in euery wise
 But now of women wold I aske fayn
 If þese assayes mighten not suffice
 what couþe a stourdy housebonde more deuyse 698
 To prove hir wyfhode and her stedefastnesse /
 And he contynuyng euer in stourdynesse 700

But þer ben folk of such condicioun 701
 That whan þay haue a certeyn purpos take
 Thay can nought stynt of her entencioun
 But right as þay were bounden to a stake /
 þay wil not of her firste purpos slake 705

Right so þis marquis fullich had purposed



For which it semyd þis þat of hem tuo 715

þer nas but oo wil for as walter leet/

The same plesaunce was hir lust also

And god by thanked al fel for þe best/

Sche schewed wel. for no worldly vnrest 719

A wyf as of hir self no þing ne scholde

wylne in effect. but as hir housbond wolde 721

The sclander of walter ofte and wyde spradde 722

That of a cruel hert he wikkedly

For he a pore womman weddid hadde

bath morthrid boþe his children priuely

Such murmur was among hem comunly 726

No wonder is for to þe peples eere

Ther com no word. but þat þay morthrid were / 728

For which wher as his peple þer byfore 729

had loued him wel þe sclander of his diffame

Made hem þat þay him hatede þerfore

To ben a morderer. is an hateful name

But napeles for earnest or for game 733

he of his cruel purpos nolde stente

To tempt his wyf was set al his entente 735

Whan þat his doughter twelfþer was of age 736

he to þe court of Rome in suche wise

Enformed of his wille sent his message

Comaundyng hem. such bulles to denyse

As to his cruel purpos may suffice 740

how þat þe pope as for his peples reste

Bad him to wedde anoper if him leste 742

I say he bad þay schulde countrefete 743

The popes bulles makyng mencioun

That he hap leue his firste wyf to lete

As by þe popes dispensacioun

To stynte rancour and discencioun 747
 Bitwix his peple and him þus sayd þe bulle (leaf 126, back)
 The which þay han publisshid atte fulle / 749

The rude poepel as it' no wonder is 750
 wende ful wel þat' it had be right' so
 But' whan þese tydynges come to Grisildis
 I deeme þat' hir herte was ful wo
 But' sche y-like sad for euermo 754
 Disposid was þis humble creature
 Thaduersite of fortun al tendure 756

Abydyng' euer his lust' and his plesaunce 757
 To whom þat' sche was þine hert and al
 As to hir verray worldly suffisaunce
 But' schortly if I þis story telle schal
 This marquys writen hap in special 761
 A letter in which he schewith his entent
 And secrely he to Boloyne it sent / 763

To therl of panyk/ which þat' hadde þo 764
 weddid his suster prayd he specially
 To brynge hom aȝein his children tuo
 In honorable estaat' al openly
 But oon þing' he him prayde outerly 768

That he to þe marquys shuld come and shuld



Arrayed was toward hir mariage 778
 This freisshe may al ful of gemmes clere
 hir broþer which þat. seven ȝer was of age
 Arrayed eek. ful freिश in his manere /
 And thus in gret noblesse and with glad chere 782
 Toward Saluces schapyng her iournay
 Fro day to day þay ryden in her way 784

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Incipit pars Quinta.

A Mong al þis after his wikked vsage (144/127) 785
 This marquis ȝit his wif to tempte more
 To þe vttest proef of hir corrage
 Fully to han experiens and lore
 If þat sche were as stedefast as byfore 789
 He on a day in open audience
 Ful boystously haþ sayd hir þis sentence 791
 Certes Grisildes I had ynough plesaunce 792
 To haue ȝow to my wif for ȝour goodnesse
 And for ȝoure troupe and for ȝour obeissaunce
 Nought for ȝour lignage ne for ȝour richesse
 But now know I in verray sothfastnesse / 796
 That in gret lordschip if I wol auyse /
 Ther is gret seruise in sondry wyse / 798
 I may not do as euery plough man may 799
 My poeple me constreignith for to take
 Anoper wyf and certeyn day by day
 And eek þe popes rancour for to slake
 Consentith it þat dar I vndertake 803
 And trewely þus moche I wol ȝow say
 My newe wif is comyng by þe way 805
 Be strong of hert and voyde anon hir place 806
 And þilke dower þat ȝe broughten me
 Tak it agayn I graunt it of my grace

Retourneth to 3our fadres hous quod he	
No man may alway haue prosperite	810
with euen hert' I rede 3ow endure	
The strok' of fortune or of aduenture	812
And sche agayn answerd in pacience	813
My lord quod sche I wot' and wist/ alway	
how pat' bitwixe 3our magnificence	
And my pouerte no wight' can ne may	
Make comparisoun it' is no nay	817
¶ I. ne held me neuer digne in no manere	
To ben 3our wyf' ne 3it' 3our Chamberere	819
And in pis hous per 3e me lady made /	820
The highe god take I for my witnesse	
And al so wisly he my soule glade	
I neuer huld me lady ne maistresse /	[leaf 127, back]
But' humble seruaunt' to 3our worthinesse	824
And euer schal whil pat/ my lyf' may dure	
Abouen euery worldly creature	826
That' 3e so longe of 3our benignite	827
han holden me in honour and nobleye	
wher as I was not' worthy for to be	
That' þonk' I god and 3ow to whom I preye	
For3eld it' 3ow per is more to seye	831

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 480
Harleian 7334. 289

And of þour newe wif. god of his grace 841

So graunte þow. wele and prosperite

For I wol gladly zelden hir my place

I which þat I was blisful wont to be

For with it liketh þow my lord quod sche 845

That whilom were al myn hertes reste

That I schal gon. I wil go whan þow leste 847

But þer as þe profre me such dowayre / 848

As I ferst brought. it is wel in my mynde

It were my wrecchid cloþes no þing faire

þe whiche to me were hard now for to fynde

O goode god. how gentil and how kynde 852

þe semed by þour speche and þour visage

That day þat maked was our mariage 854

But soþ is sayd algate I fynd it trewe / 855

For in effect. it/ proued is on me

loue is nought old. as whan þat it is newe/

But certes lord for noon aduersite /

To deyen in þe caas it schal not be / 859

þat euer in word or werk I schal repente

That I þow ȝaf myn hert in hol entente [leaf 125] 861

My lord þe wot þat in my fadres place 862

þe dede me strippe out of my pore wede

And richely me cladden of þour grace

To þow brought I nought elles out of drede

But faith and mekenes and maydenhede / 866

And her agayn my clopyng I restore

And eek my weddyng ryng for euermore 868

The remenant of þour jewels redy be / 869

wipin þour chambur dore dar I saufly sayn

Naked out of my fadres hous quod sche /

I com and naked moot I torne agayn

Al þour pleissans . wold I fulfille fayn 873
 But 3iþ I hope it be not 3oure entent
 That I smocles out of 3our chambre went 875

3e coupe not doon so dishonest a þing 876
 þat þilke wombe in which 3our children leye
 Schulde byforn þe poeple in my walkyng
 Be seye al bare wherfore I 3ow pray
 let me not lik a worm go by þe way / 880
 Remembre 3ow myn oughne lord so deere /
 I was 3our wyf . þough I vworþy were 882

Wherfor in guerdoun of my maydenhede 883
 which þat I brought and nought agayn I bere
 As voucheth sauf . as 3ene me to my meede
 Such a smok as I was wont to were
 That I þer with may wrye þe wombe of here / 887
 þat was 3our wif and here take I my leue
 Of 3ow myn oughne lord . lest I 3ow greue 889

The smok quod he þat þou hast on þy bak 890
 let it be stille and ber it forþ wiþ þe
 But wel vnnethes þilke word he spak
 But went his way for routhe and for pite
 Byforn þe folk hir ealuen strippith sche / 894

SIX-TEXT 433

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 291

For out of doute þis olde pore man	904
was euer in suspect of hir mariage	
For euer he deemed sith þat it bigan	
That whan þe lord fulfilled had his corrage	
him wolde þinke þat it were disparage	908
To his estate. so lowe for to light	
And voyden hire as sone as euer he might	910
Agayns his doughter hastily quod he	911
For he by noyse of folk knew hir comyng	
And wip hir olde cote as it might be /	
he couered hir ful sorwfully wepyng	
But on hir body might he it nouȝt bringe	915
For rude was þe cloth. and sche mor of age	
By deyes fele. þan hir mariage	917
Thus with hir fader for a certeyn space	918
Dwellith þis flour of wifly pacience	
That neyther by her wordes ne by hir face	
Byforn þe folk nor eek in her absence	
Ne schewed sche that hir was doon offence	922
Ne of hir highe astat no remembraunce	
Ne hadde sche. as by hir countenaunce	924
No wonder is for in hir gret estate	925
hir gost was euer in playn humilite	
Ne tender mouth noon herte delicate	
Ne pompe. ne semblant of realte	
But ful of pacient benignite	929
Discrete and prideles ay honorable /	
And to hir housbond euer meke and stable	931
Men speke of Iob. and most for his humblesse /	932
As clerkes whan hem lust can wel endite	
Namely of men. but as in sothfastnesse	
pough clerkes prayse women but a lile	

þer can no man in humblesse him acquyte 936
 As wommen can. ne can be half so trewe (leaf 128)
 As wommen ben. but it be falle of newe 938

[No break in the MS.]

Fro boloyne is þis erl of panik y-come 939
 Of which þe fame vp sprong to more and lasse
 And to þe poeples eeres alle and some
 was couth eek þat a newe marquisesse
 he wip him brought in such pomp and richesse 943
 That neuer was þer seyn with mannes ye
 So noble array in al west lombardye 945

The marquys which þat schoop and knew al þis 946
 Er þat þis erl was come sent his message /
 After þilk cely pore Grisildis
 And sche wip humble hert and good visage
 Not with so swollen hert in hir corrage 950
 Cam at his hest. and on hir knees hir sette
 And reuerently and wyfly sche him grette 952

Grisild quod he. my wil is outrelly 953
 This mayden þat schal weddid be to me
 Receyued be to morwe as really
 As it possible is in myn hous to be
 And eek þat enery wight in his degre 957

SIX-TEXT 434

GROUP B. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 293

Nought oonly lord þat I am glad quod sche /	967
To don þour lust. but I desire also /	
þow for to serue and plesse in my degre	
wipoute feynyng and schal euer mo	
Ne neuer for no wele ne for no wo	971
Ne schal þe gost wipinne myn herte stente /	
To loue þow best wip al my trewe entent	973
And wip þat word sche gan þe hous to dight	974
And tables for to sette and beddes make	(leaf 129, back)
And peyned hir to doon al þat sche might	
Preying þe chamberers for goddes sake	
To hasten hem and faste swepe and schake	978
And sche þe moste seruisable of alle /	
hap euery chamber arrayed and his halle /	980
Abouten vndern gan þis lord alight	981
þat with him brought þese noble children tweye	
For which þe peple ran to se þat sight	
Of her array so richely biseye	
And þan at erst amonges hem þay seye	985
That walter was no forþ þough that him lest	
To chaunge his wyf. for it was for þe best /	987
For sche is fairer. as þay demen alle /	988
Than is Grisild and more tender of age	
And fairer fruyt bitwen hem schulde falle	
And more plesaunt for hir high lynage	
hir broþer eek. so fair was of visage	992
That hem to seen þe peple hap caught plesaunce	
Comending now þe marquys gouernaunce	994
O stormy poeple. vnad and euer vntrewe	995
And vndiscret and chaungyng as a fane	
Desyryng euer in rombel þat is newe	
For lik þe moone ay wax ȝe and wane	

Ay ful of clappyng^r dere ynough a lane 999
 ȝoure doom is fals ȝour constaunce yuel preuith
 A ful gret^r fool is he that^r on ȝow leeuith 1001

Thus sayde saad folk in þat Citee 1002
 whan þat^r þe poeple gased vp and down
 For þay were glad right^r of þe nouelte
 To han a newe lady of her town
 No more of þis now make I mencionn 1006
 But^r to Grisildes agayn wol I me dresse
 And telle hir constance and hir busynesse / 1008

Ful busy was grisild in euery þing^r 1009
 That^r to þe feste was appertinent
 Right^r nought^r was sche abaisht^r of^r hir cloþing^r
 Though it were ruyde. and som del eek^r torent
 But^r wiþ glad cheer to þe ȝate is sche went (leaf 120) 1013
 with oþer folk^r to griete þe marquiseesse
 And after þat^r doth forth hir busynesse / 1015

With so glad chier his gestes sche receyueth 1016
 And so connyngly euerich in his degre /
 That^r no defaute no man sparceyueth
 But^r ay þay wondren what^r sche mighte be
 That^r in so pouer array was for to se 1020

Griayld quod he as it were in his play 1030
 how likith þe my wif and hir beaute
 Right wel my lord quod sche for in good fay
 A fairer saugh I neuer noon þan sche
 I pray to god þine hir prosperite 1034
 And so hope I. þat he wol to þow sende
 Plesaunce ynough vnto þour lyues ende / 1036

On þing warn I þow and biseke also / 1037
 That þe ne prike wiþ no tormentynge
 þis tendre mayden as þe haue do mo
 For sche is fostrid in hir norischinge
 More tendrely and to my supposynge / 1041
 Sche couþe not aduersite endure
 As couþe a pore fostrid creature 1043

And whan þis walter saugh hir pacience 1044
 hir glade cheer and no malice at al
 And he so oft had doon to hir offence
 And sche ay sad. and constant as a wal
 Continuyng euer hir Innocence oueral 1048
 This sturdy marquys gan his herte dresse
 To Rewen vpon hir wyfly stedefastnesse / 1050

This is ynough Grisilde myn quod he [leaf 130, back] 1051
 Be now no more agast ne yuel apayed
 I haue thy faith and þy benignite
 As wel as euer womman was assayed
 In gret estate and propreliche arrayed 1055
 Now knowe I dere wyf þy stedefastnesse
 And hir in armes took and gan hir kesse 1057

And sche for wonder took of it no keepe 1058
 Sche herde not what þing he to hir sayde
 Sche ferd as sche had stert out of a sleepe
 Til sche out of hir masidnesse abrayde

Grisild quod he by god þat for vs deyde 1062
 Thou art my wyf ne noon oþer I haue
 Ne neuer had as god my soule saue 1064

This is my doughter which þou hast supposed 1065
 To be my wif þat oþer faithfully
 Schal be myn heir as I haue ay purposed
 Thow bar hem in þy body trewely
 At Boloyne haue I kept hem priuely 1069
 Tak hem agayn for now maistow not seye
 That þou hast lorn noon of þy children tweye 1071

And folk þat oþer weyes han seyde of me 1072
 I warn hem wel þat I haue doon þis deede
 For no malice ne for no cruelte
 But for tassaye in þe þy wommanhede
 And not to alen my children god forbede 1076
 But for to kepe hem priuely and stille
 Til I þy purpos knowe and al þy wille 1078

Whan sche þis herd a swoned down sche fallith 1079
 For pitous ioy . and after her swownyng
 Sche bothe hir ȝonge children to hir callith
 And in hir armes pitously wepyng
 Embraseth hem and tenderly kysyng 1083
 Ful lik a moder with hir salte teris

- O tender deere . 3onge children myne 1093
 3oure woful moder wende stedefastly
 That cruel houndes or som foul vermyne
 had eten 3ow but god of his mercy
 And 3our benigne fader tenderly 1097
 hath doon 3ow kept and in þat same stounde
 Al sodeinly sche swapped down to grounde / 1099
- And in hir swough so sadly holdith sche 1100
 hir children tuo . whan sche gan hem tembrace
 That with gret sleight and gret difficulte
 The children from her am þay gonne arace
 O many a teer . o many a pitous face . 1104
 Doun ran of hem þat stoden hir bisyde
 Vnnethe aboute hir mighte þay abyde 1106
- Waltier hir gladith and hir sorwe slakith 1107
 Sche rysith vp abaissed from hir tranuce
 And euery wight hir ioy and feste makith
 Til sche hath caught agayn hir continuaunce
 wauter hir doth so faithfully plesaunce 1111
 That it was daynte for to see þe cheere
 Bitwix hem tuo . now þay be met in feere 1113
- These ladye whan þat þay her tyme say 1114
 han taken hir and in to chambre goon
 And strippen hir . out of hir rude array
 And in a cloth of gold þat brighte schon
 with a coroun of many a riche stoon 1118
 vpon hir heed þay in to halle hir brought
 And þer sche was honoured as hir ought 1120
- Thus hath þis pitous day a blisful ende 1121
 For euery man and womman doth his might
 This day in mirth and revel to despende
 Til on þe welken schon þe sterres bright

For more solempne in euery mannes sight 1125
 This feste was and gretter of costage [leaf 131, back]
 Than was þe reuel of hir mariage / 1127

Ful many a ȝer in heigh prosperite 1128
 lyuen þese tuo in concord and in rest
 And richeliche his doughter married he
 vnto a lord on of þe worthiest
 Of al ytaile and þanne in pees and rest 1133
 His wyues fader in his court he kepith
 Til þat þe soule out of his body crepith 1134

His sone succedith in his heritage 1135
 In rest and pees. after his fader day
 And fortunat. was eek in mariage
 Al put he not his wyf in gret assay
 This world is not so strong it is no nay 1139
 As it haþ ben in olde tymes ȝore
 And herknith what þis auctor saith þefore 1141

This story is sayd nat for þat wyues scholde 1143
 Eolwe Grisild. as in humilite
 For it were importable þough þay wolde
 But for þat euery wight in his degre
 Schulde be constant. in aduersite 1146

As was Grisild. therefore Petrark writeth

And suffrith vs as for our exercise	1156
wip scharpe scourges of aduersite	
Ful ofte to be bete in sondry wise	
Nought for to knowe oure wille for certes he	
Er we were born . knew al our frelte	1160
And for oure best is al his gouernaunce	
Leet vs panne lyue in vertuous suffraunce	1162
But oo word lordes herkneth er I go	1163
It were ful hard to fynde now a dayes	[Amf 182]
As Grisildes in al a toun þre or tuo	
For if þat þay were put to such assayes	
The gold of hem hap now so badde alayes	1167
with bras þat þough þe coyn be fair at ye	
hit wolde raper brest in tuo þan plye	1169
For which heer for þe wyues loue of bathe	1170
whos lyf and alle of hir secte god meyntene	
In high maistry and elles were it scathe	
I wil with lusty herte freisch and grene	
Say 3ow a song to glade . 3ow I wene	1174
And lat vs stynt of earnestful matiere	
herknith my song . þat saith in þis manere /	1176

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Lenvoye . de Chaucer.

G Risild is deed and eek hir pacience	1177
And bothe at oones buried in Itayle	
For whiche I crye in open audience /	1179
No weddid man so hardy be to assayle	
his wyues pacience in hope to fynde	
Grisildes for in certeyn he schal fayl	1182

- O noble wyues ful of heigh prudence / 1183
 let noon humilite 3our tonges nayle
 Ne lat no clerk haue cause or diligence 1185
 To write of 3ow a story of such meruayle /
 As of Grisildes pacience and kynde
 Lest Chichiuaiche 3ow swolwe in hir entraile 1188
- Folwith Ecco þat boldith no silence 1189
 But euer answereth at þe countretayle
 Bep nou3t bydaffed for 3our Innocence 1191
 But scharpely tak on 3ow þe gouernayle
 Empryntith wel þis lessoun in 3our mynde
 For comun profyt sith it may auayle 1194
- 3e archewyues stondith at defens 1195
 Syn 3e ben strong as is a greet/ Chamayle
 Ne suffre not þat men 3ow don offens 1197
 And sclendre wydewes felle as in batayle
 Beth egre as is a Tyger 3ond in Inde
 Ay clappith as a mylle I 3ow counsaile 1200
- Ne drede hem not. do hem no reuerence [1200/1201, back] 1201
 For þough þin housbond armed be in mayle
 The arwes of þy crabbid eloquence 1203
 Schal perce his brest and eek his aduentayle /
 In gelousy I rede eek þou him bynde
 And þou schalt make him couche as doth a quayle 1206

¶ here bygynneth þe prolōge of þe marchaundis tale.

WEpyng^r and wailyn^r care and oþer sorwe
 I knowe ynough boþe on euen & on morwe
 Quod þe marchaund . and so doon oþer mo
 That weddid ben I trowe þat it be so 1216
 For wel I woot it fareth so with me
 I haue a wyf. þe worste þat may be
 For þough þe feend to hir y-coupled were
 Sche wold him ouer macche I dar wel swere 1220
 what schuld I ȝow reherse in special
 hir high malice . sche is a schrewe at al
 Ther is a long^r and a large difference
 Betwix Grisildes grete paciencce 1224
 And of my wyf þe passyng^r cruelte
 were I vnbounden also mot I the
 I wolde neuer eft come in þe snare
 we weddid men lyue in sorwe and care 1228
 Assay who-so wil and he schal fynde /
 That I say soth by seint Thomas of Inde
 As for þe more part . I say not alle
 God schilde þat it scholde so byfalle / 1232
 A good sir host . I haue y-weddid be
 Thise monthes tuo and more not par de
 And ȝit I trowe he þat al his lyue
 wyfes haþ ben þough þat men wold him riue 1236
 vnto þe hert^r ne coupe in no manere /
 Tellen so moche sorwe as I now heere (leaf 133)
 Coupe telle of my wyfes cursednesse /
 No quod our ost^r marchaunt so god ȝow blesse 1240
 Sin ȝe so moche knowen of þat art
 Ful hertily tellith vs a part
 Gladly quod he of myn oughne sore
 For sory hert^r I telle may na more 1244

[No gap in the MS.]

¶ Narrat

Whilom þer was duellyng' in lombardy
 A worþy knight þat born was of paup
 In which he lyued in gret prosperite
 And fourty ȝer. a wifes man was he 1248
 And folwed ay his bodily delyt
 On women. ther was his appetyt
 As doon þese fooles þat/ ben seculere
 And whan þat he was passed fourty ȝere 1252
 were it for holyness or for dotage
 I can not say. but such a gret corrage
 hadde þis knight. to ben a weddid man
 That day and night. he doþ al þat he can 1256
 Taspye wher þat he mighte weddid be
 Praying our lord to graunte him þat he
 Might oones knowen of þat blisful lif
 þat is bitwix an housbond and his wyf 1260
 And for to lyue vnder þat holy bond
 with which god first. man to woman bond

SIX-TEXT 444

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334 303

And lede his lyf in mirth and in solace
 wher as þese bachilores synge alas
 whan þay fynde eny aduersite
 In loue which is but childe's vanite (leaf 122, back) 1276
 And trewely it sit wel to be so
 That bachilers haue ofte peyne and wo
 On brutil ground þay bulde brutelnesse /
 þay fynde whan þay wene sikernesse 1280
 Thay lyue but as a brid oper as a best
 In liberte and vnder noon arrest
 Ther as a weddid man in his estate
 lyuith his lif busily and ordinate 1284
 vnder þe ȝok of mariage I-bounde
 wel may his herte in ioye and blisse abounde /
 For who can be so buxom as a wyf /
 who is so trewe and eek so ententyf 1288
 To kepe him seek and hool as is his make
 For wele or woo sche wol him not forsake /
 Sche is not wery him to loue and serue
 Theigh þat he lay bedred . til þat he sterue 1292
 And ȝet som clerkes seyn it is not so
 Of whiche theofrast / is oon of þo
 what for þough theofrast . liste lye
 Ne take no wif quod he for housbondrye 1296
 As for to spare in houshold þy dispense
 A trewe seruaunt doth more diligence
 þy good to kepe þan þin oughne wif /
 For sche wol clayme half part in al hir lif 1300
 And if þat þou be seek so god me sane
 þyne verray frendes or a trewe kuaue
 wol kepe þe bet þan sche þat waytith ay
 After þy good and hath doon many day 1304
 And if þat þou take a wif be war
 Of oon peril . which declare I ne dar .
 This entent and an hundrid siþe wors
 writith þis Mas ther god his bones curs 1308

wel may þe sike man wayle and wepe
 Ther as þer is no wyf þe hous to kepe
 I warne þe if wisly þou wilt wirche
 loue wel þy wyf as crist doth his chirche 1384
 If þou louest þiself þou louest þy wyf /
 No man hatith his fleisch but in his lif /
 he fostrith it and þefore warne I þe
 Cherish þy wif. or þou schalt neuer the 1388
 housbond & wif what men iape or pleye
 Of worldly folk holden þe righte weye (See 1385)
 Thay ben so knyht þer may noon harm bytyde
 And nameliche vpon þe wyues syde 1392
 For which þis Iannary of which I tolde
 Considered hath Inwith his dayes olde /
 The lusty lif the vertuons quiete
 That is in mariage hony-swete 1396
 ¶ And for his frendes on a day he sent
 To tellen hem theeffect of his entent
 wip face sad. he hap hem this tale told
 he sayde frendes I am hoor and old 1400
 And almost god woot at my pities brinke
 vpon my soule som what most I þynke
 I haue my body folily dispendid
 Bleased be god that I schal be amendid 1404
 For I wil be certeyn a weddid man
 And þat anoon in al þe hast I can

SIX-TEXT 448

GROUP B. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7394 307

Sche schal not' passe · sixtene 3er certayn
 Old fleisch and 3ong' fleisch þat' wold I haue ful fayn
 Bet' is quod he a pyk' þan a pikerett
 And bet' þan olde boef' is tendre vel 1420
 I wil no womman twenty 3er of age
 It' nys but' bene straw and gret' forage
 And eek' þese olde wydewes god it woot'
 Thay can so moche craft' of wades boot 1424
 So moche broken harm whan þat' hem list'
 That' wip' hem schuld I neuer lyuen in rest'
 For sondry scolis maken subtil clerkes
 womman of' many a skile half' a clerk' is (leaf 135, back) 1428
 But' certeyn a 3ong' þing' may men gye
 Right' as men may warm wax with hondes plye
 wher for I say 3ow plenerly in a clause
 I wil noon old wyf' han right' for þat' cause 1432
 For if' so were I hadde so meschaunce
 þat' I in hir coupe haue no plesaunce
 Than schuld I lede my lyf' in aduoutrie
 And go streight' to þe deuel whan I dye. 1436
 Ne children schuld I noon vpon hir geten
 3et' were me leuer houndes had me eten
 þan þat' myn heritage schulde falle
 In straunge hond and þus I telle 3ow alle 1440
 I doute not. I wot' þe cause why
 Men scholde wedde. and forþermor woot I
 Ther spekith many man of' mariage
 That' wot' nomore of it þan wot' my page 1444
 For whiche causes. man schuld take a wyf'
 If' he ne may not' chast' be by his lif'
 Take him a wif' with gret' deuocioun
 By cause of lawful procreacioun 1448
 Of children to þonour of' god aboue
 And not' oonly for paramour and for loue.
 And for þay schulde leccherye eschiewe
 And 3eld oure dettes whan þat' it is due 1452

Or for þat ilk' man schulde helpen oþer
 In meschief' as suster schal to þe broþer
 And lyue in chastite ful heuenly
 But' sires by þour leue þat am not I 1456
 For by þanked I dar make auaunt
 I fele my lemys stark' and suffisaunt
 To doon al þat a man bilongeth vnto
 I wot' my selue best' what' I may do 1460
 ¶ Though I be hoor I fare as dop' a tree *Note*
 That' blossmith er þat' þe fruyt' I-waxe be
 A blossemy tre is neither drye ne deed
 I fele me no-wher hoor but' on myn heed 1464
 Myn herte and my lymes ben as greene.
 As laurer þurgh þe ȝeer is for to seene *¶ 1465*
 And synnes ȝe han herd al myn entent
 I pray ȝow to my wille ȝe assent' 1468
 Diuerse men diuersly him tolde
 Of mariage many ensamples olde
 Some blamed him some praised it' certayn
 But' attle laste schortly for to sayn 1472
 As alday fallith altercacioun
 Bitwixe frendes in despitesoun
 Ther fel a strif' bitwen his bretheren tuo *Note*
 Of which þat' oon was clepid Placebo 1476
 Iustinius soþly cleped was þat' oþer
 Placebo sayde .o. Ianuary broþer
 Ful litel need had ȝe my lord so deere
 Counseil to axe of eny þat' is heere 1480
 But' þat' ȝe ben so ful of sapience
 That' ȝow ne likith for ȝour heigh prudence /
 To wayne fro þe word of Salamon
 This word said he vnto vs euerychoon 1484
 work/ al þing' by counsail þus sayd he /
 And þanne schaltow nought' repente þe
 But' þough þat' Salamon speke such a word
 Myn owne deere broþer and my lord 1488



SIX-TEXT 450

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 309

So wisly god bring' my soule at' ese and rest
I holde 3our oughne counseil is þe best/
For broþer myn of' me tak' þis motif
I haue now ben a court' man al my lyf' 1492
And god wot' þough. þat' I vnworþy be
I haue standen in ful gret degre
Abouten lordes in ful gret estat
3it' had I neuer with noon of' hem debaat 1496
I neuer hem contraried trewely
I wot' wel þat' my lord can more þan I
what' þat' he saith I hold it ferm and stable
I say þe same or elles þing' semblable 1500
A ful gret' fool is eny counselour *note*
þat' seruith any lord of' high honour
þat' dar presume or oones þenken it /
That' his counseil schuld passe his lordes wit' [1504, 22] 1504
Nay lordes ben no fooles by my fay
3e haue 3our self' y-spoken heer to day
So heigh sentens so holly and so wel
þat' I consente and conferme euery del 1508
3our wordes alle. and 3oure oppinioun
By god þer is no man in al þis toun
Ne in ytaile coupe better haue sayd
Crist' holdith him of' þis ful wel a-payd 1512
And trewely it' is an heigh corrage
Of' any man þat' stopen is in age /
To take a 3ong' wyf' by my fader kyn
3our herte hongith on a ioly pyn 1516
Doth now in þis matier right' as 3ow lest'
For fynally I hold it' for þe best'
Iustinus þat' ay stille sat' and herde /
Right' in þis wise he to placebo answerde / 1520
Now brother myn be pacient' I 3ow pray
Syns 3e haue sayd. and herknith what' I say
Senec' amonges oþer wordes wyse
Saith þat' a man aught' him wel anyse 1524

To whom he ȝiueth his lond or his catel
 And syns I aught' anyse me right' wel
 To whom I ȝiue my good away fro me
 wel more I aught' avised for to be 1528
 To whom I ȝiue my body for alwey
 I warn ȝow wel . it' is no childe's pley
 To take a wyf' wipoute avisement'
 Men most' enquere þis is myn assent 1532
 wher sche be wys or sobre or dronkelewe
 Or proud or oþer way a schrewe
 A chyder or a wastour of þy good
 Or riche or pore or elles man is wood 1536
 Al be it so þat no man fynde schal
 Noon in þis world þat' trottith hool in al
 Neyther man ne best' such as man can denyse
 But' natheles it aught' ynough suffice 1540
 wip any wyf' if' so were þat' sche hadde
 Mo goode thewes þan hir vices badde (Jen/137)
 And al þis askith leyser to enquere
 For god woot' I . haue weped many a tere 1544
 Ful priuely syns I haue had a wyf'
 Prayse who so wil a weddid mannes lif'
 Certes I fynd in it but' cost' and care
 And obseruaunce of alle blisses bare 1548
 And ȝit god woot' myn neighebour's aboute
 And namely of women many a route

SIX-TEXT 452

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 311

To haue his wif' alloone trustith me
 3e schul not' please hir fully 3eres þre
 This is to say to doon hir ful plesaunce
 A wyf' axith ful many an obseruaunce 1564
 I pray 3ow þat' 3e be not' euel apayd
 wel quod þis Ianuary and hastow sayd
 Straw for þy senec' and for þy prouerbis
 I coneyte nought' a panyer ful of herbes 1568
 Of scole termes wiser men þan þow /
 As I haue sayd assenten her right' now
 Vnto my purpose . placebo what' say 3e
 I say it is a cursed man quod he / 1572
 That' lettith matrimoine sicurly
 And with þat word þay rysen vp sodeinly
 And ben assented fully þat' he scholde
 Be weddid whan him lust' . and wher he wolde 1576
 The fantasy . and þe curious busynesse
 Fro day to day . gan in þe soule impresse
 Of Ianuary aboute his mariage
 Many a fair schap and many a fair visage [See 137. back] 1580
 Ther passith þorugh his herte night' by night
 As who so took' a mirrour polissched bright'
 And set' it in a comun market place
 Than schuld he se . many a figure pace 1584
 By his mirour and in þe same wise
 Gan Ianuary in his þought' deuyse
 Of maydens which þat' duellid him biyde
 he wist' not' where þat' he might' abyde 1588
 For þough þat' oon haue a beaute in hir face
 Anoper stant' so in þe poeples grace
 For hir sadnesse and hir benignite
 That' of þe poeple grettest' vois had sche 1592
 And som were riche and hadde badde name
 But' napeles bitwix earnest' and game
 he atte last/ appoynted him anoon
 And let' al oper fro his herte goon 1596

And ches hir of his oughne auctorite
 For loue is blynd al day and may not se/.
 And whan he was in to bedde brought
 He purtrayed in his hert and in his pought 1600
 Hir freische beaute and hir age tendre
 Hir myddel smal hir armes long and sclendre
 Hir wise gouernaunce hir gentilesse /
 Hir wommanly beryng and hir sadnesse 1604
 And whan þat he on hir was condescendid
 him þought his chois mighte nought ben amendid
 For whan þat he himself concludid hadde
 Him þough ech oþer mannes wyf so badde 1608
 That impossible it were to repplie
 Agayn his choys þis was his fantasie
 his frendes sent he to at his instaunce
 And prayed hem to doon him þat plesaunce 1612
 That hastily þay wolde to him come
 he wold abrigge her labour alle and some
 Nedith no more for him to gon ne ryde
 he was appoynted þer he wold abyde / 1616
 Placebo cam and eek his frendes soone /
 And althirfirst he bad hem alle a boone [leaf 125]
 That noon of hem noon argumentis make /
 Agayn þe purpos. which þat he had take 1620
 which purpos was plesaunt to god sayd he /
 And verray ground of his prosperite

SIX-TEXT 454

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 313

For þan he sayd his spirit was at ease
 Than is quod he no þing may me displease /
 Saue oon þing prikkith in my conscience /
 The which I wil rehearse in 3our presence 1636
 I haue herd sayd quod he ful 3ore ago
 Ther may no man haue parfyt bliesses tuo
 This is to say in erthe and eek in heuene
 For þough he kepe him fro þe synnes seuene / 1640
 And eek from ylk a braunche of pilke tre
 3it is þer so parfyt felicitye
 And so gret ease and lust in mariage
 That euer I am agast now in myn age 1644
 That I schal lede now so mery a lyf
 So delicat wipoute wo and stryf
 That I schal haue myn heuen in erthe heere
 For sith þat verrey heuen is bought so deere 1648
 with tribulacioun and gret penaunce
 how schuld I þanne þat liue in such plesaunce
 As alle wedded men doon with her wyues
 Come to blisse ther crist eterne on lyue is 1652
 This is my drede and 3e my breþeren tweye
 Assoilith me þis question I 3ow preye
 Iustinus which þat hated his folye
 Answerd anon right in his iaperie [leaf 128, back] 1656
 And for he wold his longe tale abrigge
 he wolde noon auctorite alegge
 But sayde sir. so ther be noon obstacle
 Oper þan þis god of his high miracle 1660
 And of his mercy may so for 3ow wirche
 That er 3e haue 3our rightes of holy chirche
 3e may repente of weddid mannes lyf
 In which 3e sayn þer is no wo ne stryf 1664
 And elles god forbede but he sente
 A weddid man grace him to repente
 wel ofte rather þan a sengle man
 And þerfor sire þe beste reed I 1668

Dispaire 3ow nought' but' haue in 3oure memorie	
Paraduenture she may be 3our purgatorie	
Sche may be goddes mene and goddes whippe	note
Than schal 3our soule vp to heuen skippe	1672
Swyfter þan doþ an arwe out of a bowe	
I hope to god her after 3e shuln knowe	
That' þer nys noon so gret' felicite	
In mariage ne neuermor schal be	1676
þat' 3ou schal lette of' 3our sauacioun	
So þat' 3e use as skile is and resoun	
The lustes of' 3our wyf' attemperely	
And þat' 3e please hir not to amorously	1680
And þat' 3e kepe 3ow eek' from oþer synne	
My tale is doon . for my witt' is þynne	
Beþ not' agast' her of' my broþer deere /	
But' let' vs waden out of' þis matiere	1684
The wif' of' Bathe if' 3e han vnderstonde	
Of' mariage which 3e han now on honde	
Declared hath ful wel in lital space	
Fareth now wel god haue 3ow in his grace	1688
And with þat' word þis Iustinus and his broþer	
Han tak' her leue and ech of' hem of' oþer	
And whan þay saugh þat' i most needis be	
Thay wroughten so by sleight' and wys trets	1692
That' sche þis mayden which þat' Mayus hight'	
As hastily as euer sche might	(2047 120)



SIX-TEXT 456

GROUP B. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 315

In wisdom and in trouth of mariage
And sayd his orisouns as is vaage /
And crouched hem and bad god schuld hem blesse /
And made al secur ynowgh with holinesse 1708
Thus ben þay weddid wip Solempnite
And atte fest sittith he and sche
with othir worþy folk vpon the deys
Al ful of ioy and blis is that paleys 1712
And of Instrumentz and of vitaille
The moste deintuous of ytaile
Biforn hem stood such Instruments of soun
That Orpheus ne of Thebes Amphion 1716
Ne maden neuer such a melodye
At euery cours ther cam loud menstralcy
That neuer tromped Ioab for to heere
Ne he Theodomas ȝit half so cleere / 1720
And Thebes whan the cite was in doute
Bachus þe wyn hem schenchith al aboute
And venus laughith vpon euery wight
For Ianuary was bycome hir knight / 1724
And wolde bothe assayen his corrage /
In liberte and eek / in mariage
And with hir fuyrbrond in hir hond aboute
Daunceth bfore þe bryde and al þe route 1728
And certeynly I dar right wel say þis
Imeneus þat god of weddyng is
Seigh neuer his lif so mery a weddid man
holde þy pees thow poete marcian (leaf 120, back) 1732
That writest vs. þat ilke weddyng merye
Of hir philologie and he mercurie
And of þe songes that the muses songe
To smal is boþe þy penne and eek þy tonge 1736
For to descriue of þis mariage
whan tender ȝouthes hap weddid stoupyng age
Ther is such mirthe. þat it may not be write
Assaieth it ȝour self þan may ȝe wyte 1740

If þat I lye or noon in þis mateere
 Mayus þat sit with so benigne a cheere /
 Hir to bihold it / semed fayerye /
 Queen ester loked neuer with such an ye 1744
 On assure so meke a look' hap sche
 I may not 3ow deuyse al hir beaute
 But thus moche of hir beaute telle I may
 That sche was lyk' þe bryghte morw of may 1748
 Fulfild of alle beaute and plesaunce
 This Ianuary is rauyecht in a traunce
 At euery tyme he lokith on hir face
 But in his hert' he gan hir to manace 1752
 That he þat night in armes wold hir streyne
 Harder þan euer paris did Eleyne
 But nathales 3it had he gret' pite
 That þilke night offenden hir most' he / 1756
 And þought' alas .o. tendre creature
 Now wolde god 3e mighte wel endure
 Al my corrage. it' is so scharp and keene
 I am agast' 3e schul it not' susteene 1760
 For god forbede þat I dede al my might
 Now wolde god þat it were woxe night
 And þat þe night wold stonden euermo
 I wold þat al þis poeple were a go 1764
 And fynally he doth al his labour
 As he best' mighte sauyng' his honour

GROUP K. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 317

So sore hap venus hurt him wip hir brond
 As pat sche bar it daunsyng in hir hond
 And to his bed he went him hastily
 No more of him as at þis tyme telle I 1780
 But þer I lete him now his wo compleyne
 Til freisshe may wol rewen on his peyne /
 O perilous fuyr pat in þe bed-straw bredith Auctor
 O famuler fo pat his seruice bedith 1784
 O seruauñt traitour false homly hewe
 lyk to þe nedder in bosom vntrewe /
 God schild vs alle from þour acquaintance /
 O Ianuary dronken in plesaunce 1788
 Of mariage se how þy damyan
 Thyn oughne squier and þy borne man
 Entendith for to do þe vilonye /
 God graunte þe þin homly fo espye 1792
 For in þis world nys worse pestilence /
 Than homly foo . alday in þy presence
 Parfourmed hap þe sonne his ark diourne
 No lenger may þe body of him soiourne 1796
 On thorisonte . as in latitude
 Night with his mantel pat is derk and rude
 Gan ouersprede themesperie aboute
 For which departed is þe route 1800
 Fro Ianuary with þank on euery side /
 hoom to her hous lustily þay ryde
 wher as þay doon her þinges as hem leste
 And whan þay seigh her tyme þay goon to reste / 1804
 Soone after pat . þis hasty Ianuarie
 wold go to bed . he wold no lenger tarie
 he drinkith ypocras clarre and vernage /
 Of spices hote to encre his corrage [leaf 140, back] 1808
 And many a letuary had he ful fyn
 Such as þe cursed monk daun Constantin
 Hath writen in his book de coitu
 To ete hem alle he nas no þing eschieu 1812

And to his priue frendes þus sayd he
 For goddes loue as soon as it may be
 let voyden al þis hous in curteys wise
 And pay han doon right as he wold deuyse 1816
 Men drinken and þe trauers drawe anon
 The bruyd was brought abedde as stille as stoon
 And whan þe bed was with þe prest I-blessid
 Out of þe chambre hap euery wight him dressed 1820
 And Ianuary hap fast/ in armes take/
 His freisshe may / his paradye his make
 He lullith hir he kissith hir ful ofte
 with pikke bristlis on his berd vnsofte 1824
 lik to þe skyn of houndfisch scharp as brere
 For he was schaue al newe in his manere
 He rubbith hir about hir tendre face
 And sayde þus allas I mot trespace 1828
 To ȝow my spouse. and ȝow gretly offende /
 Er tyme come þat I wol doun descende
 But napeles conaiderith þis quod he
 Ther nys no werkman what so euer he be 1832
 þat may bope werke wel and hastily
 This wol be doon at leysir parfitly
 It is no fors how longe þat we pleye
 In trewe wedlock coupled be we tweye 1836
 And blessed be þe ȝok þat we ben Inn
 For in actes we mow do no synne

The slakke skyn about his nekke slakeþ
 whil þat he song. so chaunteþ he and craketh
 But god wot what þat may þought in hir hert /
 whan sche him saugh vp sitting in his schert 1852
 In his night cappe and with his nekke lene
 Sche prayeith nought his pleying worth a bene
 Than sayd he þus my reste wol I take
 Now day is come I may no lenger wake 1856
 And doun he layd his heed and sleep til prime
 And afterward whan þat he saugh his tyme
 Vp riseth Ianuary but freissche may
 Holdith hir chamber vnto þe fourþe day 1860
 As vsage is of wyues for þe best
 For euery labour som tyme moot haue rest
 Or elles longe may he not endure
 This is to say. no lyues creature 1864
 Be it. fisch or brid. or best or man
 Now wol I speke of woful damyan
 That languyssh for loue as ȝe schuln here
 Therefore I speke to him in þis manere 1868
 ¶ I say. O sely damyan alias Auctor
 Answers to my demaunde as in þis caas
 how schaltow to þy lady freissche may
 Telle þy woo. sche wol alway say nay 1872
 Eek if þou speke sche wol þy woo bywreye
 God be þin help I can no better seye
 This seke damyan in venus fuyr
 So brennith þat he dayeth for desir 1876
 For which he put his lyf in aduenture
 No lenger might he in þis wo endure
 But priuely a penner gan he borwe
 And in a letter wrot he al his sorwe 1880
 In maner of a compleynt or of a lay
 vnto his faire freissche lady may
 And in a purs of silk heng on his schert
 he hap it put and layd it at his hert [Join 141, back] 1884

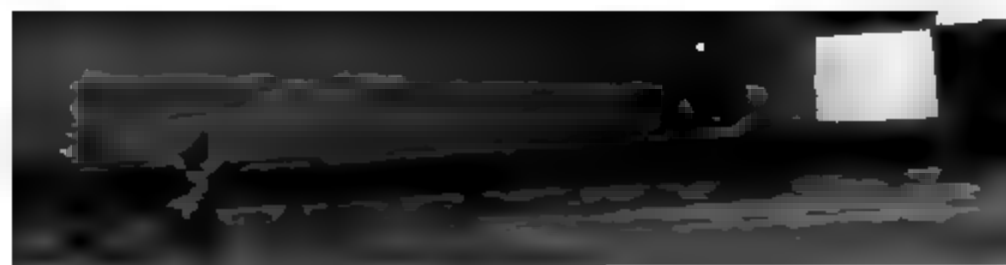
¶ The moone þat' anoon was þilke day
 That' Ianuary had weddid freische may
 In tuo of taure was in to Cancre gliden
 So long' hath mayus in hir chambre abiden 1888
 As custom is vnto þese nobles alle
 A bryde schal not' eten in þe halle
 Til dayes foure. or þre dayes atte lest'
 I-passed ben. þan let' hir go to þe fest' 1892
 The fourthe day complet fro noon to noon
 whan þat' þe heighe masse was I-doon
 In halle sitte. þis Ianuary and may.
 As freisch as is þe bryghte someres day 1896
 And so bifelle þat' þis goode man
 Remembrid him vpon þis Damyan
 And sayde seinte mary how may þis be
 That' Damyan entendith not' to me 1900
 Is he ay seek' or how may þis bityde
 his squiers which þat' stooðe þer bisyde.
 Excusid him by cause of' his syknesse
 which letted him to doon his busynesse 1904
 Noon oþer cause mighte make him tarie
 That' me forthinkith quod þis Ianuarie
 he is a gentil squyer by my troupe
 If' þat' he deyde it' were harm and routhe 1908
 he is as wys diacret' and eek' secre
 As any man I wot' of his degre

SIX-TEXT 462

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7394. 321

At after-mete 3e wip 3our wommen alle /
 whan 3e han ben in chambre out of 3is halle (leaf 148)
 That alle 3e goo to se 3is Damyan
 Doth him desport. he is a gentil man 1924
 And tellith him pat I wil him visite
 Haue I no ping. but rested me a lyte /
 And spedith 3ow faste for I wol abyde
 Til pat 3e slepe faste by my syde 1928
 And with pat word. he gan vnto him calle
 A squier pat was marchal of his halle
 And told him certeyn pinges what he wolde
 This freissche may hath streight hir wey I-holde 1932
 wip alle hir wommen vnto Damyan
 Doun by þe beddes syde sat sche þan
 Comfortyng him as goodly as sche may
 This damyan whan pat his tyme he say 1936
 In secre wise his purs and eek his bille /
 In which pat he. I-writen had his wille
 Hap put in to hir hond wipouten more
 Sane pat he siketh wonder deepe and sore 1940
 And softly to hir right þus sayd he /
 Mercy and pat 3e not discouer me
 For I am deed if pat 3is ping discouered be
 3is purs in hir bosom had had sche 1944
 And went hir way 3e gete no more of me
 But vnto Ianuary comen is sche
 pat on his beddes syde sit ful softe /
 And takith hir and kissith hir ful ofte / 1948
 And layd him doun to slepe and pat anon
 Sche feyned hir as pat sche moste goon
 Ther as 3e woot pat enery wight moot/ neede
 And whan sche of 3is bille hap taken heede / 1952
 Sche rent i al to cloutes atte laste
 And in to þe priny softly it cast/
 who studieth now but faire freissche may
 A-doun by olds Ianuary sche lay 1956

That slepith til þat. þe coughe hap him awaked
 Andoon he prayde stripen hir al naked
 he wold of hir he sayd haue som plessaunce
 hir clothis dede him he sayde som grevaunce [1960
 And sche obeieþ be hir lief or loth
 But lest that precious folk be with me wroth
 how þat he wroughte. I dar not telle
 Or wheþir it semed him paradys or helle 1964
 But here I lete hem werken in her wise
 Til euensong rong and þan þay most arise
 wheþir it be by desteny or aduenture
 were it by influence or by nature 1968
 Or by constellacioun þat in such estate
 The heuen stood þat tyme fortunate
 As for to putte a bulle of venus werkis
 For alle þing hath tyme as seyn þese clerkis 1972
 To eny womman for to gete hir loue
 I can not say but grete god aboue /
 þat knowith þat noon acte is causeles
 He deme of al. for I wil holde my pees 1976
 But soth is þis how þat þis freisshe may
 hath take such impressioun þat day
 Of pite of þis sike damyan
 That from hir herte sche ne dryue can 1980
 The remembraunce for to doon him ease /
 Certeyn þought sche. whom þat þis þing displease

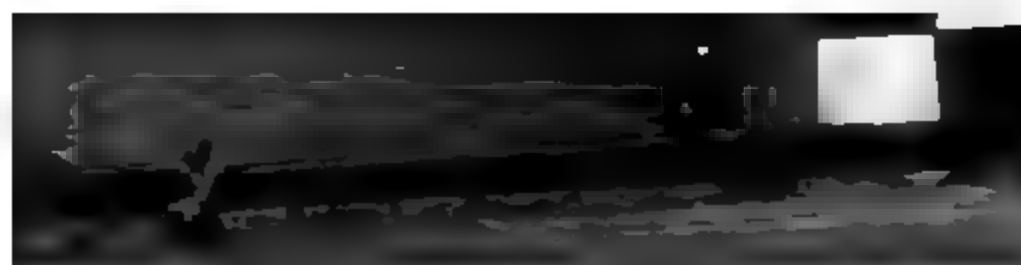


SIX-TEXT 464

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 323

And hem reioysen in her cruel pride
And rekken nouȝt to ben an homicide
¶ This gentil may fulfillid of pite
Right of hir hond a letter maked sche / 1996
In which sche grauntith him hir verray grace
Ther lakkid nouȝt but oonly day and place [leaf 163]
wher þat sche might vnto his lust suffice
For it schal be right as he wol denyse 2000
And whan sche saugh hir tyme vpon a day
To visite þis damyan goþ May
And subtilly þis lettre doun sche thruste
Vnder his pylow. rede it if him luste 2004
Sche takith him by þe hond and hard him twiste
So secrely þat no wight of hit wiste
And bad him be al hool and forþ sche wente
To Ianuary whan þat he for hir sente 2008
vp ryseth Damyan þe nexte morwe
Al passed was his siknes and his sorwe /
He kembith him. he pruneth him and pyketh
he doth al þat vnto his lady likith 2012
And eek to Ianuary he goth as lowe /
As euer did a dogge for þe bowe /
He is so plesaunt vnto euery man
For craft is al. who so þat do it can 2016
That euery wight is fayn to speke him good
And fully in his lady grace he stood
Thus lete I damyan about his neede
And in my tale forth I wol procede 2020
Some clerkes holden þat felicite
Stant in delit and þerfor certeyn he
This noble Ianuary with al his might
In honest wise as longith to a knight 2024
Schop him to lyue ful deliciously
his housyng his array as honestly
To his degre was maked as a kynges
Amonges oper of his honest þinges 2028

he made a gardyn walled al wiþ stoon
 So fair a Gardyn wot I no wher noon
 For out of doute I verrelly suppose
 That he þat wroot þe romauns of þe Rose 2032
 Ne couþe of hit þe beaute wel deuyse
 Ne Piramus ne might not wel suffise
 Though he be god of gardyns for to telle /
 The beaute of þe gardyn and þe welle [leaf 142, back] 2036
 That stood vnder a laurer alway greene
 Ful ofte tyme he pluto and his queene
 Preserpina and al þe fayerie
 Desporten hem and maken melodye 2040
 Aboute þat welle and daunced as men tolde
 This noble knight þis Iannary þe olde
 Such deynte hap in it to walk and pleye
 That he wold no wight suffre bere þe keye 2044
 Saue he himself for of þe smale wyket
 he bar alway of siluer a smal cliket
 wiþ which whan þat him list he it vnchette
 And whan he wolde pay his wyf hir dette / 2048
 In somer sesoun þider wold he go
 And may his wyf and no wight but þay tuo
 And þinges which. þat weren not doon in bedde
 he in þe gardyn performed hem and spedde 2052
 And in þis wise many a mery day
 lyued þis Iannary and freische may



SIX-TEXT 466

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 325

why hastow Ianuary þus deceyued
That haddist him for þy fulle frend receyued
And now þou hast byreft him boþe his yen
For sorw of which desireth he to dyen 2068
Allas þis noble Ianuary fre
Amyd his lust and his prosperite
Is woxe blynd and þat al sodeynly
he wepith and he weyleth pitously 2072
And þer with al þe fuyr of Ialousye
lest þat his wif schuld falle in som folye [leaf 144]
So brent his herte. þat he wolde fayn
That som man boþe hir and him had slayn 2076
For neyþer after his deth nor in his lyf
Ne wold he þat sche were loue ne wyf
But euer lyue as wydow in clothes blake /
Soul as þe turtil þat lost haþ hir make 2080
But atte last after a moneth or tweye
his sorwe gan aswage soþ to seye
For whan he wist it may noon oþer be /
he paciently took his aduersite 2084
Saue out of doute he may not forgoon
That he nas Ialous euermore in oon
which Ialousie it was so outrageous
That neyþer in halle. ne in noon oþer hous 2088
Ne in noon oþer place neuer þe mo
he nolde suffre hir to ryde or go
But if þat he had hond on hir alway
For which ful ofte wepeth freische may 2092
That loueth Damyan so benignely
That sche moot outhur deyen sodeinly
Or elles sche moot han him as hir lest
She waytith whan hir herte wolde brest 2096
vpon þat oþer syde Damyan
Bicomen is þe sorwfulleste man
That euer was for neyther night ne day
Ne might he speke a word wif freische may 2100

As to his purpos of no such matiere
 But if þat Ianuary most it heere
 That had an hond vpon hir euermo
 But napeles by writyng to and fro 2104
 And priue signes wist he what sche ment/
 And sche knew eek þe fyn of his entent
 ¶ O Ianuary what might it þe auaille
 If þou might see . as fer as schippes saile 2108
 For as good is . blynd deceyued be /
 As to be deceyued whan a man may see
 Lo argus which þat had an hundred eyen
 For al þat ever he couþe poure or prien (lea/144, back) 2112
 ȝet was he blent as god wot so ben moo
 That weneth wisly þat it be nought so
 Passe ouer is an ease I say no more
 This freische may þat I spak of so ȝore 2116
 In warm wax hath empynted þe cliket
 That Ianuary bar of þe smale wiket/
 with which in to his gardyn ofte he went
 And damyan þat knew al his entent 2120
 The cliket counterfeted priuely
 Ther nys no more to say but hastily
 Som wonder by þis cliket schal betyde
 which ȝe schal heeren if ȝe wol abyde 2124
 ¶ O noble Ouyde wel soth saistow god woot
 what sleight is it/ þough it be long & hoot

SIX-TEXT 468

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 327

That in a morwe vnto þis may saith he /
 Rys vp my wif. my loue. my lady fre /
 The turtlis vois. is herd my douue swete
 The wynter is goon. with his raynes wete 2140
 Come forth now with. þin eyzen columbine
 how fairer ben þy brestes þan is þe wyne
 The gardyn is enclosed al aboute
 Com forth my swete spouse out of doute 2144
 Thow hast me wounded in myn hert. o. wyf
 No spot of þe knew I in al my lif /
 Com forth and let vs / take oure desport /
 I ches þe for my wyf and my comfort 2148
 Such olde lewed wordes vsed he /
 On damyan a signe made sche [leaf 145]
 That he schuld go. biforn with his cliket
 This damyan þan hap opened þe wicket 2152
 And in he stert and þat in such manere /
 That no wight. it mighte see nor heere
 And stille he seet vnder a bussch anoon
 This Ianuary is blynd as is a stoon 2156
 with Mayus in his hond and no wight mo
 In to his freische gardyn is ago
 And clappid to þe wicket sodeinly
 Now wyf quod he her nys but þe and I 2160
 þat art þe creature þat I best loue
 For by þat lord þat sit in heuen aboue
 leuer ich had to dyen on a knyf
 Than þe offende deere trewe wyf 2164
 For goddes sake þenk how I þe chees
 Nought for no coueytise douteles
 But oonly for þe loue I had to þe
 And þough þat I be old and may not se 2168
 Beeth trewe to me and I wol telle þow why
 Thre þinges certes schul þe wynne þer by
 First loue of crist and to þour self honour
 And al myn heritage toun and tour 2172

I ȝine it ȝow makith chartres as ȝow laste
 This schal ben doon to morw er sonne reste
 So wialy god my soule bringe in blisse
 I pray ȝow first in couenaunt ȝe me kisse 2176
 And þough þat I be ialous wyf me nought
 ȝe ben so deep emprinted in my þought
 þat whan þat I considre ȝour beaute
 And þer wiþ al þe vnlikly eelde of me 2180
 I may nought certes þough I schulde dye
 Forbere to ben out of ȝour companye
 For verray loue þis is wiþouten doute
 Now kisse me wyf and let vs Rome aboute 2184
 This freissche may whan sche his worde herde
 Benignely to Ianuary answerde /
 But first and forward sche bigan to wepe
 I haue quod sche a soule for to kepe (204/145, 5-6) 2188
 As wel as ȝe and also myn honour
 And of my wifhod pilke tendre flour
 which þat I haue ensured in ȝour hond
 whan þat þe prest to ȝow my body bond 2192
 wherfor I wil answer in þis manere
 By þe leue of ȝow my lord so deere
 I pray to god þat neuer dawe þe day
 That I ne sterue as foule as womman may 2196
 If euer I do to my kyn þat schame
 Or elles I empaire so my name

SIX-TEXT 470

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 329

And wip hir fynghes signes made sche	
That damyan schuld clymb vpon a tre	note
That charged was with fruyt/ and vp he went/	
For verrayly he knew al hir entent	2212
And euery signe þat sche couthe make	
wel bet þan Ianuary hir oughne make	
For in a letter sche had told him al	
Of þis matier how he worche shal	2216
And þus I lete him sitte vpon þe pirie	
And Ianuary and may romynge mirye	
¶ Bright was þe day and bliw þe firmament	
Phebus hap of gold his streames down I-sent	2220
To gladen euery flour with his warmnesse	
he was þat tyme in gemmes as I gesse	
But litel fro his declinacioun	
Of Caker. Ioues exaltacioun	2224
And so bifel þat brighte morwen tyde	
That in þat gardyn in þe ferther syde /	[leaf 146]
Pluto that is kyng of fayerye	
And many a lady in his compaignie	2228
Folwyng his wif þe queene preserpine	
Ech after oþer. as right as a lyne	
whil þat sche gadred floures in þe mede	
In claudian 3e may þe story rede	2232
how in þis grisly carte he hir fette	
This king of fayry þan adoun him sette /	
vpon a bench of turues freissh and greene	
And right anon þus sayd he to his queene /	2236
¶ My wyf quod he þer may no wight say nay	
Therperiens so preueth euery day	
The tresoun which þat woman doth to man	
Ten hundrid þousand. tellen I can	2240
Notable of þour vntrouth and brutelnesse	
O. Salamon wys and richest of richesse /	
Fulfuld of Sapiens. and of worldly glorie /	
Ful worpy ben þy wordes to memorie	2244

To euery wight þat wit and resoun can
 Thus praysith he ȝit þe bounte of man
 Among a þousand men ȝit fond I con
 But of wommen alle fond I noon 2248
 Thus saith þe king þat knoweth ȝour wikkednesse
 And Ihe filius Sirac / as I geasse /
 Ne spekith of ȝow but selde reuerence
 A . wilde fuyr and corrupt pestilence 2252
 So falle vpon ȝour bodies ȝit to night
 Ne se ȝe not þis honorable knight
 By cause allas þat he is blynd and old
 his owne man schal make him cokewold 2256
 loo wher he sitt. þe lecchour in þe tre
 Now wol I graunten of my maieste /
 Unto þis olde blinde worþy knight
 þat he schal haue aȝein his eyȝen sight 2260
 whan þat his wyf wol do him vilonye
 Than schal he knowe al her harlotrye
 Boþe in reproef of her and oper mo
 ȝe schal quod preserpine and wol ȝe so (leaf 148, back) 2264
 Now by my modres sires soule I swere
 That I schal ȝiue hir suffisaunt answer /
 And alle wommen after for hir sake
 That þough þay be in any gult I-take 2268
 with face bold þay schul hemself excuse
 And bere hem doun þat wolde hem accuse

SIX-TEXT 473

GROUP B. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 331

wommen ful trewe . ful good and vertuous
 witnesse on hem þat duelle in cristes hous
 with martirdom þay proued her constaunce
 The romayn gestes eek make remembraunce 2284
 Of many a verray trewe wyf also .
 But sire be nought wrath al be it so
 Though þat he sayd he fond no good womman
 I pray þow tak þe sentens of þe man 2288
 he mente þus þat in souereign bounte
 Nis noon but god þat sit in trinite
 Ey for verrey god þat nys but oon
 what make þe so moche of Salamon 2292
 what þough he made a temple goddes hous
 what þough he were riche and glorious
 So made he eek a temple of fals godis
 How might he do a þing þat more forþod is 2296
 Par de als fair as þe his name emplastre
 he was a lecchour and an ydolastre
 And in his eelde he veraily god forsook
 And if god ne had as saip þe book 2300
 I-spared him for his fadres sake he scholde
 Hauē left his regne raper þan he wolde [Long 147]
 I sette right nought of þe vilonye
 That þe of wommen write a boterflie 2304
 I am a womman needes most I speke
 Or elles swelle til myn herte breke
 For syn sche sayd þat we ben iangleresses
 As euer hool I moote brouke my tresses 2308
 I schal not spare for no curtesye /
 To speke him harm þat wold vs vilonye
 Dame quod þis pluto be no lenger wroth
 I giue it vp but/ sith I swere myn oth 2312
 That I wil graunte him his sight again
 My word schal stonde I warne þow certeyn
 I am a kyng it sit me nought to lye
 And I quod sche a queen of faerie 2316

hir answer schal sche haue I vndertake
 Let vs no mo wordes her-of make
 For soth I wol no lenger ȝow contrarie
 . . . Now let vs turne agayn to Ianuarye 2320
 That in þis gardyn with þis faire may
 Syngeþ ful merier þan þe papiniay
 ȝow loue I best and schal and oþer noon
 So long about þe aleys is he goon 2324
 Til he was come agaynes þilke pirie
 wher as þis damyan sittith ful mirye
 On heigh among þe freische leeuys greene
 This freische may þat is so bright and scheene 2328
 Gan for to syke and sayd alas my syde
 Now sir quod sche for ought þat may bityde
 I most han of þe peres þat I see
 Or I moot dye so sore longith me 2332
 To eten of þe smale peris greene
 Help for hir loue þat is of heuen queene
 I telle ȝow wel a woman in my plyt
 May haue to fruyt so gret an appetyt 2336
 þat sche may deyen . but sche it haue
 Allas quod he þat I nad heer a knaue
 That couthe clymbe alas alas quod he
 For I am blynd . ȝe sire no fors quod sche [*1405 1407, 1408*] 2340
 But wolde ȝe vouche sauþ for goddes sake
 The piry inwith ȝour armes for to take
 For wel I woot þat ȝe wyl truste me

Gan pullen vp þe smok' and in he throng	
And whan þat' plato /saugh þis grete wrong'	
To January he ȝaf his sight' agayn	
[.	2336
. no gap in the MS.]	
Ne was þer neuer man of þing' so fayn	
But on his wif' his þought' was enermo	
Vp to þe tree he kest' his eyzen tuo /	2360
And seigh þat' damyan his wyf' had droesid	
In which maner it may not' ben expressid	
But if I wolde speke vncurteialy	
And vp he ȝaf a roryng' and a cry	2364
As doth þe moder whan þe child schal dye	
Out'. help. alas. harrow. he gan to orie	
O stronge lady stoure what dos þow	
And sche answerith sire what' eylith þow	2368
haue paciens and resoun in þour mynde	
I haue þow holpen on boþe þour eyen blynde	
vp peril of my soule I schal not' lyen	
As me was taught' to hele with þour yen	2372
was noþing' bet'. for to make þow see	
Than stroggle wiþ a man vpon a tree	
God woot I dede it in ful good entent	
Stroggle quod he! ȝe alȝat' in it went	2376
God ȝiue þow boþe on schames doth to dyen	
He swyued þe. I saugh it wiþ myn yen	
And elles be I honged by þe hale	
Than is quod sche medicine fals	(100/100) 2380
For certeynly if þat' ȝe mighten see	
ȝe wold not' say tho wordes vnto me	
ȝe han som glymayng' and no parfyt sight'	
I se quod he as wel as euer I might'	2384
Thankid be god wiþ boþe myn yen tuo	
And by my trouth me þought' he did þe so	
ȝe. mase. mase. goode sire quod sche	
This þank' haue I for I haue maad þow see	2388

Allas quod sche þat ener I was so kynde
 Now dame quod he let al passe out of mynde
 Com doun my leef and if I haue mysayd
 God help me so as I am eucl appayd 2392
 But by my fader soule I wende haue seyn
 how þat þis damyan had by þe leyn
 And þat þy smok had layn vpon þy breet
 þe sire quod sche þe may wene as þow lest/ 2396
 But sire a man þat wakith out of his slep
 He may not sodeynly wel take keep
 vpon a þing ne seen it parfytly
 Til þat he be adawed verrayly 2400
 Right so a man þat long hap blynd I-be
 Ne may not sodeynly so wel I-se
 First whan þe sight is newe comen agayn
 As he þat hap a day or tuo I-sayn 2404
 Til þat þour sight y-stablid be a while
 þer may ful many a sighte þow bigile
 Bep war I pray þow for by heuen king
 Ful many man wenith for to se a þing 2408
 And it is al anoper þan it semeth
 he þat mys conceyueth he mys demeth
 And wiþ þat word sche leep doun fro þe tre
 This Ianuary who is glad but he 2412
 he kissith hir and clippith hir ful ofte
 And on hir wombe he strokith hir ful ofte

Ey goddes mercy sayd our hoste þo
 Now such a wyf I pray god keep me fro 2420
 lo whiche sleightes and subtilitees
 In wommen ben for ay as busy as bees
 Ben þay vs seely men for to desceyue
 And from a soth. euer wol þay weyue 2424
 By this marchaundes tale it proueth wel
 But douteles as trewe as eny steel
 I haue a wyf þough þat sche pore be
 But of hir tonge a labbyng schrewe is scho 2428
 And ȝit sche hath an heep of vices mo
 Ther-of no fors let alle such þinges go
 But wite ȝe what in counseil be it seyð
 Me rewith sore I am vnto hir teyð 2432
 And if I scholde reken euery vice
 which þat sche hath I-wis I were to nyce
 And cause why. it schuld reported be
 And told to hir of som of þis meyne 2436
 Of whom it needith not for to declare
 Syn wommen connen oute such chaffare
 And eek my witte suffisith nought þerto
 To tellen al wherfor my tale is do 2440

[*No gap in the MS.*]

GROUP F. FRAGMENT VII.

§ 1. THE SQUIRE'S HEAD-LINK.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

¶ Sir Squier com forþ. if þat þour wille be
 And say vs a tale for certes þe
 Connen þer-on as moche as ony man
 ¶ Nay sire quod he. but I wil say as I can 4
 wiþ herty wil. for I wil not rebelle
 Against þour wille. a tale wil I telle
 Hauē me excused if þat I speke amys
 My wil is good. and þerto my tale is this. 8

¶ Her endith þe prologe

[No break in the MS.]



¶ And her bygynneth þe Squyeres tale

AT Sarray in þe lond of Tartary [1007/1008]
 Ther dwelled a kyng' þat' werryed russy
 Thurgh which þer deyed many a doughty man
 This nobil kyng' was cleped Cambynskan 12
 which in his tyme was of so gret' renoun
 That' þer' nas nowher in no regioun
 So excellent a lord in alle þing' /
 Him lakked nought' þat' longed to a kyng 16
 As of þe secte of which þat' he was born
 he kept' his lawe. to which he was sworn
 And þerto he was hardy wys and riche /
 And pitous and Iust' alway yliche 20
 Soth of his word benign and honorable
 Of his corage as eny centre stable
 3ong' freisch and strong' in armes desirous
 As eny bachiler of al his hous 24
 A fair person he was and fortunat'
 And kepte so wel his real estat
 That' þer was no wher such a ryal man
 This noble kyng' þis tartre þis Cambynskan 28
 hadde tuo sones by Elcheta his wyf'
 Of which þe eldest/ highte Algaryf'
 That' oper was I-cleped Samballo
 A doughter' had þis worthi king' also 32
 That' 3ongest' was and highte Canace
 But' for to telle 3ou al hir beaute
 It' lith not' on my tong' ne my connyng'
 I dar' nou3t' vnder take so heigh a þing' 36

Myn englisch eek' is insufficient
 he moste be a Rethor excellent
 That couþ his colours longyng' for þat' art'
 If' he schold hir discryue in eny part 40
 I am non such I mot' speke as I can
 And so bifel it' þat' þis Cambynskan
 hap twenty wynter born his dyademe
 As he was wont fro 3er to 3er I deme 44
 he leet' þe fest' of his natiuite :
 Don cryen þurgh Sarray his Cite
 The last' Idus of march after þe 3eer [leaf 118, back]
 Phebus þe sonne was Ioly and cleer 48
 For he was neigh his exaltacioun
 In marc3 face and in his mansioun
 In aries þe colerik' þe hote signe
 Ful lusty was the wedir and benigne 52
 For which þe foules a3ein þe sonne scheene
 what' for þe sesoun & for þe 3onge greene
 Ful lowde song' in here affecciouns
 hem semed haue geten hem protecciouns 56
 A3ens þe swerd of wynter kene and cold
 This Cambynskan of which I haue told
 In royal vesture sittying' on his deys
 with dyadem ful heigh in his paleys 60
 And held his fest', solempne and so riche
 That' in þis worlde was þer noon it' liche

SIX-TEXT 481

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 339

I wol not tarien ȝou for it is pryme	
And for it is no fruyt but los of tyme	
vnto my purpos. I wol haue my recours	
That so bifelle after þe pridde cours	76
whil þat þe kyng sit þus in his nobleye	
herkyng his mynstrales her þinges pleye	
Ryfor him atte boord deliciously	
In atte halle dore al sodeynly	80
Ther com a knight vpon a steed of bras	
And in his hond a brod myroure of glas	
Vpon his thomb he had of gold a ryng	
And by his side a naked swerd hangyng	84
And vp he rideth to þe heyghe bord	(224/150)
In al þe halle ne was þer spoke a word	
For meruayl of þis knight him to byholde	
Ful besily þey wayten ȝong and olde	88
This straunge knight þat cam þus sodeynly	
Al armed sauf his heed ful richely :	
Salued the kyng and queen and lordes alle	
By ordre as þey seten in to halle /	92
with so heigh reuerens and obseruaunce	
As wel in speche as in contynaunce /	
That Ewen with his olde curtesye	
They he come aȝein out of fayrye	96
Ne coupe him nouȝt amende wip no word	
And after þis biforn þe highe bord	
he with a manly vois sayd his message	
After þe forme vsed in his langage	100
wipouten vice of sillabil or letter	
And for his tale schulde seme þe better	
Accordaunt to his wordes was his cheere	
As techeth art of speche hem þat it leere	104
Al be it þat I can nat sowne his style	
Ne can nat clymben ouer so heigh a style /	
ȝit say I þis as to comun entent	
Thus moche amounteth al þat euer he ment	108

If it so be þat I haue it in mynde /
 ¶ he sayd þe kyng of Arraby and yynde
 My liege lord on þis solempne day
 Saluteth 3ou as he best can or may 112
 he sendeth 3ou in honour of 3our feste
 By me þat am redy at al his heste
 This steede of bras þat esily and wel
 That can in the space of o day naturel 116
 This is to say in four an twenty houres
 wher-so 3ou lust / in droughþe or in schoures
 Beren 3our body in to enery place
 To which 3our herte wilneþ for to pace 120
 wipouten wem of 3ou þurgh foul and fair
 Or if 3ou lust to flee as heiz in þair
 As dop an egle whan him list to sore [leaf 150, back]
 This same steede schal bere 3ou enermore / 124
 wipoute harm til 3e be þer 3ou leste
 Though þat 3e slepen on his bak or reste
 And torne aȝein with wryping of a pyn
 he þat it wrought cowþe ful many a gyn 128
 he wayted many a constellacioun
 Er he had do þis operacioun
 And knew ful many a seal and many a bond
 ¶ This mirour eek þat I haue in myn hond 132
 hap such a mighte / þat men may in it see
 when þer schal falle eny aduersite

3our' excellent' doughter þat' is heere
 ¶ The vertu of þis ryng' and 3e wol heere!
 Is þis / þat' who. so lust' it for to were
 vpon hir thomb / or in hir pure to bere 148
 Ther is no foul / þat' fleeth vnder þe heuen
 That' schal vnderstonden his steuen.
 And know his menyng' openly and pleyne
 and answer him in his langage a3eyn 152
 And euery gras. þat' groweþ vpon roote
 Sche schal eek' know / to whom it' wol do boote
 Al be his woundes neuer so deep and wyde
 ¶ This naked swerd þat' hangeþ by my syde 156
 Such vertu hath þat' what man þat' it' smyte
 Thurghout' his armur it wol kerue and byte
 were it as pikke as a braunched ook'
 And what' man is I-wounded with þe strook' 160
 Schal neuer be hool / til þat' 3ou lust' of grace (leaf 151)
 To strok' him wip þe plat' in þilke place!
 Ther he is hurt'. þis is as moche to seyn
 3e moote with þe platte swerd a3ein 164
 Stroke him in þe wound and it' wol close /
 This is þe verray soth wipouten glose /
 It' failleth nought' whil it is in 3our hold
 And whan þis knight' þus had his tale told 168
 he rit out' of þe halle and doun he light'
 his steede which þat' schon as sonne bright'
 Stant' in þe court' as stille as eny stoon
 This knight' is to his chambre lad anon . 172
 he is vnarmed and to mete I-sett'
 This present; ben ful richely I-fett'
 This is to sayn, the swerd and the myrrour
 And born anon vnto þe highe tour 176
 with certain officers ordeynd þerfore
 And vnto Canace þe ryng' is bore!
 Solempnely ther sche syt' atte table
 But' sikerly wipouten eny fable 180

The hors of bras þat may nat be remowed
 It stant as it were to the ground I-glewed
 Ther may no man out of þe place it dryue
 For noon engyn of wyndyng or polyue 184
 And cause why for þey can nouȝt þe craft
 And þerfor in the place þei haue it laft
 Til þat þe knight haþ taught hem þe manere
 To voyden him as ȝe schul after heere 188
 Greet was þe pres þat swarmed to and fro
 To gauren on þis hors þat stondeþ so
 For it so wyd was and so brod and long
 So wel proporcioned to be strong 192
 Right as it were a steed of lombardye
 Ther-to so horsly and so quyke of ye
 As it a gentil poyleys courser were
 For certes fro his tayl vnto his eere 196
 Nature ne art ne couþe him nouȝt amende
 In no degre as al þe poeple wende
 But euermore her moste wonder was [leaf 181, back]
 How þat it couþe goon and was of bras 200
 It was of fayry as þe poeple semed
 Diuerse peple . diuersly þey demed
 As many hedes as many wittes been
 They murmured as doþ a swarm of been 204
 And made skiles after her fantasies
 Rehersyng of þe olde poetries

And sayde it lyth for it is rapier lik'
 An apparence maad by som magik'
 As Iogelours pleyen at' his festes grete
 Of sondry þoughtes þus þey Iangle and trete 220
 As lewed peple demeth comunly
 Of þinges þat ben maad more subtilly
 Than þey can in her lewednes comprehende
 They deemen gladly to the badder ende 224
 And som of hem wondred of þe mirrour
 That' born was vp in to þe maister tour
 How men might' in hit suche þinges se
 Anoper answerd and sayd it might' wel be 228
 Naturelly by composiciouns
 Of angels and of heigh reflexiouns
 And sayde þat' in Rome was such oon
 They speeke of al-ceyt' and Vitilyon 232
 Of aristotle / þat' writen in her lyues
 Of queynte myrrours and prospectyues
 As knowen þey þat' han her bokes herd
 And oper folk' haue wondred on þe sword 236
 That' wolde passe þoroughout' euery þing' (1004/163)
 And fel in speche of Thelophus þe kyng'
 And of achilles for his queynte spere
 For he coupe with hit' boþe hele and dere 240
 Right' in such wyse as men may wip þe sword
 Of which right' now 3e haue 3our seluen herd
 They speeken of sondry hardyng' of metal
 And speken of medicines þer wip al 244
 And how and whan it schulde harded be /
 which is vnknowe / algaþ' vnto me /
 Tho speeken þey of Canacees ryng'
 And sayden alle / þat' such a wonder þing' 248
 Of craft' of rynges herd þey neuer noon
 Sauþ' þat' he moysee and kyng' Salamon
 Had a name of connyng' in such art'
 Thus seyen þe peple on euery part' 252

But napeles som seiden þat it was /
 wonder þing to make of ferne glas /
 And ȝit is glas nouȝt like aisschen of ferne
 But for þey han I-knowen it so ferne 256
 Therfor cesaeth her ianglyng and her wonder
 And sore wondred som of cause of þonder
 On ebbe and flood on gossomer and on myst
 And on alle þing til þat þe cause is wist 260
 Thus Ianglen þey and demen and deuyas
 Til þat þe kyng gan fro his bord arise
Phebus hath lost þe angel merydyonal
 And ȝit / ascendyng was a best roial 264
 The gentil lyoun wip his adryan
 whan þat þis gentil kyng þis Cambynskan
 Ros fro his bord þer as he sat ful hye
 Biforn him goth ful lowde menstralcy 268
 Til he cam to his chambre of Parement;
 Ther as þer were diuers instrument;
 That is y-like an heuen for to heere
 ¶ Now dauncen lusty Venus children deere 272
 For in þe fiasch. her lady sat ful heyȝe
 And lokep on hem with a frendly eyȝe /
 This noble kyng is set vpon his trone /
 This straunge knight is fet to him ful sone (leaf 102, back) 276
 And in the daunce he gan with Canace /
 her is þe reuel and þe iolyte

That is a notable and a doughty

A say no more but in þis Iolynesse /
 I lete hem til men to soper hem dresse
 The styward byt þe spices for to hye
 And eek þe wyn in al þis melodye 292
 Thes vaschers and þes squyers ben agon
 The spices and þe wyn is come anon
 They eet and drank and whan þis had an ende /
 vnto þe temple as resoun was þey wande / 296
 The seruise doon þey and soupen al by day
 what needeth þou to rehersen her array
 Ech man wot wel þat a kynges feste
 hath plente to þe lest and to the meste 300
 And deyntees mo þan ben in my knowyng
 And after souper goþ þis noble kyng
 To see þis hors of bras wip al his route
 Of lordes and of ladyes al aboute / 304
 Swich wondryng was þer on þis hors of bras
 That seth þis grete siege of troye was /
 Ther as men wondred on an hors also
 Ne was þer such a wondryng as was þo 308
 But fynally þe kyng asked þe knight
 The vertu of þis courser and þe might
 And prayd him tellen of his gouernaunce
 The hors anon gan for to trippe and daunce 312
 whan þe knight leyd hand vpon his rayne
 And sayde sir þer is nomore to sayne [leaf 130]
 But whan þou lust to ryde any where /
 þe moote trille a pyn stant in his ore 316
 which I schal telle þou bitwen vs two
 þe mooste nempne him to what place also
 Or what countre þou luste for to ryde
 And whan þe come þer þou lust abyde 320
 Bid him descende and trille anoper pynne
 For þer in lith þe fet of al þe gynne /
 And he wol down descend and do þour wille
 And in þat place he wol abyde stille 324

Though al þe world had þe contrary swore
 he schal nat' thennes be I-prowe ne bore
 Or if þou lust' to bid him þennes goon
 Trille þis pyn and he wol vanyssh anoon 328
 Out' of þe sight' of euery maner wight'
 And come aȝein. be it' by day or night
 whan þat' þou lust' to clepan him aȝayn
 In such a gyse as I schal ȝow sayn 332
 Bitwixe ȝou and me and þerfor soone
 Byd whan ȝou lust' þer nys nomor to doone
 Enformed when þe kyng' was of þe knight'
 And had conceyued in his wit aright' 336
 The maner of þe forme and al þis þing'
 Ful glad and blith þis noble doughty kyng'
 Repeyryng' to his reuel as biforn
 The bridel is vnto þe tour I-born 340
 And kept' among' his Iewels lecf' and deere
 The hors vanyscht' I not' in what manere
 Out' of her sight' ȝe get' nomore of' me
 But' þus I lete him in his iolite 344
 This Cambinskan his lordes festeyng'
 Til wel neigh þe day bigan to spryng'
 Explicit prima pars //

[No break in the MS.]

Incipit secunda pars

here dremes schul not now be told for me
 Ful were here heedes of fumosite
 That causeþ drem of which þer is no charge /
 They slepen til it was prime large / 360
 The moste part but it were Canace
 Sche was ful mesurable as wommen be
 For of hir fader haþ sche take hir leue
 To go to reste soon after it was eue / 364
 hir luste not appalled for to be
 Ne on þe morwe vnfestly for to se /
 And kept hir firste sleep and þan awook'
 For such a Ioye sche in herte took' 368
 Boþe of hir queynte ryng' and hir myrrour
 That twenty tyme chaunged hire colour
 And in hire sleep right for impressioun
 Of hir myrrour sche had a visioun 372
 wher-for er þat þe sonne vp gan glyde ,
 Sche cleped vpon her maistresse beside /
 And sayde þat hire luste for to ryse
 These olde wommen þat ben gladly wise 376
 As is here maystresse answered hir anon
 And sayd madame whider wold ȝe goon
 Thus erly for folk' ben alle in reste /
 I wil quod sche aryse for me leste 380
 No lenger for to slepe and walke aboute
 hir maistres clepeth wommen a gret route /
 And vp þey risen a ten oȝer a twelue
 vp ryseþ fresshe Canace hir selue 384
 As rody and bright as is þe ȝonge sonne
 That in þe Ram is ten degrees I-ronne
 Non heiler was he^l whan sche redy was [^l first, 'sche']
 And forth sche walked esily a pas 388
 Arayed after þe lusty sesoun soote [leaf 151]
 lightly for to play and walke on foote
 Nought but wip fyue or six of hir mevue
 And a trench fer in þe park' goþ sche / 392

The vapour which þat of þe erthe glod
 Makeþ þe sonne seme rody and sot
 But napeles it was so fair a sight
 That it made alle here hertes for to light 396
 what for þe sesoun what for þe mornyng
 And for þe foules þat sche herde syng
 For right anon sche wiste what þey ment
 Right by here song and knew al here entent / 400
 ¶ The knotte why þat euery tale is told
 If that it be taryed til lust be cold
 Of hem þat han hit after harkned ȝore
 The sauour passeth euer leuger þe more 404
 For fulsomnes of þe prolixite
 And by þis same resoun thinketh me
 I schulde to þe knotte condescende /
 And make of hir walkyng sone an ende · 408
 A-myddes a tree for-druye as whit as chalk
 As Canace was pley yng in hir walk
 There sat a faukoun ouer hir heed ful hye
 þat with a pitous vois bigan to crye 412
 I-beten hadde sche hir self so pitously
 That al the woode resowned of hire cry
 wip boþe hir wynges to þe reede blood
 Ran endelong þe tree þer as sche stood 416
 And euer in oon sche cried and schryght
 And wip hir bek hir selue so sche pight

Of fremde lond and euer as sche stood
 Sche swowned now and now for lak' of blood
 Til wel neigh sche falleþ fro þe tre
 This faire kynges doughter Canace 432
 That on hir fynger bar þe queynte ryng'
 Thurgh which sche vnderstood wel euery þing'
 That eny foul may in his lydne sayn
 And couþe answer him in his lydne agayn 436
 haþ vnderstonde what þe faukoun seyde
 And wel neigh almost for rewthe sche deyde
 And to þe tree sche goth ful hastily
 And on þis faukoun lokeþ pitously 440
 And held hir lappe a-brod for wel sche wist'
 The faukoun moste falle fro þe twist'
 when þat it swowned next for lak' of blood
 A long while to wayten hir sche stood 444
 Til atte last sche spak' in þis manere
 Vnto þe hauk' as ȝe schul after heere
 ¶ what is þe cause if it be for to telle
 That ȝe ben in þat furyaht payne of helle 448
 Quod Canace vnto þis hauk' aboue
 Is þis for sorwe of deth or elles loue
 For as I trowe þis ben causes tuo
 That causen most a gentil herte wo 452
 Of oper harm it needeþ nouȝt to speke
 For ȝe ȝour self vpon ȝour self awreke
 which þat preueþ wel þat either Ire or drede
 Mote ben enchesoun of ȝour cruel dede 456
 Sith þat I see noon oper wight ȝou chace
 For loue of god so doþ ȝour selue grace
 Or what ben ȝour helpe for west ner Este
 Ne saugh I neuer er now no bryd ne beste 460
 That ferde with himself so pitously
 ȝe sle me with ȝour sorwe so verrily
 I haue of ȝou so gret compassioun
 For goddes loue com fro þe tree a doun 464

And as I am a kynges doughter trewe [leaf 155]
 If þat I verrayly þe cause knewe
 Of ȝour diseas if it lay in my might
 I wold amenden it if þat I might 468
 Als wisly help me grete god of kynde
 And herbes schal I right ynowe fynde
 To helen with ȝour hurtes hastily
 Tho schright þis faukoun more pitously 472
 Than euer sche did and fil to ground anon
 And lay a-swowne deed as eny stoon
 Til Canace hath in hir lap y-take
 vnto þat tyme sche gan of swowne slake / 476
 And after þat sohe gan of swown abreyde
 Right in hir haukes lydne thus sche seyde
 That pite renneth sone in gentil hert
 Felyng his similtude in peynes smerte 480
 Is proued alday as men may see
 As wel by werk as by auctorite
 For gentil herte kepeth gentillesse /
 I see wel þat ȝe haue on my distresse 484
 Compassioun my faire Canace
 Of verray wommanly benigneite /
 That nature in ȝour principles hap set
 But noon hope for to fare þe bet 488
 But for to obeye vnto ȝour herte fre
 And for to make othere war by me

SIX-TEXT 493

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 351

So tendrely that noþing eyled me /
 I wiste not / what was aduersite
 Til I coupe flees ful heigh vnder þe sky [leaf 136, back]
 Tho dwelled a tercelet me faste by 504
 That semed welle of alle gentillesse
 Al were he ful of tresoun and falsnesse
 It was I-wrapped vnder humble cheere
 And vnder heewe of troupe in such manere 508
 Vnder plesaunce and vnder besy peyne
 That no wight wende þat he coupe feyne
 So deep in greyn he deyed his colours
 Right as a serpent hut him vnder floures 512
 Til he may see his tyme for to byte
 Right so þis god of loue, þis ypocrite
 Dop so his sermonys and his obseruaunce/
 vnder subtil colour and aqueyntaunce 516
 That sowneth vnto gentillesse of loue
 As in a thombe is al þe faire aboute
 And vnder is þe corps whiche þat ȝe wot
 Such as was þis Ipocrite boþe cold and hot 520
 And in this wise he serued his entent
 That sauf þe feend noon wiste what he ment
 Til he so long had weped and compleyned
 And many a ȝeer his seruice to me feyned 524
 Til þat myn hert to pitous and to nyce
 Al Innocent of his crowned malice
 For-fered of his deth as þoughte me
 vpon his othes and his sewerte 528
 Graunted him loue vpon þis condicioun
 That euermo myn honour and my renoun
 were saued boþe pryuy and apert
 This is to sayn þat after his desert 532
 I ȝaf him al myn hert and al my þought
 god woot and he þat oþer weye nought
 And took his hert in chaunge of myn for ay
 But soþ is sayd go siþens many a day 536

A trew wight and a theef þenketh nouȝt oon
 And when he saugh þe þyng so fer I-goon
 That I graunted him fully my loue /
 In such a wyse as I haue sayd aboue / 540
 And ȝeuen him my trewe hert as fre [leaf 150]
 As he swor he ȝaf his herte to me /
 Anon þis Tigre ful of doubleness
 Fil on his knees with so gret deuoutenesse 544
 wip high reuerence and as by his chere
 So lyk a gentil loue of manere
 So rauysched as it semede for Ioye
 That neuer Iason ne Parys of Troye 548
 Iason certes ne noon oþer man
 Siþ lameth was þat alþer first bygan
 To louen two as writen folk biforn
 Ne neuer siþ þe firste man was born 552
 Ne coupe man by twenty þousand part
 Contrefete þe sophemes of his art
 Ne were worþy to vnbokel his galoche
 Ther doublenes of feynyng schold approche 556
 Ne so coupe þankyn a knight as he did me
 His maner was an heuen for to see
 To eny womman were sche neuer so wys
 So peynteth he and kembeth poynt deuys 560
 As wel his wordes as his continuaunce
 And I so loued him for his obeisaunce



SIX-TEXT 495

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 353

As him god woot ne neuer schal nomo
This laste lenger þan a ȝeer or two
That I supposed of him nought but good
But fynally atte laste þus it stood 576
That fortune wolde þat he moste twynne
Out of þe place which þat I was inne
wher me was wo it is no question / [leaf 156, back]
I can nat make of it descripcioun 580
For o þing dar I telle boldely
I know what is þe peyne of deth þerby
which harm I felt for he ne mighte bylene
So on a day of me he took his leue 584
So sorwful eek þat I went verrayly
That he had feled als moche as I
whan þat I herd him speke and saugh his hewe
But napeles I þought he was vntrewe 588
And eek þat he schulde repeire aȝeyn
wipinne a litel while soþ to seyn
And resoun wold eek þat he moste go : for his honour
Wher-for I wold not ben aȝein his honour [spurious] 592
Than I made vertu of necessite
And took it wel seþens it moste be
As I best might I had for him my sorwe
And took him by þe hand seint Iohn to borwe 596
And sayde þus / lo I am ȝour al
Besuch as I haue be to ȝou and schal
what he answerd it needeþ nat to reherse
who can best say þan he, who can do werse // 600
whan he hap al wel sayd þan hap he doon
Therfor bihoueþ him a ful long spoon
That schal ete wip a feend þus herd I say
So atte last he moste forþ his way 604
And forth he fleeth til he cam þer him leste
whan it cam him to purpos for to reste
I trow he hadde þilke text in mynde
That alle þing repeyryng to his kynde 608

Gladeþ himself þus sey men as I gesse
Men louen of kynde newefangilnesse
As briddes doon þat men in cage feede
For þeigh þou night and day take of hem heede 612
And straw her cage faire and soft as silk
And ȝeue hem sugre hony breed and mylk
Ȝet right anon as his dore is vppe
he with his feet wil sporne down his cuppe 616

And to þe wode

[Eight leaves are here missing from the MS.]



SIX-TEXT 514
GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 355

[*Brit. Mus. Harl. 7334 begins again, leaf 157.*]

lasse þan a þousand pound he wolde nought haue 1224
Ne gladly for þat somme he wolde not goon
Aurilius wiþ blisful hert anon
Answerde þus. fy on a þousand pound
This wyde world which þat men say is round 1228
I wold it giue if I were lord of it/
This bargeyn is ful dryue for we ben knyht
þe schal be payed trewly by my troupe /
But lokep now for negligence or slouþe 1232
þe taris vs heer no lenger þan to morwe /
Nay quod þis clerk haue her my faith to borwe
To bed is goon aurilius whan him leste
And wel neigh al night he had his reste 1236

what for his labour and his hope of bliese
His woful hert of penaunce had a lisse /
vpon þe morwe whan þat it was day
To breteigne take þei þe righte way 1240
Aurilius and þis magicien biayde
And ben descendid þer þay wol abyde
And þis was as þese bookes me remembre
The colde frosty seisoun of Decembre 1244
Phebus wax old and hewed lyk latoun
That in his hoote declinacioun
Schon as þe burned gold with stremes bright
But now in Capricorn a-doun he light 1248
wher as he schon ful pale I dar wel sayn
The bitter frostes with þe sleet and rayn
Destroyed haþ þe grene in euery 3erd
Ianus sit by þe fuyr wiþ double berd 1252
And drynkep of his bugle horn þe wyn
Biforn him stont þe braun of toskid swyn
And Nowel criep euery lusty man
Aurilius in al þat euer he can 1256
Dop to his maister chier and reuerence
And peyneþ him to doon his diligence
To bringen him out of his peynes smerte
Or wiþ a sword þat he wold alytte his herte 1260
This subtil clerk such rouþe had of þis man
That night and day he spedep him þat he can [traf 157, back]



SIX-TEXT 516
GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 357

His tables tollitaneas forþ he brought
Ful wel corrected ne þer lakked nought
Neiper his collect ne his expans yeeres
Ne his rootes ne his oþer geeres / 1276
As ben his centris & his argumentis
And his proporcionels conuenientis
For her equaciouns in enery þing /
And by his þre speeres in his worching 1280
he knew ful wel how for alluath was schoue
For þe heed of þilk fixe aries aboue
That in þe fourþe speere considred is
Ful subtilly he calkild al þis 1284
whan he had founde his firste mancioun
He knew þe remenaunt by proporcioun
And knew þe arisyng of þis moone wel
And in whos face and terme and enery del 1288
And knew ful wel þe moones mancioun
Acordaunt to his operacioun
And knew also his other obseruaunces
For suche illusiouns and suche meschaunces 1292
As hethen folk vsed in pilke dayes
For which no lenger maked he delayes
But þurgh his magik for a wike or tweye
It semed þat þe rokkes were awaye 1296
Aurilius which 3et dispayred is
wher he schal haue his loue or fare amys
Awayteþ night and day on þis miracle
And whan he knew þat þer was noon obstacle [400/1300] 1300
That voyded were þese rokkes euerich oon
Down to his maistres feet he fel anon
And sayd I wrecched woful aurilius
Thanke 3ou lord and my lady Venus 1304
That me han holpe fro my cares colde /
And to þe temple his way forþ he hap holde
wher as he knew he schold his lady se
And whan he saugh his tyme anon right he 1308

with dredful hert and with ful humble cheere

Salued hap his owne lady deere

My souerayn lady quod þis woful man

whom I most drede and loue as I can 1312

And loþest were of al þis world displese /

Nere it þat I for ȝou haue such desee /

That I most deye her at ȝoure foot auoon

Nought wold I telle how me is wo bygoon 1316

But certes ouþer most I dye or pleyne

ȝe sleen me gultes for verrey peyne

But of my dep þough þat ȝe haue no rouþe

Auyseth ȝow or þat ȝe breke ȝour trouþe 1320

Repenteth ȝow for þilke god aboute

ȝe me sleen by cause þat I ȝou loue

For madame wel ȝe woot what ȝe han hight

Nat þat I chalenge eny þing of right 1324

Of ȝow my souerayn lady but ȝoure grace

But in a gardyn ȝonde at such a place

ȝe wot right wel what ȝe byhighte me

And in myn hond ȝour trouþe plighte ȝe 1328

To loue me best god woot ȝe sayde so

Al be þat I vnworthy am þerto

Ma dame I speke it for thonour of ȝow

More þan to saue myn hertes lif right now 1332

I haue do so as ȝe comaunded me

And if ȝe vouche sauf ȝe may go se

It is agayns þe proces of nature
 And hom sche goþ a sorwful creature
 For verray fere vnnepes may sche go
 Sche wepeþ waylep al a day or tuo 1348
 And swownep þat it roupe was to see
 But why it was to no wight tolde sche
 For out of toune was goon arnegarius
 But to hir self sche spak/ and sayde þus 1352
 wip face pale and with ful sorwful chiere
 In hir compleight as ȝe schul after hiere
 ¶ Allas quod sche on þe fortune I pleyne
 That vnwar, wrapped me hast, in þy cheyno 1356
 Fro which tescape woot I no socour
 Saue oonly dep or elles dishonour
 Oon of þese tuo bihoueth me to chese /
 But napeles ȝet haue I leuer leese 1360
 My lif þan of my body to haue schame
 Or knowe my-selue fals or lese my name /
 And with my dep I may be quyþ I-wys
 Hath þer not many a noble wyf er þis / 1364
 And many a mayden slayn hir-self allas
 Raper þan with her body doon trespas /
 ȝis certeynly lo stories beren witnes
 whan þritty tirauntȝ ful of cursednes 1368
 hadde slayn phidon in athenes atte fest
 Thay comanded his doughtres to arest
 And bryngen hem biforn hem in despit
 And naked to fulfille her foule delyt 1372
 In her fadres blood þey made hem daunce
 vpon þe payment god ȝeue hem meeschaunce
 For which þese woful maydens ful of drede
 Raper þan þey wolde lese her maydenhede [1375/1380] 1376
 They priuely ben stert in to a welle /
 And drenched hemselfen as þe bookes telle
 ¶ They of mecene leet enquere and seeke /
 Of lacidomye fifty maydenes eeke / 1380

On which þay wolden doon her leccherie
 But was þer noon of al þat companye
 was slayn and wiþ a good entente
 Ches raper for to deye þan to assente 1384
 To ben oppressed of hir maydenhede
 why schuld I þan to deyen ben in drede
 ¶ Lo eek þe Tyraunt/ aristoclides
 That loued a mayden heet Stimpthalides 1388
 whan þat hir father slayn was on a night
 vnto dyanes temple goþ sche right
 And hent þe ymage in hir hondes tuo
 Fro which ymage wold sche neuer go 1392
 No wight might of hit/ hir hondes race
 Til sche was slayn right in þe selue place
 Now siþ þat maydens hadde such despit
 To ben defouled with mannes foul delit 1396
 wel aught a wif rather herself to ale
 Than be defouled as it thenkeþ me
 ¶ what schal I seyn of hasdrubaldes wyf
 That at Cartage byraft hir-self þe lyf 1400
 For whan sche saugh þat Romayns wan þe toun
 Sche took hir children alle and skipte a doun
 In to þe fuyr and ches raper to deye
 Than eny romayn dide hir vilonye 1404
 ¶ Haþ nought lucrese slayn herself alas
 At Rome whanne sche oppressid was

SIX-TEXT 520

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALK. Harleian 7334. 361

And seyde my body atte leste way
 Ther schal no wight defoulen if I may
 what schold I mo ensamples her of sayn
 Seppen so many han hemseluen slayn 1420
 wel raper þan þey wolde defouled be /
 I wol conclude þat it is best for me
 To slen myself þan be defouled þus
 I wol be trewe vnto aruegarius 1424
 Or rather sle myself in som manere
 As dede Democionis douȝter deere
 By cause sche wolde nought defouled be /
 O cedasus it is ful gret pite 1428
 To reden how þy doughteren dyed allas
 That slowe hemself for suche maner caas
 As gret a pite was it or wel more
 The theban mayden þat for nichonore 1432
 hir-seluen slough right for such maner wo
 Anoper Theban mayden dede right so
 For oon of macidone had hir oppressed
 Sche with hire dep maydenhede redressed 1436
 what schal I sayn of Niceratis wif
 That for such caas biraft hir self hir lyf
 how trewe eek was cito alcebiades
 his lous. þat rather to dyen ches 1440
 Than for to suffre his body vnburied be
 Lo which a wif was alceste quod sche
 what saip omer of good penelope
 Al grece knowep of hir chastite 1444
 Par di of laodomya is writen þus
 That whan out of Troye was Protheselane
 No lenger wol sche lyue after his day
 The same of noble porcia telle I may 1448
 wipoute brutes kynde sche myȝt not lyue
 To whom sche had al hool hir herte ȝyue
 The parfyt wyfhod of artemesye
 honoured is purgh al þe Barbarie (604/100) 1452

O thena queen þy wifly chastite
 To alle wyues may a mirour be
 [. . . no gap in the MS.: these lines are
 . . . known only in the Ellesmere MS.] 1456
 Thus playned Dorigen a day or tweye
 Purposyng' euer þat' sche wolde deye
 But napeles vpon þe thridde night
 hom cam arueragus þis worþy knight 1460
 And asked hir why þat' sche wept' so sore /
 And sche gan wepe euer lenger þe more
 Allas quod sche þat' euer was I born
 Thus haue I sayd quod sche þus haue I sworn 1464
 And told him al as ȝe han herd biforn
 It' nedep nought' reherse it you no more
 ¶ This housbond wiþ glad chiere in good wise
 Answerd and sayde as I schal ȝou deuyse 1468
 Is þer aught' elles Dorigen but þis
 Nay nay quod sche god me so rede & wis
 This is to moche and it were goddes wille
 ȝe wyf quod he let' slepe þat' may be stille 1472
 It' may be wel peraunter ȝet' to day
 ȝe schal ȝour troupe holden by my fay
 For god so wisly haue mercy on me
 I hadde wel leuer I-stekid for to be 1476
 For verray loue which I to ȝou haue /
 But' if ȝe scholde ȝour troupe kepe and saue

SIX-TEXT 522

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 363

And bryngeþ hir to such a place anoon
 Thay take her leue and on her wey þey gon
 But þay ne wiste why sche þider went
 He nolde no wight tellen his entent [leaf 164, back] 1492
 [.

 1496
 *no gap in the MS.: these lines are*
 *known only in the Ellesmere MS.]*
 This squyer which þat hight aurelius
 On dorigen þat was so amorous 1500
 Of aduenture happed hire to mete
 Amyd þe toun right in þe quyke strete
 As sche was boun to goon þe wey forþ-right
 Toward þe Gardyn þer as sche had hight 1504
 And he was to þe garlynward also /
 For wel he spyed whan sche wolde go
 Out of hir hous to eny maner place
 But þus þay mette of aduenture or grace 1508
 And he salueth hir with glad entent
 And askith hire whiderward sche went/
 And sche answered half as sche were mad
 vnto þe gardyn as myn housbond bad 1512
 My troupe for to holde allas allas
 Aurilius gan wondren on þis caas
 And in his hert had gret compassioun
 Of hire and of hir lamentacioun 1516
 And of Arueragus þe worþy knight
 That bad hir hold al þat sche hadde hight
 So loþ him was his wif schuld brake hir troupe
 And in his hert he caught of this gret roupe 1520
 Consideryng þe best on euery syde
 That fro his lust ȝet were him leuer abyde
 Than doon so high a cheerliisch wrecchednesse
 Agayns fraunchie of alle gentilesce 1524

For which in fewe wordes sayd he þus
 Madame saith to 3our lord arueragus
 That aȝ I se his grete gentilesse
 To 3ou. and eek I se wel 3our distresse 1528
 That him were leuer haue schame and þat were rouȝe /
 Than 3e to me schulde breke 3oure trouȝe
 I haue wel leuer euer to suffre woo
 Than I departe þe loue bytwix 3ow tuo 1532
 I 3ow releasse madame in to 3our hond
 Quyȝ every seurement and every bond
 That 3e han maad to me as her biforn
 Sith þilke tyme which þat 3e were born [1536] 1536
 My trouȝe I plight I schal 3ow neuer reprene
 Of no byhest and her I take my leue
 As of þe trewest and þe beste wif
 That euer ȝit I knew in al my lyf 1540
 But every wyf be war of hir byhest
 On Dorigen remembreȝ atte lest
 Thus can a squyer doon a gentil dede
 As wel as can a knyght wiȝouten drede 1544
 Sche þankeȝ him vpon hir knees al bare /
 And hoom vnto hir housbond is sche fare /
 And told him al as 3e han herd me sayd
 And be 3e siker he was so wel a-payd 1548
 That it were impossible me to write
 what schuld I lenger of þis caas endite

SIX-TEXT 524

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 365

vnto þis philosophre how schal I doo
 I se no more but þat I am for-doo
 Myn heritage moot I needes selle /
 And ben a begger her may I not duelle 1564
 And schamen al my kynrede in þis place
 But I of him may gete better grace
 But napeles I wol of him assay
 At certeyn dayes ȝeer by ȝer to pay 1568
 And þanke him of his grete curtesye
 My troupe wol I kepe I wol nouȝt lye
 with herte soor he goþ vn to his cofre
 And broughte gold vnto þis philosophre 1572
 The value of fyf hundred pound I gesse
 And him bysecheth of his gentilece (leaf 161, back)
 To graunte him dayes of þe remenaunt
 And sayde maister I dar wel make auaunt 1576
 I fayled neuer of my troupe as ȝit
 For sikerly my dettes schal be quyt
 Towardes ȝow how þat euer I fare
 To goon a begge in my kurtil bare 1580
 But wolde ȝe vouche sauþ vpon seurte
 Tuo ȝer or þre for to respite me
 Than were I wel for elles most I selle
 Myn heritage þer is nomore to telle 1584
 ¶ þis philosophre sobrelly answerde /
 And seyde þus whan he þese wordes herde
 Haue I not holden couenaunt vnto þe :
 ȝis certes wel and trewely quod he / 1588
 Hastow nouȝt had þy lady as þe liketh
 No no quod he and sorwfully he sikeþ
 what was þe cause tel me if þou can
 Aurilius his tale anon bygan 1592
 And told him al as ȝe han herd bifore
 It needeþ nat to ȝou reherse it more
 he sayde arueragus of gentilece
 had leuer dye in sorwe and in distresse 1596

Than þat his wyf were of hir troupe fals
 The sorwe of Dorigen he tolde him als
 how loþ hir was to ben a wikked wikked wyf
 And þat sche leuer had han lost hir lyf 1600
 And þat hir troupe sche swor þurgh Innocence
 Sche neuer erst hadde herd speke of apparence
 That made me han of hir so gret pyte
 By cause hir housebond sente hir to me 1604
 And right as frely sent I hir to him agayn
 þis is al and som þer is no more to sayn
 The philosopher answerde leue broþer
 Euerich of 3ow dede gentilly to oþer 1608
 Thow art a squyer and he is a knight
 But god forbede for his blisful might
 But if a clerk couþe doon as gentil dede
 As wel as eny of 3ou it is no drede [1612] 1612
 Sire I relese þe þy þousond pound
 As þou right now were crope out of þe ground
 Ne neuer er now ne haddest knowen me
 For sire I wol not take a peny of þe 1616
 For al my craft ne nought for my trauayle /
 Thou hast y-payed wel for my vitayle /
 It is ynough and far wel haue good day
 And took his hors and forþ he goþ his way 1620
 ¶ Lordynges þis questioun wolde I axe now /
 which was þe moste free as þinketh 3ow



¶ And here bygynneth þe Secounde Nounes tale /

[*No gap in the MS.*]

[*THE PROEM.*]

(1)

THe minister and þe norice vnto vices 1
which þat men clepe in englisch ydelnesse /
The porter at þe gates is of delicia
-To eschiewe and by her contrary hire oppresse
That is to say by leful besynesse / 5
wel oughte we to do al oure entente
Lest þat þe fend þurgh ydelnesse vs hente / 7

(2)

For he þat wip his þousand cordes slye / 8
Continuelly vs wayteth to byclappe/
whan he may man in ydelnes espye /
He can so lightly cacche him in his trappe /
Til þat a man be hent right by þe lappe / 12
He is nouȝt war þe fend hap him in honde /
wel oughte we wirche and ydelnes wipstonde / 14

(3)

And þough men dredde neuer for to deye 15
ȝet seen men wel by resoun douteles
That ydelnes is roten sloggardye
Of which þer cometh neuer good encrees
And sin þat slouþ her holdeþ in a lees 19
Oonly to sleep and for to ete and drynke
And to deuoure al þat oþer swynke 21

(4)

And for to put vs from such yelaine 142
 That cause is of so gret confusioun
 I haue her doen my faithful busynes [142-143, same]
 After þe legende in translacioun
 Right of þe glorious lif and passioun 26
 Thou with þi garland wrought wip rose and lylye
 The mene I mayde and martir cecilie 28

(5)

And þou þat flour of virgines art alle / ~~translacioun of nature~~ 29
 Of whom þat Bernard lust so wel to write /
 To þe at my bygynnyng first I calle
 Thou comfort of vs wrecches do me endite
 Thy maydenes deþ þat when þurgh hire merite 33
 Theternal lif and of þe feend victorie
 As man may after reden in hir storie 35

(6)

Thou mayde and moder doughter of þi sone / 36
 Thou welle of mercy synful soules cure
 In whom þat god of bountes chees to wone
 Thou humble and hegh ouer euery creature
 Thou noblest so ferloþ oure nature 40
 That no dylow þe maker hal of kynde /



SIX-TEXT 529
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 369

(8)

Assembled is in þy magnificence 50
with mercy goodnes and with such pitee
That þou þat art þe soun of excellence
But oonly helpist hem þat prayen þe
But often tyme of þy benignite 54
Ful frely er þat men þin help biseche
Thou gost biforn and art her lyfes leche / 56

(9)

Now help þou meke and blisful faire mayde / 57
Me flemed wrecche in þis desert of galle
Thank on þe womman canace þat sayde
That whelpes ete some of þe crommes alle
That from her lordes table ben I-falle / 61
And þough þat I vnworthy sone of Eue (leaf 163)
Be synful / ȝett accepte my bileue 63

(10)

And for þat faith is deth wipouten werkis 64
So for to werken ȝiue me witt and space /
That I be quit fro þennes þat most derk is
O þou þat art so fair and ful of grace /
Be myn aduocat in þat hihe place / 68
Ther as wipouten ende is songe Osanne
Thou cristes moder douȝter deere of Anne 70

(11)

And of þi light my soule in prison light 71
That troubled is by þe contagioun
Of my body and also by þe wight
Of euerich lust and fals affeccoun
O heuen of refuyt O sauacioun 75
Of hem þat ben in sorwe and in destresse /
Now help for to my werk I wil me dresse / 77

(12)

3et pray I 3ou þat reden þat I write /	78
Forȝeue me þat I doo no diligence	
This ilke story subtilly to endite	
For boþe haue I þe wordes and sentence	
Of him þat at þe seintes reuerence	82
The story wroot and folwen hir legende /	
And pray 3ow þat 3e wol my werk amende /	84

(13) [*THE TALE.*]

Ffirst wol I 3ow þe name of seint Cecile	85
Expounes as men may in hir story se /	
It is to say on englisch heuenes lilie	
For pure chastenesse of virginite	
Or for sche witnessse hadde of honeste	89
And grene of conscience and of good fame /	
The soote sauour lilie was her name	91

(14)

Or cecile is to say þe way of blynde /	92
For sche ensample was by way of techynge	
Or elles Cecily as I writen fynde	
Is ioyned by a maner of conioynyng	
Of heuen and lya and here in figuryng	96
The heuen is sette for þought of holynesse /	

98

(16)

For leas peple in englissh is to say	106
And right as men may in þe heuen see	
The sonne and moone and sterres euery way	
Right so men gostly in þis mayden free	
Seen of faip þe magnanimité /	110
And eek þe clernes hool of sapience	
And sondry werkes bright of excellence	112

(17)

And right so as þese filosofres wryte	113
That heuen is swyft and round and eek brennyng	
Right so was faire Cecily þe whyte	
Ful swyft and besy euer in good werkynge /	
And round and hool in good perseueryng	117
And brennyng euer in charite ful bright	
Now haue I 3ow declared what sche hight	119

(18)

This mayden bright Cecilye as hir lyf saip	120
was comen of Romaine and of noble kynde /	
And from hir cradel vp fostred in þe faip	
Of crist and bar his gospel in hir mynde	
Sche neuer cessed as I writen fynde	124
Of hire prayer and god to loue and drede	
Byseching him to kepe hir maydenhede	126

(19)

And whan þis mayde schuld vnto a man	127
Y-wedded be. þat was ful 3ong of age	
which þat I-cleped was walirian	
And day was comen of hir mariage	
Sche ful deuout and humble in hir currage	131
vnder hir robe of gold þat sat ful faire	
Hadde next hir fleisch I-clad hir in an heire	133

(20)

And whil þe organs made melodie /		134
To god alloon in herte þus sang' sche /		
O lord my soule and eek' my body gye		
Vnwemmed . lest' þat I confounded be /		
And for his loue þat deyde vpon a tre	(100/104)	138
Euery secound or þridde day sche faste		
Ay biddynge in hire orisouns ful faste /		140

(21)

The nyght' cam and to bedde most' sche goon		141
with hir housbond as oft' is þe manere		
And priuely to him sche sayde anon		
O swete and wel biloued spouse deere /		
Ther is a counseil and 3e wold it heere /		145
which þat' right' feyn I wold vnto 3ou saye		
So that' 3e swere 3e schul it not' bywraye		147

(22)

Valirian gan fast/ vnto hir swere		148
That' for no caas ne þing' þat' mighte be		
he scholde neuer mo bywreye hire		
And þanne at' erst' þus sayde sche		
I haue an aungel which þat' loueþ me		152
That' wiþ gret' lous wher so I wake or alepe		

(24)

Valirian corrected as god wolde /	162
Answerde agayn if I schal truste þe /	
Let me þat aungel se and him biholde	
And if þat it a verray aungel be /	
Than wol I doon as þou hast prayed me	166
And if þou loue anoper man forsoþe	
Right wiþ þis swerd þan wol I alse 3ou boþe /	168

(25)

Cecilie answerd anon right in þis wise	169
If þat 3ow list þe aungel schul 3e see	
So that 3e trowe on crist and 3ou baptise	
Gop forþ to Via apia quod sche /	
That fro þis toun ne stant but myles þre	173
And to þe pore folkes þat þer duella	
Saith hem right þus. as þat I schal 3ou telle /	175

(26)

Telle hem I cecilie. 3ow vnto hem sent	176
To schewen 3ow þe good vrbān þe olde /	[See 164, back]
For secre needes and for good entente /	
And whan þat 3e seint vrbān han byholde /	
Tel him þe wordes which þat I to 3ow tolde /	180
And whan þat he haþ purged 3ou fro synne	
Than schul 3e se þat aungel er 3e twynne /	182

(27)

Valirian is to þe place y-goon	183
And right as him was taught by his lernynge	
He fond þis holy old vrbān anon	
Among þe seyntes buriels lotynge	
And he anon wiþoute tarynge	187
Did his message and whan þat he it tolde	
vrbān for ioye his handes gan vp holde	189

(28)

The teres from his eyzen let he falle	190
Almyzty lord O. ihū crist quod he /	
Sower of chaste counseil herde of vs alle	
The fruyt of pilke seed of chastite	
That þou hast sowe to Cecilie tak to þe	194
loo lik a busy bee wipouten gyle /	
The serueþ ay þin owne þral Cecile	196

(29)

For pilke spouse þat sche took right now	197
Ful lyk a fers lyoun sche sendeþ here	
As meek as euer was eny lamb to þow	
And wip þat word anon þer gan appere /	
An old man clad in white cloþes clere	201
That had a book wip lettres of gold in honde /	
And gan to-forn Valirian to stonde /	203

(30)

Valirian as deed fyl down for drede	204
whan he him say / and he him vp hente þo	
And on his book right þus he gan to rede /	
O lord. o feith oon god wipouten mo	
On cristendom and oon fader of alle also	208
Abouen alle and ouer alle euery where	

(32)

<p>Valirian goþ home and firt Cecilie wipinne his chambre with an aungel stonde / This aungel had of Roses and of lilie Corounes tuo þe which he bar in honde And first to Cecilie as I vnderstonde he 3af þat oon and after can he take / That oper to valerian hir make</p>	<p>218 [leaf 100] 222 224</p>
--	--

(33)

<p>Wip body clene and wip vnwemmed þought kepeþ ay wel þese corounes þre Fro paradys to 3ou I haue hem brought Ne neuer moo ne schul þey roten be Ne leese here soote sauour trusteþ me Ne neuer wight schal seen hem wip his ye But/ he be chast and hate vilonye</p>	<p>225 229 231</p>
---	---

(34)

<p>And þou valirian for þou so soone Assentedist to good counseil also Say what þe list and þou schalt haue þi boone I haue a broþer quod Valirian þo That in þis world I loue no man so I pray 3ow þat my broþer may haue grace To knowe þe troupe as I doo in þis place</p>	<p>232 236 238</p>
--	---

(35)

<p>The aungel sayde god liketh þy request And hope with þe palme of martirdom 3e schullen come vnto his blisful feste / And with þat word tiburce his broþer com And whan þat he þe sauour vndernom which þat þe roses and þe lilies cast wipinne hir hert/ he gan to wondre fast /</p>	<p>239 243 245</p>
--	---

(36)

And sayde I wendre þis tyme of þe ȝer 246
 whennes þat soote sauour comeþ so
 Of Rose and lilies þat I smelle her
 For þough I had hem in myn hondes tuo
 The sauour might in me no depper go 250
 The swete smel þat in myn hert I fynde
 Hath chaunged me al in anoþer kynde 252

(37)

Valirian sayd tuo corouns haue we 253
 Snow whyt and rose reed þat schinen cleere /
 whiche þat þine eyzen han no might to see /
 And þou smellest hem þurgh my prayere
 So schalt þou seen hem my lieue broþere deere 257
 If so be þou wilt wiþouten slouþe
 Bilieuen aright and knowen verray trouthe / 259

(38)

Tyburce answerde says þou þus to me [fwd 145, back] 260
 In soþenes or in drem I herkne þis
 In dremes quod valirian han we be
 Vnto þis tyme broþer myn I-wys
 As now at erst in troupe oure duellyng is 264
 how wost þou þis quod tyburce and in what wise

(40)

The palme of martirdom for to receyue /	274
Saynt Cecilie fulfilled of goddes gifte	
The world and eek hir chamber gan sche weyue /	
witnes tyburces and Cecilies schrifte	
To whiche god of his bounte wolde schifte	278
Corounes tuo of floures wel smellynge	
And made his aungel home þe croune brynge	280

(41)

The mayde hap brought þis men to blisse aboue /	281
The world hap wist what it is worþ certeyn .	
Denocioun of chastite to loue	
Tho schewed him Cecilie al open and pleyn	
That alle ydoles nys but þing in veyn	285
For þay ben doumbe and þerto þey ben deue	
And chargeþ him his ydoles for to leue	287

(42)

Who so troweþ not þis a best he is	288
Quod tyburce if þat I schal not lye	
And sche gan kisse his brest þat herde þis	
And was ful glad he couþe trouþe espye	
This day I take þe for myn allye	292
Sayde þis blisful faire mayde deere /	
And after þat sche sayde as ȝe may heere	294

(43)

Lo right so as þe loue of crist/ quod sche	295
Made me þy brotheres wyf right in þat wyse	
Anoon for myn allye heer take I þe /	
Sin þat þou wilt thyne ydoles despise	[1000/1005]
Go with þi broþer now and þe baptise	299
And make þe clene so þat þou mowe biholde	
The aungeles face of which þy broþer tolde	301

(44)

Tyburce answerde and sayde broþer dere/ 302
 First tel me whider I schal and to what man
 To whom quod he / com forth with good cheere /
 I wol þe lede vnto þe pope vrbā
 Til vrbā broþer myn quod valirian 306
 Quod tyburce wilt þou me þider lede /
 Me þenkep þat it were a wonder dede / 308

(45)

Ne menist þou nat vrbā quod he þo 309
 That is so ofte dampned to be deed
 And woneþ in halkes alway to and fro
 And dar nouȝt oones putte forþ his heed
 Men schold him brenne in a fuyr so reed 313
 If he were founde or if men might him spye
 And we also to bere him companye 315

(46)

And whil we seken þilke diuinite 316
 That is I-hyd in heuen priuely
 Algate I-brent in þis world schal we be
 To whom Cecilie answerde bodyly
 Men mighten wel and skilfully 320
 This lyf to lese myn oughne dere brother

322

(48)

By word and miracle hihe goddes sone	330
whan he was in þis world declared heere /	
That þer was oper lyf þer men may wone /	
To whom answerde Tyburce of suster deere	
Ne seydest þou right now in þis manere	334
Ther nys but oo god. o .lord. in soþfastnesse	
And now of þre how maystow bere witnessse	[U100, 22] 336

(49)

That schal I telle quod sche er þat I go	337
Right as a man hap sapiences þre	
Memorie eyen and intellect also	
So in oo being in diuinite	
Thre persones may þer right wel be	341
Tho gan sche him ful besily to preche /	
Of cristes come and of his peynes teche /	343

(50)

And many pointes of his passioun	344
how goddes sone in þis world was wiþholde	
To doon mankynde pleyn remissioun	
That was I-bounde in synne and cares colde /	
Al þis þing sche vnto Tyburce tolde /	348
And after þis thiburce in good entente	
wiþ valirian to pope vrban he wente /	350

(51)

That þanked god and wiþ glad hert and light	351
he cristened him and made him in þat place /	
Parfyt in his lernynge goddes knyght	
And after þis thiburce gat such grace /	
That euery day he say in tyme and space /	355
The sungel of god and euery maner boone /	
That he god asked / it were sped ful soone	357

32.

It were to hard by us to sayne 358
 How many wronges he for hem wronged
 But alle that in hem schyned and shyned
 The wronging of þe town of Rome hem soughte
 And hem by hem almeke þe prefect broughte 362
 which hem appoynted and knew alle here entente
 And to þe ymage of Iherus hem sente 364

(53)

And saide who-so wil not sacrifice 365
 Swope of his bened þis my sentence heere
 Anon þese martires þat I þou deuyned
 Oon maximus þat was an officer /
 Of þe prefectes and his counceillere / 369
 hem hent. and whan he forþ þe seyntes ladde
 him self he wept for pite þat he hadde / 371

(54)

Whan maximus had herd þe seintes lore 372
 he gat him of his tormentoures leue
 And had hem to his hous wipouten more [leaf 147]
 And with her preching' er þat it were eue
 Thay gonne fro þe tormentoures to reue 376
 And fro maxime and fro his folk' echoone



SIX-TEXT 541
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7394. 381

(56)

3e han forsoþe y-doon a greet batayle / 386
3oure cours is doon 3oure faith han 3e conserved
Gop to þe coroun of lyf þat may not fayle /
The rightful iugge which þat 3e han serued
Schal 3ene it 3ow as 3e han it deserued 390
And whan þis þing was sayd as I deuyse
Men ladde hem forþ to doon þe sacrifice / 392

(57)

But/ whan þey were to þe place y-brouȝt 393
To telle schortly þe conclusioun
They nolde encense ne sacrifice right nough
But on her knees þey setten hem adoun
wip humble hert and sad deuocioun 397
And lesten boþe her heede in þe place
here soules wenten to þe king of grace / 399

(58)

This maximus þat say þis king betyde / 400
wip pitous teeres tolde it anon right
That he here soules saugh to heuen glyde
with aungels ful of clernes and of light
And with his word conuerted many a wight 404
For which almachius dede him so bete
with whippes of leed til he his lif gan lete / 406

(59)

Cecilie him took and buried him anon 407
By Thiburce and valirian softly
wipinne hire berieng place vnder þe stoon
And after þis almachius hastily
Bad his ministres fecchen openly 411
Cecilie. so þat sche might in his presence (leaf 167, bish)
Doon sacrifice and Iubiter encense / 413

(60)

But þæt cometh at hir wite late 414
 wepeth in sorre and queth in credence
 Thus hir wite and cryden more and more
 Crist goddes soue withouten difference
 Is verrey god þis is al oore sentence 418
 That in þæt god a sownour him so sette
 This wille oon this we knowen þough we sterte 420

(61)

Almachius þæt heard of þis doyng 421
 Bad sechen Cecilie þæt he might hir se
 And alþer first to þis was his axinge
 what maier woman art þou quod he
 I am a gentil woman born quod sche 425
 I art þe quod he thought þe it grene
 Of þi religioun and of þi bylese / 427

(62)

3e han bygonne your questioun folly 428
 Quod sche þæt wolden tuo answers conclud /
 In so demaunde 3e axen lewedly
 Almache answerde to þæt similitude
 Of whens comest þin answering so rude 432
 Of whens quod sche whan sche was I-freyned

(64)

Ful wrongfully bygan þou quod he /	442
And ȝet in wrongt is þy perseueraunce	
wostow nough how oure mighty princes fre	
han þus comaunded and maad ordinaunce	
That euery cristen wight schal haue penaunce /	446
But if þat he his cristendom wipseye	
And goon al quyt if he wil it reneye /	448

(65)

¶ Ȝoure princes erre as Ȝoure nobleye dop	449
Quop þo Cecilie and with a wood sentence /	(leaf 185)
Ȝe make vs gulty and it is nouȝt soþ	
For Ȝe þat knowen wel oure Innocence	
For as moche as we doon reuerence /	453
To crist and for we bere a cristen name	
Ȝe putten on vs a crym and eek a blame /	455

(66)

But we þat knowen þilke name so	456
For vertuous we may it not wipseye	
Almache sayde cheese oon of þese tuo	
Do sacrifice and cristendom reneye	
þat þou now now eschapen by þat weye	460
At which þe holy bliaful faire mayde /	
Gan for to laughe and to þe Iugge sayde /	462

(67)

O Iugge confus in þis nycete	463
wilt þou þat I refuse Innocence	
To make me a wikked wight quod sche /	
lo he dissimuleþ heer in audience	
he starith and woodith in his aduertence	467
To whom almachius sayde vnseely wrecche /	
Ne wostow nought how fer my might may strecche	469

1. Introduction	1
2. Objectives	2
3. Scope	3
4. Definitions	4
5. Methodology	5
6. Results	6
7. Discussion	7
8. Conclusion	8
9. References	9
10. Appendix	10
11. Glossary	11
12. Bibliography	12
13. Index	13
14. Summary	14
15. Acknowledgments	15
16. Appendix A	16
17. Appendix B	17
18. Appendix C	18
19. Appendix D	19
20. Appendix E	20
21. Appendix F	21
22. Appendix G	22
23. Appendix H	23
24. Appendix I	24
25. Appendix J	25
26. Appendix K	26
27. Appendix L	27
28. Appendix M	28
29. Appendix N	29
30. Appendix O	30
31. Appendix P	31
32. Appendix Q	32
33. Appendix R	33
34. Appendix S	34
35. Appendix T	35
36. Appendix U	36
37. Appendix V	37
38. Appendix W	38
39. Appendix X	39
40. Appendix Y	40
41. Appendix Z	41
42. Appendix AA	42
43. Appendix AB	43
44. Appendix AC	44
45. Appendix AD	45
46. Appendix AE	46
47. Appendix AF	47
48. Appendix AG	48
49. Appendix AH	49
50. Appendix AI	50
51. Appendix AJ	51
52. Appendix AK	52
53. Appendix AL	53
54. Appendix AM	54
55. Appendix AN	55
56. Appendix AO	56
57. Appendix AP	57
58. Appendix AQ	58
59. Appendix AR	59
60. Appendix AS	60
61. Appendix AT	61
62. Appendix AU	62
63. Appendix AV	63
64. Appendix AW	64
65. Appendix AX	65
66. Appendix AY	66
67. Appendix AZ	67
68. Appendix BA	68
69. Appendix BB	69
70. Appendix BC	70
71. Appendix BD	71
72. Appendix BE	72
73. Appendix BF	73
74. Appendix BG	74
75. Appendix BH	75
76. Appendix BI	76
77. Appendix BJ	77
78. Appendix BK	78
79. Appendix BL	79
80. Appendix BM	80
81. Appendix BN	81
82. Appendix BO	82
83. Appendix BP	83
84. Appendix BQ	84
85. Appendix BR	85
86. Appendix BS	86
87. Appendix BT	87
88. Appendix BU	88
89. Appendix BV	89
90. Appendix BW	90
91. Appendix BX	91
92. Appendix BY	92
93. Appendix BZ	93
94. Appendix CA	94
95. Appendix CB	95
96. Appendix CC	96
97. Appendix CD	97
98. Appendix CE	98
99. Appendix CF	99
100. Appendix CG	100





SIX-TEXT 545
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 385

(72)

Ther lakketh no þing to þin outer eyen 498
That þou art blynd for þing þat we seen alle
That it is stoon þat men may wel aspien /
That ilke stoon a god þou wilt it calle /
I rede þe let þin hond vpon it falle / 502
And tast it wel and stoon þou schalt it fynde
Sip þat þou seest / not wip þin eyzen blynde 504

(73)

IT is a schame þat þe poeple schal 505
So scorne þe and laughe at þi folye /
For comunly men woot it wel ouer al
That mighty god is in his heuen hye
And þese ymages wel þou mayst espie 509
To þe ne to himself may nought profyte
For in effect. þey ben nouȝt worþ a myte 511

(74)

Thise wordes and such oþer sayde sche 512
And he wax wroþ and bad men schold hir lede
hom to hir hous / and in hir hous quod he /
Brenne hir right in a bath of flammes rede /
And as he bad right so was doon þe dede / 516
For in a bath þay gonne hir faste schetten
And nyght and day great fuyr þey vnder betten 518

(75)

The longe night and eek a day also 519
For al þe fuyr and eek þe bapen hete
Sche sat al cold and felte of no woo
Hit made hir not. oon drope for to swete
But in þat bath hir lif sche moste lete 523
For he almachius with ful wikke entente
To sleen hir in þe bap his sondes sente 525

(76)

Thre strokes in þe nek he smot hir þo [leaf 100] 526
 The tormentour but for no maner chaunce /
 he might nouȝt smyte hir faire necke a-tuo /
 And for þer was þat tyme an ordinaunce
 That no man scholde do man such penaunce 530
 The ferþe strok to smyten softe or sore /
 This tormentour ne dorste do no more / 532

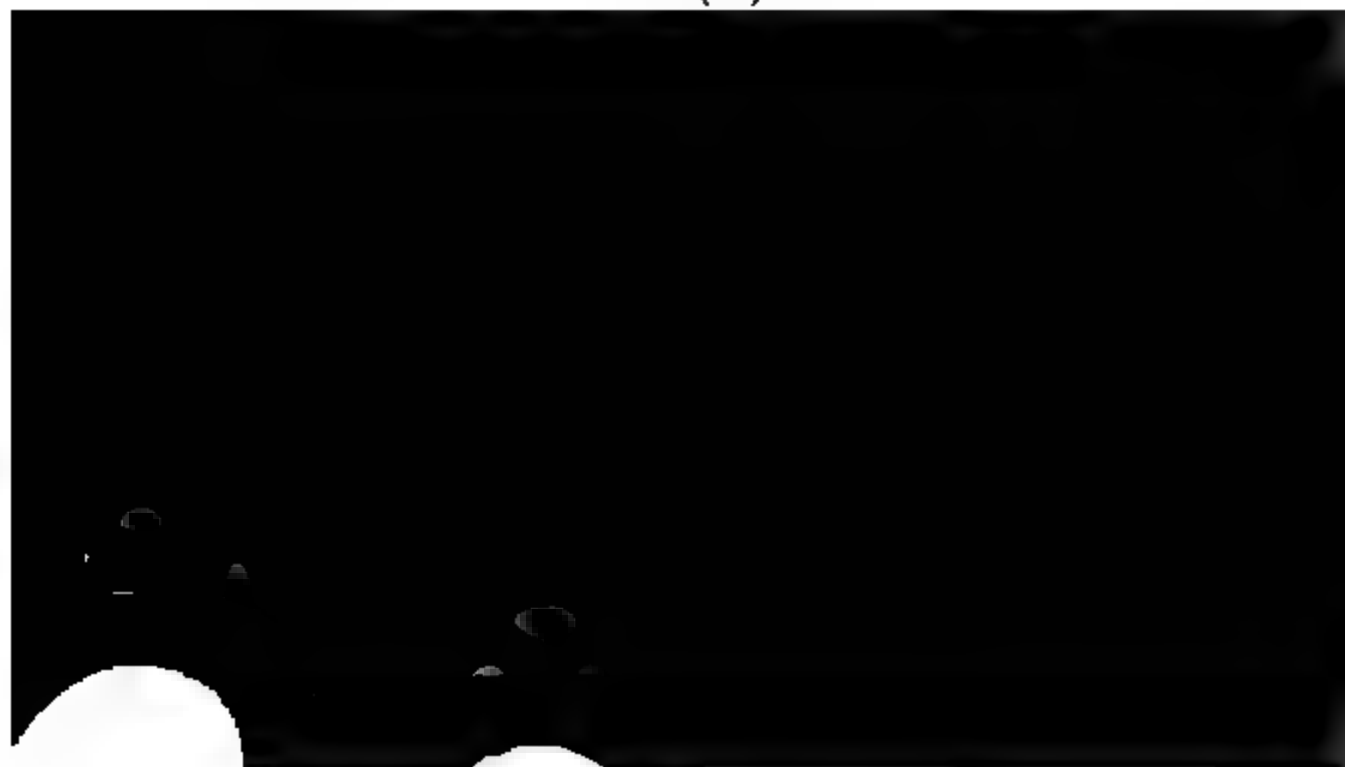
(77)

But half deed with hir nakke coruen there 533
 he laft hir lye and on his way he went
 The cristen folk which þat about hir were /
 wip scheetes han þe body ful faire y-hent
 þre dayes lyued sche in þis torment 537
 And neuer cessed hem þe faith to teche /
 That sche had suffred hem sche gan to preche 539

(78)

And hem sche ȝaf hir moebles and hir þing 540
 And to þe pope Vrban bytook hem þo /
 And sayd I axe þis of heuen kyng
 To haue respit þre dayes and no mo
 To recomende to ȝow er þat I go 544
 These soules lo and þat I mighte do wirche
 heer of myn hous perpetually a chirche 546

(79)



And here bygynneth þe tale of þe Chanouns ȝeman

¶ prologus

Whan ended was þe lif/ of seynt Cecile
 Er we fully had riden fyue myle
 At/ Boughtoun vnder blee vs gan atake
 A man þat cloped was in clopes blake 557
 And vnder þat he had a whit surplice
 his hakeney þat was a pomely grice
 So swete þat it wonder was to se
 It semed he hadde priked myles þre / 561
 The hors eek þat his ȝyman rood vpon (leaf 100, back)
 So swette þat vnneþes might he goon
 Aboute þe peytrel stood þe foom ful hye
 he was of foom as flekked as a pye 565
 A male twayfold on his croper lay
 It semed þat he caried litel array
 And light for somer rood þis worpy man
 And in myn herte wondren I bigan 569
 what þat he was til þat I vnderatood
 how þat his cloke was sowed vnto his hood
 For which whan I long had auysed me /
 I demed him som chanoun for to be 573
 his hat heng at his bak down by a laas
 For he had riden more þan trot or pass /
 He had I-pryked lik as he were wood
 A cloote leef he had vnder his hood 577
 For swoot and for to kepe his heed from hete
 But it was ioys for to se him swete
 His forhed dropped as a stillatorie
 were ful of plantayn and of peritorie 581

And whanne þat he was com he gan to crie
 God saue quod he þis ioly compaignye/
 Fast haue I priked quod he for ȝour sake /
 By cause þat I wolde ȝou atake 585
 To ryden in þis mery compaignye /
 his ȝeman eek was ful of curtesye /
 He seid sires now in þe morwe tyde /
 Out of ȝour ostelry I saugh ȝou ryde / 589
 And warned heer my lord and my souerayn
 which þat to ryden with ȝow is ful fayn
 For his desport/ he loueth daliaunce
 Frend for þy warnyng god ȝeue þe good chaunce 593
 Sayde oure host for certes it wolde seme
 Thy lord were wys and so I may wel deme
 he is ful iocound also dar I leye
 Can he ought telle a mery tale or tweye 597
 with which he glade may þis compaignye
 who sire my lord / ȝe ȝe / wiþoute lye /
 He can of merthe and eek of Iolite [161/170]
 Not but ynough also sir trusteþ me 601
 And ȝe him knewe / as wel as do I
 ȝe wolde wonder how wel and þristily
 he couþe werke and þat in sondry wise
 he hap take on him many sondry emprise / 605
 which were ful hard for eny þat is heere
 To bringe aboute but þay of him it leere /
 As homely as he ryt amonges ȝow
 If ȝe him knewe it wolde be ȝoure prow 609
 ȝe nolde nought forgon his aqueyntaunce
 For moche good I dar lay in balaunce
 Al þat haue in my possessioun
 he is a man of heigh discressioun 613
 I warne ȝow wel he is a passyng man
 ¶ wel quod our oost/ I pray þe tel me þan
 Is he a clerk / or noon tel what he is
 Nay he is gretter þan a clerk I-wis! 617



SIX-TEXT 549

GROUP G. § 2. 2ND NUN-CAN.-YEO. LINK. Harleian 7334. 389

Sayde þe ȝyman and in wordes fewe /
Ost and of his craft somewhat I wil ȝou schewe
I say my lord can such subtilite
But al his craft ȝe may nought wite of me / 621
And somewhat helpe I ȝit to his worchyng
That al þis ground on which we ben ridyng
Til þat we comen to Caunterbury toun
he couþe al clene turnen vp so down 625
And pause it al of siluer and of gold
And whan þis ȝeman hadde þus I-told
vnto oure oost / he seyde benedicite
This is wonder merueylous to me 629
Syn þat þis lord is of so heigh prudence
By cause of which men schuld him reuerence /
That of his worship rekkeþ he so lite
his ouer slop it is not worþ a myte 633
As in effect / to him so mot / I go
It is al bawdy and to-tore also
why is þi lord so slottisch I þe preye
And is of power better cloþis to beye / 637
If þat his dede accorde with þy speche / (leaf 170, back)
Telle me þat and þat I þe biſeche /
¶ why quod þis ȝyman / wher-to axe ȝe me
God help me so for he schal neuer þe 641
But I wol nought avowe þat I say
And þerfor kep it secre I ȝou pray
he is to wys in faith as I biſene
That at is ouer-don it wil nouȝt preue / 645
a right. as clerkes sein it is a vice
wherfore in þat I holde him lewed and nyce
For whan a man haþ ouer greet a witte
Ful ofte him happeth to mysveen itte 649
So doth my lord and þat me greueþ sore
God it amende I can say now nomore
Ther-of no fore good ȝeman quod oure Ost
Syn of þe connyng of þi lord þou west 653

Tel how he doþ I pray þe hertily
 Sin þat he is so crafty and so sly
 wher duellen ȝe if it to telle be
 In þe subarbes of a toun quod he / 657
 lurking in hirnes and in lanes blynde
 wher as þese robbours and þeues by kynde /
 holden here prive ferful residence
 As þay þat dor nouȝt schewen her presence / 661
 So faren we if I schal say þe soþe
 Now quod oure ost ȝit let me talke toþe
 why artow discoloured on þy face
 Peter quod he god ȝiue it harde grace 665
 I am so vsed in þe fuyr to blowe
 That it haþ chaunged my colour I trowe
 I am not wont in no mirour to prie
 But swynke sore and lerne to multiplie 669
 we blondren euer and pouren in þe fuyr
 And for al þat we faile of oure desir
 For euer we lacken oure conclusioun
 To moche folk we ben illusioun 673
 And borwe gold be it a pound or tuo
 Or ten or twelue or many sommes mo
 And make hem wenen atte leste weye [leaf 171]
 That of a pound we conne make tweye 677
 ȝit is it fals and ay we han good hope
 It for to doon and after it we grope /
 But þat science is so far to bifurn



By cause of þat / he gan so neigh to drawe
his zeman þat he herde al his sawe /
And þus he sayd vnto his zeman þo
Hold now þi pees and spek' no wordes mo 693
For if þou do þou schalt' it' deere aby
Thow sclaudrest' me here in þis companye
And eek discourerst' þat þou schuldest hide
þe quod oure oot tel on what so bytyde 697
Of alle þis thretynge' recche þe nought a myte
In faip quod he no more do I but lite
And whan þis chanoun seiþ it wold not be
But his zeman wold telle his priuete 701
He fledde a way for verray sorwe and schame
A quod þis zeman her schal arise game
Al þat I can anon now wol I telle
Sin he is goon þe foule feend him quelle 705
For neuer her after wol I wiþ him meete
For peny ne for pound I wol byheete
he þat me broughte first' vnto þat game
Er þat he deye sorwe haue he and schame 709
For it is earnest' to me by my fayth
That' fele I wel what' so eny man saith
And ȝet' for al my smert' and al my greef
For al my sorwe and labour and mescheef 713
I couþe neuer leue it in no wise (leaf 171, back)
Now wolde god my wyt' mighte suffise
To tellen al þat' longeþ to þat' art/
But' napeles ȝet' wil I telle ȝou part' 717
Sin þat' my lord is goon I wol nought' spare
Such þing' al þat' I knowe I wol declare

[No break in the MS.]

[THE PREAMBLE.]

¶ Narrat

With þis Chanoun I duelled haue seuen 3er
 And of his science am I neuer þe ner 721
 Al þat I hadde I haue lost þer by
 And god wot/ so hap many mo þan I /
 Ther I was wont to be right freisch and gay
 Of cloþing and of oþer good array / 725
 Now may I were an hose vpon myn heed
 And where my colour was boþe freisch and reed
 Now it is wan and of a leden hewe
 who-so it vseþ sore schal he rewe 729
 And of my swynk 3et blended is myn ye
 Lo such auauntage it is to multiplie
 That slydyng science had me made so bare /
 That I haue no good wher þat euer I fare 733
 And 3it I am endetted so þer by
 Of gold I haue borwed trewely
 That whil I lyue I schal it quite neuer
 lat euery man be war by me for euer 737
 what maner man þat casted him þerto
 If he continue I holde his þrift I-do
 For so help me god þer by schal he not wynne
 But empte his purs and make his wittes þynne 741
 And whan he þurgh his madnes and folye /
 Hap lost his owne good in ieupardie /
 Than he exciteþ oþer men þer-to
 To leese her good as he himself hap do 745
 For vnto schrewes ioye it is and ese /
 To haue here felawes in peyne and desese /



SIX-TEXT 553

GROUP G. § 3. CAN.-YEOM. PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334 393

Thus was I cones lerned of a clerk /
Of þat no charge I wol speke of oure werk 749
whan we ben þer as we schul exercise
Oure eluyssah craft we seme wonder wyse
Oure termes ben so clergeal and queynte / [leaf 173]
I blowe þe fuyr til þat/ myn herte feynte / 753
what schulde I telle ech proporcioun
Of þinges which þat we werke vp and down
As an fyue or six ounces may wel be /
Of siluer or som oþer quantite 757
And besy me to telle 3ow þe names
Of Orpiment brent bones yren squames
That in to poudre grounden ben ful smal
And in an erthen pot/ how þat put is al 761
And salt y-put in and also paupere
Biforn these poudres þat I speke of heere
And wel I-couered wip a lamp of glas /
And of moche oþer þing what þat þer was 765
And of þe pot. and glas enlutyng
That of þe aier mighte passe no þing
And of þe esy fuyr and smert also
which þat was maad and of þe care and wo 769
That we hadde in oure matiers sublymyng
And amalgamyng and calcenyng
Of quyksiluer y-clept mercury crude /
For alle oure sleightes we can nought conclude / 773
Oure orpiment and sublyment mercurie
Oure grounde litarge / eek on þe porfurye
Of ech of þese of ounces a certayn
Nat helpeþ vs oure labour is in vayn 777
Ne eek oure spirites ascencioun
Ne eek our matiers þat lyn al fix a down
Mowe in oure werkyng vs no þing auayle
For lost is al oure labour and trauayle 781
And al þe cost on twenty deuelway
Is lost also which we vpon it lay

Ther is also ful many anoþer þing
 That is to oure craft appertenynge 785
 Though I by ordre hem here rehearse ne can
 By cause þat I am a lewed man
 Ȝet wil I telle hem as þey come to mynde /
 Though I ne conne nought sette hem in her kynde / 789
 As bol armoniak verdegres boras [See/172, book]
 And sondry vessels maad of erpe and glas
 Oure vrnals and oure descensories
 Viols Croalets. and sublimatories 793
 Concurbites and alembikes eke
 And opere suche deere ynough a leeke
 Nat needith it to rehersen hem alle
 watres rubisyng and boles galle 797
 Arsenek Sal armoniak and brimstoon
 And herbes coupe I telle eek many oon
 As Egrimoigne Valirian and lunarie,
 And opere suche if þat me list to tarie / 801
 Oure lampes brennyng bope night and day
 To bringe aboute oure craft if þat we may
 Oureournies¹ eek of Calcinacioun [1 or fournes]
 And of watres albificacioun 805
 Vnslekked lym salt and glayre of an ey
 Poudres dyuers aissches dong pisse and cley
 Cered poketts. Sal petre vitriole
 And dyuers fuyres maad of woode and cole / 809
 Salt petre. cley. and salt petre.



SIX-TEXT 555

GROUP G. § 3. CAN.-YROM. PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 395

The foure spiritz and þe bodies seven
By ordre as ofte herd I my lord neuen 821
The firste spirit quyksiluer called is
The secound orpiment þe þridde I-wis
Sal armoniac. and þe ferþe bremstoon
The bodies seven eek lo hem heer anoon 825
Sol gold is and luna siluer we þrepe
Mars yren. Mercurie quyksiluer we clepe
Saturnus leed and Iubiter is tyn (leaf 173)
And Venus coper by my fader kyn 829
This cursed craft who so wol excercise
he schal no good han þat may him suffise /
For al þe good he spendeþ þer aboute
he lese schal þer of haue I no doute / 833
who-so þat list/ outen his folye
let him come forþ and lerne multiplie
And euery man that haþ ought in his cofre
Let him appiere and wexe a filosofre 837
Ascauns þat craft is so light to lere /
Nay nay god wot al be he monk or frere
Prest Chanoun or eny oper wight
Though he sit at his book boþe day and night 841
In lernyng of þis eluysch nice lore
Al is in vayn and parde moche more
Is to lerne a lewed man þis subtilte
Fy spek not þerof. for it it wil not be 845
Al couþe he letterure or couþe he noon
As in effect he schal fynd it al oon
For boþe tuo by my sauacioun
Concluden in multiplicacioun 849
I-liche wel whan þay han al y-do /
This is to sayn þay fayle boþe tuo
þet forȝat I to moche rehersayle
Of watres corosif and of lymayle 853
And of bodyes mollificacioun
And also of here enduracioun

Oyles ablucioxn and metal fusible /
 To tellen al wold passen eny bible 857
 That owher is wherfore as for þe best
 Of alle þese names now wil I me rest!
 For as I trowe I haue þow told ynowe
 To reyse a feend al loke he neuer so rowe / 861
 A nay let be þy philosophre stoon
 Elixir clept. we sechen fast' echoon
 For had we him þan were we syker ynough
 But vnto god of heuen I make avow 865
 For al oure craft' whan we han al y-do (leaf 172, back)
 And al oure sleight' he wol not' come vs to
 He hap I-made vs spende moche good
 For sorwe of which almost' we wexen wood 869
 But þat good hope crepeþ in oure hert'
 Supposing' euer þough we sore smerte /
 To ben relieued by him afterward
 Supposing' and hope is scharp and hard 873
 I warne þou wel it' is to seken euer
 That' future temps hap made men disseuere
 In trust þerof' from al þat' euer þey hadde /
 Ȝet of þat' art' þay conne nouȝt' wexe sadde / 877
 For vnto hem it is a bitter swete
 So semeþ it' for nad þay but' a scheete
 which þay mighte wrappe hem in a night
 And a bak' to walke Inne by day light' 881

That wende þay were and stonden on his craft'

And if a man wol aske hem priuely
 why þay ben cloþed so vnþriftily 893
 Right anon þay rounen in his eere /
 And say if þat þay espied were
 Men wold hem slee by cause of here science
 Lo þus þis folk bytrayen Innocence 897
 Passe ouer þis I go my tale vnto
 Er þan þe pot be on þe fuyr y-do
 Of metals with a certeyn quantite
 My lord hem tempred and no man but he 901
 Now he is goon I dar say boldely
 For as men sayn he can doon craftily
 Algate I wot wel he haþ such a name [leaf 176]
 And ȝet ful ofte he rennep in blame 905
 ¶ And wite ȝe how ful ofte it happeþ so
 The pot tobrekeþ and far wel al is goo
 These metals been of so gret violence /
 Oure walles may not make hem resistance 909
 But if þay were wrought of lym and stoon
 Thay percen so and þurgh þe wal þay goon
 And some of hem synken in to þe grounde/
 Thus haue we lost by tymes many a pounde 913
 And some are skatered al þe floor aboute
 Some lepe in to þe roof wiþouten doute
 Though þat þe feend nought in oure sight him schewe /
 I trowe þat he wiþ vs be þat schrewe / 917
 In helle wher þat he is lord and sire
 Nis þer no more woo ne anger ne Ire /
 whan þat oure pot is broke as I haue sayd
 Euery man chyt and halt him euel a payd 921
 Som sayd it was long on þe fuyr-makyng
 Some sayde nay it was on þe blowyng
 Than was I ferd for þat was myn office /
 Straw quod þe þridde / ȝe been lewed and nyce 925
 It was nouȝt tempred as it oughte be /
 Nay quod þe ferþe stynt and herkne me /

By cause oure fuyr was nought y-maad of Beech
 That is þe cause and oþer noon so þeech 929
 I can not telle wher-on it was long
 But wel I woot gret stryf is vs among
 What quod my lord þer is no more to doone /
 Of þese periles I wol be war eft soone / 933
 I am right siker þat þe pot was crased
 Be as be may be 3e no þing amased
 As vsage is let swoope þe floor as swipe
 Pluk vp þour hertes and beþ glad and bliþe 937
 The mullok on an heep I-swoped was
 And on þe floor y-cast a caneuas
 And al þis mulloc in a syue I-þrowe /
 And sifted and y-plukked many a þrowe 941
 Par de quod oon somewhat of oure metal [leaf 174, back]
 3et is þer heer þough þat we haue nought al
 And þough þis þing myshapped haþ a now
 Anoþer tyme it may be wel ynow 945
 Vs moste putte oure good in aduenture
 A marchaun / par de may not ay endure
 Trusteþ me wel in his prosperite
 Somtyme his good is drowned in þe see / 949
 And som tyme comeþ it sauf vn-to þe londe /
 Pees quod my lord þe nexte tyme I wol fonde /
 To bringe oure craft al in anoþer plyte
 And but I do sire let me haue þe wyte 953

Then was defendant's name substituted for plaintiff's



SIX-TEXT 559
GROUP G. § 3. CAN.-YEOM. PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 399

Ne euery appel þat is fair at ye
Ne is not good what so men clappe or crye 965
Right so lo fareth it amonges vs
He þat semeth wisest by Iesus
Is most fool whan it/ cometh to þe preef
And he þat semeth trewest is a þeef 969
That schul ȝe knowe er þa I fro ȝow wende /
By þat I of my tale haue maad an ende /

[No break in the MS.]

[THE TALE.]

Ther is a chanoun of religioun	
Amonges vs wold infecte al a toun	973
Though it as gret were as was Niniue	
Rome alisaundre troye and oþer þre /	
his sleight and his infinite falsnesse /	
Ther couþe no man writen as I gesse	977
Though þat he mighte lyuen a þousand ȝeer	
Of al þis world of falsheed nys his peer	
For in his termes he wol him so wynde	(leaf 178)
And speke his wordes in so sleygh a kynde	981
whan he comune schal wip eny wight	
That he wil make him dote anon right	
But it a feend be as himseluen is	
Ful many a man hath he bygiled er this	985
And wol if þat he lyue may a while /	
And ȝet men ryde and goon ful many a myle /	
Him for to seeke and haue his aqeintaunce /	
Nought knowyng of his false gouernaunce	989

This tale was not oonly told for 3ow
 But eek' for oþer moo 3e woot' wel how 1001
 That' among' cristes apostles twelue /
 Ther was no traytour but' Iudas himselue
 Than why schulde þe remenaunt' haue a blame
 That gultes were by 3ow I say þe same 1005
 Saue oonly þis if' ye wol herkene me
 If' any Iudas in 3oure couent' be
 Remewe him by tyme I 3ow rede /
 If' schame or los may causen eny drede / 1009
 And beþ no þing' displeased I 3ou pray
 But' in þis caas herkenep' what' I say ¶ Narrat
IN londoun was a prest' an annueler
 That' þer In duelled hadde many a 3er 1013
 which was so plesaunt' and so scruisable /
 Vnto þe wyf' wher as he was at table
 That' sche wolde suffre him no þing' for to pay
 For bord ne cloþing' went' he neuer so gay 1017
 And spendyng' siluer had he right' ynough [leaf 175, back]
 Ther-of' no force I wol procede as now
 And telle forþ my tale of' þe chanoun
 That' brought þis prest' to confusioun 1021
 This false chanoun cam vpon a day
 Vnto þe prestes chambre wher he lay
 Biseching' him to lene him a certeyn
 Of' gold and he wold quyt' hit' him ageyn 1025
 Lene me a mark' quod he but' dayes þre /
 And at my day I wil it quyte þe /
 And if' so be þat þou fynde me fals
 Anoper day hong/ me vp by þe hals 1029
 This prest' him took' a mark' and þat' as swithe
 And þis Chanoun him þankid ofte siþe
 And took' his leue and wente forþ his wey
 And atte þridde day brought' his money / 1033
 And to þe prest' he took' þis gold agayn
 wher-of' þis prest' was wonder glad and feyn

Certes quod he no þing annoyþ me
 To lene a man a noble or tuo or þre/ 1037
 Or what þing/ were in my possessioenn
 whan he so trewe is of condicioenn
 That in no wise he breke wol his day
 To such a man I can neuer say nay 1041
 what quod þis chanoun schold I be vntrewe?
 Nay þat were þing I-fallen of þe newe /
 Troupe is a þing þat I wol euer kepe /
 Vnto þat day in which þat I schal crepe 1045
 In to my graue and elles god forbede /
 Bilieueth þis as siker as þour crede /
 God þank I and in good tyme be it sayd
 That þer was neuer man ȝet euel a-payd 1049
 For gold ne siluer þat he to me lent
 Ne neuer falsed in myn hert I ment
 And sire quod he now of my priuete
 Syn ȝe so goodlich haue be vnto me 1053
 And kyþed to me so gret gentilece
 Som-what to quyte wiþ þoure kyndenesse
 I wil ȝow schewe and if ȝow lust/ to lere (leaf 176)
 [I wil ȝow teche pleyndly the manere¹] [—] Is a later hand. 1057
 how I kan werken in philosophie
 Takith good heed. ȝe schul seen wel at ȝe
 That I wol doon a maystry er I go
 ȝe quod þe prest ȝe sire and wol ȝe so 1061



How cristes poeple he may to meschief bringe
God kepe vs from his fals dissimilynge / 1073
what wiste þis prest/ wiþ whom þat he delte
Ne of his harm comyng he no þing felte
O seely prest. o seely Innocent /
wiþ coneytise anoon þou schalt be blent/ 1077
O graceles ful blynd is þy conceyt
No þing art þou war of þe deceyt
which þat þis fox I-schapen haf to þe
his wily wrenches y-wis þou maist not fle 1081
wherfor to go to þe conclusioun
That referreth to þy confusioun
Vnhappy man anoon I wil me hie /
To tellen þin vnwitte and þy folye / 1085
And seek þe falsnesse of þat oper wrecche /
Als ferforþ as my connyng wol strecche /
This Chanoun was my lord 3e wolde weene
Sire ost in faith and by þe heuen queene / 1089
It was anoper chanoun and not he
That can an hundred fold more subtilte
he hath bitrayed folkes many tyme /
Of his falnes it dullith me to ryme 1093
Euer when I speke of his falshede / [leaf 176, line 2]
For schame of him my cheekes waxen reede/
Algates þay bygyne for to glowe /
For reednes haue I noon riȝt/ wel I knowe / 1097
In my viage for fumes diuerse
Of metals which 3e han me herd reherse
Consumed and wasted han my reednesse
Now tak heed of þis chanouns cursednesse / 1101
Sir quod he to þe prest let ȝour man goon
For quyke siluer þat/ we it hadde anoon
And let him bringe ounces tuo or thre /
And whan he cometh as faste schul 3e see / 1105
A wonder þing which 3e saugh neuer er þis
Sire quod þe prest it schal be doon I-wis

He bad his seruaunt' fecche him his þinges
 And he al redy wax at his biddynges 1100
 And went' him forth and com anoon agayu
 wip þis quyk' siluer schortly for to sayn /
 And took' þese ounces þre to þe chanoun
 And he it layde faire and wel a down 1113
 And bad þe seruaunt' coles for to bringe
 That/ he anoon might' go to his werkynge
 The coles right' anoon weren I-fett'
 And þis chanoun took' out a croselett' 1117
 Out of his bosom and schewed it þe prest
 This instrument quod he which þat þou seest
 Tak' in þin hond and put þiself' þer Inne /
 Of þis quyksiluer an vnce and her bygynne 1121
 In þe name of crist to wax a philosophre /
 Ther ben ful fewe whiche þat I wol profre
 To schewe hem þus moche of my science
 For 3e schul seen heer by experience 1123
 That' þis quiksiluer I wol mortifye
 Right' in 3oure sight' anoon wipouten lye /
 And make it as good siluer and as fyn
 As þer is any in 3oure purs or myn 1129
 Or elles wher and make it malleable /
 And elles holdeth. me fals and vnable /
 Amonges folk' for ouer to appeere / [fou/177]
 I haue a powder heer þat' cost me deere 1133



SIX-TEXT 565

GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 405

This prest/ at þis cursed chanouns biddyng
Vppon þe fuyr anoon sette þis þing 1145
And blew þe fuyr and busied him ful fast/
And þis chanoun in to þe croslet cast
A pouder noot I wher-of þat it was
I-maad ouper of chalk ouper of glas 1149
Or som what elles was nouȝt worþ a flye
To blynde wiþ þis prest and bad him hye
These coles for to couchen al aboue
The croialet/. for in tokenyng I þe loue 1153
Quod þis chanoun þin oughne handes tuo
Schal wirche al þing which þat schal be do
Graunt mercy quod þe prest and was ful glad
And couchede coles as þe chanoun bad 1157
And whil he besy was. þis feendly wrecche
This false chanoun þe foule feend him fecche
Out of his bosom took a bechen cole
In which ful subtilly was maad an hole / 1161
And þer-In put was of siluer lymayle /
And vnce and stopped was wiþoute fayle
This hole with wex to kepe þe lymail In /
And vnderstondith þat þis false gyn 1165
was not maad þer but it was maad bifore
And oper þinges I schal telle more /
Her afterward which þat he with him brought
Er he com þere to bigyle him he þought / 1169
And so he dede er þay wente atwynne [leaf 177, back]
Til he had torned him coupe he nought blynne /
It dulleþ me whan þat I of him speke /
On his falshede fayn wold I me wreke / 1173
If I wist how but he is heer and þere
he is so variant he byt no where /
But takeþ heed now sires for goddes loue
He took his cole of which I spak aboue / 1177
And in his hond he bar it priuely
And whiles þe preste couched bysily

The coles as I tolde ȝow er þis
 This chanoun sayde freend ȝe doon amys 1181
 This is not couched as it oughte be
 But soone I schal amenden it quod he /
 Now let me melle þer with but a while /
 For of ȝow haue I pitee by seint Gile 1185
 ȝe been right hoot / I se wel how ȝe swete
 haue heer a cloþ and wyepe a-way þe wete
 And whiles þat þis prest him wyped haas
 This chanoun took his cole I schrewe his faas 1189
 And layd it abouen on þe mydward
 Of þe crosselet / and blew wel afterward
 Til þat þe coles gonne faste brenne
 Now ȝene vs drinke quod þe chanoun þenne / 1193
 Als swipe al schal be wel I vndertake
 Sitte we doun and let vs mery make /
 And whan þe chanouns bechene cole /
 was brent al þe lymail out of þe hole 1197
 In to þe crosselet anon fel a doun
 And so it moste needes by resoun
 Sins it so euen aboue couched was
 But þer of wist þe prest no þing alas 1201
 He demed alle þe colis I-liche goode
 For of þe sleight he no þing vnderstood
 And whan þis alcamister saugh his tyme
 Rys vp sire prest quod he and stonde byme 1205



SIX-TEXT 567

GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 407

But go with þou and come wip þou agayn
The chambur dore schortly for to sayn 1217
Thay opened and schette and wente forþ here weye
And forth with hem þey caryed þe keye /
And comen agayn wipouten eny delay /
what schuld I tary al þe longe day 1221
he took þe chalk/ and schop it in þe wise /
Of an Ingot as I schal þow deuyse /
I say he took out of his oughne sleene
A teyne of siluer eucl mot he cheene 1225
which þat was but an vnce of wight
And takeþ heed now of his cursed slight
he schop his Ingot/ in lengþe and in brede /
Of þis teyne wipouten eny drede 1229
So sleightly þat þe prest it nought aspyde
And in his sleue agayn he gan it hyde /
And fro þe fuyr he took vp his mateere /
And in to þe Ingot put it with mery cheere / 1233
And in to þe watir vessel he it cast
whan þat him list and bad þis prest as fast
Loke what þer is put in þin hond and grope
Thou fynde þer siluer schalt as I hope / 1237
what deuyl of helle schold it elles be /
Schaung of siluer siluer is par de
He putte in his hond and tok vp a teyne
Of siluer fyn and glad in euery veyne : 1241
was þis prest whan he saugh it was so
Goddess blessyng and his modres also
And alle halwes haue þe sire chanoun
Seyde þe prest and I her malicoun 1245
But and þe vouche sauf to teche me [leaf 175, back]
This nobil craft and þis subtilite
I wil be þoure in al þat euer I may
Quod þis chanoun zet wol I make assay 1249
The secound tyme þat þe mow taken heede
And ben expert of þis and in þour neede

Anoper day 3our self in myn absence
 This discipline and þis crafty science 1253
 Let take another vnce quod he þo
 Of quyksiluer wipouten wordes mo
 And do þer with as 3e haue doon er þis
 wip þat oper which now siluer is 1257
 The prest him busyeth in al þat he can
 To doon as þis chanoun þis cursed man
 Comaunded him and faste blew þe fuyr
 For to come to theffect of his desyr 1261
 And þis chanoun right in þe mene while
 Al redy was þis prest eft to bygile
 And for a countenaunce in his hond bar
 An holow stikke tak keep and be war 1265
 In þende of which an vnce and no more
 Of siluer lymail put was as bifore
 was in his cole and stopped wip wax wel
 For to kepe in his limail euery del 1269
 And whil þe prest/ was in his besynesse
 This chanoun with his stikke gan him dresse /
 To him anon and his pouder cast In
 As he dede er þe deuel out of his skyn 1273
 him torne I pray to god for his falshede
 For he was euer fals in oth and deede
 And wip þis stikke alone þe croset
 That was ordeyned wip þat false get 1277



SIX-TEXT 569

GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 409

And to þe chanoun he profred eft soone
Body and good 3e quod þe chanoun soone / 1289
Though pore I be crafty þou schalt me fynde /
I warne þe 3et is þer more byhynde
Is þer any copper her Inne quod he
3e sir quod þis prest I trowe þer be 1293
Ell's go bye som and þat as swithe
Now goode sire go forth þy way and hythe
he went/ his way and with þis copper cam
And þis chanoun it in his hondes nam 1297
And of that copper weyed out but an ounce
Al to simple is my tongue to pronounce
The minister and of his witt þe doubleness /
Of þis chanoun roote of cursednesse 1301
he semed frendly to hem þat knew him nought
But he was fendly bope in werk and þought
It werieþ me to telle of his falsnesse /
And napeles 3it wol I it expresse 1305
To þat entent men may be war þer by
And for noon oþer cause trewely /
he put þis vnce of copper in þe croalet
And on þe fuyr als swithe he haþ it set 1309
And cast in powder and made þe prest/ to blowe
And in his worching for to stoupe lowe
As he dede er and al nas but a iape
Right as him list þe prest he made his ape / 1313
And afterward in þe Ingot he it cast
And in þe panne putte it atte last/
Of water and in he put his owne hond
And in his sleue as 3e byforenhond 1317
herde me telle he had a siluer teyne
he sleighly took it out þis cursed heyne
Vnwitynge þis prest of his false craft/
And in þe pannes botme he haþ it laft 1321
And in þe water rumbleþ to and fro
And wonder priuely took vp also [for 179, last]

The copur teyne nought knowyng' þis prest'
 And hidde it and hent' him by þe brest/ 1325
 And to him spak' and þus sayde in his game
 Stoupeth a-doun by god 3e ben to blame
 helpeþ me now as I dede 3ow whil er
 Put' in 3our hond and loke what is þer 1329
 This prest' took' vp þis siluer teyne anon
 And þanne sayde þe chanoun let vs goon
 wiþ þese þre teynes whiche þat' we han wrought'
 To som goldsmyth and wite if' it be ought' 1333
 For by my faith I nolde for myn hood
 But' if' þey were siluer fyn and good
 And þat' as swiþe proued schal it be
 Vnto þe goldsmith wiþ þese teynes þre 1337
 Thay went' and putte þese teynes in assay
 To fuyr and hamer might' no man say nay
 But' þay were as hem oughte be
 This sotted prest' who was gladder þan he // 1341
 was neuer brid gladder agayn þe day
 Ne nightyngale in þe sesoun of' may
 was neuer noon þat' liste better to synge /
 Ne lady lustier in carolynges 1345
 And for to speke of' loue and wommanhede
 Ne knyght' in armes doon an hardy deede/
 To stonde in grace of' his lady deere
 Than hadde þis prest' þis craft' for to lere 1349



SIX-TEXT 571

GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7834. 411

Sire at a word if þat 3e lust it haue
3e schul pay fourty pound so god me saue / [240/100] 1361
And nere þe frendschipe þat 3e dede er þis
To me. 3e schulde paye more I-wys
This prest þe somme of fourty pound anon
Of nobles fette and took hem euerychoon 1365
To þis chanoun for þis ilk' receyt
Al his werkyng' nas but fraude and deceyt/
Sire prest he seyde I kepe haue no loos
Of my craft for I wold it kept were clos 1369
And as 3e loueth me kepeþ it secre
For and men knewe / al my sotilte
By god men wolden haue so gret enuye
To me by cause of my philosophie 1373
I schulde be deed þer were noon oþer weye
God it forbede quop þe prest what seye
3et had I leuer spenden al þe good
which þat I haue and elles wax I wood 1377
Than þat 3e schulde falle in such meschief
For 3our good wil sir haue 3e right good preef
Quop þe chanoun and far wel graunt mercy
he went his way and neuer þe prest him sey 1381
After þis day and whan þat þis prest scholde /
Maken assay at such tyme as he wolde /
Of þis receyt far wel it wold not be /
lo þus byiaped and bygilt was he 1385
Thus makeþ he his introduction
To bringe folk to here destruccioun
Considereth aires how þat in ech astat
Bitwixe men and gold þer is debat 1389
So ferforth þat vnneþe þer is noon
This multiplying blent so many oon
That in good faith I trowe þat it be /
The cause grettest of which akarsete 1393
Philosophres speken so mistyly
In þis craft þat men conne not come þer by

For any witt þat men han now on dayes
 They may wel chiteren as doon þese iayes 1397
 And in here termes sette lust and peyne
 But to her purpos schul þay neuer atteyne [leaf 129, back]
 A man may lightly lerne if he haue ought
 To multiplie and bringe his good to nought 1401
 Lo such a lucre is in þis lusty game/
 A mannes mirþe it wol torne in to grame /
 And empte also grete and heuy purses
 And make folk to purchace curses 1405
 Of hem þat han her good þer-to I-lent
 O fy for schame þay þat haue be brent
 Allas can þay not fle þe fuyres hete
 3e þat it vsen I rede 3e it lete 1409
 lest 3e lesen al for bet þan neuer is late
 Neuer to priue were to long a date /
 Though 3e prolle ay 3e schul it neuer fynde
 3e ben as bolde as is bayard þe blynde 1413
 That blundreþ forþ and peril casteth noon
 he is as bold to renne a-gayn a stoon
 As for to go bysides in þe wey /
 So fare 3e þat multiplie I sey 1417
 If þat 3oure y3en can nought seen aright
 loke þat 3oure mynde lakke nought his sight
 For þough 3e loke neuer so brode and stare /
 3e schul nought wynne vpon þat chaffare / 1421



SIX-TEXT 573

GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 413

But hit be with his broþer knowleching
how þat he which þat first sayd þis þing 1433
Of philosophres fader was hermes
he saiþ how þe dragoun douteles
he dyep nought but if þat he be slayn
wiþ his broþer and þat is for to sayn [leaf 181] 1437
By þe dragoun mercury and noon oþer
he vnderstood and brimston be his broþer
That out of sol and luna were I-drawe
And þefore sayde he take heed to my sawe / 1441
Let no man besy him þis art to seche /
But þat he thentencioun and speche /
Of philosophres vnderstonde can
And if he do he is a lewed man 1445
For þis sciens and þis connyng quod he
Is of þe secre of secret; par de
Also þer was a disciple of plato
That on a tyme sayde his maister to 1449
As his book somer wil bere witnesse
And þis was his demaunde in sothfastnesse /
Tel me þe name of þe priue stoon
And plato answered vnto him anon 1453
Take þe stoon þat titanos men name /
which is þat quod he magnasia is þe same
Sayde plato 3e sire and is it þus
This ignotus per ignotius 1457
what is magnasia good sir I 3ou pray
It is a water þat is maad I say
Of elementes foure quod plato
Telle me þe rooche good sire quod he þo 1461
Of þat water if it be 3our wille
Nay nay quod plato carteyn þat I nylle
The philosophres sworn were euerich con
That thay scholde discouere it vnto man noon 1465
Ne in no book it write in no manere /
For vnto crist it is so leef and deere

That he wil not þat it discovered be /
 But wher it likeþ to his deite / 1469
 Man to enspire and eek' for to defende
 whom þat him likeþ to þis is þe ende
 Than conclude I þus syn god of heuene /
 Ne wol not þat þe philosophres neuene / 1473
 how þat a man schal come vnto þis stoon
 I rede as for þe beste let it goon (See MS. back)
 For who-so makeþ god his aduersarie
 As for to werke any þing' in contrarie 1477
 Vnto his wil certes neuer schal he þrize
 Though þat he multiplie terme of al his lyue
 And þer a poynt' for ended is my tale
 God send euery trewe man boots of his bale / 1481
 ¶ Here endeth þe chanouns ȝerman his tale

[No break in the MS.]



SIX-TEXT 303
GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 415

GROUP C. FRAGMENT IV.

§ 1. THE DOCTOR'S TALE.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

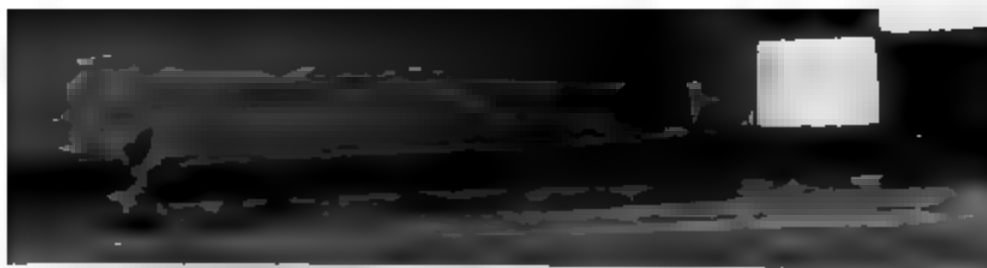
¶ And here bygynneth þe tale of þe Doctor of of phisik'
Ther was as telleþ Thitus lyuius 1
A knight þat cleped was virginieus
Fulfil of honours and of worpines
And strong of frendes and of gret riches 4
A doughter he hadde by his wyf
And neuer ne hadde he mo in al his lyf
Fair was þis mayde in excellent beaute
Aboue euery wight that men may se 8
For nature haþ wiþ souereyn diligence
I-formed hir in so gret excellence
As þough sche wolde say lo I nature
þus can I forme and peynte a creature 12
whan þat/ me lust who can me counterfete
Pigmalion nouȝt þough he alwey forge and bete /
Or graue or peynte for I dar wel sayn
appollus ȝepherus schulde wirche in vayn 16
To graue or paynte or forge & bete
If þay presumed me to counterfete
For he þat is þe former principal
haþ maad me his viker general 20
To forme and peynte erpely creature
Right as me lust al þing is in my cure
Vnder þe moone þat may wane and waxe
And for my werke noþing wol I axe 24

My lord and I ben fully at accord
 I made hir to be worschip of my lord
 So do I alle myn oþer creatures
 what colour þat þay been or what figures / 28
 Thus semeth me þat nature wolde say
 This mayde was of age twelf þer and tway [leaf 122]
 In which þat nature hap suche delite
 For right as sche can peynte a lili white 32
 And rody a rose right with such peynture
 Sche peynted hap þis noble creature
 Er sche was born vpon her limes fre
 were als bright as such colour schulde be 36
 And phebus deyed hadde hire tresses grete
 I-lyk to be stremes of his borned hete
 And if þat excellent was hir beaute
 A þousand fold more vertuouus was sche 40
 And hire ne lakkep no condicioun
 That is to preyse as by discrecioun
 As wel in body as goost chaste was sche
 For which sche floured in virginite 44
 with alle humilite and abstinence
 with alle attemperaunce and pacience
 with mesure eek and beryng of array
 Discret sche was in anaweryng alway 48
 Though sche were wis pallas dar I sayn
 hir facound eek ful wommanly and playn



And of hir oughne vertu vnconstreigned
Sche hap ful ofte tyme hire seek' y-feyned
For pat' sche wolde fleen þe companye
wher likly was to treten of folye 64
As is at festes reuelles and at daunces
That' ben occasiouns of daliaunces
Such þinges maken children for to be /
To soone rype and bold. as men may se / [leaf 182, back] 68
which is ful perilous and hap ben ȝore
For al to soone may sche lerne lore
Of boldenesse whan sche is a wyf
And ȝe maystresses in ȝoure olde lyf 72
That' lordes doughtres han in gouernaunce
Ne takeþ of my word no displesaunce /
Thinges þat ben set in gouernynge
Of lordes douȝtres conly for tuo þinges / 76
Oþer for ȝe han kept' ȝour honeste
Oþer elles for ȝe han falle in frelete
And knowe wel y-nough þe olde daunce
And conne forsake fully meschaunce 80
For euermo þerfore for cristes sake /
kepeþ wel þo þat' ȝe vndertake
A þeof of venesoun þat' hap forlaft
his licorousnesse and al his theues craft' 84
Can kepe a forest' best' of any man
Now kepe hir wel for and ȝe wil ȝe can
loke wel to no vice ȝe assent'
lest' ȝe be dampned for ȝour wikked entent 88
For who-so dop a traytour is certayn
And takeþ keep of þat' pat' sche schal sayn
Of al treccoun souereyn pestilence
Is whan a wight' bytrayeth Innocence 92
ȝe fadres and ȝe modres eek' also
Though ȝe han children be it' oon or mo
ȝoure is þe charge of al her sufferance
whiles þay be vnder ȝour gouernaunce / 96

Beth war þat by ensample of þoure lyuyng
 Ouper by neegligence in chastisyng
 That þay ne perische for I dar wel soye
 If þat þay doon þe schul ful sore abeye 100
 vnder a schepherd softe and necligent
 The wolf hap many a schep and lamb torent
 Sufficeþ oon ensample now as here
 For I moot turne agein to my matiere 104
 This mayde of which I telle my tale expresse
 So kept hir self hir neded no maystresse [leaf 105]
 For in hir lyuyng maydens mighte rede
 As in a book euery good word and dede / 108
 That longeþ vnto a mayden vertuous
 Sche was so prudent and so bounteous
 For þe which out sprong on euery syde /
 Boþe of hir beaute and bounte wyde 112
 That þurgh þe lond þay praysed hir ilkoone /
 That louede vertu saue enuye alloone /
 That sory is of oþer mennea wele /
 And glad is of his sorwe and vnhele 116
 The doctor made þis descripcioun
 This mayde wente vpon a day in to þe toun
 Toward þe temple with hir moder deere
 As is of þonge maydenes þe manere 120
 Now was þer a Iustice in þe toun
 That gouernour was of þat Region



GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 307
Harleian 7334. 419

For certes by no fere ne by no meede
him þought he was not able for to speede /
For sche was strong of frendes and eak sche
Conformed was in such souerayn bounte 136
That wel he wist he might hir neuer wynne
As for to make hir with hir body synne
For which wiþ gret deliberacioun
he sent after a clerk was in þe toun 140
The which he knew for subtil and for bold
This Iuge vnto þe clerk his tale haþ told
In secre wyse and made him to assure
He schulde telle it to no creature [leaf 163, back] 144
And if he dede he schulde lese his heed
whan þat assented was þis cursed reed
Glad was the Iuge and made glad cheere /
And ȝaf him ȝiftes precious and deere / 148
whan schapen was al þis conspiracye /
Fro poynt to poynt how þat his lecherie
Parformed scholde be ful subtilly
As ȝe schul here afterward openly / 152
hom goþ þis clerk þat highte Claudius
This false Iuge þat highte apius
So was his name for it is no fable
But knowen for a storial þing notable 156
The sentence of hit soþ is out of doute
This false iugge goþ now fast aboute /
To hasten his delit al þat he may /
And so bifel soone after on a day 160
This false Iuge as telleþ vs þe story
As he was went sat in his consistory
And ȝaf his domes vpon sondry caas
This false clerk com forth a ful good pans 164
And saide lord if þat it be ȝour wille
As doþ me right vpon þis pitous bille
In which I pleyne vpon virgilius
And if he wile seyn it is nouȝt þus 168

I wil proue hit and fynde good witnesse
 That soþ is þat my bulle wol expresse /
 The Iuge answerd of þis in his absence
 I may not ȝiue diffinityf sentence 172
 let do him calle and I wol gladly hieere
 Thou schalt haue alle right and no wrong heere
 Virginius com to wite þe Iugges wille /
 And right anoon was red þis cursed bille 176
 The sentence of hit was as ȝe schul heere
 ¶ To ȝow my lord sire apius so deere
 Schewep ȝoure pore seruaunt Claudius
 how þat a knight called Virginius 180
 Aȝeins þe lawe aȝens alle equyte /
 holdeth expresse aȝeinst þe wille of me [1047 184]
 My seruaunt which þat my thral is by right
 which fro myn hous was stolen on a night 184
 whiles sche was ful ȝong þat wol I preue
 By witnesse lord so þat ȝe ȝow not greue
 Sche is nought his douȝter what so he say
 wherfore to ȝow my lord þe Iugge I pray 188
 ȝelde me my þraht if þat it be ȝour wille
 lo þis was al þe sentence of þe bille
 Virgineus gan vpon þe clerk byholde
 But hastily er he his tale tolde 192
 he wolde haue proued it as schold a knight
 And eek by witnessyng of many a wight
 That al was fals þat he seide by aduersarye



GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 308
Harleian 7334. 421

Moete by force his deere douȝter ȝiuen
Vnto þe Inge in lecchery to lyuen
he goþ him hom and sette him in his halle /
And leet anon his deere douȝter calle / 208
And wiþ a face deed as aiſſhen colde
vpon hir humble face he gan byholde
with fadres pite ſtiking porugh his herte
Al wolde he from his purpos not conuerte / 212
Doughter quod he virginea by þy name
Ther ben tuo weyes eyþer dep or ſchame
That þou moſt ſuffre allas þat I was bore
For neuer þou deſeruedeſt wherfore 216
To deyen with a ſwerd or with a knyft
O deere doughter ender of my lif
which I haue foſtred vp with ſuch pleaunce
That þou nere oute of my remembraunce [leaf 184, back] 220
O doughter which. þat art my laſte wo
And in þis lif my laſte ioye alſo
O gemme of chaſtite in pacience
Tak þou þy deth for þis is my ſentence 224
For loue and not for hate þou moſt be deed
My pitous hond mot amyten of þin heed
Allas þat euer apius þe ſay
Thus haþ he falſly iugged þe to day 228
And told hir al þe caas as ȝe bifore
han herd. it nedeth nought to telle it more
Mercy deere fader quod þis mayde
And with þat word ſche boþe hir armes layde / 232
Aboute his nekke as ſche was wont to doo
The teeres braſt out of hir eyȝen tuo
And ſayde goode fader ſchal I dye
Is ther no grace is þer no remedye 236
No certeyn deere doughter myn quod he /
Than ȝeue me leue fader myn quod ſche /
My dep for to compleyne a litel ſpace /
For þar dy Ieffe ȝaf his douȝter grace 240

For to compleyne er he hir slough alas
 And God it woot no þing was hir trespas
 But þat sche ran hir fader first/ to so
 To welcome him with gret solempnite 244
 And with þat word a swoun sche fel anon /
 And after whan hir swownyng was agoon
 Sche riseþ vp and to hir fader sayde /
 Blessed be god þat I schal deye a mayde / 248
 Ȝeue me my deth er þat I haue a schame
 Do with ȝour child ȝour wille a goddes name
 And with þat word sche prayed him ful ofte
 That wip his swerd he schulde smyte hir softe 252
 And wip þat word on swoune doun sche fel
 hir fader with ful sorwful hert and fel
 hir heed of smoot and by þe top it hente
 And to þe Iuge bigan it to presenta 256
 As he sat in his doom in concistory
 whan the Iuge it say as saip the story [leaf 18v]
 he bad take him and honge him faste
 But right anon alle þe poeple in þraste / 260
 To saue þe knight for rouþe and for pite
 For knowen was þe fals iniquite /
 The poeple anon had suspect in þis þing
 By moner of þis clerkes chalengyng 264
 That it was by thassent of apius
 That wiste wel þat he was leccherous



GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 311 /
Harleian 7334. 423

Her may men se how synne hath his merite
Be war for no man woot how god wol smyte /
In no degre ne in which maner wise
The worm of conscience wol arise 280
Of wicked lyf þough it so pryue be
That no man woot of it but god and he
wher þat he be lewed man or lered
He not how soone þat he may be afered 284
Therefore I rede þow this counseil take
Forsakith synne / er synne yow forsake
¶ Here endeth þe Doctor of phisique his tale

[*No break in the MS.*]

¶ And here bygynneth þe prologe of the Pardoner /

Owre ost gan swere as he were wood
 harrow quod he by nayles and by blood 288
 This was a cursed þef a fals Iustice

As schendful dep as herte can deuise
 So falle vpon his body and his boones
 The deuel I bykenne him al at oones 292

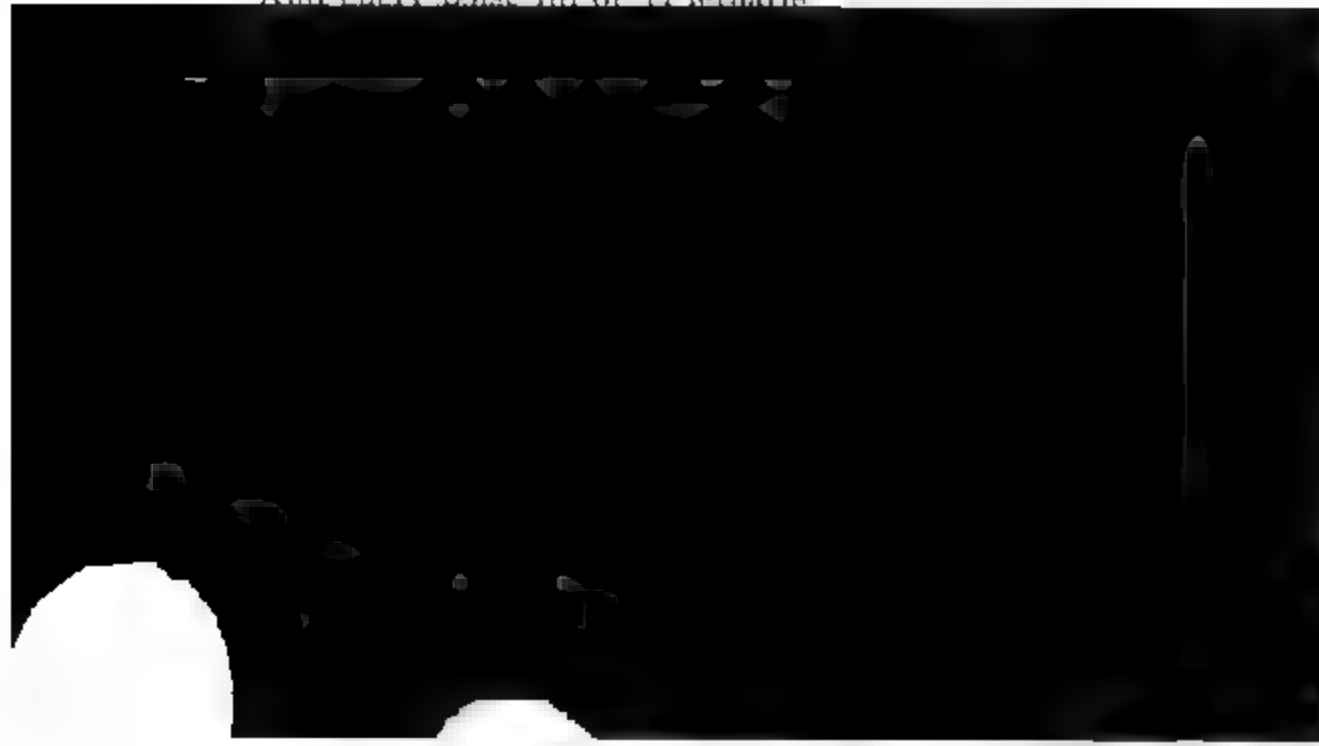
Allas to deers boughte sche hir beaute
 wherfore I say þat alle men may se (long 185, back)
 That giftes of fortune or of nature /
 Ben cause of deth of many a creature / 296
 hir beaute was hir dep I dar wel sayn
 Allas so pitously as he was slayn

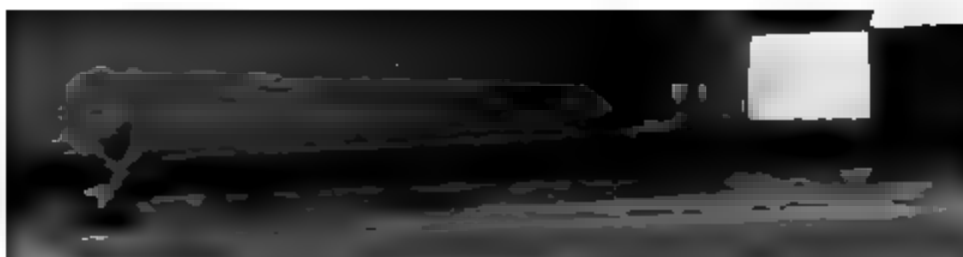
[.
 no gap in the MS.] 300

But trewely myn owne maister deere
 This was a pitous tale for to heere
 But napeles pas ouer þis is no fors
 I pray to god to saue þi gentil corpe 304

[.
 no gap in the MS.]

And euery leustful of to letuarie





SIX-TEXT 313

GROUP C. § 2. DOCTOR-PARDONER LINE. Harleian 7334. 425

Myn hert is brost. for pite of þat mayde
Thow pardonere þou belamy he sayde /
Tel vs a tale for þou canst many oon
It schal be doon quod he and þat anoon 320
But first quod he her at þis ale stake /
I wil first drynke and byt on a cake
But right anoon þe gentile gan to crie
Nay let him tellen vs no ribaudye 324
Tel vs som moral þing þat we may leere /
Gladly quod he and sayde as þe schal heere
But in þe cuppe wil I me beþinke
vpon some honest tale whil I drinke / 328

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Narrat

LOrdyngs quod he in chirche whan I preche
 I peyne me to haue an hauteyn speche /
 And ryng' it out as lowd as dop a belle
 For I can al by rote þat I telle 332
 My teeme is alway oon and euer was
 Radix omnium malorum est Cupiditas
 First I pronounce whennes þat I come
 And þanne my bulles schewe I alle and some (leaf 105) 336
 Oure liege lordes seal vpon my patent'
 That schewe I first my body to warent/
 That no man be so hardy prest' ne clerk'
 Me to destourbe of cristes holy werk' 340
 And after þat þan tel I forth my tales
 Bulles of popes and of Cardynales /
 Of patriarkes and of bisshops I schewe
 And in latyn speke I wordes fewe / 344
 To sauore with my predicacioun
 And for to stere hem to deuocioun
 Thanne schewe I forth my longe cristal steener

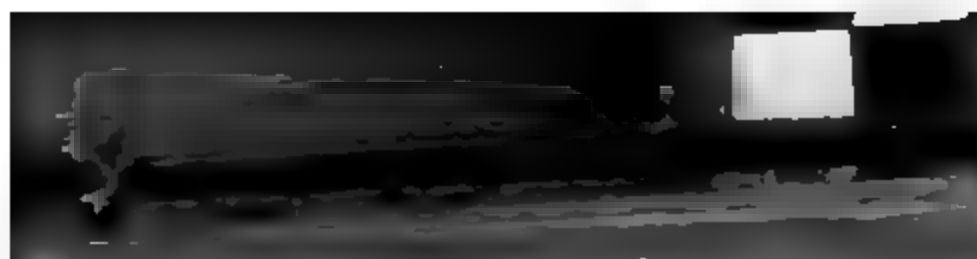


SIX-TEXT 315

GROUP C. § 3. PARDONER'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 427

And it is hool anoon and forþer-more
Of pokkes and of scabbe and euery sore /
Schal euery scheep be hool þat of þis welle
That drynketh a draught tak' heed eek' what I telle 360
If þat þe goode man þat þe beest oweþ
wol euery wike er þat þe cok' him croweþ
Fastynge drynke / of þis welle a draught
As þilke holy Iew oure eldres taught' 364
His beestes and his stoor schal multiplie
And sires also it kelith Ialousie
For þough a man be ful in ialous rage
let' make wiþ þis water his potage 368
And neuer schal he more his wyf mys trist
þough he þe soþ of hir defaute wist'
Al hadde sche take prestes tuo or þre
her is a meteyn eek' þat 3e may see 372
he þat his honde put' in þis metayn
he schal haue multiplying' of grayn [leaf 189, back]
whan he hap sowen . be it whete or otes
So þat 3e offre pans or elles grootes 376
And men and wommen oon þing' warne I 3ow
If eny wight' be in þis chirche now
That' hap doon synne horrible þat he
Dar nought' for schame of it schryuen be 380
Or ony womman be sche 3ong' or old
That' hath y-maad hir housbond cokewold
which folk' schal haue no power ne grace
To offre to my relikes in þis place 384
And who so fint' him out' of suche blame
Thay wol come vp and offre in goddes name
And I assoile hem by þe auctorite
which þat' by bulle . was I-graunted me 388
By þis gaude haue I wonne euery 3eer
An hundred mark' syn I was pardoner
I stonde lik' a clerk' in my pulpit
And whan þe lewed poeple is down I-set' 392

I preche so as ȝe haue herd bifore
 And telle hem an hondred lapes more
 Than peyne I me to strecche forþ my necke
 And eat and west vpon þe poeple I bekke 396
 As dop a dowfe syttyng' on a berne
 Myn hondes and my tonge goon so ȝerne
 That it is ioye to se my busynesse
 Of auarice and of such cursednesse 400
 Is al my preching' for to make hem fre
 To ȝeue here pans and namely vnto me
 For myn entent' is nought' but for to wynne
 And no þing' for correccioun of synne 404
 I rekke neuer. when þay ben I-beryed
 Though þat here soules gone a blakeberyed
 For certes many a predicacioun
 Comeþ ofte tyme of euel entencioun 408
 Som for plesauns of folk' and flaterie
 To ben auaunced by ypocrisie
 And som for veine gloir and som for hate
 For whan I dar not oper weys debate (lost/187) 412
 Than wil I styng'e him with my tonge smerte
 In preching' so þat he schal not astert'
 To be diffamed falsly if þat he
 hap trespass' to my breþeren or to me 416
 For þough I telle not his propre name
 Men schal wel knowe þat it is þe same /



SIX-TEXT 317

GROUP C. § 3. PARDONER'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 429

But though my self be gulty in þe synne
3it can I make oþer folk to twynne /
From auarice and soone to repent
But þat/ is not my principal entent 432
I preche no þing but for coueitise
Of þis matier it ought Inough suffice
Than telle I hem ensamples many oon
Of olde þinges longe tyme agoon 436
For lewed poeple louen tales olde
which þinges can þay wel report and holde /
what trowe 3e whiles I may preche
And wyne gold and siluer for I teche 440
That I wil lyue in pouert wilfully
Nay nay I þought it/ neuer trewly
For I wol preche and begge in sondry londes
I wil do no labour wiþ myn hondes 444
Ne make basketis and lyue þer by
By cause I wil nought begge ydelly
I wol noon of thapostles counterfete
I wol haue money . wolle chese and whete / 448
Al were it 3euen of þe prestes page
Or of þe porest wydow in a village [leaf 187, back]
And schold hir children sterue for famyn
Nay I wol drinke licour of þe wyn 452
And haue a ioly wenche in euery toun
But herkenþ lordynges my conclusioun
3oure likyng is . þat I schal telle a tale
Now haue I dronk a draught of corny ale / 456
By god I hope I schal telle 3ow a þing
That schal by resoun be at 3our liking
For þough myself be a ful vicious man
A moral tale 3it I 3ow telle can 460
which I am wont to preche for to wyne.
Now hold 3our pees my tale I wol byginne

[Partial break of one line in the MS.]

¶ Narrat

IN Flaundres whilom was a companye /
 Of 3onge folkes þat haunted folye 464
 As ryot hasard stywes and tauernes
 wher as wiþ lutes harpes and gyternes
 Thay daunce and play at dees boþe day & night
 And ete also and drynk ouer her might 468
 Thurgh which þay doon þe deuyl sacrifice
 wipinne þe deueles temple in cursed wise
 By superfluite abhominable
 her othes been so greet and so dampnable 472
 That it is grisly for to hiere hem swere
 Our blisful lordes body þay totere
 hem þoughte Iewes rent him nouȝt y-nough
 And ech of hem at operes synne lough 476
 And right anon þer come tombesteris
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 Whiche þat ben verray þe deueles officeres 480



SIX-TEXT 319

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 431

whan he of wyn was replest at his fest [104/105]
Right at his oughne table ȝaf his hest
To sle þe baptist Iohn ful gilteles
Seneca seiþ a good word douteles 492
he seiþ he can no difference fynde
Bituyx a man þat is out of his mynde
And a man þe which is dronkelewe
But þat woodnes fallen in a schrewe 496
Perseuereth lenger þan doth dronkenness
O glotonye ful of corsidnesse
O cause first of oure confusioun
O original of oure dampnacioun 500
Til crist had bought out wiþ his blood agayn
lo how dere schortly for to sayn
Abought was first/ þis cursed felonye
Corrupt was al þis world for glotonye 504
Adam our fader and his wyf also
Fro paradys to labour and to wo
were dryuen for þat vice it is no drede
For whils þat adam fasted as I rede
he was in paradis and whan þat he
Est of þe fruyt defendit of a tre
he was out cast to wo and in-to peyne
O glotony. wel ought vs on þe pleyne 512
O wist a man how many maladyes
Folwith of excesse and of glotonyes
he wolde be þe more mesurable
Of his diete sitting at his table 516
Allas þe schorte þrote þe tendre mouþ
Makeþ þat Est. West. north and south
In erþe in watir in ayer man to swynke
To gete a sely glotoun mete and drynke. 520
Of þis matier o poul wel canstow trete
Mete vnto wombe and wombe vnto mete
Schal god destroyen boþe as powel seiþ
Allas a foul þing is it by my faiþ 524

Quoniam diu leinnavit adam
in paradysio fuit comedit
et electus est statim duxit
vixerunt &c.

Ecce ventris & venter
ecce deus autem hunc
& illum destruet &c.

To say þis word / and fouler is þe dede
 whan men so drynke / of þe whyt and rede Ad philipenses
capitulo 3^o
 That of his prote he makip his priue (leaf 186, back)
 Thurgh pilke cursed superfluite 538
 Thapostil wepyng saip ful pitously
 Ther walkith many of which þou told haue I
 I say it now wepyng wiþ pitous vois
 Thay are enemys of cristes croys / 532
 Of which þe ende is deth wombe is her god
 O wombe / o bely . o stynkyng is þi cod
 Fulfid of dong / and of corrupcioun
 At eyþer ende of þe foul is þe soun 536
 how gret cost / and labour is þe to fynde /
 These cokes how þey stamp and streyn and grynde /
 And torne substaunce in to accident
 To fulfille / þy licorous talent 540
 Out of þe harde boones gete þay
 The mary for þay caste nouȝt away
 That may go þurgh þe golet softe and soote
 Of spicery and leuya bark and roote 544
 Schal ben his sauce maad to his delyt/
 To make him haue a newe appetit
 But certes he þat haunteþ suche delices
 Is deed þer whiles þat he lyueþ in vices 548
 A licorous þing is wyn and dronkenesse
 Is fild of stryuyng and of wretchednesse



He can no counseil kepe it is no drede
Ne keep ȝow from þe white and from þe rede
Namely fro þe white wyn of leepe
That is to selle in Fleetstreet or in Chepe 564
This wyn of Spayne crepith subtilly [100/100]
In oper wynes growyng faste by
Of which þer riseth such fumosite /
That whan a man hath dronke draughtes þre / 568
And weneth þat he be at hom in Chepe
He is in Spayne right at þe toun of lepe /
Nought at þe Rochel ne at Burdeaux toun
And þanne wol þai say Sampson Sampson . 572
But herken lordyngs o word I ȝou pray /
That alle þe souerayn actes dar I say
Of victories in þe olde testament
That þorugh þe verray god omnipotent 576
were doon in abstinence and in prayere /
Lokith þe bible and þer ȝe may it hiero
Loke atthila þe grete conquerour
Deyd in his sleep with schame and dishonour 580
Bleedyng ay at his nose in dronkenesse /
A captain schuld ay lyue in sobrenesse
And ouer al this aryse ȝow right wel
what was comaunded vnto lamuel 584
Nought samuel but lamuel say I
Redith þe bible and fyndeþ expresly
Of wyn ȝeuyng / to hem þat han Iustice
No more of þis for it may wel suffice 588
And now I haue I-spoke of glotonye /
Now wil I ȝow defende hazardrye
¶ Hazard is verray moder of leeynges
And of deceipt of cursed forsweringes 592
BlaspHEME of crist manslaughter and wast also /
Of catel and of tyme . forther mo .
It is reproef and contrair to honour
For to be halde a comun hazardour 596

And euer þe heyer he is of astat
 The more is he holden desolat
 If þat a prince vse hasardrie
 In alle gouernance and policie 600
 He is as by comun opinioun
 Holde þe lasse in reputacioun
 Stilbon þat was I-holde a wis embasitour *[leaf 120, back]*
 was sent in to Corinthe with gret honour 604
 Fro lacidome to make hir alliaunce
 And whan him cam him happede par chaunce /
 That alle þe grettest þat were of þat lond /
 Playing atte hasard he hem fond 608
 For which as soone as it mighte be
 He stal him hoom agein to his contre
 And saide ther I nyl nouȝt lese my name
 I nyl not take on me so gret diffame 612
 Ȝow for to allie vnto noon hasardoures /
 Scudeth operwise embasitoures
 For by my troupe me were leuer dye
 Than I Ȝow scholde / to hasardours allye / 616
 For Ȝe þat ben so glorious in honoures
 Schal not allie Ȝow with hasardoures
 As by my wil / ne as by my trete
 This wise philosophre þus sayd he 620
 lo eek þat þe king Demetrius
 The king of Parthes as þe saith vs
 Scudeth to make aȝein of gold an assay



SIX-TEXT 323
GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Harleian 7394 435

The hyhe god forbad sweryng' at' al /
witness on Mathew but' in special
Of sweryng' saith þe holy Ieremye
Thou schalt' say soth þin oþes and not lye 636
And swere in doom and eek' in rightwises
But' ydel sweryng' is a cursednes
Bihold and se þer in þe firste table
Of hihe goddes heste honorable / 640
How þat' þe secounde heste is this (leaf 190)
Tak' not' in ydel ne his name amys
Lo he rather forbedith such sweryng'
Than homicide or many a corsed þing' 644
I say as by order þus it stondith
This knoweth he þat' þe heates vnderstondeth
how þat' þe second hest' of god is that
And forþermore I wol þe telle a plat' 648
The vegance schal not' parte fro his hous
That' of his oþes is outrageous
By goddes precious hert' and by his nayles
And by þe blood of crist' þat' is in hayles 652
Seuen is my chaunce and also cink' and tray
By goddis armes and þou falsly play
This daggere schal þurgh þin herte goo
This fruyt' cometh of þe bicchid boones tuo 656
Forswering' Ire / falsnes homicide /
Now for þe loue of crist' þat' for vs dyde
leneth þoure othis boþe gret' and smale
But sires now wol I telle forþ my tale 660
These riottours þre / of which I þou telle
longe erst' þan prime rong' any belle
were set' hem in a tauern for to drynke
And as þay sat' þay herd a belle clinke 664
Biforn a corps was caried to þe graue
That' oon of hem gan calle vnto his knaue
Go bet' quop he and axe redily
what' corps is þat' passeth her forþ by 668

And loke þou report his name wel
 Sire quod he but þat nedep neuer a del
 It was me told er ȝe com heer tuo houres
 He was par dy an old felaw of ȝoures 672
 And sodeinly he was I-slayn to night
 Fordronk as he sat on his bench vpright
 Ther com a priue thef men clepen deth
 That in þis contre al þe peple sleth 676
 And with his spere he smot his hert a tuo
 And went his way wiþoute wordes mo
 he haþ a þousand slayn þis pestilence (Long 120, Beck)
 And maister er ȝe come in his presence / 680
 Me þinkeþ þat it is ful necessarie /
 For to be war of such an aduersarie
 Beþ redy for to meete him euermore
 Thus taughte me my dame I say nomore 684
 By seinte mary sayde þe tauerner
 The child saiþ soþ for he haþ slayn þis ȝeer
 Hens ouer a myle wipinne a gret village
 Boþe man and womman. child and page 688
 I trowe his habitacioun be þere
 To ben auysed gret wisdom it were
 Er þat he dede a man þat dishonour
 ȝe goddis armes quod þis ryottour 692
 Is it such peril with him for to meete /
 I schal him seeko by way and eek by strete

SIX-TEXT 325

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 437

And vp þai startyn al dronke in þis rage /
 And forþ þai goon towardes þat village
 Of which þe tauerner haþ spoke biforn
 And many a grisly oth þan han þay sworn 708
 And cristes blessed body þay torent
 Deth schal be deed if þat þay may him hent
 Right as þay wolde haue torned ouer a style
 whan þai han goon nought fully a myle 712
 An old man and a pore with hem mette
 This olde man ful mekely hem grette /
 And saide þus lordynges god ȝow so
 The proudest of þe ryotoures þre 716
 Answerd agein. what carle wiþ meschaunce¹ [leaf 191]
 why artow al forwrapped saue þi face <sup>(¹ A blank line is in MS
after l. 717 and 718.)</sup>
 whi lyuest þou in so gret an age
 This olde man gan loke on his visage 720
 And saide þus for þat I can not fynde /
 A man þough þat I walke in to Inde
 Neiper in Cite noon ne in village
 That wol chaunge his ȝouþe for myn age 724
 And þerfore moot I haue myn age stille /
 As longe tyme as it is goddes wille
 And deth allas ne wil not haue my lif
 Thus walk I lik a resteles caytif 728
 And on þe ground which is my modres gate
 I knokke with my staf erly and late
 And saye leue moder let me In
 Lo how I wane fleisch. and blood and skyn 732
 Allas whan schuln my boones ben at rest
 Moder with ȝow wil I chaunge my chest/
 That in my chamber. longe tyme haþ be
 ȝe for an haire clout/ to wrap in me 736
 But ȝet to me ache wil not do þat grace
 For which ful pale and welkid is my face
 But sires to ȝow. it is no curtesye
 To speke vnto an old man vilonye 740

But he trespas in word or elles dede
 In holy writ 3e may 3our self wel rede
 Azens an old man hoor vpon his bede
 3e schold arise wherefor I 3ow rede / 744
 Ne doth vnto an old man more harm now
 Na more þan 3e wolde men dede to 3ow:
 In age. if þat 3e may so long abyde
 And god be with 3ou / wher' so 3e go or ryde 748
 I moot go þider as I haue to goo
 Nay olde cherl by god thou schalt not so
 Sayde þat oþer hasardour anon
 Thou partist nouȝt so lightly by seint Iohn 752
 Thou spak' right' now of þat traytour dep *[leaf 191, back]*
 That in þis contre alle oure frendes slep
 Haue her my trouth as þou art' his aspye /
 Tel wher he is or elles þou schalt dye / 756
 By god and by þat holy sacrament/
 For soþly þou art' oon of his assent
 To schewe vs 3onge folk' þe falsen theef
 Now sires þan if þat 3ow be so leef 760
 To fynde dep torn vp þis croked way
 For in þat groue I laft him by my fay
 Vnder a tree and þer he wil abyde
 Ne for 3our boost he nyl him no þing hyde 764
 Se 3e þat ook' right' þer 3e schuln him fynde
 Gode 3ow þat heuȝte axen mankynde

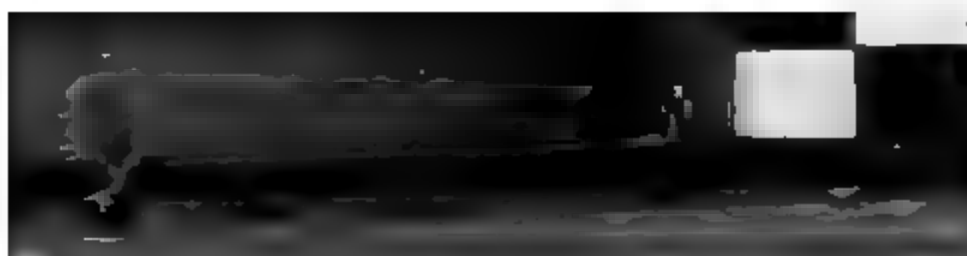


	SIX-TEXT 327	
GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334	439	
Breperen takeþ keep what I schal say My witte is gret þough þat I bourde and play This tresour hap fortune to vs ȝiuen In mirth and iolyte our lif to lynen And lightly as it comth so wil we spende Ey goddis precious dignite who wende To day þat we schuld haue so fair a grace But might þis gold be caried fro þis place Hom to myn hous or ellis vnto ȝoures For wel I wot þat þis gold is nouȝt oures Than were we. in heyh felicite But trewely by day it may not be Men wolde say þat we were þenes stronge / And for oure tresour doon vs for to honge This tresour moste caried be by night As wysly and as slely as it might wherfore I rede þat cut among vs alle Be drawe and let se wher þe cut wil falle He þat hap þe cut wip herte blipe/ Schal renne to þe toun and þat ful swithe To bring vs bred and wyn ful priuely And tuo of vs schal kepe subtilly This tresour wel and if he wil not tarie whan it is night we wol þis tresour carie By oon assent þer as vs likeþ best/ That oon of hem þe cut/ brought in his fest/ And bad hem drawe and loke wher it wil falle And it fel on þe ȝongest of hem alle / And forþ toward þe toun he went anon And al so soone as he was agoon That oon of hem. spak vnto þat oþer Thow wost/ wel þat þou art my sworne broþer Thy profyt wol I. telle þe anon Thow wost wel þat our felaw is a-goon And her is gold and þat ful gret plente That schal departed be among vs þre /	780 784 788 [leaf 199] 792 796 800 804 808 812	

But napeles if I can schape it so
 That is departed were bitwix vs tuo
 Had I not been a frenles torn to þe /
 That oþer answerd I not how þat may be/ 816
 he wot wel þat þe gold is wip vs tway
 what schilde we þan do what schuld we say
 Schil it be counsaill say le þe ferste schrewe
 And I schal telle þe in wordes fewe / 820
 what we schul don and bringe it wel aboute
 I gerunte quod þat oþer wipoute doute
 That by my troupe I wil þe nought bywray
 Now quod þe first þou wost wel we ben tway 824
 And two of vs schal strenger be þan oon
 lok' whanne he is set and þat anon
 Arys as þou woldest with him pleye
 And I schal ryþ him thurgh þe sydes tweye 828
 whils þou strogelest wip him as in game (leaf 192, back)
 And with þi dagger loke þou do þe same
 And þan schal al þe gold departed be
 My dere frend bitwixe þe and me 832
 Than may we oure lustes fulfille
 And play at dees right at our owne wille
 And þus accorded ben þese schrewes twayn
 To sle þe priddy, as ȝe herd me sayn 836
 This ȝongest, which þat wente to þe toun
 Filleth hit with hit vp and doun

For þis witterly . was his entent
 To slen hem hope and neuer to repent/
 And forth he goþ no lenger wold he tary
 In to þe toun vnto a potecary / 852
 And prayde him þat he him wolde selle
 Som poyoun þat he might his rattis quelle
 And eek þer was a polkat in his hawe /
 As he sayde his capouns had I-slawe / 856
 And said he wold him wreke if þat he might
 On vermyñ þat destroyed him by night
 Thapotecary answerd and þou schalt haue
 A þing þat also god my soule saue 860
 In al þis world þer nys no creature
 That ete or dronk had of þis confecture
 Nought but þe mountaunce of a corn of whete
 That he ne schuld his lif anoon forlete / 864
 Þe sterue he schal and þat in lasse while
 Than þou wilt goon a paas not but a myle /
 The poyoun is so strong and violent [leaf 193]
 This cursed man hap in his hond I-hent 868
 This poyoun in a box & ains he ran
 In to þe nexte stret vnto a man
 And borwed him large botels þre
 And in þe two his poyoun poured he 872
 The þrid he keped clene for his drynke
 For al þe night he schop him for to swynke
 In carying the gold out of þat place
 And whan þis riotour with sory grace 876
 had fillid with wyn his botels þre
 To his felaws aȝein repaireth he
 what nedith it to sermoun it more
 For right as þay had cast/ his deth bifore 880
 Right so þay han him slayn and þat anoon
 And whan þis was I-doon þan spak þat oon
 Now let vs drynk and aitte and make vs mery
 And sippen we wil his body bery 884

And afterward it happed hem par cas
 To take þe botel þer þe poysoun was
 And drank and ȝaf his felaw drink also
 For which þay stered hope tuo 888
 But certes I suppose þat amycen
 wrot neuer in Canoun ne in non fen
 Mo wonder sorwes of empoisonyng
 Thus hadde þese wrecches tuo here endyng 893
 Thus endid been þese homicides tuo
 And eek þe fals empoysoner also /
 O cursed synne ful of cursednesse
 O traytorous homicidy o wikkednesse 896
 O glotony luxurie and hasardrye /
 Thou blasphemour of crist with vilanye
 And opes grete of vsage and of pride
 Allas mankynde how may it bytyde 900
 Ther to þy creatour which þat þe wrought
 And wiþ his precious herte blood þe bought
 Thou art so fals and so vnkynde allas
 Now good men god forȝeue ȝow ȝour trespas 904
 And ware ȝow fro þe synne of auarice (leaf 190, back)
 Myn holy pardoun may ȝou alle warice
 So þat ȝe offren noblis or starlinges
 Or elles siluer spones broches or rynges 908
 Bowiþ ȝour hedes vnder þis holy bulle
 Comeþ forþ ȝe wyues and offreþ ȝour wolle



SIX-TEXT 331

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 443

As fair as eny man in Engeland
which were me I-geue by popes hond
If eny of 3ow wol of deuocioun
Offren and haue myn absolucioun 924
Cometh forth anon knelith her a-down
And 3e schul haue here my pardoun
Or elles takith pardoun as 3e wende
Al newe and freisch at euery townes ende 928
So pat 3e offren alway new and newe /
Nobles and pens which pat ben good and trewe /
It is an honour to euery pat is heer
That may haue a suffisaunt pardoner 932
Tassoile 3ow in contre as 3e ryde
For auentures which pat may bytyde
For paraunter per may falle oon or tuo
Down of his hors and breke his nekke a-tuo 936
loke such a seurete is to 3ou alle
That I am in 3our felaschip I-falle
That may assoyle 3ou bope more and lasse
whan pat pe soule schal fro pe body passe 940
I rede pat oure hoste schal bygynne
For he is most enuoliped in synne
Com forþ sire ost and offer first anoon [leaf 194]
And pou schalt kisse pe reliquis euerichoon 944
3e for a grote vnboole pi purs
Nay nay quod he þan haue I cristes cure
let be quod he it schal not be so theech
Thou woldest make me kisse þin olde breech 948
And swere it were a relik of a seynt
Though it were wip þi foundement depeynt
But by pe cros which pat seynt heleyne fond
I wold I had þy coylons in myn hond 952
In stede of reliks or of seintuary /
let cut hem of I wol help hem to cary
Thay schul be schryned in an hogges tord
This pardoner answerde nat o word 956

So wroþ he was he wolde no word say
Now quod oure host I wol no lenger play
wiþ þe ne with noon oþer angry man
But right anon þis worthy knight bygan 960
whan þat he saugh þat al þe peple lough
No more of þis for it is right ynough
Sir pardoner be glad and mery of cheere
And 3e sir host þat ben to me so deere 964
I pray 3ow þat 3e kisse þe pardoner
And pardoner I pray 3ow draweþ 3ow ner
And as we dede let vs laugh and play
Anon þay kisse and riden forþ her way / 968
¶ Here endeth þe pardoneres tale

[No break in the MS.]



SIX-TEXT 168
GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 445

GROUP B. (B. FRAGMENT IIL)

§ 4. THE SHIPMAN'S TALE.

¶ Here bygynneth þe Schipman his tale/

A Marchaunt whilom dwelled at seint Denys
That riche was for which men hild him wys
A wyf he had of excellent beaute
And companable and reuerent was sche
which is a þing þat causeth more despenche
Than worth is al þe cher and reuerence 1196
That men doon hem at festes or at daunces
Such salutaciouns and continuaunces
Passeth as doþ þe schadow on a wal
But we is him þat paye moot for al 1200
The sely housbond alȝat moste pay (leaf 194, back)
He most vs cloþe. in ful good array
Al for his oughne worschip richely
In which array we daunce iolily 1204
And if þat he may not parauenture
Or elles wil not/ such dispens endure
But þynkeþ it is wasted and I-lost
Than moot anoþer paye for oure cost 1208
Or lene vs gold and þat is perilous
The worpy marchaunt huld a noble hous/
For which he hadde alday gret repair
For his largesse and for his wyf was fair 1212
what wonder is but herkeþ to my tale
Amonges al þese gastes gret and smale /
Ther was a monk a fair man and a bold
I trowe þritty wynter he was old 1216
That euer in oon was drawyng to þat place /
This ȝonge monk þat was so fair of face

Aqueynted was so wiþ þe goode man	
Sip þat her firste knowleche bygan	1220
That in his hous as familier was he /	
As it possibil is a frend to be	
And for as mochil as þis goode man	
And eek þis monk of which þat I bygan	1224
were boþe tuo I-born in oon village /	
The monk him claymeth as for cosynage	
And he aȝein he saith nat oones nay	
But was as glad þer of as foul of day	1228
For to his hert it was a gret plesaunce /	
Thus ben þay knyȝt wiþ eterne alliaunce	
And ilk of hem gan oþer to assure /	
Of broþerhed whil þat her lif may dure	1232
Fre was daun Iohn and manly of despence /	
As in þat hous and ful of diligence	
To do plesaunce and also gret costage	
He nought forȝat to ȝeue þe leste page	1236
In al þat hous but after her degre /	
He ȝaf þe lord and sipþen þe meyne /	
whan þat he com som maner honest þing	(See 1265)
For which þay were as glad of his comyng	1240
As foul is fayn. whan þat þe sonne vpriseþ	
No mor of þis as now for it suffiseþ	
But so bifel þis marchaunt on a day /	
Schop him to make redy his array /	1244

SIX-TEXT 170

GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 447

And eek' an officer out/ for to ryde /
 To se her graungea and her barnes wyde / 1256
 And vnto seint denys he comeþ anoon
 who was so welcome as my lord dan Iohn
 Oure deere cosyn ful of curtesie /
 with him brought he a Iubbe of maluesie 1260
 And eek/ anoper ful of wyn vernage
 And volantyn as ay was his vsage
 And þus I lete hem ete and drynk' and play
 This marchaunt' and þis monk' a day or tway 1264
 The þridde day þis marchaund vp he riseth
 And on his needes sadly him auyseth
 And vp in to his countour hous goþ he
 To rekyn wiþ himself as wel may be / 1268
 Of þilke ȝer how þat it with him stood
 And how þat he dispended had his good
 And if þat he encrested were or noon
 His bookes and his bagges many oon 1272
 He hap byform him on his counter bord
 For riche was his tresor and his hord
 For which ful fast his countour dore he schette
 And eek' he wolde no man schold him lette 1276
 Of his accomptes for þe mene tyme / [fens 128, back]
 And þus he sat til it was passed prime
 Dan Iohn was risen in þe morn also
 And in the gardyn walkith to and fro 1280
 And hap his þinges said ful curteisly
 This good wyf com walkyng' ful prinely
 In to a gardyn þer he walkeþ softe
 And him salueþ as sche hap doon ful ofte 1284
 A mayde child com in hir compaignie
 which as hir list sche may gouerne and gye
 For ȝit vnder þe ȝerde was þe mayde
 O dere cosyn myn dan Iohn sche sayde 1288
 what' ayleþ ȝow so rape to arise
 Nece quod he it aught ynough suffice

Fyue houres for to slepe a night
 But it were for eny old palled wight 1292
 As ben þese weddid men þat lye and dare
 As in a forme lip a wery hare
 were al forstraught with houndes gret and smale
 But dere nece why be 3e so pale / 1296
 I trowe certis þat oure goode man
 hath on 3ow laborid sith þe night bygan
 That 3ow were nede to reaten hastiliche
 And with þat word he lowgh ful meriliche 1300
 And of his owne þought he was al reed
 This faire wyf bygan to schake hir heed
 And sayde þus 3e god wot al quod sche /
 Nay cosyn myn it stant not so wip me 1304
 For by þat god þat 3af me soule and lif
 In al þe reme of Fraunce is þer no wif
 That lasse lust hap to þat sory play
 For I may synge / allas and waylaway 1308
 That I was born but to no wight quod sche
 Dar I not telle how it stont wip me
 Wherfor I þink out of þis lond to wende
 Or elles of my self to make an ende 1312
 So ful am I of drede and eek of care
 This monk bygan vpon þis wif to stare
 And sayd allas my nece god forbede [1314/1315]
 That 3e for eny sorw or eny drede / 1316



SIX-TEXT 172

GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 449

Ne schal I neuer for to go to helle /
Bywreye word. of þing' þat' ȝe me telle 1328
Not' for no cosynage ne alliaunce
But' verrayly for loue and affiaunce
Thus ben þay sworn and her-vpon I-kist'
And ilk' of hem told oþer what' hem list 1332
Cosyn quod sche if' þat' I had a space /
As I haue noon and namly in þis place
Then wold I telle a legend of my lyf'
what' I haue suffred siþ I was a wyf' 1336
wiþ myn housbond þough he be ȝour cosyn
Nay quod þis monk' by god and seint martyn
He is no more cosyn vnto me
Than is þis leef' þat' hongep on þe tre 1340
I clepid him so by seint' Denis of' Fraunce
To haue þe more cause of acqueyntaunce
Of ȝow which I haue loued specially
Abouen alle wommen sikerly 1344
This swere I ȝow on my professioun
Tellith ȝoure greef' lest' þat' he come a doun
And hasteth ȝow and gop ȝour way anon
My deere loue quod sche. O dan Ioħn 1348
Ful leef' me were þis counseil to hyde
But' out' it moot' it may no more abyde
Myn housbond is to me þe worste man'
That' euer was siþþe þe world bigan 1352
But' siþ I am a wif' it sit nought' me [leaf 196, back]
To telle any wight of' oure priuete
[. no gap in the MS.]
God schilde I scholde telle it for his grace / 1356
A wyf' ne schal not' say of' hir housbonde
But' al honour as I can vnderstonde
Saue vnto ȝow þus moche telle I schal
As help me god he is not' worþ at' al 1360
In no degre þe valieu of' a fle
But' ȝit' me greueth most' his nigardye

And wel 3e wot þat wymmen naturelly
 Desiren sike þinges as wel as I 1364
 They wolde þat here housbondes scholde be
 hardy and wys and riche and fre /
 And buxom to his wyf and freisch on bedde
 But by þe lord þat for vs alle bledde 1368
 For his honour my seluen to array
 A sonday next comyng 3it most I pay
 An hundred frank or elles I am lorn
 3it were me leuer þat I were vnborn 1372
 Than me were doon a sclauder or vilenye
 And if myn housbond eek might it espie
 I ner but lost and þerfor I 3ow pray
 [. 1376

 no gap in the MS.]
 For a certein day I wol 3ow pay 1380
 And do to 3ow what plesaunce and seruise
 That I may do right as 3ou list deuyse
 And but I do god take on me vengeance
 As foul as hadde Geneloun of Fraunce 1384
 This gentil monk answard in þis manere
 Now trewely myn owne lady deere /
 I haue on 3ow so gret pite and reuthe /
 That I 3ow swere and flighte 3ow my treuþe 1388

SIX-TEXT 174

GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 451

And forþ sche goth as ioly as a pye /
 And bad þe cookes þat þai schold hem hye / 1400
 So þat men myghte dyne and þat anon
 vp to hir housbond þis wif is goon
 And knockeþ at / his dore boldely
 Qy la quod he. pater it am I 1404
 Quod sche how longe sire wol 3e fast
 how longe tyme wol 3e reken and cast
 3our sommes and 3our bokes and 3our þinges /
 The deuel haue part of alle such rekenynges 1408
 3e haue I-nough par dy of goddes sonde /
 Com down to day and let 3our bagges stonde
 Ne be 3e not aschamed that Daun Iohn
 Schal al day fastyng þus elenge goon 1412
 what let vs hiere masse and gowe dyne
 wif quod þis man litel canstow diuine
 The curious besynesse þat we haue
 For of vs chapmen so god me saue 1416
 And by þat lord that cleped is seint Iue
 Scarsly among twelue two schuln þriue
 Continuely lastyng in to her age
 we may wel make cheer and good visage 1420
 And dryue forth þe world as it may be
 And kepen our estat in priuete
 Til we be deed or elles þat we play
 A pilgrimage or goon out of þe way 1424
 And þerfor haue I / gret necessite
 Vpon þis queynte world to auyse me
 For euermor we moste stond in drede
 Of hap and fortun / in our chapmanhede 1428
 To Flaundres to morw at day
 And come agayn as soone as I may
 For which my deere wif I þe byseeke
 And be to enery wight buxom and meeke 1432
 And for to kepe oure good be curious
 And honestly gouerne wel our hous

[leaf 197, back]

Thou hast ynough in euery maner wise
 That to a thrifty housbond may suffice 1436
 The lakkeþ noon array ne no vitaile
 Of siluer in þy purs þou mayst not faile
 And with þat word his contour dore he schitte
 And doun he goþ no lenger wold he lette 1440
 And hastily a masse was þer sayd
 And spedily þe tables were I-layd
 And to þe dyner faste þay hem spedde /
 And rychely þis Chapman þe monk fedde / 1444
 And after dyner daun Iohn sobrely
 This chapman took on part and priuely /
 Sayd him þus. cosyn it stondeth so
 That wel I se to brigges wol 3e go / 1448
 God and seint austyn spede 3ou and gyde /
 I pray 3ow cosyn wisly þat 3e ryde
 Gouverneth 3ow also of 3our diete
 Al temperelly and namely in þis hete 1452
 Bitwix vs tuo nedeth no straunge fare
 Far wel cosyn. god schilde 3ou fro care
 If eny þing þer be by day or night
 If it lay in my power and my might 1456
 That 3e wil me comaunde in eny wise
 It schal be doon right as 3e wol deuyse /
 O thing er þat 3e goon if it might be /
 I wol þe pray 3ow for to lene me 1460

SIX-TEXT 176

GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. *Harleian* 7334. 453

This noble marchaunt^t gentilly anonⁿ
 Answerd and sayde. O cosyn daun Iohnⁿ [leaf 198] 1472
 Now sikerly þis is a smal request^t
 My gold is þoures whanne þat^t þow lest/
 And nought^t oonly gold but^t my chaffare /
 Tak^t what^t þow liste / god schilde þe spare 1476
 But^t oon þing^t is þe know it^t wel ynoughⁿ
 Of chapmen þat^t her money is here ploughⁿ
 we may creaunce whils we haue a name
 But^t goldles for to be it is no game 1480
 Pay it agayn whan it lip in þour see /
 After my might^t ful fayn wold I þow plesse /
 This hundred frankes he fet^t forth anonⁿ
 And priuely he took^t hem to daun Iohnⁿ 1484
 No wight^t in al þis world wist^t of þis loone
 Sauyng^t þe marchaund and dan Iohnⁿ alloone
 Thay drynke & speke and rome a while and play
 Til þat^t dan Iohnⁿ rydeþ to his abbay 1488
 The morwe cam and forth þe marchaund rideth
 To Flaundres-ward his prentis wel him gydeth
 Til þat^t he cam to Brigges merily
 Now goth þis marchaund faste and busily 1493
 Aboute his neede and bieth and creaunceth
 He neither pleyeth atte dys ne daunceþ
 But^t as a marchaund schortly for to telle
 he lad his lyf / and þer I let^t him duelle 1496
 The sonday next^t þe marchaund is agoon
 To seint^t denys I-come is daun Iohnⁿ
 with croune and berd al freisch and newe I-chaue
 In al þe hous þer nas so litel a knaue 1500
 Ne no wight^t elles þat^t he nas ful fayn
 For þat^t my lord dan Iohnⁿ was come agaynⁿ
 And schortly to þe poynte for to gon
 This faire wif acordith with dan Iohnⁿ 1504
 That^t for þese hundred frank^t he schuld al night^t
 Haue hir in his armes bolt/ vpright^t

And þis acord performed was in dede /
 In mirth al night a bisy lif þay lede / 1508
 Til it was day þat dan Iohn went his way
 And bad þe meigne far wel haue good day [þay 1508, 2 each]
 For noon of hem ne no wight in þe toun
 Hath of dan Iohn right noon suspeccioun 1512
 And forth he rideth hom to his abbay
 Or wher him list / no more of him I say /
 ¶ This marchaund whan þat endid was þe faire
 To seynt denys. he gan to repeire / 1516
 And with his wif he makeþ fest and cheere
 And tellith hir þat chaffar is so deere
 That needes most he make a cheuisaunce
 For he was bounde in a reconisaunce 1520
 To paye twenty þousand scheldes anoon
 For which þis marchaund is to paris goon
 To borwe of certeyn frendes þat he hadde /
 A certein frankes and some with him he ladde / 1524
 And whan þat he was come in to þe toun
 For gret chiertee and gret affeccioun
 Vnto Dan Iohn he first goth him to play
 Nought for to borwe of him no kyn monay 1528
 But for to wite and se of his wel fare
 And for to telle him of his chaffare
 As frendes doon whan þay ben met in fere
 But þe frendes mak th first and mery cheere 1532

SIX-TEXT 178

GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 455

For 3e so kyndely þis oper day
 lente me gold and as I can and may 1544
 I þanke 3ow by god and by seint Iame /
 But napeles I took it to oure dame
 3oure wif þe same gold a3ein
 vpon 3our bench. sche wot it wel certeyn [24a/199] 1548
 By certain toknes þat I can hir telle
 Now by 3our leue I may no lenger duelle
 Oure abbot wol out of toun anoon
 And in his compaignye moot I goon 1552
 Grete wel oure dame my nece swete
 And far wel dere cosyn til þat we meete
 This marchaund which þat was bope war and wys /
 Creaunced hap and payed eek in parys/ 1556
 To certeyn lombardes redy in her hond
 This somme of gold and took of hem his bond
 And hom he goþ a mery as a popin iay
 For wel he knew he stood in such array 1560
 That needes most he wyne in such viago
 A þousand frankes aboue al his costage
 His wyf redy mette him at þe gate
 As sche was wont of old usage algate 1564
 And al þat night in mirþe þay ben sette
 For he was riche and clerly out of dette
 whan it was day þis marchaund gan embrace
 his wyf al newe and kist hir on hir face 1568
 And vp he goth and maked it ful tough
 No more quod sche by god 3e haue ynough
 And wantounly with him sche lay and playde
 Till atte laste þus þis marchaund sayde 1572
 By god quod he I am a litel wroþ
 with 3ow my wyf alþough it be me loth
 And wite 3e why by god as þat I gesse
 3e han I-maad a maner straungeneese / 1576
 Bitwixe me and my cosyn dan Iohn
 3e schold haue warned me er I had goon

That he ȝow had an hundred frankes payd
 By redy tokne and buld him euel appayd 1580
 For þat I to him spak of cheuysaunce
 Me semed so as by his countenaunce
 But napeles by god of heuen king
 I þoughe nought to axe him no þing 1584
 I pray þe wif do no more so
 Tel me alway er þat I fro þe go (Join/159, back)
 If eny dettour haue in myn absence
 I-payd þe lest in þy negligece 1588
 I may him axe a þing þat he haþ payd
 This wyf was not affered ne affrayed
 But holly sche sayde and þat anon
 Mary I diffy þat false monk dan Iohn 1592
 I kepe not of his tokenes neuer a del
 he took me a certeyn gold/ þat wot I wel
 what euel thedom on his monkes snowte/
 For god it wot I wende wipoute doute 1596
 That he had ȝeue it me by cause of ȝow
 To do þer with myn honour and my prow
 For cosynage and eek for bele cheer
 That he haþ had ful ofte tyme heer 1600
 But synnes þat I stonde in þis disioynt
 I wol answer ȝow schortly to þe poynt
 ȝe han mo slakke dettours þan am I
 For I wol pay ȝow wel and re lily 1604

GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 457

Forȝeue it me myn owne spouse deere /	
Turne hiderward and make better cheere	1616
This marchaund saugh noon oþer remedy	
And for to chide . it nas but foly	
Sip þat þe þing may not amendid be /	
wif he sayde / and I forȝiue it þe	1620
But by þi lif ne be no more so large	
keep better my good þis ȝiue I þe in charge	
Thus ended now my tale and god vs sende	
Talyng ynough vnto our lyues ende / Amen /	1624

[Foot of page. No other break in the MS.]

WEl sayd by corpus boones quod oure host' [1624/200]
 Now longe mot' þou sayle by þe cost'
 Sir gentil maister gentil mariner
 God ȝiue þe monk' a þousand last' quadeȝer 1628
 haha felaws be war for such a iape
 The monk' put' in þe mannes hood an ape
 And in his wyues eek' by seint' austyn
 Drawen no monkes more vnto ȝour In 1632
 But' now pasouer and let' vs loke aboute
 who schal telle first' of al þis route /
 Anoper tale / and wiþ þat' wiþ þat' word he sayde /
 As curteisly as it had ben a mayde / 1636
 My lady prioresse by ȝour leue
 So þat' I wist' I scholde ȝow not greue
 I wolde deme þat' ȝe telle scholde
 A tale next' if so were þat' ȝe wolde / 1640
 Now wol ȝe vouche sauf' my lady deere /
 Gladly quod sche / and sayd in þis manere

[*Break of one line in the MS.*]

[THE PROEM.]

O Lord oure lord þy name how merueylous ¶ *Dominus dominus
nos ter.*
Is in þis large world I-sprad quod sche
For nought oonly þy laude precious

Parformed is by men of heih degre
But by mouthes of children þy bounte ¶ *Ex ore infantium* 1647
Parformed is on oure brest soukyng
Som tyme schewe þay þin heriyng 1649

[No stanza-breaks in the MS.]

Wherfore in laude as I best can or may 1650
Of þe and of þy white lily flour
which þat þe bar and is a mayde alway
To telle a story I wil do my labour
Nought þat I may encrease þoure honour 1654
For sche hir silf / is honour and roote
Of bounte next hir sone and soules boote/ 1656

O modir mayde. O mayde mooder fre / 1657
O bussh vnbrent/ brennyng in Moises sight/
That rauyshedest / down fro þe deite
Thurgh þin humblesse þe goest þat in þe alight
Of whos vertu he in þin herte pigh 1661
Conceyued was þe fadres sapience [leaf 200, back]
help me to telle it in þy reuerence 1663

Lady þi bounte and þy magnificence 1664
Thy vertu and þi gret humilite
Ther may no tonge expres in no science
For som tyme lady er men pray to þe /
Thow goest biforn of þy benignite 1668
And getist vs þe light þurgh þy prayere /
To gyden vs þe way to þy sone sone so deere/ 1670

My connyng' is to weyk' o blisful queene 1671
 For to declare þy grete worþinesse
 That I may not þis in my wyt susteene
 But as a child of twelf' month old or lesse
 Than can vnnethe eny word expresse 1675
 Right' so fare I and þerfor I 3ou pray
 Endith my song' þat I schal of 3ow say 1677

[A break of one line in the MS.]

[THE TALE.]

THer was in acy in a greet' Citee 1678
 Amonges cristen folk' a Iewerye
 Susteyned by a lord of þat contre
 For foul veure and lucre of felonye /
 Hatelful to crist' and to his compaignye / 1682
 And þurgh þe strete men might' ride and wende /
 For it' was fre and open at euerich ende 1684

A litel scole of cristen folk' þer stood 1685
 Doun at þe forþer ende in which þer were
 Children an heep ycomen of cristes blood
 That lered in þat scole 3er by 3ere
 Such maner doctrine as men vsed þere 1689

Thus hap þis widow hir litel child I-taught 1699

Oure blisful lady cristes moder deere

To worschip ay and he forȝat it nought

For cely child wil alway soone leere

But ay whan I remembre of þis matiere 1703

Seint Nicholas stont euer in my presence

For he so ȝong to crist dede reuerence 1705

This litil child his litel book larnynge 1706

As he eat in þe scole at his primere

He O alma redemptoris herde synge/

As children lerned her antiphonere

And as he durst he drough hem ner and neere 1710

And herked euer þe wordes and þe note

Til he þe firste vers coupe al by rote 1712

Nought wist he what þis latyn was to say / 1713

For he so ȝong and tender was of age

But on a day his felaw gan he pray /

To expoune him þe song in his langage/

Or telle him what þis song was in vsage / 1717

This prayd he him to construe and declare

Ful often tyme vpon his knees bare / 1719

His felaw which þat elder was þan he 1720

Answerd him þus. þis song I. haue herd seye

was maked of our blisful lady fre

Hire to saluen and eek hire to preye

To ben our help and socour whan we deye 1724

I can no more expoune in this matere

I lerne song I can no more gramer 1726

And is þis song I-maad in reuerence 1727

Of cristes moder sayde þis Innocent

Now certes I wol do my diligence

To conne it al er cristemasse be went

Though þat I for my primer schal be schent / 1731
 And schal be betyn þries in an hour
 I wol it conne cure lady to honour 1733

His felaw taught him howward princely 1734
 From day by day til he coupe it by rote
 And þan he song it wel and hohlely (long/201, book)
 Twyes on þe day it passed þurgh his þrote
 From word to word accordyng to þe note 1738
 To scoleward and howward whan he went
 On cristes moder was set al his entent 1740

As I haue sayd þurghout þe Iewrys 1741
 This litel child as he cam to and fro
 Ful merily þan wold he synge and crie /
 O alma Redemptoria euer mo
 The swetnes hap his herte persed so 1745
 Of cristes moder that to hir to pray
 he can not stynt of syngyng by þe way / 1747

Oure firste foo þe serpent Sathanas 1748
 That hath in Iewes hert his waspis nest
 Vpswal and sayde / o ebreik peple alas
 Is þis a þing to 3ow þat is honest
 That such a boy schal walken as him lest 1752

- I say in a wardrobe þay him þrew 1762
 wher as the Iewes purgen her entraile
 O cursed folk! O herodes al newe
 what may þour euyl entente þou auailē
 Morther wol out certayn it wil nought faile 1766
 And namly þer þonour of god schuld sprede
 The blood out criep on þour cursed dede / 1768
- O martir soudit to Virginite 1769
 Now maystow synge folowyng! euer in oon
 The white lomb celestial quod sche /
 Of which þe grete euangelist! seint! Iohn
 In pathmos wroot! which seith þat þay goon 1773
 Bifore þe lamb and synge a song! al newe [leaf 202]
 That neuer fleischly wommen þay knowe 1775
- This pore widowe wayteþ al þis night! 1776
 After þis litel child but he cometh nought
 For which as soone as it! was dayes light!
 with face pale in drede and busy þought!
 Sche hap at scole and elles-wher him sought 1780
 Til fynally sche gan of hem aspye
 That he was last/ seyn in þe Iewerie 1782
- With moodres pite in hir brest! enclosed 1783
 Sche goþ as sche were half! out! of! hir mynde
 To euery place wher sche hap supposed
 By liklihede hir child for to fynde
 And euer on cristes mooder meke and kynde 1787
 Sche cried and atte laste þus sche wrought!
 Among! þe cursed Iewes sche him sought! 1789
- Sche freyned and sche prayed pitously 1790
 To euery Iew þat dwelled in þat place
 To telle hir if! hir child wente þer by
 Thay sayden nay but Ihu of his grace

þat in hir þoughr wiþinne a litel space 1794

That in þat place after hir some sche cryde
wher as he was cast in a put besyde / 1796

O grete god þat performedist þin laude 1797

by mouth of Innocent; lo here þy might

This gemme of chastite þis emerande

And eek of martirdom þe ruby bright

Ther he with þrote I-kut lay vpright 1801

He . Alma redemptoris gan to synge

So lowde þat al þe place bigan to rynge 1803

The cristen folk þat þurgh þe strete went/ 1804

In comen for to wonder vpon þis þing

And hastily for the pronost þay sent

He cam anon wiþoute tarying

And heriede crist þat is of heuen kyng 1808

And eek his moder honour of mankynde

And after þat þe lewes let he bynde 1810

This child with pitous lamentacioun 1811

vp taken was syngyng his song alway (to 1/2 of text, back)

And with honour of gret processioun

Thay caried him vnto þe next abbay

His modir swownyng by þe beere lay 1815

Whiche word he heere sayde þat heere heere



SIX-TEXT 188

GROUP B. § 6. Prioress's Tale. Harleian 7334. 465

Vpon his beere ay lith þis Innocent 1825
 Biforn þe chief anter whiles þe masse last'
 And after þat þabbot with his couent'
 Hap sped him for to burie him ful fast'
 And whan þay halywater on him cast' 1829
 Ȝet spak þis child. whan spreynde was þe water
 And song' O alma redemptoris mater 1831

This abbot which þat was an holy man 1832
 As monkes ben or elles oughte be
 This ȝonge child to coniure he bigan
 And sayd O deere child I halse þe
 In vertu of þe holy trinite 1836
 Tel me what is þy cause for to synge
 Sith þat þy throte is kit at my semynge 1838

My þrote is kit vnto my nekke boon 1839
 Sayde þis child and as by way of kynde
 I schulde han ben deed long tyme a goon
 But Ihu crist as ȝe in bookes fynde
 wol þat his glorie laste and be in mynde 1843
 And for þe worschip of his moder deere
 Ȝet may I synge. O alma lowde and cleere 1845

This welle of mercy cristes moder swete 1846
 I loued alway as after my connynge
 And whan þat I my lyf schulde leete
 To me sche cam and bad me for to synge
 This antym verrailly in my deyinge [leaf 203] 1850
 As ȝe haue herd and whan þat I had songe
 Me þought' sche layde a grayn vnder my tonge 1852

Wherfor I synge and synge moot certeyne 1853
 In honour of þat blisful mayden fre
 Til fro my tonge taken is þe greyne
 And after þat þus saide sche to me

My litil child now wil I fecche þe 1857
 whan þat þe grayn is fro þi tonge I-take
 Be nought agast I wol þe nought forsake 1859

This holy monk this abbot him mene I 1860
 His tonge out caught and took away þe greyn
 And he ȝaf vp þe goost ful softly
 And whan þe albot hath þis wonder seyn
 His salte teres striken doun as reyn 1864
 And gruf he fel a doun vnto þe grounde
 And stille he lay as he had ben y-bounde 1866

The couent eek lay on þe payment 1867
 wepyng and heryng cristes moder deere
 And after þat þay rise and forþ þay went
 And took away þis martir fro his beere /
 In a tombe of marble stoones cleere 1871
 Enclosed þay þis litil body sweete
 Ther he is now god leue vs for to meete 1873

O ȝonge hughe of lyncoln slayn also 1874
 wip cursed iewes as it is notable /
 For it nys but a litel while ago
 Pray eek for vs we synful folk vnstable
 That of his mercy god so merciabile 1878
 On vs his grete mercy multiplie

- W**han sayd was þis miracle euery man 1881
 As sober was þat wonder was to se
 Til þat oure host to iape bigan
 And þan at erst/ he loket vpon me
 And sayde þus what man art þou quod he 1885
 Thou lokest as þou woldest fynde an hare
 For euer vpon þe ground I se þe stare / 1887
- Approche ner and loke merily [leaf 208, back] 1888
 Now ware þou sires and let þis man haue space
 He in þe wast is schape as wel as I
 This were a popet in an arm to embrace
 For any womman smal and fair of face / 1892
 He semeth eluisch by his countenaunce
 For vnto no wight doth he daliaunce 1894
- Say now som what sines other folk han said 1895
 Telle vs a tale and þat of mirthe anon
 host quod I ne beþ nought euel apayd
 For other tale certes can I noon
 But of a rym I lerned þore agoon 1899
 3e þat is good quod he now schul we heere
 Som deynte þing me þinketh by his cheere 1901

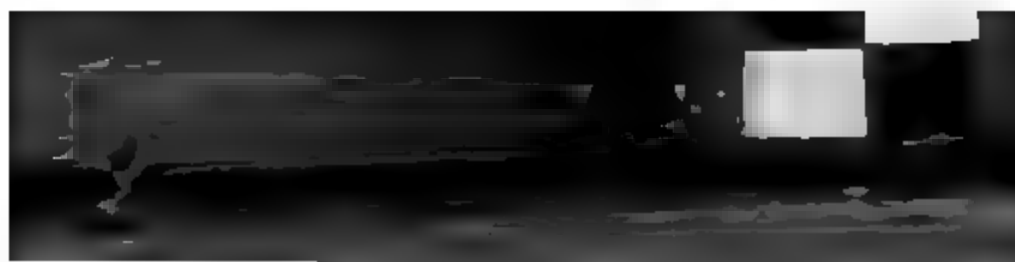
[*Break of 1 line in the MS.*]

[No stanza-gaps are in the MS., and no lines are inset.]

[*The First Fit.*]

L Esteneþ lordyngs . in good entent	
And I wol telle verrayment	
Of myrthe and solas	1904
Of a knyght was fair and gent	
In batail and in tornament	
His name was sir Thopas	1907
I-bore he was in fer countre	
In Flaundres al byþonde þe se	
At Poperyng in þe place	1910
His fader was a man ful fro	
And lord he was of þat contre	
As it was goddes grace	1913
Sir Thopas wax a doughty swayn	
whyþ was his face as payndemayn	
His lippes reed as Rose /	1916





SIX-TEXT 192
GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. Harleian 7334. 469

He coupe hunt' at wilde deer
And ride on haukyng' for ryuer
 with gray gosehauk' on honde 1928
Therto he was a good archeer
Of wrastelyng' was noon his peer
 Ther eny Ram schal stonde / 1931

Ful many mayde bright' in bour
þay mourns for him paramour
 whan hem were bet' to slepe 1934
But' he was chast' and no lecchour
And sweet' as is þe brembre flour
 That' bereþ þe reede heepe / 1937

And so it fel vpon a day
For soþ as I ȝow telle may /
 Sir Thopas wold out' ryde 1940
he worth vpon his steede gray
And in his hond a launcegay
 A long' sword by his syde 1943

he priketh þurgh a fair forest/
Ther In is many a wilde best/
 ȝe boþe buk / and hare 1946
And as he prikeþ north and Est
I tel it ȝow hym had almost'
 Bityd a sory care 1949

Ther springen herbes greet' and smale
The licorys and þe Cetewale /
 And many a clow gilofre 1952
And notemuge to put' in ale
wheþir it be moist or stale
 Or for to lay in cofre 1955

The briddes synge it is no nay
 The sperhawk and þe popiniay
 That ioye it was to heere 1958

The prostilcok maad eek his lay
 The woodes dowue vpon þe spray
 So song ful lowde and cleere 1961

Sir Thopas fel in loue-longing
 whan that he herde þe briddes synge [leaf 304, back]
 And priked as he were wood 1964

His faire steede in his prikyng
 So swette þat men might him wryng
 His sydes were al blood 1967

Sir Thopas eek so wery was
 For priking on þe softe gras
 So feers was his corrage 1970
 That down he layd him in þe place
 To make his steede som solace
 And gaf him good forage 1973

O seinte Mary benedicite
 what eylith þis loue at me
 To bynde me so sore 1976
 My dremed al this night par de

In to his sadil he clomb anoon
 And priked ouer stile and stoon
 An elf quene for to spye 1989
 Til he so longe haf ryden and goon
 That he fond in a prine woon
 The contre of fairye 1992
 ¶ So wylde [as part of l. 1992]
 For in þat contre was þer noon!
 [. no gap in the MS.]
 Neither wif ne childe [as part of l. 1994] 1996

Til þat þer cam a greet geaunt/
 his name was sir Olifaunt
 A perilous man of dede 1999
 he swar child by Termagaunt
 For if þou prike out of myn haunt
 Anoon I slee þe 2002
 with my mace [as part of l. 2002]
 heer is þe queen of fayerie
 with harp. and lute and Symphonye
 dwell yng in þis place [as part of l. 2005] 2006

The child sayd also mote I the [leaf 205]
 To morwe wil I meete with þe
 whan I haue myn armure 2009
 And ȝit I hope par ma fay
 That þou schalt with þis launcegay
 Abyen it ful soure 2012
 ¶ þy mawe [as part of l. 2012]
 Schal I persyn if þat I may
 Er it be fully prime of day
 For heer schalt þou be slawe 2016

Sir thopas drough on bak' ful fast'
 This geaunt' at' him stoones cast /
 Out' of a fell staf' slynge 2019

But faire eschapeþ child thopas
 And al it' was þurgh goddis gras
 And þurgh his berynge / 2023

3et' lesteneth lordynges to my tale /
 Merier þan þe nightyngale /
 I wol 3ow rounne 2025

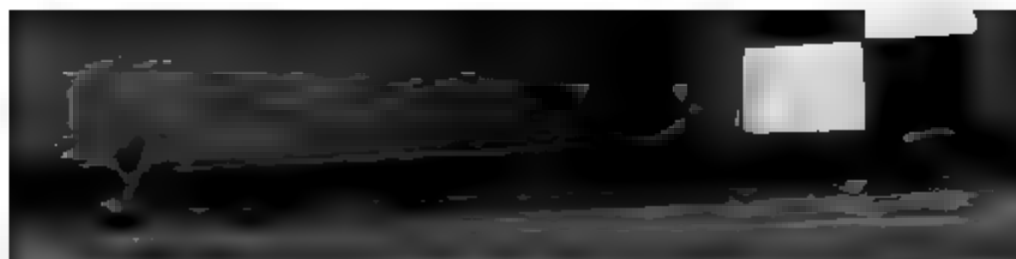
how sir thopas wiþ sides smale /
 Prikyng'e ouer hul and dale
 Is come ageyn to tounne 2028

his mery men comaunded he
 To make him boþe game and gle
 For needes most' he fight' 2031

with a geaunt' with heedes þre
 For paramours and iolite
 Of oon þat schon ful bright 2034

Do come he sayde my mynstrales
 And gestours for to telle tales
 Anoon in myn armyng'e 2037

Of Romances bat ben reales



SIX-TEXT 196
GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOMAS. Harleian 7334. 473

He dede next^t his white leere
Of cloth of lake whyt^t and cleere
A brech and eek^t a schert^t 2049

And next^t his schert^t an aketoun
And ouer þat^t an haberioun
For persyng^t of his hert^t 2052

And ouer þat^t a fyn hanberk^t
was al I-wrought^t of Iewes werk^t
Ful strong^t it^t was of plate 2055
And ouer þat^t his cote-armour
As whyt^t as is a lily flour
In which he wold debate 2058

his scheld was al of gold so red
And þer Inne was a bores heed
A charbocke by his syde / 2061
And ther he swor on ale and bred
How þat^t þe geaunt^t schal be deed
Bytyde what^t bytyde / 2064

His iambeux were of quirboily
His swerdes schethe of yuory
His helm of latoun bright^t 2067
His sadel was of rowel boon
His bridel as þe sonne schon
Or as þe moone light^t 2070

his spere was of Cipres
That^t bodeth werre and no þing^t pees
The heed ful scharp I-grounde / 2073
His steede was al dappul gray
Hit goth an ambel in þe way /
Ful softely and rounde 2076

¶ In londe

[In line 2076]

lo lordes heer is a fyt

· If 3e wil eny more of it

To telle it wol I fonde

2080

[No break in the MS.]

[The Second Fit.]

NOw hold 3our mouth for charite
Bope knight and lady fre

And herkneþ to my spelle

2083

Of batail and of chiualry

And of ladys lous drewery

[leaf 208]

Anoon I wol 3ow telle /

2086

Men speken of Romauns of pris

Of horn child and of ypotis

Of Beuys and sir Gy

2089

Of sir libeaux and pleyn damour

But sir thopas bereþ þe flour

Of real Chiualry

2092

His goode steede he bistrood

And forth vpon his way he glood

As spark out of þe broude

2095



SIX-TEXT 198
GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOMAS. Harleian 7394. 475

Himself drank water of þe welle

As dede þe knight of pertinelle /

So worthy vnder wede

2107

[. no gap in the MS.]

NO mor of þis for goddes dignite
 Quod our hoste / for þou makest me
 So wery of þy verrey lewednesse
 That al so wialy god my soule blesse / 2112
 Myn eeres aken for þy drasty speche
 Now such a rym þe denel I byteche
 This may wel be rym dogerel quop he
 why so quod I why wilt þou lette me 2116
 More of my tale þan anoper man
 Syn þat it is þe beste rym þat I can
 By god quod he for plainly at o word
 þy drasty rymyng is not worth a tord 2120
 þou dost nought alles but despendist tyme
 Sir at o word þou schalt no lenger ryme
 let se wher þou canst tellen ought in gest
 Or telle in prose som what atte lest (ten/204, 205) 2124
 In which þer be so merthe or doctrine
 Gladly quod I by goddes swete pyne /
 I wol ȝow telle a litel þing in prose
 That oughte like ȝow as I suppose / 2128

SIX-TEXT 200

GROUP B. § 9. THOPAS-MELIBE LINK. Harleian 7334. 477

For some of hem sayn more and some lesse /	
whan þay his pitous passioun expresse /	2140
I mene of mark' mathew luk' and Iohn	
But' douteles her sentence is al con	
Therfor lordynges alle I ȝow biseche	
If ȝow þink' þat' I varye as in my speche	2144
As þus þough þat' I telle som what' more	
Of prouerbes þan I haue herd bifore	
Comprehanded in þis litel tretys here /	
To enforen with peffect' of my matiere	2148
And þough I not' þe same wordes say	
As ȝe haue herd / ȝit' to ȝow alle I pray	
Blameþ me nought for in my sentence	
Schul ȝe no wher fynde difference	2152
Fro þe sentence of þis tretys lite	
After þe which þis litil tale I wryte	
And þerfor herkenþ what' I schal say	
And let' me tellen al my tale I pray	2156

[*Break of 5 lines in the MS.*]

[There are no line-numbers or paragraph-breaks in the MS. Tyrwhitt's breaks are kept here, as they were in the Six-Text, to prevent slight differences in the Texts throwing out many lines.]

[leaf 267]

[2157]

A 3ong^r man called Melibeus mighty and riche
bygat vpon his wif^r þat^r called was prudens. a
doughter^r which þat^r called was Sophie //

[2158] Vpon a day byfel þat^r for his desport^r he
is went in to þe foldes him to / play. [2159] his
wif^r and his douȝter eek^r hap^r he laft^r in-wit^r his hous of^r
which þe dores were fast^r I-schitte. [2160] þe of^r his
olde foos han it^r espyed. and setten laddres to þe walles
of^r his hous and by þe wyndowes ben entred [2161] and
beetyn his wyf^r and woundid his douȝter wif^r fyue
mortal woundes in fyue sondry places [2162] þat^r is to
sayn in here foot^r in here hondes in here eeres in here
nose and in here mouth and lafte her for deed and
went^r away

[2163] ¶ whan Melibeus retourned was in to his
hous and seigh al þis meschief^r he lik^r a man mad
rendyng^r his cloþes gan wepe and crie.



hire wepyng¹ to stinte [2169] ¶ For which reason þis noble wif² prudens suffred hir housbonde for to wepe and crie / as for a certeyn space. [2170] and whan sche seigh hir tyme³: sche sayd him in þis wise ¶ Allas my lord quod sche why make ȝe ȝoure self⁴ for to be lik⁵ a fool. [2171] For soþe it apperteyneth not to a wys man to make such sorwe. [2172] ȝoure douȝter wiþ þe grace of god schal warisch⁶ be and eschape. [2173] and al were it so þat sche right now were deed⁷: ȝe ne oughte nouȝt⁸ as for hir deþ ȝoure silf⁹ destroye [2174] ¶ Senec saith. þe wise man schal not take to gret¹⁰ discomfort for þe deth of his children¹¹: [2175] but certes he schulde suffren it in pacience as wel as he abydeþ þe deþ of his owne persone

[2176] ¶ This melibeus answerde anon & sayde ¶ what man quod he schuld of his wepyng¹² stynte þat haþ a cause for to wepe [2177] ¶ Ihu crist¹³ oure lord himself¹⁴ wepte for þe deth of lazarus his frend [2178] ¶ Prudens answerde Certes wel I wot/ attemperel wepyng¹⁵ is no þing¹⁶ defended to him þat sorwful is. aminges folk¹⁷ in sorwe. But it is rap¹⁸er graunted him to wepe / [2179] þe apostel poule vnto þe Romayns writeth. A man schal reioyce with hem þat maken ioye / And wepe with such folk¹⁹ as wepan [2180] ¶ But þough attemperel²⁰ wepyng²¹ be graunted²²: Outrageous wepyng²³ certes is defended // [2181] Mesure of wepyng²⁴ be conserued. after þe lore of crist²⁵ þat techeth vs senec [2182] ¶ whan þat þi frend is deed quod he²⁶: let nought þin yen to moyste ben of teres ne to moche drye ¶ Al þough the teeres come out of þine eyen²⁷: let he not falle [2183] ¶ And whan þou hast²⁸ forȝon þy frend²⁹: do diligence to gete anoþer frende ¶ And þis is more wisdom þan to wepe for þy frend which þat þou hast lorn. For þer in is no boote [2184] ¶ And þerfore if ȝe gouerne ȝow þy sapience put away sorwe out of ȝoure hert [2185] ¶ Remembreth ȝow þat Ihu Sirac saith

¶ Qualiter Ihu
christus fleuit
propter mortem
lazari

Apostolus ad
romanos

[1204f 207, best]

¶ A man þat is ioyous and glad in herte: it him con-
serveth florischinge in his age ¶ But sople sorweful herte
makeþ his boones drye [2186] ¶ he saiþ eek þus.
þat sorwe in herte aleþ ful many a man [2187] ¶ Sa-
lomon saiþ þat right as motthes in schepes flees
annoyeth þe clothes. and þe smale wormes to þe tre:
Right / so annoyeth sorwe to þe herte [2188] ¶ wherefore
vs oughte as wel in þe dep of oure children as in þe
loose of oure goodes temporales haue pacience

[2189] ¶ Remembreth 3ow vpon þe pacian Iop
¶ whan he hadde lost his children and his temporal sub-
stance and in his body endured and receyued ful many a
greuous tribulacioun: 3it sayde he þus [2190] ¶ Oure
lord it/ sent/ vnto me Oure lord it hap raft fro me.
Right so as oure lord wil: riȝt so be it don ¶ I-blessed
be þe name of oure lord [2191] To þese forsayde
þinges answerith Melibeus vnto his wif Prudens
Alle þine wordes ben soþ quod he and þerto pro-
fytable ¶ But sople myn herte is so troubled wip þis sorwe:
þat I noot/ what to doone [2192] ¶ Let calle quod
prudence þy trewe frendes alle and þy linage whiche þat
ben trewe & wise. telleth hem 3oure greuaunce and herken
what þay say in counseilynge. and 3ow gouerne after here
sentence. [2193] ¶ Salomon saith ¶ werke al þi þing
by counsel and þe þar neuer rewe

[2194] ¶ þan by þe counsel of his wyf prudens



[2199] and by þe maner of his speche: it semed þat in ¹herte he bar a cruel Ire redy to do vengeance vpon his foe. and sodeynly desirede þat þe werre schulde bygynne. [2200] but nathales ȝif axed he her counseil in þis matier. [2201] ¶ A Sirurgien by licens and assent of suche as were wyse vp roe and to melibeus sayde as ȝe may hiere

[2202] ¶ Sire quod he as to vs Sirurgiens appertieneth þat we do to euery wight þe beste þat we can wher as we ben withholde and to oure pacient þat we do no damage [2203] ¶ wherfore it happed many tyme and ofte þat whan tweye han euerich wounded oþer: oo. same surgien heled hem boþe. [2204] where vnto oure art it is not perteyned to norische werre ne parties to supporte: [2205] but certes as to warisching of ȝoure douȝter al be it so þat sche perilously be woundid: we schullen do so tentyf besynes fro day to night þat with þe grace of god sche schal be hool and sound als soone as it is possible [2206] ¶ Almost right in þe same wise þe phisiciens answerden: saue þat þay sayden a fewe wordes more [2207] ¶ That ryght as maladies ben cured by her contraries: Right so schal men warissch werre by vengeance [2208] ¶ His neyheboures ful of ennye his feyned freendes þat semede recounsailed his flatereres [2209] maden semblaunt of wepyng and appaired and aggregated moche of þis matiere in preisyng gretly melibe of might. of power of Riches. and of frendes despisinge þe power of his aduersaries [2210] and sayden outerly þat he anon schulde wreke him on his aduersaries be bygynnyng of werre

[2211] vp roe þanne an aduocate þat was wys. by leue and by counseil of oþere þat were wise and sayde / [2212] ¶ Lordynges. þe needes for whiche we ben assemblit in þis place is ful heuy þing and an heigh matier [2213] by cause of þe wrong & of þe wikkednes þat hap ben doon and eek of þe grete damages þat

in tyme comyng ben possible to falle for þe same
 [2214] and eek by cause of þe grete richesse and
 power of þe parties bothe [2215] for þe which resonne
 it were a ful gret peril to erron in these materes [2216]
 ¶ wherfore melibeuþ þis is oure sentence ¶ we counseile
 þow abouen alle þinges þat riȝt anon þou do
 diligence in kepyng of þy body in such a
 wyse þat þou ne wante noon espye ne wacche þy body
 for to saue [2217] ¶ And after þat we counseile þat in
 þin hous þou sette sufficiant garnisoun So þat þay may
 as wel þy body as þin hous defende [2218] ¶ But certes
 for to moeue werre ne sodeynly for to do vengeance!
 we may not deme in so litel tyme þat it were profit-
 able [2219] ¶ wherfore we axen leysir and a space
 [. . .] in þis caas to demen [2220] ¶ For þe comune
 prouerbe seiþ þis ¶ he þat soone demeþ soone schal
 repente [2221] ¶ And eek men sayn þat þilke Iuge is
 wys þat soone vnderstondeþ a matier and Iugeþ by
 leysir. [2222] ¶ For al be it so þat / alle taryinge is anoyful!
 algates it is no reproef in þenyng of Iuggement. ne of
 ve[n]gaunce takyng whan it is sufficiant and resonable
 [2223] and þat schewed oure lord ihū crist by en-
 sample ¶ For whan þat þe womman þat was I-take in
 aduoutrie was brouȝt in his presence to knowen what
 schulde be doon of hir persone Al be it þat he wist
 him self what þat he wolde answer! ȝit wolde he

pat þay ben freische and newe ¶ And with lowde vois þay cryde . werre . werre .

[2227] ¶ Vproos þo oon of þese olde wise and with his hond made countenaunce þat men schulde holde hem stille and ȝiuen him audience [2228] ¶ lordynge quod he ther is ful many a man þat crieth werre werre wot ful litel what werre amounteth . [2229] werre at his bygyanyng haþ so greet and entre and so large þat euery wight may entre whan him likeþ and lightly fynde werre [2230] ¶ But certes what ende schal falle þerof it is not lightly to knowe [2231] For soþly whan þat werre is oones bygonne þer is ful many a child vnborne of his mooder þat schal sterue ȝong by cause of þilke werre or elles lyue in sorwe and deye in wrecchidnes [2232] ¶ & þerfore er þat eny werre be bygonne . men moste haue gret counseil and gret deliberacioun . [2233] ¶ And whan þis olde man wende to enforce his tale by resouns wel neigh alle at oones bygonne þay to rise for to breke his tale and beden him fulofte his wordes to abrigge . [2234] For soþly he þat precheþ to hem that liste not to heere his wordes his sermoun hem anoyeth [2235] ¶ For Ihesus Sirac saith þat wepyng in musik is a noyous þing . þis is to say ¶ As moche auayleþ to speke tofore folk to whiche his speche annoyeþ as it is to synge byfore hem whiche þat wepith [2236] ¶ And whan þis wise man saugh him wanted audience al schamefast he sette him down agayn [2237] ¶ For Salamon saith . ther as þou may haue noon audience enforce þe not to speke [2238] ¶ I se wel quod þis wise man þat þe comune prouerbe is soþ ¶ That good counseil wantith whan it is most neede

[2239] ¶ Ȝit hadde þis melibeus in his counseil many folk þat priuely in his eere han counseled him certain þinges and counseled him þe contrarie in general audience

[2240] ¶ whan melibeus hadde herd ȝet þe grettest

party of his counseil were accorded þat he schulde make werre. Anoon he consented to here counseilyng and fully affermed here sentence [2241] ¶ Thanne dame Prudence whan þat sche saugh þat hir housbonde schop him to wreke him of his enemyes and to gynne werre: Sche in ful humble wise whan sche saugh hire tyme sayde him þese wordes [2242] ¶ My lord quod sche I ȝow biſeche as hertily as I dar and kan ne haste ȝow nought to faste and for alle guerdouns as ȝeue me audience [2243] ¶ For Peres Alfons saith ¶ who þat doþ to þe ouþer good or harm: haste þe nought to quytten him. For in þis wise þy freend wil abyde: and þin enemy schal þe lenger lyue in drede [2244] ¶ The prouerbe saiþ ¶ he hastith wel þat wisly can abyde and in wikked haste is no profyt

[2245] ¶ This melibeus answerde vn to his wyf prudens ¶ I purpose not quod he to werke by þy counseil for many causes and resouns ¶ For certes enery wight wolde holde me þanne a fool [2246] ¶ þis is to sayn ¶ If I for þy counseil wolde chaunge þinges þat affermed ben by so many wise: [2247] I say þat alle wommen be wikked and noon good of hem alle ¶ For of a þousand men saiþ Salomon I fond oon good man: But certes of alle wommen good woman fond I neuer noon [2248] ¶ And also certes if I gouernede me by þy counseil it schulde seme that I hadde



knowe and þis ne may not be [2252] [.
.
. [2253]
.
.
. *no gap in the MS.*]

[2254] whan dame Prudence ful debonerly and
with gret pacience hadde herd al þat hir housbonde
liked for to seye ¶ Than axed sche of him licence ¹for to
speke and sayde in þis wise [2255] ¶ My lord quod sche
as to ȝoure firste resoun certes it may lightly be
answered. For I say it is no foly to chaunge
counsel whan þe þing/ is chaungid. For elles whan
þe þing/ semet oþerwise þan it was biforn
[2256] And moreouer I say þough þat ȝe han
sworn and I-hight to parforme ȝoure emprise And
napeles ȝe wayue to parforme þilke same emprise
by iuste cause men schulde not say þefore þat/ ȝe were
a lyere ne forsworn [2257] For þe book/ seiþ þat þe
wise man makeþ no lesyng/ whan he torneth his corrage to
þe better [2258] ¶ And al be it so þat ȝoure emprise be
establid and ordeyned by gret multitude of poeple/ ȝit
thar ȝe not accomplise þilke same ordinaunce but ȝou like /
[2259] For þe troupe of þing/ and þe profyt/ ben
rather founde in fewe folk/ þat/ ben wise and ful of
resoun þan by gret multitude of folk/ þat/ euery man
crieth and clatereþ what/ þat him likeþ soþely
such multitude is not honest [2260] ¶ An to þe secounde
resoun wher as ȝe sayn þat alle wommen ben wikke/
Saue ȝoure grace. Certis ȝe despise alle wommen in þis
wise and þat alle despysith seiþ þe book /
[2261] And senec saith who-so wil haue Sapi-
ence schal no man despraye but he schal gladly teche þe
science þat he can wipoute presumpcioun of pryde
[2262] and suche þinges as he nought/ can he
schal not ben aschamed to lerne hem and enquere of lasse

folk þan himself [2263] ¶ And sire þer hap
 be ful many a good womman [.
 [2264]] if alle
 wommen hadde ben wikke [2265] after þat for
 þe grete bounte þat is in wommen! Oure lord ihu crist/
 whan he was risen fro deþ to lyue apperede raper to a
 womman þan to his apostles. [2266] ¶ And þough
 þat Salamon say he fond neuer good womman
 It folwith nouȝt þerfore þat alle wommen ben
 wikke. [2267] For þough þat he fonde noone goode
 wommen certes many a noþer man hap founden
 many a womman ful goode and trewe [2268] ¶ Or elles
 parauenture þentent of Salamon was þis as in
 souereyn bounte. he fond no womman [2269] þis is to
 say þat þer is no wight þat hap souerein bounte
 saue god aloone as he himself recordeþ in his euaun-
 gelie. [2270] For þer nys no creature so good þat him
 wantith som-what of þe perfeccioun of god þat is his
 makere [2271] ¶ Ȝoure bridde resoun is þis. Ȝe seyn. þat if
 Ȝe gouerned Ȝow by counsel of me it schulde seme þat Ȝe
 hadde yeue me the maystry and þe lordschipe ouer Ȝoure
 persone. [2272] sire saue Ȝoure grace it is not so. For
 if so were þat no man schulde be counseiled but by
 hem þat hadde maystrye and lordschipe of his persone:
 men wolde nought be counseiled so ofte [2273] ¶ For sople



suche wommen seiþ salomon þat it were better to a man to dwelle in desert þan with a womman þat is riotous [2278] and sire by þoure leue þat am not I [2279] ¶ For ȝe han ful ofte assayed my grete scilence and my grete pacience and eek how wel þat I can hyde and hele þinges þat ben secrely to hyde [2280] ¶ And soþly as to ȝoure fyfte resoun wher as ȝe sayn þat in wikkede counseil wommen venquisscheth men. god wot þilke resoun stont here in no stede / [2281] For vnderstondith now ȝe aȝein counseil to do wickidnes [2282] and if ȝe wil wirke wickidnes and ȝoure wyf restreyne þilke wicked purpos and ouercome ȝou by resoun and by good counseil! [2283] Certes ȝoure wyf oweth rapur be preised than y-blamed / [2284] ¶ Thus schulde ȝe vnderstonde þe philosopher þat seiþ in wicked counseil wommen venquyschen her housbondes [2285] ¶ And þer as ȝe blame alle wymmen and here resouns! I schal schewe by many resouns and ensamples þat many a womman hath ben ful good and ȝit been and here counseiles ful holsome and profitable [2286] ¶ Eke some men han sayd þat þe counseilyng of wommen is ouȝer to dere or to litel of pris [2287] But al be it so þat ful many a womman is badde and hir counseil vile and not worþ! ȝet han men founde many a ful good womman and ful discret and wys in counseilyng [2288] ¶ lo Iacob by counseil of his moder Rebecca wan þe blessing of his fader ysaak and þe lordschipe of alle his breþeren [2289] ¶ Indith by hire goode counseil delyuered þe Citee of Bethulie in which sche dwellid out of þe hous of Olophernus þat had it byseged and wolde it al destroye [2290] ¶ Abigayl deliuered Nabal hir housbond fro Dauid þe kyng þat wolde haue I-alayn him and appesed þe Ire of þe kyng by hir witte and by hir good counseilynge [2291] ¶ Hester by good counseil enhaunsed gretly þe poeple of god In þe regne of assuerus þe kyng [2292] and þe same bounte in good counseilyng of many

a good womman may men rede and telle [2293] And more
ouer whan oure lord had creat adam oure forme fader:
he sayde in þis wise [2294] ¶ Hit is not goode to be a
man aloone. make we to him an help semblable to him
self [2295] ¶ here may ȝe se þat if þat a womman
were not ¹good and hir counseil good and profytable:
[2296] oure lord god of heuen wolde neither haue wrought
hem ne called hem help of man but raper confusioun to
man [2297] ¶ And þer sayde oones a clerk in tuo versus
¶ what is better than gold. Iasper. And what is better þan
Iasper: wisdom. [2298] and what is better than
wisdom: womman. and what is better than good
womman: No þing [2299] ¶ And sire by many oþer
resouns may ȝe se þat many women ben goode
and [. . . *no gap in MS.*] profitable [2300] and þerfore
if ȝe wil truste to my counseil: I schal restore ȝou
ȝoure doughter hool and sound [2301] ¶ and eek I wil doon
ȝou so moche þat ȝe schul haue honour in þis cause

[2302] ¶ whan Melibe had herd þese wordes of his
wif prudens: he seide þus. [2303] ¶ I se wel þat þe
word of Salomon is soþ ¶ he seith þat þe wordes þat
ben spoken discretly by ordinaunce been hony combe.
For þay ȝeuen swetnes to þe soule. and holmes
to þe body [2304] ¶ And wyf bycause of þy swete
wordes and eek for I haue assayed and proued þi grete
sapiens & þi grete troupe: I wil gouerne me by þy

god and pray him to dresse þy wayes. and loke þat alle þi counseiles be in him for euermore [2309] ¶ Seint Iame eek saith ¶ If eny of ȝow haue neede of sapiens axe it of god. [2310] and aftirward þanne schul ȝe take counseil in ȝoure self. and examine wel ȝoure þouȝtes of suche þinges as ȝou þinkiþ þat is best for ȝoure profyt [2311] and þanne schul ȝe dryue fro ȝoure hertes þo þat ben contrarie to good counseil. [2312] þat is to say. Ire. coueytise. and hastynes

[2313] ¶ First he þat axep counseil of himself. certes he moete be wipoute Ire. for many cause [2314] ¶ The first is þis ¶ He þat hap gret Ire and wrappe in himself. he weneth alwey he may do þing þat he may not doo [2315] ¶ And secoundly he þat is Irous and wroþ. he may not wel deme [2316] ¶ and he þat may not wel deme. may nought wel counseile [2317] ¶ The þridde is þis. þat he þa is Irous and wroth as saith Senec may not speke but blameful þinges [2318] and with his vicious wordes he stireþ oþer folk to anger and to Ire [2319] ¶ And eek sire ȝe moete dryue coueytise out of ȝoure herte / [2320] ¶ For papostil saith þat coueytise is roote of alle harmes. [2321] And trusteth wel þat a coueitous man ne can not deme ne þinke¹ but oonly to fulfille þe ende of his coueytise [2322] ¶ And certes þat may neuer ben accomplished ¶ For euer þe more abundaunce þat he hath of riches. þe more he desireth [2323] And sire ȝe moete also dryue out of ȝour herte hastynes. [2324] For certes ȝe may nought deme for þe beste a sodein þouȝt þat falleþ in ȝoure herte ¶ But ȝe moete anyse ȝou on it ful ofte [2325] ¶ For as ȝe harde here biforn þe comune prouerbe is þis. þat he þat soone demeth soone repentith.

[2326] ¶ Sire ȝe ben not alway in lik disposicioun [2327] For certis som þing þat som tyme semeth to ȝow þat it is good for to doo. anoper tyme it semeth to ȝou þe contrarie

[2328] whan 3e han taken counseil in 3oure seluen. and han demed by good deliberacioun such þing as 3ow semeþ best [2329] ¶ þanne rede I 3ou þat 3e kepe it secre. [2330] Bywreye nought 3oure counseil to no persone but it so be þat 3e wene sicurly that þurgh 3oure bywreyinge 3oure condicioun schal be to 3ow þe more profytable [2331] ¶ For Ihe Syrac saiþ ¶ Neiper to þi foo ne to þi freend discouere not þy secre ne þy foly [2332] ¶ For þey wil 3iue 3ou audience and lokyng and supportacioun in þi presence and scorn in thin absence [2333] ¶ anoper clerk saiþ þat skarsly schalt þou fynde eny persone þat may kepe counseil secreely [2334] ¶ The book saith ¶ whil þou kepist þi counsail in þin herte þou kepest it in þi prisoun [2335] ¶ and whan þou bywreyst þi counseil to any wight he holdeþ þe in his snare [2336] ¶ And þerfore 3ow is better hyde 3oure counseil in 3oure herte þan prayen him to whom 3e haue bywryed 3oure counseil þat he wol kepe it clos and stille [2337] ¶ For Seneca seith ¶ If so be þat þou ne maist not þin owne counsel hyde how darst þou preuen any oper wight þi counseil secreely to kepe? [2338] ¶ But napeles if þou wene securly þat þy bywreying of þy counsel to a persone wol make þy condicioun stonde in þe better plite þanne schalt þou telle him þy counsel in þis wise [2339] ¶ First þou shalt make no semblaunt wher þe were leuer werre or



sidere which of hem beþ most faithful and most wise and eldest and most appronyd in counsaylinge [2346] ¶ And of hem schalt þou axe þy counsail as þe caas¹ requireth

[2347] ¶ I say þat first 3e schul clepe to 3our counsail 3oure frendes that ben trewe [2348] ¶ For Salomon saip For right as þe hert of a man delitith in sauour þat is soote! Right so. þe counsail of trewe frendes 3eneþ swetnes to þe soule [2349] ¶ he saith also ther may no þing be likened to þe trewe freend [2350] ¶ For certes gold ne siluer beþ nought so moche worþ as þe goode wil of a trewe freend. [2351] ¶ And eek he sayde þat a trewe frend is a strong defens who þat it fyndeþ certes he fyndeþ a gret tresour [2352] ¶ þanne schul 3e eek considere if þat 3oure trewe frendes ben discrete and wyse For þe book saith. axe þi counsail alwey of hem þat ben wyse. [2353] and by þis same resoun shul 3e clepe to 3oure counsail of 3oure frendes þat ben of age suche as haue I-see sightes and ben expert in many þinges and ben appronyd in counseylinges [2354] ¶ For þe book saith þat in olde men is þe sapience and in longe tyme þe prudence [2355] ¶ And tullius saip þat grette þinges ben not ay accompliced by strengþe ne by delyuernes of body! but by good counsail by auctorite of persones and by science. the whiche þre þinges ne been not feble by age! but certis þay enforseen and encreesen day by day [2356] and thanne schul 3e kepe þis for a general reule ¶ First schul 3e clepe to 3oure counsail a fewe of 3oure frendes þat ben especial [2357] For Salomon saip ¶ Many frendes haue þou but among a þousand chese þe oon to be þy counsellour. [2358] For al be it so þat þou first ne telle þy counsail but to a fewe! þou mayst afterward telle it to mo folk if it be neede [2359] But luke alwey þat þy counsellours haue þilke þre condiciouns þat I haue sayd

bifore þat is to say þat þay ben trewe and olde and of wys experiens [2360] ¶ And werke nouȝt alwey in euery neede by oon counseilour alloone ¶ For som tyme byhouep it be counseiled by many [2361] ¶ For Salomon saith ¶ Saluacioun of þinges is whar as þere beþ many counseilours.

[2362] Now seiþ þat I haue told ȝow of which folk ȝe schul be counseled ¶ Now wil I telle ȝow which counsel ȝe ouȝt eschiewe. [2363] First ȝe schal espie þe counsel of fooles ¶ For Salomon seiþ take no counseil of a fool For he ne can not counseile but after his ouȝne lust and his alleccioun [2364] ¶ The book seiþ þat þe proprete of a fool is þis he troweþ lightly harm of euery wight & lightly troweþ alle bounte in himself [2365] ¶ Thow schalt eschiewe eek þe counsel of alle flaterers suche as enforcen hem rapere to prayse ȝoure persone by flaterie þan for to telle ȝow þe soþfastnesse of þinges

[2366] ¶ wherfore Tullius saith Amonges alle pestilences þat ben in frendschipe þat is þe grettest flaterie. ¶ And þerfore is it more neede þat þou eschiewe and drede flaterers more þan eny oþer peple [2367] ¶ The book seiþ. þou schalt rapere drede and fleo fro þe swete wordes of flaterers. þen fro þe egre wordes of þy frend þat seiþ þe þi soþes [2368] ¶ Salamon seiþ þat þe wordes of a flaterer is a snare



grace of his olde enemyes [2374] ¶ And ysope saith. Ne truste not to hem wip which þou hast had som tyme werre or enmyte. ne telle not hem þy counseil [2375] And Seneca telleþ þe cause why it may not be saith he þat wher as a greet furyr haþ longe tyme endured: þat þere ne leueþ som vapour of hete [2376] ¶ And þerfore saith Salomon ¶ In þin olde enemy truste þou neuere [2377] ¶ For sicurly þough þin enemy be reconsiled and make þe cheer of humilite and lowteþ to þe his heed: ne trist him neuer [2378] For certes he makip þilke feyned humilite more for his profyt þan for any loue of þi persone by cause he demyth to haue victorie ouer þi persone ¶ By such feyned countynaunce the whiche victorie he might nouȝt haue by stryft and werre [2379] ¶ And Petir Alfons saip ¶ Make no felaschipe with þine olde enemyes. for if þou do hem bounte: þey wil peruerten it in to wikkednes [2380] & eek þou most eschiewe þe counseilyng of hem þat ben þy seruaunt; and beren þe gret reuerence. For þur auenture þai say it more for drede þan for loue [2381] And þerfore saith a philosopre in þis wise ¶ Ther is no wight parfytly trewe to him þat he to sore dredeth [2382] ¶ And Tullius saith ¶ þer is no wight so gret of any emperour þat onge may endure but if he haue more loue of þe peple than drede [2383] ¶ Thow also eschiewe þe counseil of folk þat ben dronkelewe For þay ne can no counsel hyde [2384] ¶ For Salomon saith ¶ Ther regnep no priuete þer as is dronkenesse [2385] ¶ þe schul also haue in suspect þe counseil of such folk as counseileþ ȝou oon þing priuely and counseile ȝow þe contrarie openly [2386] ¶ For Cassiodorie saith it is a maner sleighte to hindre whan he schewip to doon oon þing openly and werkith priuely þe contrarie. [2387] ¶ þou schalt also eschiewe þe counseil of wikked folkes ¶ For þe book saith. ¶ The counselyng of wikked folk is alway ful

of fraude [2388] ¶ and Danid saith ¶ Bliaful is þat man
þat haþ not folwed þe counseilyng of wikked men or
schrewes [2389] ¶ Thow schalt also eschiewe þe counseilynge
of ȝonge folkes for here counseil is nought/ rype

[2390] ¶ Now sire syn I haue schewed ȝou of what folk
ȝe schul take ȝoure counsail and of whiche folk ȝe schullen
folwe þe counseil [2391] ¶ Now schal I teche ȝow how ȝe
schul examyne ȝoure counseil after þe doctrine of tullius
[2392] ¶ In the examynyng of ȝoure conseiloures
ȝe schul considre many þinges [2393] ¶ Al-thir first ȝe
schul considre þat in þilke þing that þou proposit
and vp what þing þou wilt haue counseil that verray
trouthe be sayd and considerid. þis is to sayn. telle
trewely þy tale [2394] ¶ For he þat saith fals may not
wel be counseled in þat cas of which he lyeth [2395]
¶ And after þis þou schalt considere the þinges þat
accorden to þat purpos. for to do by þy counseil
if resoun accorde þer to [2396] ¶ and eek if þy
might may accorde þer to. and if þe more part and þe
better part of þy conseilours accorde þer-to or noon
[2397] ¶ Thanne schalt þou considere what þing schal
folwe of þat counsailyng. as hate. pees. werre.
grace. profyt/. or damage and many oþer þinges
[2398] ¶ And in alle þese þinges þou schalt chese
þe beste and weyue alle oþer þinges [2399] þanne
schalt þou considre of what roote engendred is þy matier

schulde take vpon him so heuy a charge þat he mighte not
 bere it [2405] ¶ For þe prouerbe seiþ ¶ He þat moche
 embrasith destroyeþ litel [2406] ¶ And Catoun seiþ
 Assay to do such þing as þou hast power to doon.
 lest þat þy charge oppresse þe so sore. þat þe
 bihoue to wayne þing þat þou hast bygonne
 [2407] ¶ And if so be þat þou be in doubte¹ wher þou
 maist² parforme a þing or noon chese rather to suffre
 þan bygynne [2408] ¶ And petre alfons saith If
 þou hast might to doon a þing of which þou most
 repente it is better nay þan yee / [2409] þis is
 to sayn þat þe is better holde þy tongue stille þan
 to speke [2410] ¶ Than may 3e vnderstonde by
 strengre resouns. þat if þou hast power to parforme a
 werk of which þou schalt repente: þanne is it better
 þat þou suffre þan bigynne. [2411] wel seyn þay þat
 defenden euery wight to assaie þing of which he is
 in doute wheþir he may parforme it or noon [2412]
 ¶ And after whan 3e han examyned 3oure counseil as I
 haue sayd biforn and knowen wel 3e may par-
 forme 3oure emprise: conferme it þanne sadly til it be at
 an ende

[2413] ¶ Now is it tyme and resoun þat I schewe 3ow
 whanne and wherfore þat 3e may chaunge 3oure coun-
 seil wipouten reproef / [2414] ¶ Sothly a man
 may chaunge his purpos and his counseil if þe cause
 cesseþ or whan a newe cause bytydeþ [2415] ¶ For þe
 lawe seiþ ¶ vpon þinges þat newly bitydeþ bihoueþ
 newe counseil. [2416] and Seneca seiþ ¶ If þy counseil
 be comen to þe eeres of þin enemy: chaunge þy counseil
 [2417] ¶ Thow maist/ also chaunge þy counseil if so be
 þat þou fynde þat by errour or by oþer
 processe harm or damage may bytyde [2418] ¶ Also
 þou chaunge þy counseil if þay be dishonest or elles
 comuneth of dishoneste. [2419] For þe lawes sayn ¶ That
 alle þe hestes þat ben dishoneste ben of no valieu

[2420] and eek if it so be þat it be impossible. or may not goodly be performed or kept

[2421] and take þis for a general reule ¶ That every conseil þat is affermed or strengþed so strongly þat it may not be chaunged for no condicioun þat may hitide ¶ I say þat þilke conseil is wikked

[2422] ¶ þis melibeus whan he had herd þe doctrine of his wyf dame prudens answerde in þis wise [2423] ¶ Dame quod he ȝit as in to þis tyme ȝe han wel and couenably taught me as in general how I schal gouerne me in chesyng and in wiþholdyng of my conseiloures [2424] ¶ But now wold I fayn ȝe wolde condescende as in especial [2425] & telleþ me what semeþ or how likeþ ȝow by oure conseiloures þat we han chosen in oure present neede

[2426] ¶ My lord quod sche I bysake ȝow in al humblesce þat ȝe wil not wilfully repþlye aȝeinst my resoun ne distempere ȝoure herte þough I say or speke þing þat ȝow displeith [2427] ¶ For god woot þat as in myn entent I speke it for ȝoure beste. for ȝoure honour. and for ȝour¹ profyt eek [2428] ¶ And soþly I hope þat ȝour benignite wol take it in to pacience [2429] ¶ For trusteþ me wel quod sche þat ȝoure conseil as in þis caas ne schulde not as for to speke properly be called a counseilyng! but / a mocoun or a moeuynge of foly [2430] in which conseil ȝe han erred in many a sondry wise



reconsiled and folk pat doon 3ow reuerence wipoute
loue [2436] ¶ Eke also 3e han erred: For 3e han
brou3t with 3ow to 3oure counseil. Ire. Coueitise and
Haastynes. [2437] þe whiche þre þinges ben contra-
rious to euery counsail honest and profitable [2438] ¶ The
whiche þre þinges 3e haue nought annentissched or destroyed
neyþer in 3oure self ne in 3oure conseiloures as 3e oughte
[2439] ¶ Also 3e haue erred. For 3e haue schewed to 3oure
conseilours 3oure talent and 3oure affeccions to make
werre and for to doon vengeance anon [2440] ¶ þay han
espyed by 3oure wordes to what þinge 3e ben enclined
[2441] and þefore haue þay counseiled 3ow rather to
3oure talent þan to 3oure profyt [2442] ¶ 3e haue erred
also: For it semep þat 3ow sufficeþ to haue been coun-
seiled by þese conseilours only and wip litel anys
[2443] wher-as in so gret and so heigh a neede it hadde
be necessarious mo conseilours and more deliberacioun to
performe 3oure emprise [2444] 3e haue erred also ¶ For
[.] [2445] . .
. no gap] 3e haue maked no diuisioun bytwixe
3oure conseilours þis is to seyn bitwix 3oure
frendes and 3oure feyned conseilours. [2446] ne 3e ne haue
nought I-knowe þe wille of 3oure frendes olde and wise.
[2447] But 3e haue cast alle here wordes in an hochepoche /
and enclyned 3oure herte to þe more part and to þe
gretter nombre and þere be 3e condescendid [2448]
¶ And syn 3e wot wel men schal alway fynde a
gretter nombre of fooles þan of wyse men: [2449] and
þefore þe counsailes þat ben at congregaciouns and mul-
titudes of folk. þer as men taken more reward to þe
nombre þan to þe sapience of persones. [2450] 3e se wel
þat in suche counseilynges fooles haue maystrie [2451]
¶ Melibeus answerde agayn and sayde ¶ I graunte wel þat
I haue erred: [2452] But þere as þou hast told me
toforen þat he is nought to blanie þat changeþ his coun-

seilours in certeyn caas and for certeyn iuste causes
 [2453] ¶ I am al redy to chaunge my counseilours right
 as þou wilt deuyse [2454] ¶ The prouerbe saith þat
 for to do synne is mannysch. But/ certes for to perseuere
 longe in synne is werk of þe deuy!

[2455] ¶ To þis sentence anon answerde dame pru-
 dens and saide [2456] ¶ Examineth quod sche þoure coun-
 sail and let vs se which of hem haþ spoke
 most resonably and taught þou best counsail [2457]
 And for as moche as þe examinacioun is necessarie:
 let vs byginne at þe Surgiens and at þe phisiciens þat
 first speken in þis matiere [2458] ¶ I say þou þat þe
 surgiens and þe physiciens han sayd þow in þoure conseil
 discretly as hem ought [2459] and in here speche
 sayden ful wisely þat to þe office of hem appendith to
 doon to euery wight honour and profyt. and no wight
 to annoye [2460] and after here craft to do gret diligence
 vn to þe cure of hem which þat þay haue in here govern-
 aunce [2461] And sire right as þay answerde
 wisely and discretly: [2462] Right so rede I þat þay
 be heihly and soueraignly guerdoned for here noble
 speche / [2463] and eek for þey schullen do þe more
 ententyf besynes in þe curyng of þoure douȝter dere
 [2464] ¶ For al be it so þat þai be þoure frendes:
 þerfore schul þe nought suffre þat þay schul serue þow for
 nouȝt / [2465] But þe oughte þe rapere to guerdoune hem and
 schewe hem þoure largesse [2466] ¶ & as touchynge þe
 propositiouns whiche þe phisiciens han schewed þou in þis
 caas þis is to sayn [2467] þat in maladyes oon
 contrarie is warissed by anoper contrarie. [2468] I
 wolde fayn knowe pilke text and how þay vnderstonde it and
 what is þoure entente [2469] ¶ Certes quod Melibeus
 vnderstonden it is in þis wise [2470] þat right as þay han
 do me a contrarie: right so schold I do hem anoper
 [2471] ¶ For right as þai han venged hem on me and
 doon me wrong: Right so schal I venge me vp on hem



and doon hem wrong [2472] and þanne haue I cured oon contrarie by anoþer

[2473] ¶ Io lo quod Dame prudence how lightly is euery man enclyned to his oughne plesaunce and to his oughne desir [2474] ¶ Certes quod sche þe wordes of þe phisiciens¹ ne schulde nouȝt haue ben vnderstonde none in þat wise [2475] ¶ For certes wikkednesse is no contrarie to wickednesse. ne vengaunce to vengeance. ne wrong to wrong: but þai ben semblable [2476] And þefore on vengeance is nouȝt warrished by anoþer vengeance. ne oon wrong by anoþer wrong. [2477] but euerych of hem encreseth and engreggith oþer [2478] ¶ But certes þe wordes of þe phisiciens schul ben vnderstonde in þis wise. [2479] For good and wikkednesse ben tuo contraries. and pees and werre. vengeance & sufferance. Discord and accord and many oþer þinges [2480] ¶ but certes wikkednes schal be warrished by goodnesse. Discord by accord. werre by pees and so forth of oþer þinges [2481] ¶ And her-to accordith seint paul þe apostil in many places [2482] ¶ He saith. ne ȝeldith nouȝt harm for harm. ne wikked speche for wikked speche [2483] ¶ But do wel to him þat doþ þe harm and blesse him that doþ þe harm [2484] and in many oþer places he amonesteth pees and accord [2485] ¶ But now wil I speke to ȝow of þe counseil which was ȝiue to ȝow by þe men of lawe & þe wise folkes [2486] þat sayde alle by oon accord as ȝe haue herd byfore [2487] That oner alle þinges ȝe schal do ȝoure diligence to kepe ȝoure persone and to warmstore ȝoure hous. [2488] and seyden also þat in þis ȝow aughte for to wirche ful aunsily and with gret deliberacioun. [2489] ¶ And sire as to þe firste poynt þat touched to þe kepinge of ȝoure persone: [2490] ȝe schul vnderstonde. þat he þat hap werre: schal enermore deuoutly and mekely prayen biforn alle þinges. [2491] þat Ihu crist wil of his mercy

haue him in his proteccioun and ben his souerayn halpyng
at his neede / [2492] ¶ For certes in þis world þer nys no
wight þat may be counseiled or kept sufficaun[t]ly wiþ-
oute þe kepinge of oure lord ihū crist [2493] ¶ To þis
sentence accordeþ þe prophete David þat seith [2494]
¶ If god ne kepe not þe citee. in ydel wakith he þat kepith
hit [2495] ¶ Now sire þanne schul 3e committe þe kepinge of
3oure persone to 3oure trewe frendes þat ben approued
and y-knowe [2496] and of hem schul 3e axen help 3oure
persone to kepe ¶ For Catoun saith ¶ If þou haue
neede of help: axe it of þy freendes. [2497] For þer is
noon so good a phisicien at neede: as is a trewe frend.
[2498] ¶ And after þis: þan schal 3e kepe 3ou fro alle
straunge folkes and fro lyeres and haue alway in suspect/
here compaignye [2499] ¶ For Pieres alfons saith ¶ Ne
take no compaignie by the way of a straunge man. but/
so be þat þou knowe him of a lenger tyme [2500]
And if so be he falle in to þy compaignye per
auenture wiþouten þin assent: [2501] enquire þanne
as subtilly as þou maist of his conuersacioun and of his lyf
bifore and feyne þy way and say þat þou wilt go yider
as þou wolt nought goon [2502] ¶ And if he bere a spere
¶ holde þe on the right syde ¶ And if he bere a sword:
holde þe on þe lyft syde. [2503] and so after þis.
þanne schul 3e kepe 3ou wisely from al such
peple as I haue sayd bifore / and hem and here counseil



schal 3e euermore counterwayte enbusshementz and alle
espiaille [2510] ¶ For Senec saith þat þe wise man
þat dredip harmes / eschiewith harmes. [2511] ne he ne
fallip in to noone perils þat perils eschiewep [2512] ¶ And al
be it so þat þe seme þat þou art in sikur place: 3it
schaltow alway do þy diligence in kepyng of þy persone
[2513] ¶ This is to say ¶ Be not negligent to kepe þy
persone nought only for þy gretteste enemyes: but fro þy
lest enemyes [2514] ¶ Senec saith ¶ A man þat is
wel auysed: he dredip his lest enemy [2515] ¶ Ovide
seip þat þe litel wesil wol sle þe grete bole and þe
wilde hert. [2516] ¶ And þe book saip. a litel þorn
wol prikke a þing ful sore. ¶ And an hound wol
holde þe wilde boore [2517] ¶ But napeles I say not þat
3e schul be so moche a coward þat 3e doute where is no
neede or drede [2518] ¶ þe book saip þat som folk haue
gret lust to disceyue ¶ but 3it þay dreden hem to be de-
ceyued [2519] ¶ 3et schal 3e drede to ben empoisoned
¶ And kepe þe fro þe companye of scorners [2520]
For þe book saith with scorners make no compaignye
but flee hem and here wordes as venym

[2521] ¶ Now as to þe secounde poynt where as 3oure
wise counseilours warnede 3ow to warmstore 3oure hous
with gret diligence: [2522] I wolde fayn wite ¹how þat
3e vnderstoode þilke wordes what is 3oure sentence

[2523] ¶ Melibeus answerde and saide ¶ Certes I vnder-
stonde it in þis wise þat I schal warmstore myn hous
with toures suche as han castiles and oper maner
edifices and armure and artilries [2524] by suche
þinges I may my persone & myn hous so kepen and
edifien and defenden þat myn enemyes schul be in drede myn
hous to approche

[2525] ¶ To þis sentence answerde dame prudence
¶ warmstorynge quod eche of heihe toures and grete
edifices [.] [2526] . . .
. no gap] wiþ grete

conage and grete trauaile and whan þat þay ben
 accomplisid þi þe þay nouȝt worth a straw but if þey be
 defended by trewe frendes þat beþ olde and wise [2527]
 ¶ And vnderstondeþ þat þe gretteſt strength or
 garnisoun that þe riche man may haue as wel to kepe his
 persone as his gooden is [2528] þat he be biloued
 wip his subgites and wip his neighebouris [2529] ¶ For
 þus saith tullius ¶ That þer is a maner garnisoun þat
 no man may venquishen ne discomfite and þat is [2530]
 a lord to be biloued with his citezeins and of his peple

[2531] ¶ Now þanne as to þoure þridde poynt where as
 þoure olde and wyse counseillours sayde. þe
 oughte nouȝt sodeinly ne hastily procede in þis neede.
 [2532] but þat þe oughte purueyen þow and apparaille þow
 in þis caas wip greet diligence and grete deliberacioen.
 [2533] trewely I trowe þat þay sayden soþ and
 right wisely [2534] ¶ For Tullius saith ¶ In euery
 nedo er þou bigynne it/ apparaille þe wip greet
 diligence [2535] ¶ Thanne say I þat in vengeance
 takinge in werre in bataile and in warstoringe of þin hous
 [2536] er þou bygynne I rede þat þou apparaille þe
 þerto and do it with grete deliberacioen. [2537] For
 tullius saith ¶ That long apparaylyng byfore þe bataille
 maketh schort victorie [2538] ¶ And Cassidorus saith ¶ The
 garnisoun is strengre whan it is long tyme auysed

[2539] ¶ But now let vs speke of þe counseil þat was



þe purpose special ¶ 3e schul first procede after þe doctrine of
Tullius [2546] ¶ Certes þe troupe of þis or
þis counseil nedeth nought diligently enquire [2547] For it
is wel wist whiche it ben þat doon to 3ow þis
trespas and vilonye [2548] & how many trespassours
and in what maner þay han to 3ow doon al þis
wrong and al þis vilonye [2549] ¶ And after þat
schul 3e examyne þe secounde condicioun which
Tullius addiþ þer to in þis matier [2550]
¶ Tullius put a þing which þat he clepeth conetynge. þis
is to sayn [2551] who ben þay and whiche ben þay and how
many þat consentid to þis matiere and to þy counsail in þy
wilfulness to do hasty vengeance [2552] & let vs considere
also who ben þo and how many ben þo [. . .
. . . no gap] þat ben conseilours to 3oure aduersaries. [2553]
and certes as to þe first poynt it is wel knowen whiche
folk ben þay þat consentid to 3oure first wilful-
nes. [2554] For trewly alle þo þat counsailled 3ow
to make sodeyn werre beþ nouȝt 3oure frendes [2555]
¶ let vs considre whiche ben þo þat 3e holde
so gretly 3oure frendes as to 3oure persone [2556] ¶ For
al be it so þat 3e be mighty and riche! certes 3e
been alloone. [2557] for certes 3e haue no childe
but a doughter. [2558] ne 3e haue no breþeren ne cosins
germayns ne noon oþer neigh kynrede / [2559] wherfore
þat 3oure enemyes for drede schulden stynte for to plede wip
3ou and stryue 3oure persone [2560] ¶ 3e knowe
also þat 3oure riches mooten in diuers parties
be departed. [2561] and whan euery wight hap
his part! þay wol take but litel reward to venge
þy deth [2562] ¶ But þyne enemyes ben þre and
haue many children breþeren. coynes and oþere neigh
kynrede. [2563] and þough it so were 3e hadde
slayn of hem tuo or thre! 3et dwellen þere ynowe to wreke
here deth and sle þi persone [2564] ¶ And þough so
were þat 3oure kynrede were more sekir and stedefast þan



schalt vnderstonde þat þe wrong þat þou hast receyued
hap certeyn causes [2585] whiche þat clerkes calle
Orience and Officiencie. and causa longinqua. and causa
propinqua. þis is to say. þe fer cause. and þe neigh
cause. [2586] for þe fer cause is almighty god þat is
cause of alle þinges. [2587] þe nere cause is þe
þre enemyes. [2588] þe cause accidental was hate.
[2589] þe causes materiales been þe fyue woundes of
þy doughter. [2590] the cause formal is þe maner of
here werkyng þat brought in laddres and clombe in at
þin wyndowes. [2591] þe cause final was for to sle þy
doughter hit letted nouȝt in as moche as was in hem [2592]
¶ But for to speke of þe fer cause as to what ende þay
schal come or what schal finally betyde of hem in þis
cause. can I not deme but by comittyng and by
supposyng. [2593] For we schul suppose þat þay schul
come to a wikked ende [2594] by cause þat þe book
of degrees saith ¶ Seelden or wiȝ gret peyne ben causes
I-brought to ¹a good ende. whan þay ben enyl bygonne

[2595] Now sire if men wolde axe me why þat
þe suffrede men to do ȝow þis wrong and vilonye? Certes I
can not wel answere as for no soþfastnes [2596] For
þe apostil saith. þat þe sciences and þe Iuggements of
oure lord god almyghty ben ful deepe [2597] ¶ Ther may
no man comprehende ne serchen hem sufficiantly [2598]
¶ Natheles by certeyn presumpciouns and coniectinges
I holde and bilieue [2599] þat god which þat is ful of
iustice and of rightwisnesse hap suffred þis to betyde by
iuste cause reasonable

[2600] ¶ Thy name Melibe is to say a man
þat drynkeþ hony. [2601] þou hast y-dronke so moche
hony of sweete temperel riches and delices and hon-
ours of þis world [2602] þat þou art dronke and
hast forȝete Ihu crist þy creatour. [2603] þou
hast not doon him such honour and reuerence as þe
oughte to doone. [2604] ne þou hast nouȝt wel taken keep to

þe wordes of Ovide þat saith [2605] ¶ vnder þe hony
of þy goodes of þy body is hid þe venym þat sleep
þi soule [2606] ¶ And Salomon saith ¶ If þou haue
fouunde hony. etc of it þat sufficeþ. [2607] For if þou
ete of it out of mesure! þou schalt spewe and be nedý
and pouere. [2608] and peraventure crist hap þe in
despit. and hath torned away fro þe his face and his
eeres of misericorde [2609] ¶ And also he hap suffred
þat þou hast ben punysshed in þe maner þat þou
hast I-trespased [2610] ¶ Thou hast doon synne azeinst
oure lord crist. [2611] for certes þi þre enemyes of man-
kinde þat is to say þy flessch þe feend and þe
world. [2612] þou hast y-suffred hem to entre in to þin
herte wilfully by þe wyndow of þy body [2613] and
hast nouȝt defended þiself sufficiently agayns here asceutis
and here temptaciouns So þat þay haue woundid þi
soule in fyue places [2614] This is to sayn þe dedly
synnes þat ben entred in to þin herte by þy fyue
wyndowes [2615] ¶ And in þe same maner oure lord crist
hath wolde and suffred þat þy þre enemyes ben entred
in to þin hous by þe wyndowes [2616] and haue
I-woundid þi doughter in þe forsayde maner

[2617] ¶ Certes quod Melibeus I se wel þat ȝe en-
force ȝow moche by wordes to ouercome me. in such
manere þat I schal not venge me on myn enemyes [2618]
schewyng me þe perils and þe yueles þat mighten
falle of þis vengeaunce [2619] ¶ But who-so wolde considre
in alle vegeaunces þe periles and þe yueles þat mighten solwe
of vengeaunces takyng. [2620] a man wolde neuer take
vengeaunce and þat were harm. [2621] For by venge-
aunce takyng be ¹wikked men destruyed and disseuered fro
þe goode men. [2622] and þay þat haue wille to wikked-
nes restreignen here wikked purpos whan þay seen þe
punysshyng and þe chastisyng of trespasours [2623]

[.]
[.]

[2624]

 *no gap in the MS.*

[2625] ¶ And ȝit say I more þat right so as a sengle
 persone synnep in taking of vengeaunce: [2626]
 Right so þe Iugge synnep if he doo no vengeaunce
 on him þat it hap deserved [2627] ¶ For Senec saith
 þus ¶ he þat maister is he saith good to reproue schrewes
 [2628] And as Cassoder saith ¶ A man dredeþ to doon
 outrage whan he woot and knoweþ þat it displeseþ
 to þe Iugges and þe soueraynes. [2629] and anoþer saith ¶ The
 Iugge þat dredeþ to demen right makeþ schrewes //
 [2630] And seint poul þappostoil saith in his epistil
 whan he writeþ to þe romayns ¶ The Iugges bare
 not þe spere wiþoute cause. [2631] but þay beren it
 to punyashe þe schrewes and mys doers and for to defende
 wiþ þe goode men. [2632] If ȝe wol take vengeaunce
 on ȝoure enemyes ȝe schul retourne or haue recours
 to þe Iugges þat haue iuredicciozn vpon hem [2633]
 and he schal pun[i]sche hem as þe law axeþ and requireþ

[2634] ¶ A quod melibeus þis vengeaunce likeþ me
 no þing [2635] I hyþenke me now and take heed
 how fortune hap norissched me fro my childhode
 and hap holpe me to passen many a strayt passage [2636]
 ¶ Now wol I aske her þat sche schal wiþ goddes help
 helpe me my schame for to venge

[2637] ¶ Certes quod prudence if ȝe wil wirche by my
 counseil. ȝe schul not assaye fortune by no maner way [2638]
 ne schul not lene ne bowe vnto hire after þe word of
 Senec [2639] ¶ For þinges þat bep folye and
 þat bep in hope of fortune schul neuer come to good
 ende [2640] ¶ And as þe same Senek saip ¶ The more
 cleer and þe more schynyng þat fortune is þe more
 brutil and þe sonner brekeþ sche. [2641] so trusteþ nought
 in hire For sche is nouȝt stedefast ne stable [2642] ¶ For
 whan þou wenest or trowest to be most seur of hir

help. wile wil fayre þe and deceyue þe. [2643] And
 wiler as he say þat fortune haþ nourished þow fro þoure
 childhede [2644] I say þat in so mochal þe schul
 þe lasse truste in hire and in hire witte [2645] ¶ For Senek
 saith ¶ what man þat is nourished by fortune! wile makeþ
 him to grow a fool [2646] ¶ Now siþþe þe desire
 and axe vengeance and þe vengeance þat is doon [. . .
 [2647]
 so gyt] in hope of fortune is peril-
 ous and vncerteyn [2648] þanne haueþ noon oþer
 remedye but for to haue recours vnto þe soueraigne
 Iugge þat vengith alle vilonies and wronges [2649]
 and he schal venge þow after þat himself witnesseth
 where as he saith [2650] ¶ leueþ þe ve[n]giance to me
 and I schal geelde it

[2651] ¶ Melibeus answerd. If I ne venge me nouȝt of
 þe vilonye þat men haue doon vnto me. [2652] I schal sounere
 warne hem þat han doon to me þat vilonye and alle
 oþere to doo me an oþer vilonye [2653] For it is writen
 ¶ Tak no vengeance of an old vilonye þou suf-
 frest þin aduersarie do þe a newe vilonye. [2654]
 and also for my suffraunce men wolde do me so
 moche vilonye þat I mighte neither bere it ne sus-
 teyne it. [2655] and so schulde I be put over
 lowe [2656] For men say In moche sufferynge schal
 many þinges falle vnto whiche þou schal nouȝt



wipoute punyashyng^t [2662] þay somne not^t a man
oonly to doo newe wronges^t but þay comaunde hit.
[2663] also þe wise man saith ¶ The Iugge þat^t correct-
eþ not^t þe synnere comaundith him and byddith him doon
anoþer synne [2664] ¶ And þe Iugges and souereignes mighten
in here lond so mochil suffren of þe schrewes and mys-doeres
[2665] þat^t þay schulde by such suffraunce by proces of
tyme wexen of such power and might^t þat^t þay schulde
put^t out þe Iugges and þe souereignes from here places
[2666] & atte laste do hem lese here lordchipes

[2667] But lete vs now putte þat^t 3e han lene to
venge 3ow. [2668] I say 3e han nou3^t of might^t ne
power as now to venge 3ou [2669] ¶ For if he wolde make
comparisoun as to þe might^t ¶ Of 3oure aduersaries 3e schulde
fynde in many þinges þat^t I haue I-schewed 3ow er þis
þat^t here condicioun is better þan 3oures [2670] And
þerfore say I þat it is good as now þat 3e suffre and
be pacient

[2671] ¶ Forþermore 3e knowe þat^t after ¹þe
commune sawe it is a woodnesse a man to stryue with a
strenger or a more mighty man þan him-seluen is
[2672] And for to stryue wip a man of euens strengþe
þat^t is to say with as strong^t a man as he is. it is peril.
[2673] and for to stryue with a weykere it is folye
[2674] and þerfore schulde a man fle stryuyng as
moche as he mighte [2675] ¶ For Salomon saith ¶ It is a
gret^t worschipe a man to kepe him fro noyse and
stryf [2676] ¶ And if it so bifalle or happe þat^t a man
of gretter might^t and strengthe þan þou art do þe
grenaunce [2677] stude and busye þe raper to stille
þe same grenaunce þan for to venge þe [2678] ¶ For
Senec saith. he putteþ him in a gret^t peril þat^t
stryueth wip a gretter man þan he himseluen is [2679]
¶ And Catoun saith ¶ If a man of heiher estat or degre or
more mighty þan þou do þe anoþer grenaunce^t
Suffre him. [2680] For he þat^t hap oones don þe a grenaunce

may another tyme relieue þe and helpe þe. [2681] 3.^{te} sette I a caas ȝe haue bothe might and licence to venge ȝow: [2682] I say þer ben ful many þinges þat schulde restreinge ȝow of vengeaunce takynge [2683] and make ȝow to encline to suffre and to haue pacience of þe wronges þat han ben doon to ȝow. [2684] First and forward ȝe wol considre þe defautes þat been in ȝoure owne persone. [2685] for whiche defautes god hap suffred ȝow to haue þis tribulacioun as I haue sayd ȝow her byfore [2686] ¶ For þe poete saith // we oughten paciently to suffre þe tribulacioun þat cometh to vs whan þat we þenken and consideren þat we han deserued to haue hem [2687] ¶ And seint poul saith þat whan a man considereþ wel þe nombre of his defautes and of his synnes: [2688] þe peynes and þe tribulaciouns þat he suffereþ semen þe lasse vnto him [2689] ¶ and in as moche as him þenkiþ his synnes þe more heuy and greuous: [2690] in so moche his peyne is þe lighter and þe more esier vn-to him [2691] ¶ Also ȝe oughten to encline and bowe ȝoure herte to take þe pacience of oure lord ihū crist. as seiþ seint peter in his epistles [2692] ¶ Ihū crist he seiþ hap suffred for vs and ȝiuen ensample vnto euery man to folwe and sewe him. [2693] For he dede neuer synne ne neuer cam vileyns worde out of his mouþ [2694] whan men cursed him: he cursed hem not ¶ And whan men beete him: he manased hem not. [2695] ¶ Also þe grete pacience which þat seintes þat been in paradys¹ han had in tribulaciouns þat þay haue had and suffred withoute desert/ or gult [2696] oughte moche stire ȝow to pacience [2697] ¶ Forþer more ȝe schul enforce ȝow to haue pacience [2698] consideringe þat þe tribulaciouns of þis world but litel while enduren & soone passed ben and goon [2699] ¶ And þe ioye þat a man seeþ to haue by pacience in tribulaciouns is perdurable after þat þe

apostil seiþ in his epistil [2700] ¶ The ioye of god he seiþ is perdurable þat is to say euer-more lastyngs [2701] ¶ Also troweth and bilieueþ stedefastly þat he is not wel norisched and taught þat can nought haue pacience or wil nouȝt recayue pacience [2702] ¶ For Salomon saith þat þe doctrine and þe witte of a man is I-knowe by pacience [2703] ¶ And in anoþer place he seiþ ¶ he þat hath pacience: gouerneþ him by gret prudence [2704] ¶ And þe same salamon seiþ. þat þe wraþful and þe angry man makeþ noyses. and þe pacient man attempereth and stilleþ him. [2705] he seiþ also ¶ It is more worth to be pacient þan for to be right strong. [2706] And And he þat may haue his lordschipe of his oughne herte: is more worþ and more to preise þan he þat by his force & by his strengthe takeþ grete citees [2707] ¶ And þerfore saith seint Iame in his epistil þat pacience is a gret vertu of perfeccioun.

[2708] [.]

. *no gap*
[2709] but euery man may not haue þe perfeccioun þat ȝe seekyn [2710] ne I am not of þe nombre of right partyte men: [2711] For myn herte may neuer be in pees vnto þe tyme it be venged [2712] ¶ And al be it/ so that it was a gret peril to myne enemyes to don me a vilonye in takinge vengeance vpon me: [2713] ȝit taken þay noon heede of þe peril but filden here wikked desir and her corrage. [2714] and þerfore me þenkith men oughten nought repreue me þough I putte me in a litel peril for to venge me [2715] ¶ And þough I do a gret excesse þat is to say þat I venge oon outrage by anoþer

[2716] ¶ A quod dame prudence ȝe say ȝoure wille and as ȝow likith. [2717] but in noon case in þe world a man ne schulde nouȝt doon outrage ne excesse for to venge him. [2718] ¶ For Cassidore seiþ. as enel doþ he þat auengith him by outrage as he þat doth þe

outrage / [2719] and þerfore ȝe schul venge ȝow after
 þe ordre of right þat is to sayn by þe lawe and nouȝt
 by exceſse ne by outrage [2720] ¶ And also if ȝe wil
 venge ȝow of þe outrage of ȝoure aduerſaries in oþer
 maner þan right comaundet: ȝe synnen [2721] ¶ And
 þerfore seiþ Senec / that ¹a man schal neuer venge
 schrewednes by schrewednes. [2722] ¶ And if ȝe say
 þat axep a man to defende violence by vyolence.
 and fightyng by fightyng [2723] ¶ Certes ȝe say soþ
 whan þe defence is doon anon wipouten interuall or
 wipouten taryinge or dilay [2724] for to defenden him
 and nought for to venge him [2725] ¶ And it bihouep
 a man putte such attemperance in his defence:
 [2726] þat men haue no cause ne matiere to repreuen
 him that defendith him of exceſse and outrage [. . .
 no gap] [2727] ¶ Parde ȝe knowe wel
 þat ȝe make no defence as now for to defende ȝow
 but for to venge ȝow [2728] and so semep it / þat ȝe
 haue no wille to do ȝoure wille attemperelly [2729] &
 þerfore me þenkip þat pacience is good ¶ For Salamon
 seiþ þat he þat is not pacient schal haue gret
 harm .

[2730] ¶ Certes quod melibeus I graunte ȝou wel þat
 whan a man is impacient and wroth. [.

 no gap] [2731] for þe lawe seiþ



is to sayn myn disease and my grief^e toucheþ me right^e
neigh. [2736] and þerfore þough I be wroþ^e
it is no meruayle. [2737] and sauynge þour
grace I can not^e see þat^e it^e mighte gretly harme me
þough I toke vengeance. [2738] For I am richer and
more mighty þan myne enemyes been / [2739] And wel
knowe þe þat^e by money and by hauynge of grete possea-
siouns ben alle þe þinges of þis world gouernede [2740]
¶ And Salamon saith þat^e alle þinges obeyen to
moneye / dispraisynge þe power of his aduersaries

[2741] [.]
[.]
[. no gap] ¶ Tho sche spak^e and sayde in
þis wyse [2742] ¶ Certes deere sire I graunte þow þat^e
þe ben riche and mighty [2743] and þat^e richesse
is good to hem þat^e wel haue geten it/ and þat^e
wel conne vse it [2744] For right^e as þe body of a
man may not be wipoute þe soule: no more may a man
lyue wipoute temperel goodes [2745] and by rich-
esse may a man gete him greet frendschipe / [2746] ¶ And
þerfore saith Pamphilles. If a neet^e-hurdes douȝter he seiþ
be riche: sche may cheese of a þousand men which
she wol take to hir housbonde [2747] ¶ For
of a þousand men oon wil not^e forsake hir ne refuse
hire [2748] ¶ And þis pamphilles seiþ also ¶ If þou be
right^e happy þat^e is to sayn if þou be right^e riche: þanne
schalt^e þou fynde a gret^e nombre of felawes and frendes [2749]
¶ And if þy fortune chaunge þat^e þou wax pore: fare
wel frendschipe. [2750] For þou schalt^e ben
aloone wipouten eny companye but^e if it be þe
compaignye of pore folk // [2751] And ȝit saith þis
pamphillus more ouer ¶ That þey þat^e ben þral and
bonde of linage schullen ben maad worþy and noble by
richesse [2752] ¶ And right^e so as by richesse þe
come many goodes: Right^e so by pouert^e comen þe
many harmes. [. . .] [2753] [.]

. no gap] [2754] And þerfore clepeþ Cassidore pouert. [.] ruyne. [2755] þat is to sayn þe moder of ouerþrowyng or fallynge doun [2756] ¶ & þerfore Pieres alphone oon of þe grettest aduersites of þis world is: [2757] whan a free man by kyn or burthe is constreigned by pouert to eten þe almes of his enemyes [2758] ¶ And þe same seiþ Innocent in oon of his bookes ¶ þat sorweful & vnhappy is þe condicioun of a pouere begger. [2759] for if he axe nouȝt his mete: he deyeth for hungir: [2760] and if he axe: he deyeth for schame. And algates þe necessite constreigneth hym to axe. [2761] And þerfore seiþ Salamon þat bettre it is to deye þan to haue such pouert [2762] And as þe same Salamon saith Bettir is to deye on bitter deth þan for to lyue in such a wyse [2763] ¶ By þese resouns þat I haue sayd vnto ȝow and by many anoþer resoun þat I knowe and couþe say [2764] I graunte ȝow þat riches ben goode to hem þat gete hem wel. & to hem þat hem wel vsen [2765] ¶ And þerfore wol I schewe ȝow how ȝe schulde bere ȝow in getyng of riches and in what maner ȝe schulde vse hem

[2766] ¶ First ȝe schulde gete hem wiþoute gret desir by good leysir sokyngly and nouȝt ouer hastily [2767] ¶ For a man þat is to desiryng for to gete riches



saith þat no man makeþ himself riche þat dop
harm to anoper wight. [2774] þis is to say. þat
nature defendeþ and forbedith by right þat no man
make himself riche vnto þe harm of anoper persone.
[2775] Tullius saith. þat no sorwe ne drede
of deth. ne thought þat may falle to a man [2776]
is so moche azeinst nature as a man to encrease his
oughne profyt to þe harm of anoper man [2777] ¶ And
þough þe grete men and þe riche men gete richesse more
lightly þan þou! [2778] 3it schalt þou not be ydil ne
slowe to þy profyt/ For þou schalt in alle wise flee ydil-
nes. [2779] For Salamon saith þat ydelnesse techiþ
a man to do many yueles [2780] ¶ And þe same salamon
saip þat he þat trauaileth and besieþ him to tilye
þe lond schal ete þe breed. [2781] But he þat is ydil and
casteþ him to no busynesse ne occupacioun schal falle in to
pouert and deye for hunger [2782] ¶ And he þat is
ydel and slough can neuer fynde him tyme for to
do his profyt [2783] ¶ For þer is a versifiour saith;
þe ydel man excuseþ him in wynter by cause of þe
grete colde. And in somer by enchesoun of þe grete hete.
[2784] ¶ For þese causes saith Catoun ¶ waketh and enclineþ
3ow nouȝt ouer moche for to slepe. For ouermuche reate
norischeþ and causeþ many vices [2785] ¶ And þerfore
saith saint Ierom! Dop some goode deedes þat þe deuel
which þat is oure enemy ne fynde 3ow vnoccupied
[2786] ¶ For þe deuel ne takiþ not lightly vnto his werkes
suche as he fyndeth occupied in goode werkes

[2787] ¶ þanne þus in getyng of riches 3e
moot flee ydelnesse / [2788] ¶ and afterward 3e schul vse
þe richesþes þe whiche 3e han geten by 3oure witte and by
3oure trauaile [2789] in such a maner þat men
holde 3ow not skarce / ne to sparynge ne to fool large
þat is to say ouer large a spender [2790] For right as
men blamen an auerous man by cause of his skarsete
and chyncherie [2791] in þe same manere is he to blame

þat spendeth ouer largely [2792] ¶ And þerfore saith
 Catoun ¶ Vse he saith þi riches þat þou hast y-ge-
 ten [2793] in such a manere þat þay haue no matier ne
 cause to calle þe neiper wrecche ne chynche [2794]
 ¶ For it is gret schame to a man to¹ have a pouer herte
 and a riche purse [2795] ¶ He saith also þe goodes þat
 þou hast I-ge-ten vse hem by mesure þat is to say
 spende hem mesurably [2796] For þay þat folily wasten
 and spenden þe goodes þat þay haue! [2797] whan
 þay haue no more propre of here oughne! þay schape hem
 to take þe goodes of anoþer man [2798] ¶ I say thanne
 ȝe schul flee auarice [2799] veynge ȝour riches
 in such manere þat [. . . no gap] ȝoure [. . .]
 be buried. [2800] but þat ȝe haue þanne in ȝoure
 might and in ȝoure weldyng. [2801] For þe wise man
 reproueth þe auerous man and saith þus in tuo
 versus [2802] ¶ wher-to and why burieth a man his
 goodes by his auarice and knowip wel þat needes
 most he deye. [2803] for deth is þe ende of euery man
 as in this present lif. [2804] And for what cause or
 enchesoun ioyneth he him or knetteth him so fast
 vnto his goodes [2805] þat alle his wit'es mowe nought
 disseuer him or departe him fro his goodes
 [2806] & knowip wel or oughte knowe wel þat whan he
 is deed he schal no þing bere with him out of þis
 world. [2807] ¶ And þerfore seiþ seint/ Austyn þat

ne þy goodes schul not be so open to be euery
mannes goodes [2814] ¶ Afterward in getyng of þoure
richesses and in vsyng hem 3e schul alway haue þre
þinges in þoure herte [2815] þat is to say Oure lord
god. Conscience. and good name. [2816] First 3e schul
haue god in þoure herte [2817] and for no riches 3e
schul in no manere doo no þing which might displese
god þat is þour creatour and þour maker. [2818] For after
þe word of Salamon. It is better to haue litil good
wip loue of god. [2819] þan to haue mochil good
and tresor and lese þe loue of his lord god. [2820]
And þe prophete saith. Better is to ben a
good man and haue litel good þan tresore [2821] þe to
ben holden a schrewe and haue gret riches [2822]
¶ And 3it say I forþer more þat 3e schuln alway
doon þoure busynesse to gete 3ow riches. [2823] so þat
3e gete hem with good conscience [2824] ¶ And þe apostil
seith. ther is nys þing in þis world of which we
schuln haue so gret ioye as whan oure conscience bereþ
us good witnes [2825] ¶ And þe wise man saith
substaunce of a man is ful good whan synne is not in
his conscience. [2826] Afterward in getyng of þoure
richesses and in vsyng of hem [2827] þou most haue
gret busynesse & gret diligence þat þoure good
name be alway kept and conserued [2828] ¶ For Sala-
mon saith. better it is and more abelith a man
for to haue a good name þan for to haue gret riches
[2829] and þerfore he saith in anoper place. Do gret
diligence saith Salamon in kepyng of þy frend and of
þy good name. [2830] For it schal lenger abyde wip
þe þan any tresor be it neuer so precious [2831]
¶ And certes he schulde nouȝt be cleped a gentil man þat
after god and good conscience alle þinges left ne doþ
his diligence and busynesse to kepe his good name.
[2832] And Cassidore saith þat it is signe of a good man &
a gentil or of a gentil herte whan a man loueþ or desireþ to

haue a good name. [2833] and þerfore saith seint augustyn
þat þer ben tuo þinges þat ben necessarie and needful
[2834] and þat is good conscience and good loos [2835]
þat is to sayn. good conscience in þin oughne persone
inward. and good loos of þin neghebor outward.
[2836] and he þat trusteþ him so moche in his good
conscience [2837] þat he displeseþ and settiþ at
nought his good name or loos and rekkeþ nought þough
he kepe not his good name: nys but a cruel churl

[2838] ¶ Sire now haue I schewed þow how ȝe schulde
doon in getyng of good and riches and how ȝe schuld vse
hem [2839] I see wel þat for þe trust þat ȝe haue in
ȝoure riches: ȝe wolde meue werre and bataile [2840]
¶ I counseile þow þat ȝe bygynne no werre in trust of
ȝoure riches. for thanne suffisen not werres to mayn-
tene [2841] ¶ And þerfore saith a philosopre ¶ That
man þat desireþ and wol algate haue werre: schal
neuer haue sufficeaunce. [2842] For þe richere þat he is:
þe gretter dispense most he make if he wol haue wor-
schipe or victorie [2843] ¶ And Salamon saith. þe
gretter riches þat a man hap: þe moo deependours he
hap. [2844] And deere sire al be it so þat for ȝoure
riches ȝe mowe haue moche folk: [2845] ȝit byhoueþ
it not no it is not good to bygynne werre þer as ȝe
may in oþer maner haue pees vnto ȝoure worschipe
and profyt. [2846] For þe victorie of batailles þat ben



[. . . no gap] [2852] For þe victorie of batailles comep
nouȝt by þe grete nombre of poeple: [2853] but it comep
fro oure lord god of heuen [2854] ¶ And dere sire for
as moche as þer is no man certeyn if it be worpi þat
god ȝiue him victorie [.
. no gap] or nouȝt after þat
þat Salamon saiþ. [2855] þefore euery man schulde gretly
drede werres to bygynne. [2856] And by cause þat in
batailles falle many meruayles and periles [2857] and happeþ
oper while þat as soone is þe grete man slayn as þe litel
man. [2858] and as it is writen in þe secounde book of
kynges þe deedes of batayles be auenturous and no
thing certeyn [2859] For as lightly is oon hurt with a
spere as anoper. [2860] and þefore is gret peril in
werre. þefore schulde a man flee and eschewe werre in
as moche as a man may goodly [2861] ¶ For Salamon
saith. ¶ he þat loueth peril schal falle in peril

[2862] ¶ After þat dame prudens hadde spoke in
pis maner: Melibe answerde and sayde [2863] ¶ I se
wel dame þat by ȝoure faire wordes and by
ȝoure resonns þat ȝe haue schewed me þat þe werre likeþ
ȝow no þing. [2864] but/ I haue not/ ȝit/ herd ȝoure coun-
seil how I schal doo in pis neede

[2865] ¶ Certes quod sche I counseile ȝow þat ȝe
accorde wiþ ȝoure aduersaries and þat ȝe haue pees
with hem [2866] ¶ For seint Iame saiþ in his epistles
þat by concord and pees þe smale ryches wexen
grete. [2867] and by debaat and discord þe gret riches
fallen doun [2868] ¶ And ȝe knowe wel þat oon of þe
mooste grettest and soueraign þinges þat is in pis world
is vnite & pees [2869] ¶ And þefore saith oure lord
ihū crist to his aposteles in pis wise [2870] ¶ wol
happy and blessed be þay þat louen and purchacen
pees. for þay ben called children of crist [2871] ¶ A quod
Melibe. Now se I wel þat ȝe louen not myn honour
ne my worschipe [2872] and knoweþ wel þat myne

aduersaries han bygonne þis debate and brige by here outrage [2873] And ȝe see wel þat þay require ne praye me not of pees. ne þay askyn nouȝt to be reconseild: [2874] wol ȝe þanne þat I goo & make me vnto hem and crie hem mercy. [2875] for soþe þat were not my worschipe [2876] ¶ For right as men seyn þat ouer gret pryde engendreþ despisyng. so fareþ it by to gret humblete or mekenesse

[2877] ¶ Thanne bygan dame prudence to make semblant of wrappe and sayde. [2878] Certes sire sauē ȝoure grace. I lone ȝoure honour and ȝoure profyt as I doo myn owne and euer haue doon [2879] ȝe ne mowe noon oþer seyn [2880] ¶ And ȝit if I hadde sayd ȝe scholde haue purchaced pees and þe reconsiliacioun. I ne hadde not moche mys-take me ne seyde amys: [2881] For þe wise man saith. þe discencioun bigynneþ by anoþer man and þe reconailynge bygynneþ by þyself [2882] ¶ And þe prophete saith ¶ Flee schame and schrewednesse and doo goodnesse. [2883] Seeke pees and folwe it as moche as in þe is. [2884] ȝet seiþ he not þat ȝe schul raper pursewe to ȝoure aduersaries for pees þan þei schul to ȝow. [2885] For I knowe wel þat ȝe be so hard-herted þat ȝe wil doo no þing for me [2886] ¶ And salamon saith. he þat is ouer hard herted atte laste he schal mys happe and my[s]-tyde

[2887] ¶ whan melibe had seyn dame prudence



3ow [2894] ¶ For Salamon saip þat he þat repreueþ
him þat doth folie: [2895] he schal fynde gretter grace
þan he þat deceyueth him by swete wordes

[2896] ¶ Thanne sayde dame prudence I make no
semblant of wrappe ne of anger but for 3oure grete profyt
[2897] ¶ For Salamon saith. he is more worth þat re-
proueþ or chydeþ a fool for his folie schewynge him
semblant of wrappe [2898] þan he þat supporteþ him
and prayseþ him in his mysdoynge. and laugheþ at his
folie [2899] ¶ And þis same Salomon saip afterward
þat by þe sorweful visage of a man þat is to sayn by
sory and heuy countenaunce of a man [2900] þe fool
correcteþ himself and amendeþ

[2901] ¶ þanne sayde Melibeus. I schal not conne an-
swere to so many resouns as 3e putten to me and
schewen. [2902] sayeth schortly 3oure wille and 3oure¹ coun-
seil. and I am al redy to fulfille and parfourme it

[2903] ¶ Thanne dame prudence discouered al here coun-
sail and hire wille vn-to him and sayde [2904] ¶ I counseile
3ow quod ache aboue alle þinges þat 3e make pees bitwen god
and 3ow [2905] and beþ reconsiled vnto him and to his
grace. [2906] for I haue sayd 3ow her biforn. God
hath suffred 3ow haue þis [. . . no gap] disease for
3oure synnes [2907] and if 3e do as I say 3ow god wol
sende 3oure aduersaries vnto 3ow [2908] and make hem
falle at 3oure feet al redy to doo 3oure wille and 3oure co-
maundement [2909] ¶ For Salamon saith. whan þe con-
dicioun of man is pleasant and likyng to god: [2910] he
chaungeþ þe hertes of þe mannes aduersaries and con-
streigneþ hem to biseke him of pees & of grace.
[2911] and I pray 3ow let me speke wip 3oure aduersaries
in priue place [2912] for þay schul not knowe it
by 3oure wille or 3oure assent [2913] ¶ And þanne whan
I knowe here wille and here assent: I may counseile 3ow
þe more seurlly

[2914] ¶ Dame quod Melibeus doþ 3oure wille and

For I putte me holly in youre
discretion and remembrance

[2916] ¶ Thanne Dame prudence whan sche seih þe
good will of hir husband. sche delivered and took a vis by
hir self [2917] þerbyng how sche might bringe þis
morde vnto a good conclusion and to a good ende
[2918] ¶ And whan sche saugh hire tyme: sche sente for þese
sintaries to come vnto hire in to a priue place
[2919] and schewed wyth vnto hem þe grete goddes
þat comen of þese [2920] and þe grete harmes and
perils þat ben in warre [2921] and sayde to hem in
goodly manere how þat hem aughte to haue gret re-
pentance [2922] of þe iniurie & wrong þat þay
hadde don to Melibe hire lord and vnto hire and
hire douȝter.

[2923] and whan þay herden þe goodly wordes of
dame prudence [2924] þey were þe surprised and
rauyssched and hadden so gret ioye of hire þat wonder
was to telle [2925] ¶ A lady quod thay. ȝe haue schewed
vnto vs þe blessing of swetnes after þe sawe of
Dauid þe prophete [2926] for þe recounsilyng which
we be nouȝt worþy to haue in no manere. [2927] But we
oughten require it wiþ gret contricioun and humilite.
[2928] ȝe of youre grete goodnes haue presented vnto vs
[2929] ¶ Now we se wel þat þe science
of Salamon is ful trewe [2930] he saith þat



þat we haue offended and greued my lord Melibe out of
resoun and out of mesure [2936] so ferforth þat we ben
nouȝt/ of power to make his amendes. [2937] and þerfore we
oblie vs and bynde vs and oure frendes for to doo al his wille
and his comaundementȝ. [2938] But perauenture he haþ such
heuynes & such wrappe to vs ward by cause of oure
offence: [2939] þat he wol enioyne vs such payne
as we mow not bere ne susteyne [2940] ¶ and þerfore
noble lady we biseke to ȝoure wommanly pite [2941]
to take such auysement in þis neede þat we ne oure
frendes ben not disherited and destroyed þurgh oure
folye

[2942] ¶ Certes quod dame prudence it is an hard þing
and right a perilous [2943] þat a man put him al outrely
in þe arbitracioun and Iuggement and þe might and
power of his enemyes [2944] ¶ For Salamon saith leueþ
and ȝineth credence to þat þat I schal say. I say
quod he ȝeue poeple and gouernours of holy chirche
[2945] to þy sone to þi wyf/. and to þy frend ne to
þy brother [2946] ne ȝeue þou neuer might ne
maystry of þy body whil þou lyuest [2947] ¶ Now
sith he defendith a man schulde not ȝiue to his
broþer ne to his frend þe might of his body.
[2948] by a strengier resoun he defendeþ and forbedith a
man to ȝiue his body to his enemye. [2949] but nape-
les I counseile ȝow þat ȝe mystruste nouȝt my lord.
[2950] For I wot wel and knowe verrailly þat he is
debonaire and meke. large curteys [2951] and no
þing desirous ne coueytous of good ne riches. [2952]
For þer nys no þing in þis world þat he desireth
saue oonly worschipe and honour. [2953] Forþermore
I knowe and am right seure þat he wol no þing
doo in þis neede wiþoute counsail of me [2954] and I
schal so worche in this cause þat by þe grace of oure lord
god ȝe schul be recounsaild vnto vs

[2955] ¶ Thanne sayde þay with oon voys worschipful

that we pounne vs and our goodes al fully in youre wille
and disposicion [2955] and ben redy to coune what
say hit is like aye and that we be notlesse to limite vs or
requeye vs [2956] for to make our obligacion and bond as
strong as it liketh to your goodes [2958] þat we moue
further þe wille of aye and of my lord Melibe

[2959] ¶ When Thanne prudence had herd þe an-
swere of þat man, sche had ben go agayn pryncely
[2960] and sche retourned to his lord Melibe and tolde
him how sche found his adversaries ful repentant [2961]
knowlechinge ful lowely here synnes and trespasses and how
þat were redy to suffre alle payne [2962] requyring and
praying him of mercy and pite

[2963] ¶ þanne saide Melibens, he is wel worthy to
have pardon and forgyuenes of his synne þat excusith not
his synne [2964] but knowlechep and repentith
him axinge indulgence. [2965] For Senek saith, þere
is þe remission and forgyuenesse wher as þe confessioun is
[2966] ¶ For confessioun is neighbor to Innocence [2967]
And he saith in anoþer place, he þat hath schame of
his synne knowlechith it. [. no gap]
and þerfore I assente and conferme me to haue pees.
[2968] but it is good þat we doo it nouȝt wipoute assent
& þe wille of oure frendes

[2969] ¶ Thanne was prudence right glad & iolyf
and sayde. [2970] Certes sire quod sche þe ben wel and



and tolde hem by ordre in þe presence of Melibe of
þis matier as it is aboue expressed and declared [2976]
and praide hem þat þay wolde ȝiue here avys and coun-
seil what best were to doon in þis matiere [2977] ¶ And
whan melibeus frendes hadde take here avys and deliber-
acioun of þe forsayde matier [2978] and hadden examyned
it by greet besynes and gret diligence [2979] þay ȝafe
him ful counsail to haue pees and reste. [2980] and þat
Melibeus schulde wip good hert resceyue his aduersaries
to forȝiuenes and mercy

[2981] ¶ And whan dame prudence had herd
thassent of hir lord Melibeus and conseil of his frendes
[2982] accorde wip hire wille & hire entencioun [2983]
sche was wonderly glad in herte and sayde [2984]
¶ Ther is a noble prouerbe þat saith ¶ The
goodnesse þat þou maist do þis day [2985]
abyde not ne delaye it nouȝt vnto to morwe. [2986] and
þerfore I counseile ȝow ȝe sende ȝoure messageres¹ whiche
þat ben discrete and wise [2987] vnto ȝoure aduersaries
tellynge hem on ȝoure bihalue [2988] þat if þay wol
trete of pees and of accord [2989] þat þay schape hem
wipoute dilay or taryinge to come vnto vs. [2990]
which þing was performed in dede [2991] and
whan þese trespasours and repentyng folk of here
folies þat is to sayn þe aduersaries of Melibe [2992]
hadden herd what þe messageres sayden vnto hem:
[2993] þay were right glad and iolif and answerden
ful mekely and benignely [2994] ȝeldyng graces &
þankinges to here lord Melibe and to al his compaignye
[2995] and schope hem wipout delay to go wip þe
messageres and obeie hem to þe comaundement of here lord
Melibe

[2996] ¶ And right anon þay token here way to þe
court of Melibe / [2997] and token wip hem some
of here trewe frendes to make faith for hem and for to
þen here borwes [2998] ¶ And whan þay were comen to

[¹ *leaf 234, back*]

þe presence of Melibeus he seyde hem þise wordes
 [2999] ¶ It stondith þus quod Melibeus and soþ it is
 þat ȝe [3000] causeles and wipouten skile and resoun
 [3001] haue doon gret iniuries and wronges to me and
 to my wyf prudence and to my douȝter also. [3002] For
 ȝe haue entred in to myn hous by violence [3003] and haue
 doon such outrage þat alle men knowe wel þat ȝe haue
 deserued þe deth. [3004] And þerfore wil I knowe
 and wite of ȝow [3005] wheþer ȝe wol putte þe
 punyschment and þe chastisement and þe vengeance/ of
 þis outrage in þe wille of me and of my wif dame prudence
 or ȝe wil not

[3006] ¶ þanne þe wisest of hem þre answerde for
 hem alle & sayde [3007] ¶ Sire quod he we knowe
 wel þat we be vnworþy to come to þe court
 of so gret a lord and so worþy as ȝe be [3008] ¶ For
 we han so gretly mystake vs and haue offendid and giltyd
 in such a wise ageins ȝoure heighe lordschipe [3009] þat
 trewely we haue deserued þe dep [3010] ¶ But ȝit/ for
 þe grette goodnes and debonairete þat al þe world
 witnesseth of ȝoure persone! [3011] we submitten vs to
 þin excellence and benigne of ȝoure gracione lordschipe
 [3012] and ben redy to obeye to alle ȝoure comaundementȝ
 [3013] biſekynge ȝow þat of ȝoure merciable pite ȝe
 wol considre oure grette repentaunce and lowe submissioun
 [3014] and graunte vs forȝiuenes of oure outrage
 trespas and offence. [3015] For wel ȝe knowen þat ȝoure
 liberal grace and mercy strechen forþere in to good-
 nesse þan doþ oure outrage gilt and trespas in to
 wikkednes [3016] al be it þat cursedly & damp-
 nably we haue agilt ageinst ȝoure highe lordschipe

[3017] ¶ Thanne Melibe took hem vp fro þe ground
 ful benignely [3018] and receyued here obligaciounes and here
 bondes by here oþes vpon here plegges & borwes [3019]
 and assigned hem a certeyn day to retourne vnto his
 court [3020] for to accepte and receyue þe sentence and



iuggement þat Melibe wolde comaunde to be doon on hem by þese causes aforu sayde. [3021] which þing ordeyned: euery man retourned home to his hous

[3022] ¶ And whan þat Dame prudence saugh hire tyme: sche feyned and axed hire lord Melibe [3023] what vengeance he þoughte to take vpon his aduersaries.

[3024] to which Melibeus answerd and saide. Certes quod he I þenke and purpose me fully [3025] to disherite hem of al þat euer þay haue and for to putte hem in exil for euermore

[3026] Certes quod dame prudence þis were a cruel sentence and mochil azeinst resoun [3027] For 3e ben riche ynough & haue noon neede of oþer mennes good [3028] and 3e mighte lightly gete 3ow a coueitous name [3029] which is vicious þing and oughte to ben eschewed of euery man [3030] for after þe sawe of þe word of þapostil: Couetise is roote of alle harmes. [3031] And þerfore it were bettre for 3ow to lese so moche good of 3oure oughne þan for to take of here good in þis manere. [3032] For bettir it is to lese good wip worschipe þan it is to wyne good with vilonye and schame. [3033] and euer a man oughte to do his diligence and his busynesse to gete him a good name. [3034] [.
. no gap] [3035] but he schulde enforce him alway to do som þing by which he may renouele his good name. [3036] for it is writen þat þe olde goode loos of a man is soone doon or goon and passed whan it is not newed ne renoueled. [3037] And as touchinge þat 3e sayn þat 3e wol exile 3oure aduersaries: [3038] þat þinketh me mochil azeinst resoun and out of mesure [3039] consideriþ þe power þat þay han 3yue to 3ow vpon here body and on himself [3040] ¶ And it is writen þat he is worpy to lese his priuelege þat mys veeth þe might and þe power þat is 3eue to him [3041] ¶ And 3if I sette þe caas 3e mighte enioyne hem þat peyne by right and lawe [3042] which I

trowe 3e mow nouȝt do [3043] I say 3e mighte nouȝt
 putte it to execucioun peraventure [3044] and þanne
 were it likly to torne to þe werre as it was biforn
 [3045] And þerfore if 3e wol þat men do 3ow obeis-
 saunce: 3e moste deme more curteisly [3046] þis is to
 sayn. 3e moste ȝiue more esyere sentence & iuggement
 [3047] ¶ For it is writen. he þat most curteysly
 comaundeth to him men most obeyen. [3048] and þer-
 fore I pray 3ow þat in þis necessite and in þis neede
 3e caste 3ow to ouercome 3oure herte [3049] ¶ For Senek
 saith. he þat ouercomeþ his herte ouercomeþ
 twyes [3050] ¶ And thullius saith. þer is no þing so
 comendable in a gret lord [3051] as whan he is debon-
 aire and mecke and appesith him listly [3052] ¶ And I pray
 3ow þat 3e wol forbere now to do vengeance [3053] in
 such a manere þat 3oure goode name may be kept / &
 conserued. [3054] and þat men mowe haue cause / and
 matiere to prayse 3ow of pite and of mercy [3055] and
 þat 3e haue noon cause to repente 3ow of þing þat 3e doon
 [3056] ¶ For senec saith ¶ he ouercomeþ in an euel
 manere þat repenteth him of his victorie [3057] ¶ wher-
 fore I pray 3ow let mercy be in
 3oure herte [3058] to theeffect and thentent þat god
 almighty haue mercy and pite vpon 3ow in his laste iuggement
 [3059] ¶ For seint Iame saith in his Epistil: Iuggement wip
 oute mercy schal be don to him þat hap no mercy vpon



SIX-TEXT 252

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Harleian 7334. 529

ful goodly and sayde in þis wise. [3066] ¶ Al be
it so þat of þoure pryde and heigh presumpcioun and folye
and of þoure negligence/ and vnconnyng [3067] ȝe haue
mys-bore ȝow and trespassed vnto me! [3068] ȝit/ for as
moche as I se and biholde ȝoure humilite
[3069] þat ȝe ben sory and repentaunt of þoure giltes!
[3070] hit constreigneth me to do ȝow grace. and mercy.
[3071] wherfore I receyue ȝow to my grace [3072] and
forȝeue ȝow outerly alle þe offenses iniuries and wronges
þat ȝe haue don to me and agayns me and myne / [3073] this
is peffect & to þis ende þat god of his endeles mercy
[3074] wole at þe tyme of oure deyings forȝiue vs oure
giltes þat we haue trespassed to him in þis wrecched
world. [3075] for douteles & we ben sory & repentaunt
of þe synnes & giltes whiche we haue trespassed Inne in þe
sight of oure lord god! [3076] he is so free and so merci-
able [3077] þat he wil forȝiue vs oure gultes [3078]
and bringe vs to þe blisse þat neuer haþ ende AmeN
¶ Here endith Chaucer his tale of Melibe

[leaf 228]

¶ And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe monkes tale /

[*Break of one line in the MS.*]

Whan ended was my tale of Melibe 3079

And of prudence and hire benigne

Oure hoste sayde as I am faithful man

And by þe precious corpus Madryan

I hadde leuer þan a barel ale

That godeleef my wyf had herd þis tale 3084

For sche is no þing of such pacience

As was þis melibeus wyf dame prudence

By goddes boones whan I bete my knaues

Sche bringeth me forth þe grete clobbet staues 3088

And criep sles þe dogges euerychon

And breke of hem bope bak and bon

And if þat eny neghebour of myne

wol nought to my wyf in chirche enclyne 3092

Or be so hardy to hir to trespase

whan sche comþ hom sche rampeth in my face

And criep false coward wreke þy wyf

By Corpes bones I wil haue þy knyf 3096

And þou schalt/ haue my distaf and go spynne

Fro day to night þus sche wil bygynne /

Allas sche saith þat euer I was I-schape

To wedde a mylk-sop or a coward ape 3100

That melibeus had with outen myght

SIX-TEXT 254

GROUP B. § 11. MELIBE-MONK LINK. Harleian 7334. 531

For sche is big' in armes by my faith 3111
 That' schal he fynde þat hire mys doth or saith [1007 222, 223]
 But' let' vs passe a way fro þis matiere
 My lord þe monk' quod he be mery of chere /
 For 3e schul telle a tale trewely
 Lo Rowchestre stant' heer faste by 3116
 Ryde forþ myn oughne lord brek' nouȝt' oure game
 But' by my troupe I can not' ȝoure name
 whether schal I calle ȝow my lord dan Iohn
 Or daūn Thomas or elles dan albon 3120
 Of what' hous be 3e by ȝour fader kyn
 I vow to god þou hast' a ful fair akyn
 It is a gentil pasture þer þou gost'
 Thow art' not' lik' a penaunt' or a goost' 3124
 vpon my faith þou art' an officer
 Som worþy sexteyn or som Celerer
 For by my fader soule as to my doome
 Thou art' an officer whan þou art' at hoom 3128
 No pouer cloysterer ne non nouys
 But' a gouernour wily and wys
 And þer wiþ al of brawne and of bones
 A wel faryng' persone for þe noones 3132
 I praye god ȝiue him confusioun
 þat' first/ þe brouȝte to religioun
 Thow woldist' han be a tredefoul aright'
 haddist' þou as gret' a leue as might' 3136
 To parforme al þi wil in engendrure
 Thow haddist' bigeten many a creature
 Allas why werest' þou so wyd a cope
 God ȝif' me sorwe and I were a pope 3140
 Nought' only þou but' euery mighty man
 Though he were schore brode vpon his pan
 Schuld han a wif' for al þis world is lorn
 Religioun hath take vp al þe corn 3144
 Of tredyng' and we bural men ben schrympes
 Of feble trees þer comeþ feble ympes

This makip þat oure heires ben so sclender
 And feble þat þay may not wel engender 3148
 This makeþ þat our wyfes wol assaye
 Religious folk for þay may bettre paye (long 227)
 Of venus payementes þan may we
 God woot no lusscheburghes paye 3e / 3152
 beþ nouȝt wroþ my lorde þough I play
 For oft in game a soth I haue herd say
 This worpy monk took al in pacience /
 And saide I wol doon al my diligence 3156
 Als fer as sounep in to honeste /
 To telle ȝow a tale or tuo or þre
 And if ȝow lust to herken hiderward
 I wil ȝow say þe lif of seint Edward 3160
 Or elles first tredis wil I ȝow telle /
 Of which I haue an hundred in my celle /
 Tregedis is to sayn a certeyn storie
 As olde bookes maken vs memorie 3164
 Of hem þat stood in greet prosperite
 And is fallen out of heigh degre
 In to miserie and endith wrecchedly
 And þay ben versifyed comunly 3168
 Of six feet which men clepe exametron
 In prose ben eek endited many oon
 And in metre eek and in sondry wise
 Lo þis declaryng ought ynough suffise / 3172



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 256
Harleian 7334. 533

I wol bywaile in maner of tregedye
The harm of hem þat stood in heigh degre
And fallen so þe is no remedye
To bring hem out of her aduersite 3184
For certeynly whan fortune lust to flee
Ther may no man þe cours of hir whiel holde
let no man truste in blynd prosperite [leaf 227, back]
Beþ war by þese ensamples trewe and olde / 3188
[No stanza-breaks in the MS.]

[Lucifer.]

AT lucifer þough he an aungil were ¶ Lucifer
And no man at him wil I bygynne
For þough fortune may non aungel dere
From heigh degre ȝit fel he for his synne 3192
Doun in to helle. wher he ȝet is inne
O lucifer brightest of aungels alle
Now art þou Sathanas þat maist nouȝt twynne
Out of miserie in which þou art falle 3196

[Adam.]

Lo adam in þe feld of Damascene ¶ Adam
wiþ goddes oughne fynger wrought was he /
And nought bigeten of mannes sperma vnclene
And welþ al paradys sauyng oon tre 3200
had neuer worldly man suche degre
As adam til he for mys gouernance
was dryuen out of heigh prosperite
To labour and to helle and to meschaunce 3204

[*Sampeon.*]

Lo Sampeon. þat was annunciate ¶ *Sampeon*
 By þangel long^r er his natiuite /
 And was to god almighty consecrate
 And stood in nobles whil þat he might se 3208
 was neuer such anoper as was he
 To speke of strengþ. and þerto hardynesse
 But to his wyfes tolde he his secre
 Thurgh which he slough himself for wrecchidnesse / 3212

[.

 3216

 no gap in the MS.] 3220

Thre hundred foxis. tok^r Sampson for Ire
 And alle her tayles he togider bond
 And sette þe foxes tailles alle on fuyre
 For he in euery tail hath knyht a brond 3224
 And þay brent alle þe cornes of þat lond
 And alle her Olyuers. and vynes eeke
 A þousand men he slough eek wip his hond

By verray fors of algason on a night
 Maugre þe philistiens of þat cite
 The gates of þe toun he hap vp plight/
 And on his bak' caried hem hap he / 3240
 heigh vpon an hil wher men might' hem se /
 O noble almighty Sampson leef' and deere
 haddest þou nought' to wommen told þy secre
 In al þe world ne hadde be þy peere 3244

This sampson neyther siser dronk' ne wyn /
 Ne on his heed com rasour noon ne schere
 By precept' of þe messenger diuyn
 For alle his strengþes in his heres were 3248
 And fully twenty wynter ȝer by ȝere/
 he hadde of Ierusalem þe gouernaunce
 But' soone he schal wepe many a teere
 For wymmen schuln him bringe to meschaunce 3252

Vn-to his lemman Dalida he tolde
 That' in his heres al his strengþe lay
 And falsly to his foomen sche him solde
 And slepyng' in hir barm vpon a day 3256
 Sche made to clippe or schere his heres away
 And made his foomen al his craft' espien
 And whan þay fond him in þis array
 Thay bound him fast' and put out boþe his yen 3260

But er his heer clipped was or I-schaue
 Ther was no bond wiþ which men might' him bynde
 But' now is he in prisoun in a caue
 Ther as þay made him at þe querne grynde 3264
 O noble Sampson strengest' of al man kynde
 O whilom iugge in glory and in richesse /
 Now maystow wepe wiþ þine eyzen blynde
 Sith þou fro wele art falle to wrecchednesse 3268

Thend of þis caytif was as I schal say
 his foomen made a fest vpon a day
 And made him as here fool biforn hem play *(See/ 222, 2-204)*
 And þis was in a temple of gret array 3272
 But/ atte last he made a foul affray
 For he two pilers schook and made hem falle
 And doun fel temple and al and þer it lay
 And slough himsilf and eek his fomen alle 3276

This is to sayn þe princes euer ichon
 And eek þe þousand bodies were þer slayn
 with fallyng of þe grete temple of stoon
 Of Sampson wil I no more sayn 3280
 Be war by þese ensamples olde and playn
 That no man telle his counseil to his wyf
 Of such þing as he wold haue secre fayn
 If/ þat/ it touche his lymes or his lif 3284

[*Hercules.*]

Of Ercules þe souereyn conquerour ¶ De Ercule
 Singing his werkes laude and heigh renoun
 For in his tyme of strength he bar þe flour
 he slough and rafte þe skyn fro þe leoun 3288
 he of Centaures layde þe bost a doun
 he arpies slough þe cruel briddes felle
 The gold appul he raft fro þe dragoun

Was neuer wight / sippet þe world bigan
 That slough so many monstres as dede he
 Thurgh-out þe wide world his name ran
 what for his strengþe and for his bounte 3304

And euery roialme went he for to se
 he was so strong per might no man him lette
 At hope þe worldes endes as saith trophe
 In stede of boundes he a piler sette 3308

A lemman hadde þis noble campoun [leaf 22v]
 That highte Deianire freish as may
 And as þese clerkes maken mencion
 Sche hap him sent a schurte fresch and gay 3313
 Alas þis schirt allas and wailaway
 Enuynymed was soþly with alle
 That er he hadde wered it half a day
 It made his fleisch al fro his bones falle / 3316

But natheles som clerkes hir excusen
 By oon þat highte Nessus þat it makyd
 Be as he may I wil nouȝt hir accusyn
 But on his bak / he wered þis schirt al naked 3320
 Til þat his fleisch was for þe venym blaked
 And whan he saugh noon oþer remedye
 In hote colis he hap himself I-raked
 For no venym deyed him to dye 3324

Thus starf þis mighty and worthy Ercules
 lo who may truste fortune eny þrowe
 For him þat folweþ al þis world of þres
 Er he be war is oft y-layd ful lowe / 3328
 Ful wys is he þat / can himseluen knowe /
 Be war for whan þat fortune lust to glose /
 Than waytith sche hir man to ouerþrowe /
 By suche way as he wolde lest suppose 3332

[*Nebuchadnezzar.*]

The mighty trone þe precious tresor
 The glorious ceptre and real mageste
 That had þe king Nabugodonosore
 wiþ tonge vnnethes may descryued be 3336

¶ De rege
Nabugodonosor

he twyes wan ierusalem þat Cite
 The vessel out of þe temple he wiþ him ladde / ¶ Danielis 4^{to}
 At Babiloyne was his souereyn see regum &c
 In which his glorie and his delyt he ladde / 3340

The fairest children of þe blood roial
 Of Israel he dede gelde anon
 And made ylk of hem to ben his þral
 Amonges opre Daniel was oon 3344
 That was þe wisest/ child of euerychoon
 For he þe dremes of þe king expounded
 Ther as in Caldeyn was þer clerkes noon [see 239, back]
 That wiste to what fyn his dremes souned 3348

This proude king let make a statu of gold
 Sixty cubites long and seuen in brede
 To which ymage boþe yonge and olde /
 Comaunded he to loue and haue in drede 3352
 Or in a fornays ful of flames rede
 he schulde be brent þat wolde not obeye /
 But neuer wolde assente to þat dede
 Danyel ne his felawes tweye 3356

This king of kinges preu was elate
 he wende god þat sit in mageste
 Ne might him nought / bireue of his estate
 But sodeynly he left/ his dignite 3360
 I-lik a best him semed for to be
 And eet hay as an oxe and lay þer-oute /
 In rayn with wilde bestes walkyd he.
 [til certein tyme was i-come aboute¹] [¹ In margin, in a later hand.]

SIX-TEXT 262

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 539

And lik/ an Eglis fetheres were his heres
 his hondes like a briddes clowes were
 Til god released him a certeyn jeres
 And ȝaf him witte and þanne with many a tere 3368
 he þanked god and euer he is afere
 To doon amys or more to trespace
 And er þat tyme he layd was on bere
 he knew wel god was ful of might and grace 3372

His sone which þat highte Balthazar
 That huld þe regne after his fader day
 he by his fader coupe nought be war
 For proud he was of hert/ and of array 3376
 And eek an ydolaster was he ay
 his heigh astate assured him in pryde
 But fortune cast him down and þer he lay
 And sodeynly his regne gan diuide 3380

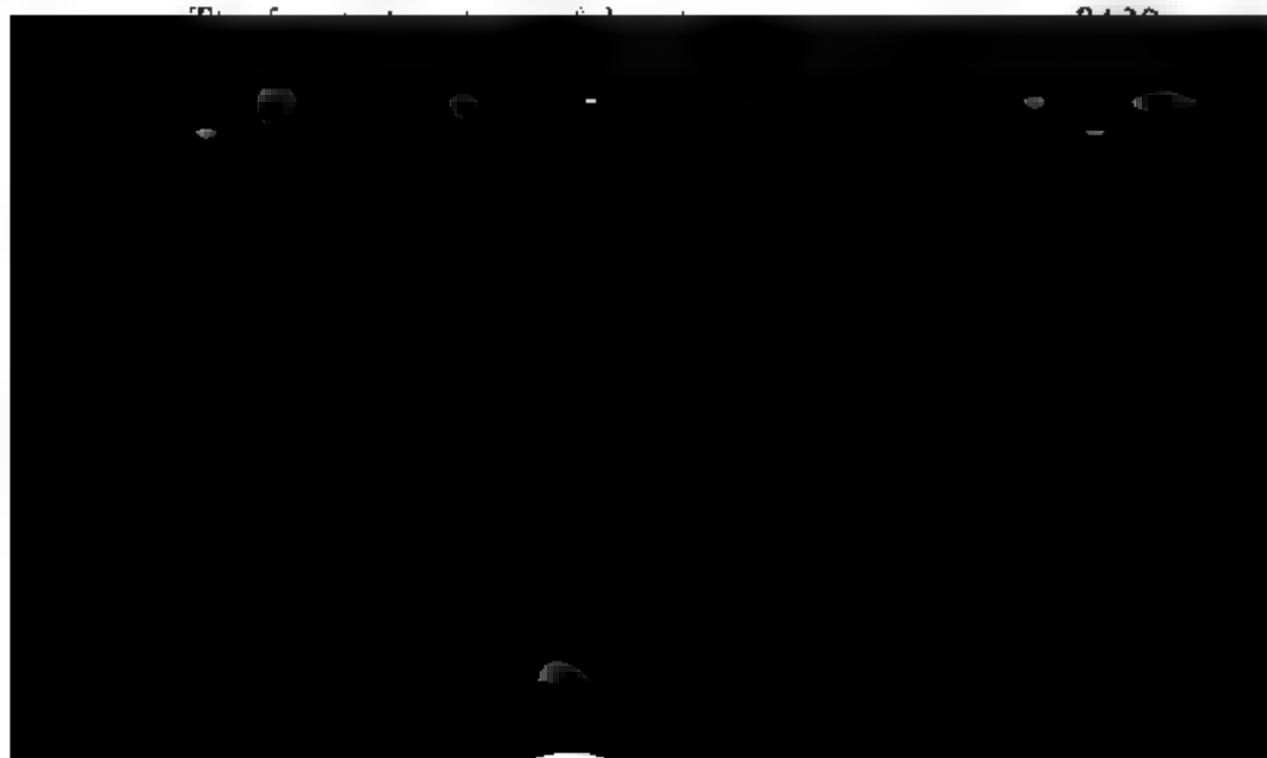
A fest he made vnto his lordes alle
 vpon a tyme he made hem bliþe be
 And þan his officeres gan he calle
 God bringeth forth þe vessealx quod he 3384
 The which my fader in his prosperite
 Out of þe temple of ierusalem byraft [leaf 220]
 And to oure hihe goddis þanke we/
 Of honours þat oure eldres with vs laft 3388

His wif his lordes and his concubines
 Ay drunken whiles her arriont last
 Out of þis noble vesseals sondry wyne
 And on a wal þis king his yhen cast / 3392
 And saugh an hond armles þat wroot fast /
 For fere of which he quook and siked sore
 þis hond þat balthazar so sore agast
 wrot. mane. techel. phares. and no more / 3396

In al þe lond magicien was noon
 That couþe expounde what þis lettre ment
 But Daniel expoundiþ it anon
 And sayde king god þy fader sent 3400
 Glori and honour. regne tresor and rent
 And he was proud and no þing god ne dredde
 And þerfor god gret wreche vpon him sent
 And him biraft þe regne þat he hadde / 3404

He was out cast of mannes compaignye
 with asses was his habitacioun
 And eete hay in wet and eek in drye
 Til þat he knew by grace and by resoun 3408
 That god of heuen had dominacioun
 Ouer euery regne and euery creature
 And þan had god of him compassioun
 And him restored to his regne and his figure 3412

Eke þou þat art his sone art proud also
 And knowest al þis þing so verrayly
 And art rebel to god and art his fo
 þou dronk eek of his vessel bodily 3416
 Thy wyf eek and þy wenche sinfully
 Dronke of þe same vessel sondry wyne
 And heriest false goddes cursedly



Lordyngs ensample her-by may 3e take
 how þat in lordschip is no sikernesse
 For whan fortune wil a man forsake
 Sche bereþ a-way his regne and his richesse / 3432
 And eek his frendes hope more and leese /
 And what man hath of frendes þe fortune
 Mishap wil make hem enemyes I gesse
 [þis prouerbe is ful soth & ful comune¹] [¹ Is a later hand
in the margin.]

[No break in the MS.]

Genobia of palmire þe queene
 As writen parciens of hir noblesse
 So worþy was in armes and so keene
 That no wight passed hir in hardynesse 3440
 Ne in lynage ne in oþer gentillesse /
 Of þe kinges blood / of pers sche is descendid
 I say þat sche had not most fairnesse
 But of hir schap sche might not ben amendid 3444

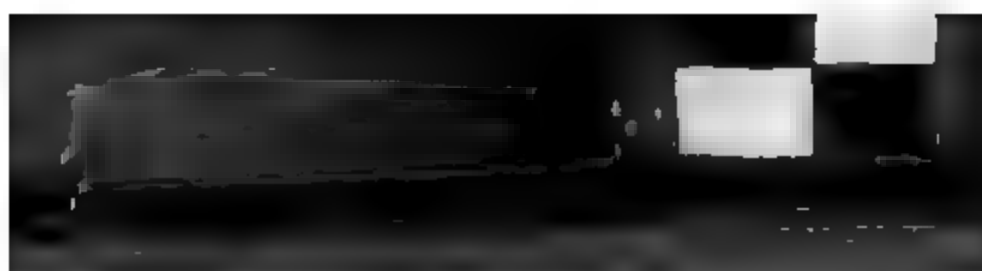
Fro hir childhod / I fynde þat sche fledde
 Office of wommen and to woode sche went
 And many a wilde hertes blood sche schedde
 with arwes brode þat sche to hem sent / 3448
 Sche was so swyft þat sche anon hem hent
 And whan þat sche was elder sche wolde kille
 Leouns / lebardes / and beres alto-rent
 And in hir armes weld hem at hir wille 3452

Sche dorste wilde bestes dennes seke/
 And renne in þe mounteyns al þe night
 And slepe vnder a bussh and sche couþe eke
 wrautil by verray fore and verray might 3456
 wiþ any jong man were he neuer so wight
 Ther mighte no þing in hir armes stonde
 She kept hir maydenhed from euery wight
 To no man deynd hire to be bonde 3460

But atte last hir frendes han hir married
 To Odenake a prince of þat Citee
 Al were it so þat sche him longe taried [144/151]
 And ȝe schul vnderstonde how þat he 3464
 had suche fantasies as hadde sche /
 But napeles whan þay were knyȝt in fere
 Thay lyued in ioye and in felicite
 For ech of hem had oȝer leef and deere 3468

Sauo oon þing sche wolde neuer assent
 By no way þat he schulde by hir lye
 But oones for it was hir playn entent
 To haue a child þe world to multiplie 3472
 And also soone as she might aspye /
 That sche was not wip childe ȝit in dede /
 Than wold sche suffre him doon his fantasie
 Eft sones and nought but oones out of drede / 3476

And if sche were wip child at pilke cast
 No more schuld he playe pilke game
 Til fully fourty dayes were y-past
 Than wold sche suffre him to do þe same 3480
 Al were þis Odenake wilde or tame
 he gat no more of hir for þus sche sayde
 hit nas but wyues lechery and schame /
 In oȝer cas if þat men with hem playde / 3484



SIX-TEXT 266

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 543

Hir riche array if it might be told
As wel in vessel as in hir cloping
Sche was al cloped in perre and gold
And eek' sche lafte nought for hir huntyng' 3496
To haue of sondry tonges ful knowing
whan sche had leyser // and might' perto entent
To lerne bookes was al hir likyng'
How sche in vertu might' hir lif despent' 3500

And schortly of pis story for to trete (leaf 281, back)
So doughty was hir housbond and eek' sche
That' pay conquered many regnes grete
In thorient' with many a fair citee 3504
Appurtient' vnto that' mageste /
Of Rome. and with strong' hond hulden hem fast
Ne neuer might' her fomen doon hem flo
Ay while Odenakes dayes last/ 3508

Her batails who / so lust' hem for to rede
Agayn Sapor pe king' and oper mo
And how pat' pis processe fel in dede
why sche conquered and what' title had perto 3513
And after of hir meschief' and hir woo /
how pat' sche was deceyued and I-take /
let' hem vnto my mayster perark' go
That' writeth of pis ynough I vndertake / 3516

Whan Odenake was deed sche mightily
The regnes huld and wiþ hir propre hond
Aȝains hir foos sche faught' ful trewely
That' per nas king' ne prince in pat' lond 3520
That' he nas glad if he pat' grace fond
That' sche ne wold vpon his lond werraye
with hir pay made alliaunce by bond
To ben in pees and let' hir ryde and play 3524

The emperour of Rome Claudius
 Ne him biforn þe romayn· Galiene
 Ne dorste neuer be so corrageous
 Ne noon ermine ne Egipcienne 3538
 No Surrien ne noon arrabiene
 wipinne þe feld þat durste with hir fight
 Lest þat sche wold hem wip her hondes sleen
 Or wip hir meyne putten hem to flight 3532

In kinges abytt went hir sones tuo
 As heires of her fadres regnes alle
 And hermanno and Themaleo
 here names were and Parcien men hem calle / 3536
 But ay fortune hath in hir hony galle
 This mighty queene may no while endure
 Fortune out of hir regne made hir falle [leaf 54v]
 To wrecchednesse and to mys aduenture 3540

Aurilian whan þat þe gouernaunce
 Of Rome cam in-to his hondes tway /
 he schop him of þis queen to do vengeance /
 And with his legiouns he took þe way 3544
 Toward Cenoby and schortly to say
 he made hir flee and atte last hir hent
 And feterid hir and eek hir children tweye
 And was he hard and home to Rome he went 3548



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 545

SIX-TEXT 268

Allas fortune . sche that whilom was
 Dredful to kinges and to Emperoures
 Now gaulith al þe pepul on hir alas
 And sche þat halmyd was in starke stoures / 3560
 And wan bifore tounes stronge and toures
 Schal on heed now were a wyntermyte
 And sche þat bar þe cepter ful of floures
 Schal bere a distaf hir self for to quyte 3564
 [No break in the MS.]

O noble petro . þe glori of Spayne / ¶ De petro his-
 whom fortune held so heigh in mageste panie rege
 wel oughte men þy pitous deþ complayne
 Thy bastard broþer made þe to fle 3568
 And after / at a sege by subtilte
 þow were bytrayed and lad to his tent
 wher / as he with his oughne hond slough þe
 Succedyng in þy lond and in þy rent 3572

The feld of snow with thegle of blak þer-Inne
 Caught wip þe leoun reed coloured as is þe gleede
 he brewede þe cursednesse and synne
 The wikked nest werker of þis neede 3576
 Nought Oliner ne Charles þat ay took heede
 Of trouthe and honour but / of armoryk [leaf 222, back]
 Geniloun oliuer corruptid for nede
 Broughte þis worþy king in such a bryk 3580
 [No break in the MS.]

O worþy petro king of Cipres also ¶ De petro Cypre rege
 That alisaunder wan by heigh maistrye /
 Ful many an hethen wroughtest þou ful wo
 Of which þin oughne lieges had enuye 3584
 And for no þing but for þy chivalrie
 þay in thy bed han slayn þe by þe morwe
 Thus can fortune þe whel gouerne and gye
 And out of ioye bringe men in to sorwe 3588
 [No break in the MS.]

Of Melayn grete Barnabo viscount ¶ De Barnabo Co-
 God of delyt and strength of lombardye mite Mediolano
 why schuld þyn infortune I nought accounts
 Syn in astaate þou clombe were so hye 3592
 Thy broþer sone þat was þy double allie
 For he þy newew was and sone in lawe
 wipinne his prisoun made þe to dye
 But why ne how not I þat þou were slawe / 3596
 [No break in the MS.]

Of erl hugilin of pise þe langour ¶ De hugilino
 Ther may no tonge telle þe pite Comite Pise
 But litel out of pise stant a tour
 In whiche tour / in prisoun put was he / 3600
 And with him been his litil children þre
 Theldest skarsly fyf þer was of age /
 Allas fortune it was gret cruelte
 Suche briddes to put in such a cage 3604

Dampnyd he was to deye in þat prisoun
 For Roger which þat bisschop was of pise
 Had on him maad a fals suggestioun
 Thurgh which þe peple gan on him arise 3608
 And putte him in prisoun in such wise
 As ȝe han herd and mete and drynk he hadde
 So smal þat wel vnnep it may suffise
 And þer wip al it was ful pore and hadde 3612

And on a day bifel þat in þat hour
 whan þat his mete was wont to be brought
 The gayler schet þe dores of þat tour
 He herd it wel but he saugh it nought (lea/ 233) 3616
 And in his hert anon þer fel a þought
 þat þay for hungir wolde doon him dyen
 Alas quod he allas þat I was wrought
 Ther-wip þe teeres felle fro his eyen 3620

SIX-TEXT 270

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 547

His 3ongest sone þat þe 3er was of age
 Vnto him sayde fader why do ye wepe
 whan wil þe gayler bringen oure potage
 Is þer no morsel bred þat 3e doon kepe 3624
 I am so hongry þat I may not sleepe
 Now wolde god þat I might alepe euer
 Than schuld not hunger in my wombe crepe
 Ther is no þing saue bred þat me were leuer 3628

Thus day by day þis child bigan to crie
 Til in his fadres barm a-down he lay
 And sayde far wel fader I moot dye
 And kist his fader and dyde þe same day 3632
 And whan þe woful fader deed it say
 For wo his armes tuo he gan to byte
 And sayde fortune alas and waylaway
 Thin false querel al my woo I wye 3636

His childer wende þat it for hongir was
 That he his armes gnew and nought for wo
 And sayden fader do nought so allas
 But rather et þe fleisch vpon vs tuo 3640
 Oure fleisch þou 3aus vs / oure fleisch þou take vs fro
 And ete ynough right þus þay to him seyde
 And after þat wiþinne a day or tuo
 Thay layde hem in his lappe a-down and deyde 3644

Himself despeired eek for hunger starf
 Thus ended is þis mighty eorl of pise
 For his estate fortune fro him carf
 Of þis tegrede it ought ynough suffice / 3648
 who-so wil it hiere in lenger wise
 Rede þe gret poet of Itaille
 That highte Daunt for he can it deniee
 Fro poynt to poynt nouȝt oon word wil he fayle 3652
 [No break in the MS.]

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

1. Project Name _____ Page No. _____
2. Date _____ Page No. _____

1. The United States is a free country.

1. The fact that the first two hypotheses are
2. The fact that the first two hypotheses are
3. The fact that the first two hypotheses are
4. The fact that the first two hypotheses are
5. The fact that the first two hypotheses are

Mrs. [redacted] more young of [redacted]
[redacted] was never [redacted] but he
[redacted] but he had [redacted] a [redacted]
[redacted] [redacted] [redacted] [redacted]

[illegible]

II Some heart for his delicacie
 The world is he sleight upon a day
 To us now men while wepe and crye
 And sleight his brother, and by his suster lay
 he to the made he in pious array
 For his wombe slyt he to byholde
 when he conceived so waylaway /
 he to the made he in pious array

SIX-TEXT 272

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 549

IN þouþe a maister had þis emperour
 To teche him letterure and curtesye
 For of moralite he was þe flour
 And in his tyme but if þe book' lye 3688
 And whil his maister had of him maistrie
 he made him so connyng' and so souple /
 That long' tyme it was or tyrranye
 Or ony vice dorst' on him vncouple / (leaf 224) 3692

This Seneca of which þat I deuyse ¶ Seneca
 By cause Nero had of him such drede
 For fro vices he wolde him chastise
 Discretly by word and nouȝt' by dede / 3696
 Sir wold he sayn an emperour mot neede /
 Be vertuons and hate tyrannye
 For which he in a bath made him to bleode
 On boþe his armes til he moste dye 3700

The nero hadde eek' a custumance /
 No þouþe aȝein his maister for to ryse /
 which afterward him þought' a gret greunaunce
 Therefore he made him deye in þis wise 3704
 But napeles þis Seneca þe wise
 Ches in bath to deye in þis manere /
 Raper þan to haue anoper tyrannye
 And þus hap Nero slayn his maister deere / 3708

Now fel it so þat fortune lust' no lenger
 The highe pride of Nero to cherice
 For þough he were strong' ȝit' was sche strengere
 Sche þoughte þus by god I am to nyce 3712
 To set' a man þat is ful sad of vice
 In high degre and emperour him calle /
 By god out' of his cite I wil him trice
 whan he lest' wenep sonnest' schal byfalle 3716

And prayde for him vpon a night
 The night before and when he it aspyed
 That his lordes anon he had him dight
 And so he was he wende hane ben allyed 3720
 And so he was and ay he more he cried
 The more he cryed the more he alle!
 That was he wyl he had himself mygyred
 And that he way no longer durst he calle 3724

And so he was and tumbled vp and down
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde 3728
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde 3732

And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde 3736
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde
 And so he was he how he sayde 3740



Nought only þat þe world had of him awe /
 For lesyng' of riches and liberte
 But made euery man reneye his lawe /
 Nabugodonosor was lord sayde he / 3752
 Noon oþer god schuld honoured be
 Aȝeinst' his heste dar no wight' trespase ¶ Et fecerunt filij
 Saue in Betholia a strond cite israel secundum
 wher Eliachim a prest' of þat' place quod constituit eis
 dominus sacerdos
 Elyachym

But tak' keep of þat' day of Olipherne
 Amyd his ost/ he dronke lay on night'
 wipinne his tente large as is a berne
 And ȝit' for al his pomp and al his might' 3760
 Iudith a womman as he lay vpright
 Slepynge his heed of smot' and fro his tent
 Ful priuely sche stal from euery wight
 And with his heed vnto hir toun sche went 3764
 [No break in the MS.]

What' needith it' of king' antiochius ¶ De Rege Anti-
 To telle his heye real mageste / ochie illustri.
 his heyhe pride his werke venemous
 For such an oþer was þer noon as he [Isa' 235] 3768
 Redep' which þat' he was in machabe
 And redith þe proude wordes þat' he sayde
 And why he fel fro his prosperite
 And in an hil. how wrecchidly he deyde 3772

Fortune him hap enhaunced so in pryde
 That' verrailly he wend he might' han teyned
 Vnto þe sterris vpon euery syde /
 And in a balauce weyen what' ech mounteyned 3776
 And alle þe floodes of þe see restreyne
 And goddes peple had he most' in hate
 hem wold he alse in torment' and in peyne
 wenyng' þat' god no might' his pride abate 3780

And for þat Nichosor and Thimothe /
 with Iewes were venquist/ mightily
 Vn to þe Iewes such an hate had he /
 That he bad graithe his chaar hastily 3784
 And swor and sayde ful despitously
 Vnto Ierusalem he wold eft soone
 To wreke his Ire on it ful cruelly
 But of his purpos he was let ful soone 3788

God for his manace him so sore smoot
 wip inuisible wounde. incurable
 That in his guttes carf so and bot
 That his peynes were importable 3792
 And certeynly þe wreche was resonable
 For on many a man. dede he peyne
 But fro his purpos cursed and dampnable /
 For al his smert he nolde him nought restreyne / 3796

But bad anon apparailen his host
 And sodeynly er he was of it ware
 God dampned al his pride and al his boost
 For he so sore fel out of his chare 3800
 That his lymes and his skyn to-tare /
 So þat he no more might go ne ryde /
 But in a chare men aboute him bare /
 Al forbrosed bope bak and syde / 3804

The wreche of god him smot so cruelly
 That in his body wicked wormes crept [leaf 225, back]
 And per with al he stonk/ so horribly
 That noon of his meyne þat him kep[t]e 3808
 wheper þat he wook or elles slepte
 Ne mighte nought þe stynk of him endure
 In þis meschief he weyled and eek wepte /
 And knew god lord of euery creature 3812



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALK. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 276
553

To al his host and to himself also
Ful wlatom was þe stynt and þe carayne
No man might him bere to ne fro
And in stynt/ and horrible payne 3816
he starf ful wrecchedly in a mountayne
Thus haf þis robbour and þis homicide /
That many a man made wepe and playne /
Swich guerdoun is þat longþ vnto pryde 3820
[No break in the MS.]

The story of alisaunder is so comune ¶ De alexandro
That every wight þat haf discrecioun magno philip-
haf herd som what or al of this fortune pi regis mace-
Thys wyde world as in conclusioun donie filio &c / 3824
he wan by strengþe or for his heigh renoun
Thay were glad for pees vnto him sende
The pride of man and best he layd a doun
Whar-so he cam . vnto þe worldes ende / 3828

Comparisoun 3it mighte neuer be maked
Bitwen him and noon oper conquerour
For al þis world for drede of him haf quaked 3832
he was of knyghthod and of fredam flour
Fortune him made þe heir of hir honour
Saue wyn and wymmen no þing might aswage
his heigh entent in armes and labour
So was he ful of lumyne corage 3836

What pite were it to him pough I 3ow tolde
Of Darins and an hundred þousand mo
Of kynges princes Dukes and eorles bolde /
which he conquered and brouzt/ vnto wo 3840
I say as fer as men may ryde or go
The world was his what schold I more deuyse /
[. no gap in the MS.]
Of his knighthood it mighte nouzt suffice / 3844

Twelf ȝer he regned as saith machabe [See MS.]
 Philippes son of Macedon he was
 That first was king in Grece þat contre
 O worþy gentil alisaundre alas 3848
 That euer schulde falle such a caas
 Empoysoned of þin oughne folk þou were
 Thyn fortune is torned in to an aas
 And right for þe ne wepte sche neuer a teere 3852

Who schal me ȝiue teeres to compleigne
 The dep of gentiles and of fraunchise
 That al þe worlde had in his demeigne
 And ȝit him þought it mighte nouȝt suffice 3856
 So ful was his corage of high emprise /
 Allas who schal helpe me to endite/
 Fals infortune and poyoun to deuyse
 The whiche two al þis wo I wytte 3860
[No break in the MS.]

By wisdom manhod and gret labour
 Fro humble bed to royal mageste /
 Vp roos he Iulius þe conquerour
 That wan al thoccident by land and see 3864
 By strengþe of hond or elles by trete /
 And vnto Rome made hem contributarie
 And sippe of Rome þemperour was he
 Tel þat fortune was his aduersarie / 3868



SIX-TEXT 278

GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 555

But now a litel while I wil bywaile
This pompeus þe noble gouernour
Of Rome which þat flowe fro þis bataile
Alas I say oon of his men a fals traitour 3880
his heed of smoot to wyne his fauour
Of Iulius and him þe heed he brouȝt
Alas pomp of þe orient conquerour [ea/ 236, back]
That fortune to such a fyn þe brought 3884

To Rome agayn repaireþ Iulius
wiþ his triumphe laorial ful hye
But on a tyme brutus Cassius
That euer had to his estat enuye / 3888
Ful priuely haþ made conspiracie /
Agains þis Iulius in subtil wise /
Cast the place. in which he schulde dye
with boydekyns as I schal ȝow deuyse / 3892

This Iulius to þe Capitoile went
vpon a day as he was wont to goon
And in þe Capitoil anon him hent
This false brutus and his oper foon 3896
And stiked him wiþ boydekyns anon
with many a wounde and þus þay let him lye
But neuer gront he at no strook but oon
Or elles at tuo but if þe storie lye 3900

So manly was þis Iulius of hert/
And so wel loued estatly honeste
That þough his deedly woundes sore smert
his mantil ouer his hipes caste he 3904
For no man schulde seen his priuete
And as he lay deyinge in a traunce
And wiste wel þat verrayly deed was he
Of honeste ȝet had he remembraunce / 3908

The tree quod sche þe galwes is to mene	
And Iubiter likenith snow and rayn	
And phebue with his towail so clene	
The ben þe sonne stremes soþ to sayn	3944
Thow schalt enhangid ben fader certayn	
Rayn schal þe wasch and sonne schal þe drye	
Thus warned sche him ful plat and ek ful playn	
his doughter which þat called was phanie	3948
And hanged was Gresus þis proude king	
his real tour might him not auaille /	
Tegredis ne noon oþer maner þing	
Ne can in I syng crie ny biwayle	3952
But for þat fortune wil alway assayle	
wiþ vnwar strook þe regnes þat ben proude	
For whan men trusteth hir than wil sche failo	
And couer hir brighte face with a clowde	3956
¶ Here endep þe monk his tale	

[No break in the MS.]



SIX-TEXT 282

GROUP B. § 13. MONK-NUN'S-PRIEST'S LINK. Harleian 7334. 559

pat on þour bridil hong on euery syde
By heuen king pat for vs alle dyde
I schold er þis han falle down for sleep
Al þough þe slough had neuer ben so deep 3988
Than had þour tale. haue be told in vayn
For certeynly as þese clerkes sayn
wher as a man may haue noon audience
Nought helpith it to tellen his sentence 3993
And wel I wot þe substance is in me
If any þing schal wel reported be
Sir say som what of huntynge I þow pray [read 3995]
Nay quod þe monk I haue no lust to play 3996
Now let another telle as I haue told //
Than spak our oost wip rude speche and bold //
And said vnto the nonnes prest anon //
Come ner þou prest. come ner þou sir Iohn //
Tel vs such þing as may our hertes glade 4000
Be bliþe al þough þou ryde vpon a iade //
what þough þin hors be boþe foul and lene //
If he wil serue þe rek not a bone // 4004
lok pat þin hert be mery ouer mo //
þis sire þis hoste. also mot I go //
But I be mery I-wis I wol be blamed //
And right anon he hap his tale tamed // 4008
And þus he sayd vnto vs euerich oon //
This sweete prest this goodly man sir Iohn

¶ Explicit
prologue

[No break in the MS.]

• *And of yowre the house yowre his tale*

A *re yow som lei stope in age
was willeth inellyng in a pore cottage 4012
Blye is a yowre stowlyng in a dale
This yowre of which I telle yow my tale
And yowre lay for she was last a wif*

In yowre and a ful symple yif 4016

For yowre was hir tale and hir tent

By yowre and of such as god hir sent

Some for hir wif and eek hir doughtres two

That yowre was and she and no mo 4020

That yowre and eek a scheep for highte malle.

For yowre was hir hore and eek hir halle

In which she eet ful many a sclender meel

Of pynant saws hir needid neuer a deel 4024

Neon doughter morael passid porugh hir prote

Her dyte was accordant to hir cote

Repleynoun ne made hir neuer sik

Attentio dyte was al hir phisik 4028

And eek and hertes suffisaunce

The yowre lette hir no ping for to daunce



SIX-TEXT 284

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S-PRIEST'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 561

His vois was merier þan þe mery Orgon
On masse dayes þat in þe chirche goon
wel sikerer was his crowyng in his logge
þan is a Clok or an abbay Orologge 4044
By nature knew he ech ascensioun
Of equinoxial in pilke toun
For whan degrees fyftene were ascendid
Thanne crew he it might not ben amendid 4048
His comb was redder þan þe fyn coral
And batayld as it were a castel wal
his bile was blak and as þe geet it schon
lik' asur were. his legges and his ton 4052
His nayles whitter þan þe lily flour
And lik' þe burnischit gold was his colour
This gentil cok had in his gouernaunce
Seuen hennes for to do al his plesaunce 4056
whiche were his sustres and his paramoures
And wonder lik' to him as of coloures
Of whiche þe fairest hiewed on hir prote
was cleped fayre damysel pertilote 4060
Curteys sche was discret and debonaire
And companable and bar hir self ful faire
Syn pilke day þat sche was seuen ȝor old
That sche hap trewely þe hert in hold 4064
Of chaunteclere loken in euery lith
He loued hir so þat wel him was þer-with
But such a ioye was it to here him synge
whan þat þe brighte sonne gan to springe 4068
In swete accord my lief is faren on londe
Fro pilke tyme as I haue vnderstonde (1047 110)
Beatis and briddes cowde speke and synge
And so byfel þat in a dauenynge 4072
As Chaunteclere among his wyues alle /
Sat on his perche þat was in his halle
And next him sat þis faire pertelote
This Chaunteclar gan gromen in his prote 4076

As man þat in his dreem is drecched sore /
 And whan þat Pertelot þus herd him rore
 Sche was agast and sayde herte deere
 what cylith ȝow to grone in þis manere 4080
 ȝe ben a verray sleper fy for schame
 And he answerd and sayde þus ma dame
 I pray ȝow þat ȝe take it nouȝt agreef
 By god me mette I was in such meschief 4084
 Right now þat ȝit myn hert is sore afright
 Now god quod he my sweten rede aright
 And keep my body out of foul prisoun
 Me mette how þat I romed vp and down 4088
 wiȝinne oure ȝerd wher as I saugh a beest/
 was lik' an hound and wold haue maad arrest/
 Vpon my body and wold han had me deed
 His colour was bitwixe ȝolow and reed 4092
 And tipped was his tail and boȝe his eeres
 with blak, . vulik' þe remenaunt of his heres
 His snout was smal with glowynge yen tweye
 ȝit of his look, for fer almost I deye 4096
 This caused me my gronyng douteles
 A way quod sche, fy on ȝow herteles
 Alas quod sche for by þat god aboue
 Now haue ȝe lost myn hert and al my loue 4100
 I can nouȝt loue a coward by my feith
 I coueris what so eny womman seith
 wiche it is, if it mighte be

SIX-TEXT 286

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S-PRIEST'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 563

Sweuens engendrid ben of replecciouns
 And often of fume and of complexiouns
 whan humours ben to abundaunt in a wight
 Certes þis dreem which ȝe han met to-night 4116
 Comeþ of þe grete superfluite
 Of ȝoure reede Colera parde
 which causeth folk to dremen in here dremes
 Of arwes and of fuyr with reede beemes 4120
 Of rede bestis þat þai wil him byte /
 Of Contek and of whelpis greet and lite
 Right as þe humour of malencolie
 Causeþ in sleep ful many a man to crye 4124
 For fere of beres or of boles blake
 Or elles blake deueles wol hem take
 Of oþer humours coupe I telle also
 That wirken many a man in slep ful woo 4128
 But I wol passe as light[ly] as I can
 lo Catoun which þat was so wis a man
 Sayde he nouȝt þus ne do no force of dremes
 Now sire quod sche whan we fle fro þise beemes 4132
 For goddis loue as tak som laxatyf
 Vp peril of my soule and of my lyf
 I counsel ȝow þe best I wol not lye
 [. 4136
 no gap in the MS.]
 Though in þis toun is noon apotecarie
 I schal my-self tuo herbes techyn ȝow
 That schal be for ȝour hele and for ȝoure prow 4140
 And in oure ȝerd þo herbes schal I fynde
 The whiche han of her proprete by kynde
 To purgen ȝow byneþe and eak aboue
 Forget not þis for goddis oughne loue 4144
 ȝe ben ful colerik of complexioun
 ware þe sonne in his ascencioun
 Ne fynd ȝow not/ replet in humours hote
 And if it do I dar wel lay a grote [leaf 200] 4148

That 3e schul haue a feuer terciane
 Or an agu þat may be 3oure bane
 A day or tuo 3e schul haue digestiues
 Of wormes er 3e take 3our laxatiues 4152
 Of lauriol Century and fumytere
 Or elles of Elder bery þat growith þere /
 Of Catapus or of gaytre berijs
 Of erbe yue growep in our 3erd þer mery is 4156
 Pike hem vpright as þay growe and et hem In ·
 Be mery housbond for 3our fader kyn
 Dredip non dremes I can say no more
 Ma dame quod he graunt mercy of 3our lore 4160
 But napeles as touching daun Catoun
 That hath of wisdom such a gret renoun
 Though þat he bad no dremes for to drede
 By god men may in olde bookes rede 4164
 Of many a man more of auctorite
 That euer catoun was so mot I the
 That al þe reuers sayn of his sentence
 And han wel founden by experience 4168
 That dremes ben significaciouns
 As wel of ioye as of tribulaciouns
 That folk enduren in þis lif present
 Ther nedeth make of þis noon argument 4172
 The verray preue schewith it in dede
 Oon of þe grettest auctorite þat men rede
 Saith þus · þat whilom tway felawes wente
 On pylgrimage in a ful good entente / 4176
 And happed so þay com in to a toun
 wher as þer was such congregacioun
 Of people and eek so streyt of herbergage
 þat þay foud nouȝt as moche as oon cotage / 4180
 In which þat þay might boþe I-logged be
 wherfor þay mosten of necessite
 As for þat night depart her compaignye
 And ech of hem goþ to his hostelrye 4184

SIX-TEXT 288

GROUP B. § 14. KUN'S-PRIEST'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 565

And took' his loggyng' as it wolde falle
 That oon of hem was logged in a stalle [leaf 242, back]
 Fer in a 3erd with oxen of þe plough
 That oþer man was logged wel ynough 4188
 As was his aduenture or fortune
 That vs governith alle in comune
 And so bifel þat long' er it were day
 This oon met' in his bed þer as he lay 4192
 how þat his felaw gan vpon him calle
 And sayd alas for in an oxe stalle /
 This night I schal be murdrid þer I lye
 Now help me deere broþer or I dye 4196
 In alle cum to me he sayde
 This man out of his slep for fer abrayde
 But whan þat he was waked out of his sleep
 he torned him and took' of þis no keep 4200
 him þought' him dreem nas but a vanite /
 Thus twies in his sleepe dremed he
 And at þe þridde tyme 3et his felawe
 Com as him þought' and sayd I am now slawe 4204
 Bihold my bloody woundes deep and wyde
 Arise vp erly in þe morwe tyde /
 And at the west gate of þe toun quod he /
 A cart of donge þere schalt' þou see 4208
 In which my body is hyd priuely
 Do þilke cart arresten boldely
 My gold caused my moundre soþ to sayn
 And told him enery poynt' how he was slayn 4212
 with a ful pitous face pale of hewe
 And truste wel his dream he fond ful trewe /
 For on þe morwe as sone as it was day
 To his felawes In he took' þe way 4216
 And whan þat he cam to þis oxe stalle
 After his felaw he bigan to calle /
 The hostiller answered him anoon
 And sayde sire 3our felaw is agoon 4220

Als soone as day he went/ out of þe toun
 This man gan falle in a suspeccioun
 Remembring on his dremes þat he mette /
 And forth he goth no lenger wold he lette [100/241] 4224
 Vnto þe west gate of þe toun and fond
 A dong cart went as it were to donge lond
 That was arrayed in þe same wise
 As ȝe han herd þe deede man deuise / 4228
 And with an hardy hert he gan to crie
 Vengeaunce and iustice of þis felonye
 My felaw mordrid is þis same night
 And in þis carte. he lith heer vpright 4232
 I crye out on þe ministres quod he /
 That schulde kepe and reule þis Cite
 harrow allas her lith my felaw slayn
 what schold I more vnto þis tale sayn 4236
 The peple vpstert and caste þe carte to grounde /
 And in þe myddes of þe dong þay founde
 The dede man þat mordred was al newe /
 O blisful god þou art ful iust and trewe 4240
 Lo how þow bywreyst mordre al day
 Mordre wil out certes it is no nay
 Morder is so wlatom and abhominable
 To god that is so iust and resonable 4244
 That he ne wold nouȝt suffre it hiled be
 Though it abyde a ȝeer or tuo or þre
 Morder wil out þis is my conclusioun
 And right anoon þe mynistres of þat toun 4248
 Han hent þe carter and so sore him pyned
 And eek the hostiller so sore engyned
 That þay biknew her wikkeðnes anoon
 And were anhonged by þe nekke boon 4252
 Here may men se þat dremys ben to drede
 And Certes in þe same book I rede
 Right in þe nexte Chapitre after þis
 I gabbe nought so haue I ioȝe or bliss 4256

SIX-TEXT 290

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S-PRIEST'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 567

Two men þat wolde haue passed ouer see /
 For certeyn causes in-to fer cuntre
 If þat þe wynd ne hadde ben contrarie
 That/ made hem in a Cite for to tarie 4260
 That stood ful mery vpon an hauen syde /
 But on a day agayn þe euen tyde [leaf 241, back]
 The wynd gan chaunge and [blew] right as him list
 Iolyf and glad þey wenten vnto rest 4264
 And casten hem ful erly for to sayle
 But herkneþ to þat oon man fel a gret meruayle
 That oon of hem in his slepyng as he lay
 him met a wonder drem a-gayn þe day 4268
 him þought a man stood by his beddes syd
 And him comaunded þat he schuld abyde
 And sayd him þus if þou to morwe wende
 Thow schalt be dreynt my tale is at an ende 4272
 ¶ He wook and told his felaw what he mette
 And prayde him his viage to lette
 As for þat day he prayd him to abyde
 his felaw þat lay by his beddis syde 4276
 Gan to lawgh and scorned him ful fast
 No drem quod he may so myn herte gaste /
 That I wil lette for to do my þinges
 I sette not a straw by þy dremynges 4280
 For sweuens been but vanitees and iapes
 Men dreme al day of owles and of apes
 And eke of many a mase þer with al
 Men dreme of þinges þat neuer be schal 4284
 But sith I see þat þou wilt her abyde /
 And þus foralouthe wilfully þy tyde
 God wot it reweth me and haue good day
 And þus he took his leue and went his way 4288
 But er he hadde half his cours I-sayled
 Noot I nouȝt why. ne what meschaunce it ayled
 But casuelly þe schippes bothom rent
 And schip and man vnder þe watir went 4292

In sight of oþer schippes þer byside
 That with him sailed at þe same tyde
 And þerfore faire pertelot so deere
 By such ensamples olde maistow leere 4296
 That no man acholde be to recheles
 Of dremes for I say þe douteles
 That many a dreem ful sore is for to drede
 Lo in þe lif of seint/ kenelm I rede [leaf 242] 4300
 That was kenulphus sone þat noble king
 Of mertinrike how kenilm mette a þing
 A lutil he was mordred vpon a day
 His mordre in his auysioun he say 4304
 His norice him expounded euerydel
 His sweuen and bad him for to kepe him wel
 For traisoun for he nas but seuen ȝer old
 And þerfore litel tale haþ he told 4308
 Of eny drem so holy was his hert
 By god I hadde leuer þan my schert
 þat ȝe had rad his legend as haue I
 Dame pertelot I say ȝow trewely 4312
 Macrobius þat writ þe avisioun
 In auffrik of þe worpy Cipion
 Affermeþ dremes and saith þat þay been
 Warnyng of þinges þat men after seen 4316
 And forþermore I pray ȝow lokeþ wel
 In þe olde testament of Daniel
 If he huld dremes eny vanyte /
 Rede eek of Ioseph and þer schal ȝe see / 4320
 wheþir dremes ben som tyme I say nought alle
 warnyng of þinges þat schul after falle
 Lok of Egypt þe king daun pharao
 his baker and his botiler also 4324
 whethir þay felte noon effect in dremis
 who-so wol seke actes of sondry remys
 May rede of dremes many a sondry þing
 Lo Cresus which þat was of lydes king 4328



Mette þat he sat vpon a tre
which signified he schuld hanged be /
Lo hir andromachia Ectors wif
That day þat Ector schulde lese his lif 4332
Sche dremed on þe same night byforn
how þat þe lif of Ector schulde be lorn
If þilke day he wente to batayle /
Sche warned him but it might nouȝt auaille / 4336
He wente forþ to fighte napeles
But he was slayn anon of achilles [leaf 212, back]
But þilke tale is al to long to telle/
And eek/ it is neigh day I may not dnelle 4340
Schortly I say as for conclusioun
That I schal haue of þis auisioun
Aduersite and I say forþermore
That I ne telle of laxatifs no store 4344
For þay ben venemous I wot it wel
I hem defye I loue hem neuer a del
Now let vs speke of mirthle and lete al þis
Madame pertilot so haue I blis 4348
Of o þing god haþ me sent large grace
For whan I see þe beaute of ȝour face
ȝe ben so scarlet hiew about ȝour eyȝen
hit makith al my drede for to deyȝen 4352
For als siker as In principio
Mulier est hominis confusio
Madame þe sentence of þis latyn is
woman is mannes ioȝe and mannes blis 4356
For when I fiele a-night ȝour softe syde /
Al be it þat I may not on ȝou ryde
For þat ȝour perche is mad so narrow allas /
I am so ful of ioȝe and solas 4360
That I defye boþ sweuen and drem
And with þat word he fleigh doun fro þe beam
For it was day and eek his hennec alle
with a chuk. he gan hem for to calle / 4364

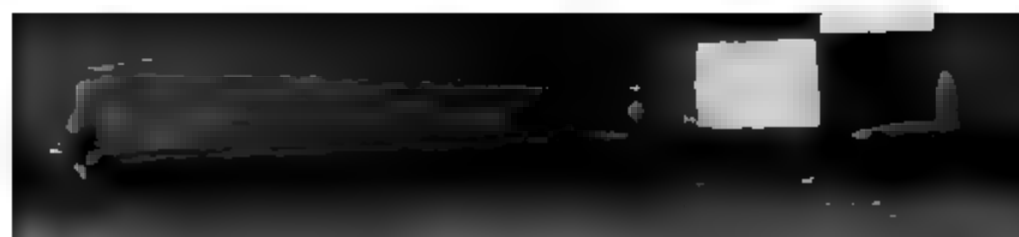
For he had found a corn lay in þe ȝerd
 Real he was he was nomore aferd
 he fetherid pertelote . twenty tyme
 And trad as ofte er þat it was prime 4368
 he lokith as it were a grim lioun
 And on his toon he romep vp and down
 him deyneth not to set his foot to grounde
 And chukkiþ whan he haþ a corn I-founde 4372
 And to him rennen þan his wifes alle
 Thus real as a prince is in his halle
 ¶ Leue I þis Chauntecler in his pasture
 And after wol I telle his aduenture [24a/24b] 4376
 whan þat þe moneth in which þe world bigan
 That highte march whan god maketh first man
 was complet and passed were also
 Syn march bygan tway monþes and dayes tuo 4380
 ByfeH þat Chauntecler in al his pride
 His seuen wyues walkyng by his syde
 Cast vp his eyȝen to þe brighte sonne
 That in þe signe of Taurus had I-ronne 4384
 Twenty degrees and oon and som what more
 And knew by kynde and by noon oþer lore
 þat it was prime and crew with blisful steuen
 The sonne he sayde . is clomben vpon heuen 4388
 Twenty degrees and oon and som what more I-wis
 Ma dame pertelot my worldes blis

SIX-TEXT 294

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S-PRINTER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 571

This story is also trewe I vndertake
 As þe book' is of Launcelot' þe lake
 That womman huld in ful gret' reuerence
 Now wol I torne agayn to my sentence 4404
 A Colefox ful / sleigh of iniquite
 That in þe groue had woned ȝeres þre
 By heigh ymaginacioun forncast'
 The same nighte þurgh þe hegge brast' 4408
 In to þe ȝerd þer Chaunteclere þe faire
 was went' and eek' his wyues to repaire
 And in a bed of' wortes stille he lay
 Til it was passed vndern of' þe day 4412
 waytyng' his tyme on Chaunteclere to falle /
 As gladly doon þese homicides alle [leaf 213, back]
 That in awayte lyn to morthen men
 O false morderer lurking' in þy den 4416
 O newe Scariot newe Genilon
 Fals dissimilour. greke Synon
 That broughtest' troye al outroly to sorwe
 O Chauntecler. O cursed be þe morwe 4420
 That þou in to þe ȝerd flogh fro þe bemys
 Thow were ful wel I-warned by þy dremys
 That þilke day was perilous to þe
 But what þat' god forwot' most' needes be / 4424
 After þe opynyoun of' certeyn clerkis
 witnesse on him þat' eny clerk is
 That in scole is gret' altercacioun
 In þis matier and gret' desputesoun 4428
 And hath ben of' an hundred þousend men
 But ȝit' I can not'. bult' it to þe bran
 As can þe holy doctor augustyn
 Or boece. or þe bisshop Bradwardyn 4432
 Wheþer þat' goddis worþy forwetyng'
 Streigneth me needely for to do a þing'
 Needely clepe I simple necessite
 Or elles. if fre choys be graunted me 4436

To do þat same þing or to do it nouȝt
 Though god forwot it er þat it was wrought
 Or of his wityng streyneþ neuer a deel
 But by necessite condicionel 4440
 I wol not haue to do of such matiere
 My tale is of a Cok as ȝe schal hiere
 That took his counseil of his wyf with sorwe /
 To walken in þe ȝerd vpon þe morwe 4444
 That he had met þe dreme þat I tolde
 wymmens counseiles ben fulofte colde
 wommannes counseil brouȝt vs first to woo
 And made adam fro paradys to go 4448
 Ther as he was ful mery and wel at ease
 But for I not to him it might displease
 If I counseil of womman wolde blame
 Pas ouer for I sayd it in my game (100/211) 4452
 Red auctours wher þay trete of such matiere
 And what þay sayn of wommen ȝe may heere
 These ben þe cokkes wordes and not myne
 I can / noon harme / of wommen diuine / 4456
 Faire in þe sond to baþe hir merily
 lith pertelot and alle hir sustres by
 Agayn þe sonne and Chaunteclere so free
 Sang merier þan þe meremayd in þe see 4460
 For phisiologus seith sicurly
 how þat þay syngen wel and merily



he wold han fled but þat þe fox anon
Said gentil sire / allas why wol þe goon
Be þe affrayd of me þat am þoure frend
Certes I were worse þan any feend 4476
If I to þow wold harm or vilonye
I am nouȝt come þour counsail to espye
[.
no gap in the MS.] 4480
But trewely þe haue als mery a steuen
As eny aungel hath þat is in heuen
Ther wiþ þe han in musik more felynge
Than had Boece or eny þat can synge 4484
My lord þour fader god his soule blesse /
And þoure moder of her gentillesse
han in myn hous I-been to my gret ease
And Certes sire ful fayn wold I þow please 4488
But for men speke of syngyng I wol say
So mot I brouke wel myn yen tway
Saue þe I herde neuer man so synge
As dede þour fadir in þe morwenyng (leaf 241, back) 4492
Certes it was of hert al þat he song
And for to make his vois þe more strong
he wold so peynen him þat wiþ boþe his yen
he moste wynke so lowde he wolde crien 4496
And stonden on his typtoon þer wiþ al
And streche forth his necke long and smal
And eek / he was of such discreccioun
That þer nas no man in no regioun 4500
That him in song or wisdom mighte passe
I haue wel red in Daun Burnel thasse
Among his verses how þer was a Cok
For a prestes sone ȝaf him a knock 4504
vpon his leg whil he was ȝong and nyce
He made him for to lese his benefice
But certeyn þer is no comparisoun
Bitwix þe wisdom and discreccioun 4508

Of youre fader and of his subtilte
 Now synges sire for seinte charite
 let so can 3e your fader countrefete
 This Chanteclere his wynges gan to bete 4512
 As man that coupe his tresoun nought' espye
 So was he ranysht wip his flaterie
 Allas lordynges many a fals flatour
 Is in your hous and many a losengour 4516
 That plesen 3ow wel more by my faith
 Than he þat soþfastnesse vnto 3ow saith
 Redip Ecclesiast of flaterie
 Beþ war 3e lordes of her treccherie / 4520
 This Chaunteclere stood heiþe vpon his toes
 Strecching' his necke and his yhen cloos
 And gan to crowe lowde for þe noones/
 And daun Russel þe fox stert' vp at cones 4524
 And by þe garget' hente Chaunteclere
 And on his bak' toward þe woode him bere
 For 3it' was þere / no man þat' him sewed
 O desteny þat' maist not' ben eschiewed 4528
 Allas þat' Chaunteclere fleigh fro þe bemis
 Allas his wif' roughte nought' of dremis [leaf 265]
 And on a friday fel al þis meeschaunce
 O venus þat art' god of pleasaunce 4532
 Syn þat' þy seruant' was þis Chaunteclere
 And in þy seruice did al his powere



Certis such cry ne lamentacioun
 was neuer of ladies maad whan Ilioun
 was wonne and pirrus with his strit' sward
 whan he hente kyng' priam by þe berd 4548
 And slough him as saith vs Eneydos
 As maden alle þe hennes in þe clos
 whan þay had sayn of Chauntecler þe sight'
 Nought' soueraignly. dam pertelote schright' 4552
 Ful lowder þan did hasdrubaldes wyf'
 whan þat' hir housebond had lost/ his lyf'
 And þat' þe Romayns had I-brent' Cartage
 Sche was so ful of torment' and of rage / 4556
 That' wilfully vnto þe fuyr sche stert
 And brend hir seluen with a stedfast' hert
 O woful hennes right' so cride ȝe
 As whan þat' Nero brente þe cite 4560
 Of Rome criden þe senatoures wyues
 For þat' her housbondes losten alle here lyues
 wiþouten gult þis nero hath hem slayn
 Now wol I torne to my matier agayn 4564
 ¶ The sely wydow and hir doughtres tuo
 herden þese hennys crie and maken wo
 And out' at' dores starte þay anon
 And sayden þe fox toward þe woode is goon (v. 225, 226) 4568
 And bar vpon his bak' þe cok' away
 And criden out' harrow and wayleway
 ha. ha. þe fox and after him þay ran
 And seek' with staues many anoper man 4572
 Ran Colle our dogge and talbot' and Garlond
 And Malkyn wiþ a distaf' in hir hond
 Ran cow and calf' and þe verray hoggoes
 So were þay fered for barkyng' of dogges 4576
 And schowtyng' of þe men and wymmen eke
 þay ronne þat' þay þought' her herte breke
 Thay ȝalleden as feeldes doon in halle
 The dokes criden as men wold hem quelle 4580

The gees for fere flowen ouer þe trees
 Out of þe hyues cam þe swarm of bees
 So hidous was þe noyse a benedicite
 Certes þough lakke straw and his meyne 4584
 Ne maden schoutes neuer half so schrille
 whan þat þay wolden eny flemynge kille /
 As þilke day was maad vpon þe fox
 Of bras þay brough hornes and of box 4588
 Of horn of boon in which þay blew and powped
 And þer with al thay schryked and þay howped
 It semed as þat heuen schulde falle
 Now goode men I pray herkneþ alle / 4592
 lo how fortune torneþ sodeinly
 The hope and pride eek of her enny
 This Cok þat lay vpon þis foxes bak
 In al his drede vnto the fox he spak 4596
 And saide sire if þat I were as þe
 3et schuld I sayn as wis god helpe me
 Turneþ azein þe proude cherles alle
 A verray pestilens vpon þow falle / 4600
 Now am I come vnto þis woodes syde /
 Maugre þoure heed þe Cok/ schal heer abyde
 I wol him ete in faith and þat anon
 The Fox answerd in faith it schal be doon 4604
 And whil he spak þat word al sodeinly
 This Cok brak from his mouth delyuerly [red/240]

SIX-TEXT 300

GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S-PRIEST'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 577

And first I schrew my self bope blood and boones
 If þou bigile me. any ofter þan oones
 Thou schalt no more þurgh þy flaterye
 Do me to synge and wynke with myn ye 4620
 For he þat wynkith whan he scholde se
 Al wilfully god let him neuer the
 Nay quod þe Fox but god ȝiue him meschaunce /
 þat is so vndiscret of gouernaunce / 4624
 þat iangleth whan he scholde holde his pees
 Lo such it is for to be recheles
 And necligent and trust on flaterie /
 But ȝe þat holde / þis tale a folye / 4628
 As of a Fox. or of a cok or of an hen
 Takith þe moralite goode men
 For seint poul saip þat al þat writen is
 To oure doctrine it is I-write I-wys 4632
 Takith þe fruyt and let þe chaf be stille
 Now goode god. if þat it be þy wille
 As saith my lor so make vs alle good men
 And bring vs alle. to his blisse ameN 4636
 ¶ Here endep þe tale of Chaunteclere and pertelote

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe maunciples tale

W Ot 3e not wher þer stont a litel toun
 which þat' clepéd is Bob vp and down
 vnder þe Ble in Caunterbury way

Ther gan our hoste for to iape and play 4

And sayde sires what' dun is in þe myre

Is þer no man for prayer ne for hyre [leaf 206, back]

Thal wol awake our felawes al by-hynde

A theef' mighte ful lightly robbe and bynde 8

Se how he nappith se for goddes boones

That' he wol falle fro his hors at' ones

Is þat' a Cook' of londoun wip meschaunce /

Do him come forth he knoweth his penaunce / 12

For he schal telle a tale by my fay

Al þough it be nouȝt' worþ a hotel hay

And he best / and best / and best / and best / and best

SIX-TEXT 577

GROUP H. § 1. MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINE. *Harleian 7334.* 579

¶ wel quod þe maunciple if þat I may doon ease /
 To þe sir Cook' and to no wight displease /
 which þat her rydeþ in þis compaignye
 And our host wolde of his curteisie 28
 I wol as now excuse þe of þy tale
 For in good faith þi visage is ful pale
 þyn eyen daswen eek'. also me þinkith
 And wel I woot þy breth ful foule stynkith 32
 That scheweþ eek' þou art' nought' wel disposid
 Of me certeyn þou schalt' nouȝt' ben I-glosed
 Se how he ganith. lo þis drunken wight'
 As þough he wolde swolwe vs anon right' 36
 hold clos þy mouth by þy fader kynne
 The deuel of helle sette his foot' þer Inne
 Thy cursed breth effecte wil vs alle
 Fy stynkyng' swyne foule mot' þe falle 40
 A. takiþ heed sires of þis lusty man
 Now swete sir. wol ȝe ioust' atte fan
 Therto me þinkþ. ȝe beþ right' wel I-schape
 I trowe þa ȝe drunken han wyn aþe (see/247) 44
 And þat' whan men playen with a straw
 And with his speche þe cook' wax angry & wraw
 And on þe maunciple bygan he nodde fast'
 For lak' of speche. and down þe hors him cast' 48
 wher as he lay til þat' men him up took'
 This was a fair Chiuahe of a cook'
 Allas þat' he nad hold him by his ladil
 And er þat' he agayn were in his sadil 52
 Ther was gret' schowuyng' boþe to and fro
 To lift' him vp and moche care and wo
 So vnwelde was þis sory pallid gost'
 And to þe maunciple þanne spak' oure host' 56
 By cause drink' hath dominacioun
 Vpon þis man by my sauacioun
 I trow he lewedly tel wol his tale
 For were it wyn or old moysty ale 60

þat he haþ dronk'. he spekiþ in his nose /
 And fnesith fast'. and eek' he haþ þe pose
 he also to do more þan ynough
 To kepe him and his Capil out' of þe slough 64
 And if he falle fro his capil eft' sone:
 þan schal we alle haue ynough to doone
 In lifyng' vp his heuy dronken cors
 Tel on thy tale of him make I no fors 68
 But ȝit' maunciple in faith þou art' to nyce
 Thus openly reprooue him of his vice
 Anoper day he wil par aduenture
 Reclayme þe and bringe þe to lure 72
 I mene he speke wol of smale þinges
 As for to pynchyn at þy rekenynges
 That' were not' honest' if it cam to pref'
 Quod þe maunciple þat' were a gret' meschief' 76
 So might' he lightly bringe me in þe snare
 ȝit' had I leuer payen for þe mare
 which he ryt' on. þan he schulde with me stryue
 I wil not' wrath him al so mot' I priue 80
 That' at I spak' I sayd it' in my bourde
 And wite ȝe what' I haue heer in a gourde [leaf 54v, back]
 A draught' of wyn. is of a ripe grape /
 And right' anon ȝe schal se a good iape 84
 þis Cook' schal drinke þer-of' if I may
 vp peyn of deth he wol nouȝt' say me nay
 And certaynly to tellen as it may

SIX-TEXT 579
GROUP H. § 1. MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK. Harleian 7334. 581

For þat wol torne rancour and desees
To accord and loue and many racour pees /
O þou bacus I-blessid be þin name
That so canst torne earnest in to game 100
worschip and þonke . be to þy deite
Of þat matier 3e get no more of me
Tel on þi tale mauncipel I þe pray
wel sir quod he . now herkyn what I say ¶ Narrat 104

[No break in the MS.]

Whan phebus duelt her in þis erþe a doun
 As olde bookes maken mencionn
 He was þe moste lusty bachiler
 Of al þis world and eek þe best archer 108
 He slough phiton þe serpent as he lay
 Slepyng agayn þe sonne vpon a day
 And many another noble worþy dede
 He with his bowe wrought as men may rede / 112
 Pleyen he coupe on euery mynstralcy
 And syngen þat it was a melodye
 To heren of his cleere vois þe soun
 Certes þe kyng of Thebes amphioun 116
 That with his singyng wallid þat citee
 Coupe neuer synge half so wel as he /
 Ther-to he was þe semlieste man
 That is or was sippen þe world bigan [leaf 248] 120
 what nedip it his fortune to descriue
 For in þis worlde is noon such on lyue

whit was þis crowe as is a snow-whyte swan
 And countrefete the speche of euery man
 he couþe whan he schulde telle a tale
 Ther is wipinne þis world no nightingale 136
 Ne couþe by an hundred þousend del
 Singe so wonder merily and wel
 Now had þis phebus in his hous a wyf
 which þat he loued. more þan his lif 140
 And night and day. did euermor diligence /
 hir for to please. and doon hir reuerence
 Sauþ oonly if þe soþ þat I schal sayn
 Ialous he was and wold haue kept hir fayn 144
 For him were loth biaped for to be /
 And so is euery wight in such degre
 But al for nought for it auaieth nouȝt
 A good wyf þat is clene of werk and thought 148
 Schuld not be kept in noon awayt certayn
 And trewely þe labour is in vayn
 To kepe a schrewe for it wil nought be
 This hold I for a verray nycete 152
 To spille labour for to kepe wyues
 Thus olde clerkes writen in her lyues
 But now to purpos as I first bigan
 This worþi phebus doþ al þat he can 156
 To plesen hir wenyng by such plesaunce /
 And for his manhod and his gouernaunce [leaf 248, back]
 That no man schuld han put him fro hir grace
 But god it woot. þer may no man embrace 160
 As to destroy a þing. þe which nature
 hap naturelly. set in a creature
 Tak any brid and put him in a cage
 And do al þin entent and þy corrage 164
 To foster it tenderly wip mete and drynk
 And wip alle þe deyntees þou canst þink
 And keep it al so kyndly as þou may
 Al þough his cage of gold be neuer so gay 168

3it hap þis brid by twenty þousand fold
 Leuer to be . in forest wyd and cold
 Gon ete wormes and such wrecchidnes
 For euer þis brid wil doon his busynes 172
 To scape out of his cage whan he may
 his liberte þe brid desireth ay
 let take a cat and foster him wel wip mylk/
 And tender fleisch and mak' his bed of silk/ 176
 And let him see a mous go by þe wal
 Anoon he wayueth mylk' and fleisch and al
 And euery deynte which is in þat hous
 Such appetit hap he to ete þe mous 180
 lo heer hap lust' his dominacioun
 And appetit . flemeth discr[e]scioun
 Also a sche wolf' hap a vilayns kynde /
 The lewidest . wolf þat sche may fynde 184
 Or lest' of reputacioun him wol sche take
 In tyme whan hir lust/ to haue a make/
 Alle þis ensamples . tel I by þis men
 That' ben vntrewe and no þing' by wommen 188
 For men han euer a licorous appetit
 On lower þing' to parforme her delit
 Than on her wyues ben þay neuer so faire
 Ne neuer so trewe ne so debonaire 192
 Fleissch is so newfangil with meschaunce
 That' we can in no þinge haue plesaunce

SIX-TEXT 583

GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 585

hir lemman cartes. þis is a knauisch speche
 Forgiueþ it me and þat I ȝow biſeche
 The wiſe plato ſaith as ȝe may rede
 Þe word mot' neede accorde wiþ þe dede 208
 If men ſchal telle properly a þing'
 The word mot' corde wiþ þe þing' werkyng'
 I am a boystous [man] right thus ſay I
 There is no difference trewely 212
 Bytwix a wyf þat' is of heigh degre /
 If of hir body diſhoneſt' ſche be
 And a pore wenche oþer þen þis
 If ſo be þay werke hope amys 216
 But' the gentil in eſtat' aboue
 Sche ſchal be cleped his lady as in loue
 And for þat' oþer is a pore womman
 Sche ſchal be cleped his wenche and his lemman 220
 And god it wot my goode lieue broþer
 Men layn þat' oon as lowe as þat oþer
 Right' ſo betwixe atticles tirant
 And an outlawe or a þeſt' erraunt 224
 The ſame I ſay þer is no difference
 To aliſaunder told was þis ſentence
 þat' for þe tiraunt is of gretter might
 Bi force of meyne for to ſle down right 228
 And brenne hous and home and make al playn
 Lo þerfor is he cleped a Captayn
 And for an outlawe haþ ſo ſmal meyne
 And may not' doon ſo gret an harm as he 232
 Ne bringe a contre to ſo gret meſchief' /
 Men clepen him an outlawe or a þeſt' [leaf 212, back]
 But' for I am a man not' texted wel
 I wil not' telle of textes neuer a del 236
 I wol go to my tale as I bigan
 whan phebus wyf had ſent' for hir lemman
 Anon þay wrouȝten al her wil volage
 This white crow / þat' heng' alway in cage 240

Bihiid her werk' and sayde neuer a word
 And whan þat hom was come phebus þe lord
 This Crowe song. Cuckow. Cockow. Cuckow
 what' bird quod phebus what' song' syngistow 244
 Ne were þou wont' so merily to synge
 That to myn hert' it was a reioysynge
 To here þi vois. alas what' song' is þis
 By god quod he I synge not' amys 248
 Phebus quod he for al þy worþynes
 For al þy beaute and þy gentiles
 For alle þy songes and þy menstralcie /
 For al þy waytyng' blered is þin ye / 252
 with oon of litel reputacioun
 Nought' worth to þe as in comparisoun
 The mountauns of a gnat' so mot' I þrue
 For on þy bed þy wif' I saugh him swyue 256
 what' wol ȝe more þe crowe anon him tolde /
 By sadde toknes and by wordes bolde
 how þat' his wyf' had doon hir lecherie
 him to gret' schame and to gret' vilonye 260
 And told him oft/ he saugh it wip his yen
 This phebus gan awayward for to wryen
 him þought' his sorwful herte brast' on tuo
 his bowe he bent' and sett' þer-In a flo 264
 And in his ire he hap' his wif' I-slayn
 þis is þeffect þer is no more to sayn
 For sorw of which he brak' his menstralcy
 Boþe harp. giter. and sauterie 268
 And eek' he brak' his arwes and his bowe
 And after þat' þus spak' he to þe crowe
 Traytour quod he wip tunge of scorpioun
 Thow hast' me brought' to my confusioun (leaf 250) 272
 Allas þat' I was born why nere I deed
 () dere wyf' O gemme of lustryhed
 That' were to me so sad and eek' so trewe
 Now list þou deed with face pale of hewe 276

Ful gulteles þat dorst I swere I-wis
 O racle hond to do so foule amys
 O trouble wit O Ire recheles
 That vnaused smytest gulteles 280
 O wantrust ful of fals suspeccioun
 wher was þy wit and þy discrecioun
 O euery man be war of racle nesse
 Ne trowe no þing wipoute gret witnesse 284
 Smyt nouȝt to soone. er þat þou wite why /
 And be aused wel and sobrelly
 Er ȝe doon eny execucioun
 Vpon ȝour Ire for suspeccioun 288
 Allas a þousand folk haȝ racle Ire
 Fordoon. or dun hath brouȝt hem in þe myre
 Allas for sorw / I wil my seluen sle
 And to þe crowe o false þeef sayd he 292
 I wyl þe quyt anon þy false tale /
 Thow songe whilom as any nightyngale /
 Now schaltow false þeȝ þy song forgoon
 And eek þy white fetheres euerich oon 296
 Ne neuer in al þy lyf ne schaltow speke
 Thus schal men on a fals þeef ben a-wroke
 Thou and þin o[f]spring euer schuln be blake
 Ne neuer sweete noyse schul ȝe make 300
 But euer crye agayn tempest and rayn
 In tokenyng þat þurgh þe my wyf was slayn
 And to þe crowe he stert and þat anon
 And puld his white fetheres euerychoon 304
 And made him blak and raft him al his song
 And eek his speche and out at dore him along
 vnto þe deuol which I him bytake
 And for þis cause ben alle crows blake 308
 Lordyngs by þis ensample I ȝow pray
 Beth war and takeȝ kepe what ȝe say / (leaf 299, back)
 Ne tellith neuer man in al ȝoure lif
 how þat anoper man haȝ dight his wyf 312

he wol þou hatin mortelly certeyn
 Daun Salamon as wise clerkes seyn
 Techeþ a man to kepe his tonge wel
 But as I sayd. I am nought tixted wel 316
 But napeles þus taughte me my dame
 My sone thenk on þe crowe in goddes name
 My son keep wel þy tonge and kep þy frend
 A wicked tonge. is worse þan a feend 320
 My sone fro a feend men may hem blesse
 My sone god of his endeles goodnesse
 wallid a tonge wip teþ and lippes eek
 For man schal him auyse what he speek 324
 My sone ful ofte for to mochil speche /
 haþ many a man be spilt as clerkes teche
 But for a litil speche auisily
 Is no man schent to speke generally 328
 My sone þy tonge scholdest þou restreigne
 At alle tyme but whan þou dost þy peyne /
 To speke of god in honour and prayere
 The firste vertu sone if þou wilt lere 332
 Is to restreigne and kepe wel þy tonge
 Thus lerne clerkes whan þat þay ben zonge
 My sone of mochil spekinge euil auised
 Ther lasse spekinge had ynough suffised 336
 Coueþ mochil harm þus was me told and taught
 In mochil speche synne wantiþ nought

SIX-TEXT 587

GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 589

The flemyng ^t saip and lere it if þe leest /	
That litil iangling causeþ mochi ^t rest	
My sone if þou no wikked word hast ^t sayd	
The thar not drede for to be bywrayd	352
But he þat hap ^t mys sayd I dar wel sayn	
he may by no way clepe his word agayn	
Thing ^t þat is sayd . is sayd . and forþ it goþ	
Though him repent or be him neuer so loþ	356
He is his þral to whom þat/ he hap sayd	
A tale of which he is now yuel a payd	
My sone be war and be noon auctour newe /	
Of tydyngs wheþer þay ben fals or trewe /	360
wher-so þou comest ^t amonges heih or lowe /	
kep wel þy tonge / and thank ^t vpon þe crowe	
¶ Here endith þe tale of þe crowe	

[No break in the MS.]

he wol þou haue mortelly carteyn
 Damm Salamon as wise clerkes synn
 Techeþ a man to kepe his tonge wel
 But as I sayd. I am nought tixted wel 316
 But napeles þus taughte me my dame
 My sone thank on þe crowe in goddes name
 My son keep wel þy tonge and kep þy frend
 A wicked tonge. is worse þan a feend 320
 My sone fro a feend men may hem blesse
 My sone god of his endeles goodnesse
 wallid a tonge wiþ teþ and lippes eek
 For man schal him anyse what he speek 324
 My sone ful ofte for to mochil speche /
 haþ many a man be spilt as clerkes teche
 But for a litil speche awisily
 Is no man schent to speke generally 328
 My sone þy tonge scholdest þou restreigne
 At alle tyme but whan þou dost þy peyne /
 To speke of god in honour and prayere
 The firste vertu sone if þou wilt lere 332
 Is to restreigne and kepe wel þy tonge
 Thus lerne clerkes whan þat þay ben ȝonge
 My sone of mochil spekinge euel auised
 Ther lasse spekinge had ynough suffised 336
 Comeþ mochil harm þus was me told and taught
 In mochil speche synne wantiþ nought



GROUP III

The
The
My
The
B
he
T
T
H
A
M
S
A
A

1

2

12

11

1

12

11

11

GROUP I. FRAGMENT X.

§ 1. THE BLANK-PARSON LINK.

¶ And here begynneth the prolōge of þe Perzouns tale

By þat þe maȝnciple had had his tale endid

The sonne fro þe south line is descendid

So lowe þat it nas nouȝt to my sight

Degrees [nyne and twenty as in hight¹] [*Is a later hand.*] 4

Ten on þe Clokke it was as I geasse /

For enleuen foots or litil more or lesse /

My schadow was at þilk tyme of þe ȝere

Of which feet as my lengþe parted were / 8

In [sixe¹] feet equal of proporcioun

Ther-with þe mones exaltacioun

In mena libra alway gan ascende

As we were entryng at a townes ende 12

For which our host as he was went to gye

As in þis caas our ioly compaignye

Saue in þis newe landinge oursch cou



GROUP I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 590
591

For euery man saue þou hath told his tale
vnboole and schew vs what is in þy male
For trewely me þinkeþ by þy chier
þou scholdist wel knyht vp a gret matier 28
Tel vs a tale anon for cokkes boones
This persoun answerde al at oones /
Thow getist fable noon I-told for me
For þou þat writes vnto thimothe 32
Repreueþ hem þat weyueþ sothfastnesse
And tellen fables and such wrecchednesse /
why schuld I sowen draf out of my fest/
whan I may sowe whete if þat me leat/ 36
For which I say if þat 3ow lust to hiere
Moralite and vertuous matiere
And þanne þat 3e wil 3iue me audience
I wol ful fayn at cristis reuerence 40
Do 3ow plesaunce leful as I can
But trusteþ wel I am a suthern man
I can not geste . rum raf . ruf by letter
No god wot rym hold I but litel better 44
And þerfor if 3ow lust I wol not glose
I wol 3ow telle a mery tale in prose /
To knyht vp al this fest and make an ende
And Ihu for his grace wit me sende 48
To schewe 3ow þe way in þis viage
Of þilke parfyt glorious pilgrimage
That hatte Ierusalem celestial
And if 3e vouche sauf anon I schal 52
Bygynne my tale for which I 3ow pray
Telle 3our avis I can no better say
But napeles þis meditacioun
I put it ay vnder correctioun 56
Of clerkes for I am not textuel
I take but þe sentens trustip wel
Therfor I make protestacioun
That I wol stonde to correccioun 60

Vpon þis word we han assented soone
For as it semed it was for to done
To enden in som vertuous sentence
And for to ȝeue him space and audience 64
And bad oure host he schulde to him say
That alle we to telle his tale him pray
Our host hadde þe wordes for vs alle
Sir prest quod he now faire ȝow bifalle 68
Say what ȝow lust and we wil gladly hiers
And wiþ þat word he said in þis manere
Telleþ quod he ȝour meditacioun
But hasteth ȝow þe sonne wol a doun 72
Beþ fructuous and þat / in litil space
And to do wel! God sende ȝow grace /

[*No break in the MS.*]

(The Page-numbers are those of the Six-Text.)

THE PARSON'S TALE.

A TREATISE ON PENITENCE, IN 3 PARTS:

- Part I. On Penitence, and its 1st requisite Contrition (A) (p. 593—612).
 Part II. On its 2nd requisite, Confession (B) (p. 612—679).
 Part III. On its 3rd requisite, Satisfaction (C) (p. 679—684), with the Writer's Leave-taking and Retractions (p. 684—685).

PART I. (p. 593—612).

ON PENITENCE, AND ITS 1st REQUISITE, CONTRITION.

Proem on Jeremiah vi. 16. The Tale is to be on *Penitence* as a full noble way to lead folk to Christ, and is to treat of

- i. 'what is Penitence' (p. 594).
- ii. 'whence it is cleped Penitence'. [not in the Tale.]
- iii. 'in how manye maneres been the accions or workynges of Penitence' (p. 594-5).
- iv. 'how many speses ther been of Penitence' (p. 595).
- v. 'whiche thynges apertenen and bihouen to Penitence' (p. 595—682: nearly all Parts I and III, and all Part II).
- vi. 'whiche thynges destourben Penitence' (at end of Part III, p. 682) (p. 593).
- i. Penitence defined, by a. St Ambrose; b. 'som doctour'; c. the writer. Its requisites: 1. bewailing of sins; 2. purpose to have shrift, to do satisfaction, never to sin again, to continue in good works (p. 594).
- [ii. not given.]
- iii. The 3 actions of Penitence: 1. Baptism after sin; 2. not to do deadly sin after baptism; 3. not thus to do venial sin (p. 594-95).
- iv. The 3 speses or kinds of Penitence: 1. Solemn (to be put out of church, or do open penance); 2. Common (to go naked on pilgrimage); 3. Private (p. 595).
- v. The 3 necessities or requises for Penitence (p. 596—682):
 A. Contrition of heart (p. 596—612).
 B. Confession of mouth (Part II, p. 612—679).
 C. Satisfaction (Part III, p. 679—682).
 Penitence avails against 3 things, by which we wrath Christ (p. 595).
 A. Contrition is the root of Penitence, whose stem bears branches and leaves of Confession, and fruit of Satisfaction.
 Contrition also bears a seed of grace, whose heat draws men to God. (Simile of the child and his nurse's milk.)
 Penance is the tree of life (p. 596).
 Four Points to be known about Contrition:
 1. What it is; 2. the causes that move a man to it; 3. how to be contrite; 4. what it avails the soul (p. 597).
2. The 6 Causes that should move a man to Contrition:
 a. Remembrance of Sins (p. 597-8).
 b. Whoso does sin is the Thrall of Sin (p. 598-99).
 c. Dread of the Day of Doom and the Pains of Hell (p. 599—604).
 These described: the Doom (p. 599-600); Job's 'load of mysce and of derknesse' (p. 600-1); the 3 shames in hell against (1) 'Honours, (2) delices, and (3) riches' (p. 611); poverty in 4 things: no treasure, food, clothing, or friends (p. 602); and no delights of the 5 senses. The pain shall be eternal (p. 603). Hell is orderless (p. 603-4). The 7 causes why the damnd have lost all hope (p. 604).
 d. Remembrance of the good works we've left undone, and the loss of the good works done while we were in sin (p. 604-6).
 Deadly sin wipes out all good works formerly done (p. 605); and no good works can be done in deadly sin (p. 605-6).
 The new French song, *J'ai tant parls men temps* (also quoted in Chaucer's late poem of *Fortune's*).

- e. Remembrance of Christ's suffering for our sins (p. 606). In man's sin, every ordinance is turned up-so-down (p. 607). For this disorder Christ suffered (p. 608).
- f. The hope of 3 things: 1. Forgiveness of Sins, 2. the Gift of Grace to do well, 3. the Glory of Heaven (p. 609).
- 3. How to be contrite. Contrition must be universal and total: for sins of thought, for desires against God's law, for wicked words as well as wicked deeds (p. 610). Contrition must be angwishous and continual (p. 609-11).
- 4. How Contrition helps the soul. It sometimes delivers a man from sin; destroys the prison of hell; cleanses the soul; changes the son of Wrath to the son of Grace (p. 611-12).

PART II (*no. v. continued*).B. CONFESSION (THE 2ND REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)
(p. 612-679).

- B. Confession. § 1. (L 317) 'what is confession' (p. 612).
- § 2. 'wheither it oghte nedes be doon or noon' (p. 672-9).
- § 3. 'whiche thynges been couenable to verray Confession' (p. 674-79).

CONFESSION, § 1.

- 1. 'Confession is verray shewynge of synnes to the preest' (L 318) (p. 612). We must understand too
 - a. (L 321) 'whennes that synnes spryngen' (p. 612-15).
 - b. 'how they encreessen' (p. 615-16; 672-74).
 - c. 'whiche they been' (p. 616-672).
- 1.a. Sin sprang from the fall of Adam (p. 612). The legend of Adam and Eve told (p. 613). From Adam we took Original Sin, and were born sons of eternal damnation; but Baptism rescues us; though we keep liability to temptation, or Concupiscence (p. 613-14).
Concupiscence, or the nourishing and occasion of sin. St Paul and St Jerome's temptations (p. 614-15).
- 1.b. How Sin grows in a man. 1. by Concupiscence; 2. Subjection to the Devil; 3. Hesitation; 4. Doing, the Sin becoming Actual (p. 615-16).
- 1.c. Sin is a. venial, b. deadly (or mortal).
 - a. 1. Venial Sin defined. It skips into Deadly Sin. (Simile of the drops of water into a vessel's hold drowning the ship;) (p. 616).
 - b. 1. Deadly Sin defined (p. 617).
 - a. 2. Of divers small venial sins, hardly thought sins (p. 617-18); eating, drinking, talking, too much; using your

Presumption, 13. Irreverence, 14. Pertinacity, 15. Vain-glory, 16. Jangling (chattering).

A private kind of pride (the Host's Wife's and Wife of Bath's), wanting to go to offering first, &c. (p. 630).

Two kinds of Pride, *a.* 'within man's heart', *b.* without; *b.* being the sign of *a.*, 'as the gaye lookel atte Taverne is sign of the wyn that is in the Celer'¹ (p. 620-21), *b.* outside pride.

a. in dear clothing, 1. superfluity of it: its cost, furring, chisel-holes, dragging in the dung, waste of material (p. 621), unfitness for giving to the poor: 2. scantness of it: showing man's privy members, and buttocks (like a she-ape's rump), and the former as half-flayed, in parti-coloured hose². The 'outrageous array of Women' (p. 623).

β. in horses (p. 623), and vicious grooms to tend 'em; plate-harness, &c.

γ. in household: keeping too many retainers or servants, who oppress the poor (p. 624).

δ. in table: not asking the poor to feast; having burning and ornamented dishes³; too costly cups, &c., and too choice minstrelsy (p. 624).

What Pride sins are deadly, and what venial (p. 624).

The Sources of Pride (p. 624): goods of Nature, Fortune, Grace (p. 624). The Folly of Pride in any of these goods of Nature: 'we ben alle of o fader and of o mooder, and . . . of o nature'⁴.

The general signs of *Gentleness*. (The flies call'd 'bees', and their stingless king) (p. 625); 3 gifts of Grace; 3 of Fortune. The brittleness of popular praise⁵ (p. 626).

The Remedy against Pride.

Humility or Meekness, and its 3 kinds: in 1. heart, 2. mouth, 3. works. 4 kinds of each of these (p. 626-27).

ii. *Envy* (p. 627-30): defined by the Philosopher and St Augustine. It springs from Malice (p. 627).

Malice; 2 kinds of: 1. hardness of heart, or recklessness; 2. opposing truth (p. 627).

The 2 kinds of *Envy* (p. 628): 1. sorrow at other men's prosperity; 2. joy at other men's harm: whence comes

Backbiting; 5 kinds (p. 628): 1. praise with a *but* at the end; 2. turning well-meant things upside down to ill ones; 3. lessening a neighbour's goodness; 4. putting one man above another; 5. glad listening to scandal (p. 628).

Grudging or *murmuring* (p. 628): 1. against God (p. 629); 2. *Murmuring* from avarice, 3. from pride, 4. from envy; 5. among servants, who say 'the Devil's *Paternoster*'; 6. *Murmuring* from ire or hate: thence, *a.* Bitterness of Heart, *b.* Discord, *c.* Scorning; *d.* Accusing (p. 629); *e.* Malignity (p. 630).

The Remedy against Envy (p. 630-31).

Love of God and one's neighbour. How a man shall love his neighbour. How an enemy is included in the name 'neighbour' (p. 630). 3 Remedies of Love, against 3 deeds of Hate (p. 631). Love is the medicine that casts out the venom of *Envy* from man's heart (p. 631).

iii. *Ira* or *Anger* (p. 631-43), and its 2 kinds: *a.* good *Ira* or *Wrath* (p. 632); *b.* wicked *Ira*, and its 2 kinds: sudden *ira*, and *ira* of malice aforethought (p. 633-33).

Three *Shrews* that forge in the Devil's furnace: *Pride*, *Envy*, and *Contumely* (p. 633).

¹ *Malthe-Mek Link*, B. § 11; and General Prologue, A.

² Chaucer's father no doubt had a sign outside his wine-shop or tavern in Thames Street, London.

³ The outcries and somewhat scarce abuse of the new fashions in dress is a great change from Chaucer's admirable *Thiré-Ported* chaff of the moral short-comings of the monks and friars, &c., in the Prologue and middle Tales. If this is not change of men, it's change of mood.

⁴ Chaucer must have seen plenty of these when he was page, valet, and squire.

⁵ Compare Chaucer's *Gentleness*, &c. ⁶ Compare Clerk's Tale, Part VI, cc. 128.

Wrath takes away a man's wit and spiritual life (p. 634).

Fruits of Wrath: 1. Hate. 2. War and wrong. 3. Manslaughter, *a.* spiritual; *b.* bodily (p. 634).

a. The 3 kinds of spiritual Manslaughter (3, calld 6 in MSS. p. 634): 1. by Hate. 2. by Backbiting. 3. Giving wicked Counsel, by Fraud (p. 634).

b. bodily Manslaughter: slaying with your tongue, giving orders or counsel to slay a man (p. 634).

Manslaughter in deed. its 4 (that is, 7) kinds (p. 635): 1. by law: *a.* Justice condemning a man to death; 2. justifiable homicide, in defence of one's own life; 3. by misadventure: shooting an arrow, &c.; 4. a woman overlying her child; 5. a man making a woman barren by drinks, &c., killing the foetus within her, shedding his seed in the wrong place; a woman killing the child in her womb; 6. a woman killing her child (after birth) for shame; 7. a man by lechery or blows killing a foetus.

(Sixteen) other sins coming from Ire or Anger.

1. blaming or despising God, as hazarders do (Cp. *Pardoner's Tale*) (p. 635); and those who treat of the Sacrament of the altar irreverently (p. 636).

2. Attry anger: making angry false excuses for sin.

3. Swearing, which dismembers Christ (p. 636).

a. Of lawful Swearing, before a Judge: its 3 conditions, and its motives; *b.* God's name and Christ's, not to be taken in vain (p. 637); *c.* swearing for gentility or manliness (p. 638); *d.* swearing suddenly; *e.* of Adjuration and Conjuración by enchanters and necromancers; *f.* of Divination by Dreams, &c.; *g.* of Charms for Wounds and Maladies (p. 638).

4. Lying (p. 638), and its 6 kinds.

5. Flattering. How Flatterers are the Devil's Nurses, his Enchanters and Chaplains (p. 639).

6. Cursing that comes of irous heart: Malison.

7. Chiding and Reproach (p. 640); (specially a chiding wife's) (p. 640-41).

8. Scorning (p. 641).

9. Giving wicked Counsel (p. 641).

10. Sowing and making Discord (p. 642).

11. Double tongue (p. 642).

12. Betraying of Counsel (p. 642).

13. Menace.

14. Idle words.

15. Jangling (chattering) (p. 642).

16. Japing (joking) (p. 642-43).

The Remedy against Anger (p. 643-5). Debonairtee and Patience (p. 643). Four kinds of grievances, and their remedies: 1. wicked words, 2. loss of goods, 3. harm of body, 4. outrageous labour (p. 644).

Inventory to Retraunce. Story of the Philosopher and Child

v. **AVARICE** (p. 651-67). The difference between Avarice and Covetousness (p. 651); and between an Idolater and an avaricious man (p. 652). Of Covetousness, and lords' extortion from their bondmen. "humble folk been Cristes freundes" (p. 652-53). The Duty of lords to their thralls or churls. Of those that pillage Holy Church (p. 653-54); lords who plunder the poor are like wolves (p. 654). Of Decait between Merchant and Merchant (p. 654). Of honest bodily Merchandise (the surplus of one country may be sent to help another) (p. 654). Of spiritual Merchandise, or Simony, and its 2 kinds (p. 656).—thieves that steal Christ's souls get livings (p. 656-56);—Hazardry or Game of Chance (p. 656). Other outcomes of Avarice (p. 656): 1. Lying, 2. Theft (bodily and spiritual) (p. 656-57), 3. False Witness, 4. False Oaths (p. 657).

The Remedy against Avarice (p. 657): Mercy and Pity, and reasonable Liberality (p. 658). Of foolish largess (p. 658).

vi. **GLUTTONY** (p. 658-60), and its 5 kinds (p. 659). 1. Drunkenness, or the burial of man's reason; 2. a troubled spirit; 3. bad way of eating; 4. distempred bodily humours; 5. forgetfulness. Or, as St Gregory says, 1. eating too soon, 2. eating too delicate food; 3. taking too much; 4. troubling too much about cooking food; 5. eating greedily: these are the 5 fingers of the devil's hand (p. 659).

The Remedy against Gluttony (p. 660): Abstinence, and its fellows. Temperance, Shame, Content with plain food, Moderation, Sobriety, Sparing (p. 660).

vii. **LECHERY** (p. 660). Its punishment in the Old Testament (p. 660). Adultery, and the device of it (p. 661-62).

The 5 fingers of the Devil's other hand (p. 662): 1. foolish looking, 2. villainous touching, 3. foul words, 4. kissing (old dotards, and dry dogs at a rose tree (p. 662), and how a man should love his wife), 5. the stinking deed of lechery (p. 663). Its kinds. 1. Fornication. Taking a maid's maidenhead, or 100th fruit (p. 663). 2. Adultery, defined. 3. Harms following from it: a. breaking of faith, b. theft (of the wife's body from her husband (Joseph and Potiphar's wife), and of her soul from Christ); c. breaking God's commandment, and defouling Christ (p. 664). Of Harlots and Bawds (p. 665). Adultery is set between Theft and Manslaughter. More kinds of Adultery: 1. by Men bound by Religious Vows, &c.; 2. those in Holy Orders (p. 665). Lecherous Priests are like a free Bull in a town, and they eat raw flesh of folk's wives and daughters (p. 666); 3. by man and wife copulating for pleasure only (p. 667); 4. copulation with kinsfolk, spiritual (or godchildren) or fleshly (blood relations). 5. the abominable unmentionable sin; 6. Pollution, of 3 kinds: 1. too rank humours; 2. weakness (p. 667); 3. evil thoughts (p. 668).

The Remedy for Lechery (p. 668): I. Chastity and Continence.

1. in Marriage. (The true effect of Marriage. One husband to have one wife (p. 668). How a man should behave to his wife (p. 669). How the wife should be subject to her husband (p. 669), and be moderate in behaviour, discreet in words, &c. (p. 669-70). The 3 causes for which man and wife may copulate (p. 670): a. begetting of children; b. to pay the mutual debt of their bodies; c. to avoid lechery (p. 670). The 4th cause, pleasure, is deadly sin (p. 670-71).)

2. In Widowhood; 3. Virginity (p. 671).

II. Special avoidance of causes of lechery: a. eating and drinking, long sleeping, b. the person who'd tempt you (p. 671-72). (I wish I could tell you the Ten Commandments; but it's too high doctrine (p. 672).) [End of Confession, § 1, c.]

Sin is in heart, mouth, deed, by the 5 Wits (p. 672).

§ 1. *β.* (see p. 615-16.) The 7 Circumstances that encrease or aggravate sins (p. 672). 1. the person who sins (male or female, &c.); 2. the kind of sin (fornication or homicide); 3. the place in which it was committed (as in a church, by a priest) (p. 673); 4. for what motive; 5. the number of times it was committed; 6. by what temptation; 7. how it was committed; and all other circumstances (p. 674).

CONFESSION, § 2, § 3 (p. 674-79).

Profitable Confession, and its 4 (= 3) Conditions (p. 674):

1. sorrowful bitterness of heart (p. 674); its 5 signs: *a.* shamefastness (like the Publican's) (p. 675); *b.* humility; *c.* fulness of tears (p. 675); *d.* no hesitation (like the Magdalen) for shame; *e.* obedience to receive penance laid on you (p. 675).
2. speedy Confession (p. 676); its 4 Conditions: *f.* that it be well thought over; *g.* the greatness and number of sins must be understood; *h.* the sinner must be contrite, and *i.* avoid occasions of sins.
3. Shrift must be made to one man, not more (p. 676).

True Shrift, and its 10 Conditions (p. 677): 1. that it be of free will; 2. that it be lawful (both sinner and priest, Popish); 3. that it be not despairing of Christ's mercy; 4. that a man accuse himself only, and not another; 5. that it be not lying (accusing oneself of sins never committed) (p. 678); that it be by one's own mouth, and not by letter; 7. that the sin be not painted with fair words; 8. that the shrift be to a discreet priest; 9. that the shrift be not made for vain-glory, but for fear of Christ; 10. that the shrift be not made suddenly, for a joke (p. 678). You may be shriven more than once for the same sin; and should be houseled once a year (p. 679).

PART III (*no. v. continued, and no. vi.*).

SATISFACTION (THE 3rd REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)

(p. 679-684).

In *α.* Alms. *β.* bodily punishment.

α. Alms and its three kinds (p. 679): 1. Contrition of heart. 2. Pity for one's neighbour's faults. 3. Giving good counsel to other's souls and bodies (food, visits in prison, burial). These Alms should be done privily, if possible (p. 680).

β. Bodily Punishment (Penance), of 4 kinds: 1. Prayers (chiefly of the Paternoster, whose expounding I leave to Masters of Theology) (p. 680). 2. Watching, and its 3 kinds: forbearing *a.* meat and drink, *b.* worldly polity, and *c.*

[There are no paragraph-breaks or line-numbers in the MS., but Tyrwhitt's breaks are kept in the print for convenience sake.]

¶ Ier. 6°. State super vias & videte et interrogate de
semitis antiquis que sit via bona et ambulate in ea
et inuenietis ¶ refrigerium animabus vestris, &c.

[75]

Owre swete lord god of heuen þat no man wil
perische but wol þat we comen alle to þe
knowleche of him and to þe blisful lif
þat is perdurable / [76] ammonestith vs by þe
prophet Ieremye þat saith in his wise
[77] ¶ Stondeth vpon þe weyes and seep & axep
of olde pathes þat is to sayn of old sentence
which is þe good way. [78] [. . . no gap in the MS.]
and 3e schul fynde refresshyng for 3oure soules &c.
[79] ¶ Many ben þe wayes espirituels þat leden folk
to oure lord Ihū crist/. and to þe regne of glorie.
[80] Of whiche weyes þer is a ful noble way and ful
couenable which may not faile to man ne to
womman þat þorugh synne hap mysgon fro þe right
way of Ierusalem caestial [81] and þis way is cleped
penitence ¶ Of which men schulden gladly herken and
enquere wip al here herte [82] to wyte what is penitence
and whens it is cleped penitence and in what maner and in
how many maners been þe acciones or workynges of pe-
naunce [83] and how many spieces ben of penitences &
whiche þinges apperteynen and byhouen to penitence. and
whiche þinges destourben penitence

[84] ¶ Seint antone sayþ. þat penitence is þe
 playng þat man doþ for þe gilt þat he hap doon. and no
 more to do any þing for which him oughte to pleigne
 [85] ¶ And som doctour saith. penitence is wayment-
 ynce of man þat sorweþ for his synne and peyneþ
 himself for he hap myschaunce [86] ¶ Penitence wip
 certeyn circumstances: is verray repentaunce of man þat
 hold himself in sorwe and in woo for his giltye
 [87] ¶ And for he schal be verray penitent: he schal first/
 bywyle þe synnes þat he hap do and stedfastly
 purposed in his hert to haue schrifte of mouth. and to
 doon satisfaccoun [88] and neuer to do þing for which
 him oughte more to bywyle or to complayne. and to con-
 tinue in goode werkes or elles his repentaunce may nouȝt
 auayle [89] For as saith seint Isidre ¶ he is a iapere and
 a gabbers and no verray repentaunt þat eft soone dop
 þing for which him oughte to repente [90] wepyng. and
 nouȝt for to stynte to doon synne may nouȝt auayle [91]
 ¶ But napeles men schal hope þat at euery tyme þat men
 fallith. be it neuer so ofte: þat he may arise þorough peni-
 tence if he haue grace ¶ But certeyn it is a gret doute.
 [92] For as saith seint Gregory. Vnnocē arist he out
 of his synne þat is charged wip þe charge of yuel vsage
 [93] ¶ And þerfore repentaunt folk þat stinte for to
 synne and forlete synne er þat synne forlete hem. holy
 chirche holt hem siker of her sauacioun. [94] And
 he þat synneth and verrailly repentith him in his last ende:
 holy chirche ȝit hopeþ his sauacioun by þe grete
 mercy of oure lord ihū crist for his repentaunce. but
 take þe siker way

[95] ¶ And now siþ þat I haue declared ȝow what
 þing is penitence. now schul ȝe vnderstonde þat þer
 ben þre acciouns of penitence [96] ¶ The first is
 þat if a man be baptized after þat he hap
 synned. [97] Seint augustyn saith but if he be penitent
 for his olde synful lif: he may not hygyne þe newe

clene lif [98] ¶ For certes if he be baptized wipoute penitence of his olde gilt. he receyueth þe mark of baptisme: but nouȝt þe grace ne þe remissioun of his synnes til he haue repentaunce verray [99] ¶ Anoper defaute is þis þat men doon deedly synne after þat þay haue receyued baptisme [100] ¶ þe þridde defaute is þat men fallen in to venial synne after here baptisme fro day to day. [101] þer of seiþ seint austyn ¶ That penitence of goode men and of humble 'folk' is þe penitens of euery day

[102] ¶ The spices of penitence ben thre ¶ That oon of hem is solempne ¶ Anoper is comune ¶ And þe þridde is pryue [103] ¶ Thilke penaunce þat is solempne is in tuo maners as is to be put out of holy chirche in lente for slaughtre of childre and such maner þing [104] ¶ Anoper is whan a man hap synned openly. of which synne þe fame is openly spoken in þe contre. and þanne holy chirche by iuggement streyneth him to doon open penaunce [105] ¶ Comune penaunce is þat prestes enioynen men comunly in certeyn caas. as for to goon per aduenture naked in pilgrimage or barfot [106] ¶ Priue penaunce is þilk þat men doon alday for priue synnes of whiche we schryue vs priuely and receyuen priue penaunce

[107] ¶ Now schalt þou vnderstonde what bihoueth and is necessarie to verray parfyt penitence. and þis stondith in þre þinges [108] ¶ Contricioun of hert ¶ Confessioun of mouth ¶ And satisfaccion. [109] ¶ For whiche seiþ seint Iohan Crisostom ¶ penitence distreyneth a man to accepte benignely euery payne þat him is enioyned with contricioun of herte and schrift of mouth with satisfaccioun and in werking of alle maner humblete [110] and þis is fruytful penitence. agayn þre þinges in whiche we wrappe our lord ihū crist/. [111] þis is to sayn by delit in þinking ¶ By rechelesnes in speking ¶ By wicked synful werkyng [112] ¶ Again þeso

þe wickid gultes is penitence þat may be likned vnto a tre

[113] ¶ The roote of þis tre is contricion þat hydiþ
him in þe hert/ of him þat is verray repentant ¶ Right as
þe roote of a tree hideþ him in þe earþe. [114] of þe
roote of contricion springeth a stalk þat bereth branches
and leenes of confессиoun and fruyt of satisfaccioun [115]
¶ For whiche crist saith in his gospel ¶ Doth digne fruyt of
penitence. For by þis fruyt may men knowe þis
tree and nouȝt by þe roote þat is hyd in þe hert
of a man ne by þe branches ne the leuys of confессиoun
[116] ¶ And þerfore oure lord ihū crist seiþ þus ¶ By
þe fruyt of hem schul þe knowe hem [117] ¶ Of þis
roote eek springeþ a seed of grace. þe which seed is
mooder of alurnes ¶ And þis seed is egre and hoot
[118] ¶ The grace of þis seed springeth of god þorugh re-
membranace of þe day of doom and of þe peynes of
helle [119] ¶ Of þis matier saith Salomon þat in þe
drede of god man forleteth his synne [120] ¶ The hete
of þis seed is þe loue of god & þe desiring of þe
ioye perdurable [121] ¶ þis hete draweth þe hert of
man to god and doþ him hate his synne [122] ¶ For
soþe þer is no þing þat serueþ so wel to a child
as þe mylk of his norice ¶ Ne no þing is to him more abhom-
inable þan þe milk whan it is melled
mete. [123] ¶ Right so þe synful man þat loueþ
his synne. him semeth it is to him most swete of
any þing [124] ¶ But fro þat tyme he loueþ sadly



in verray penitence is blessed after þe sentence of Salomon

[128] In þis penitence or contricioun: men schal vnderstonde foure þinges that is to sayn what is contricioun and whiche ben þe causes þat moeuen men to contricioun and how he schulde be contrit and what contricioun auaieth to þe soule [129] ¶ þanne it is þus þat contricioun is þe verray sorwe þat a man receyueþ in his herte for his synnes wip sad purpos to schryue him and to doo penaunce and neuer more to don synne. [130] ¶ And þis sorwe schal be in þis maner as saith seint Bernad ¶ It schal ben heuy and greuous and ful scharp and poynaunt in herte [131] ¶ First for man haþ agilted his lord and his creatour and more scharp and poynaunt. For he haþ agiltid his fader celestial. [132] and 3it more scharp and poynaunt for he haþ wratthed and agilt him þat bouzt him wip his precious blood and haþ delyuered vs fro þe bondes of synne and fro þe cruelte of þe deuel and fro þe peynes of helle //

[133] ¶ þe causes þat oughten to moeue a man to contricioun ben .viij. ¶ First a man schal remembre him of his synnes. [134] but loke þat þilke remembrance be to no delyt of him by no way but gret schame and sorwe for his gilt. For Iob. saith þat synful men doon werkes worþy of confessioun [135] and þerfor saith Ezechiel ¶ I wol remembre alle þe 3eres of my lyf in bitternesse of myn hert. [136] and god saith in thapocalips. ¹Remembre 3ow from whens þat 3e ben falle. For biforn þat tyme þat 3e synned. 3e were þe children of god [. ne gap] [137] ¶ But for 3oure synne 3e be woxe þral and foul and membres of þe feend. hate of aungels. sclauder of holy chirche & foode of þe fals serpent. perpetual matier of þe fuyr of helle [138] ¶ and 3et more foule and abhominable For 3e trespassen so ofte tyme as doþ þe hound þat torneþ to ete his spewyng. [139] & 3et

¶ Sex sunt causes que movent homines ad contricionem

þe ben fouler for þoure longe continuyng in synne and
 þoure synful vsage. for whiche þe ben roten in þoure
 synne as a beest in his donge [140] ¶ Suche maner of
 þoughtes make a man haue schame of his synne
 and no delit. and god saip by þe prophete Izechiel
 [141] ¶ þe schul remembre þow of þoure weyes. & þay
 schal displese þow soþly ¶ Synnes ben þe way þat
 leden folk to helle

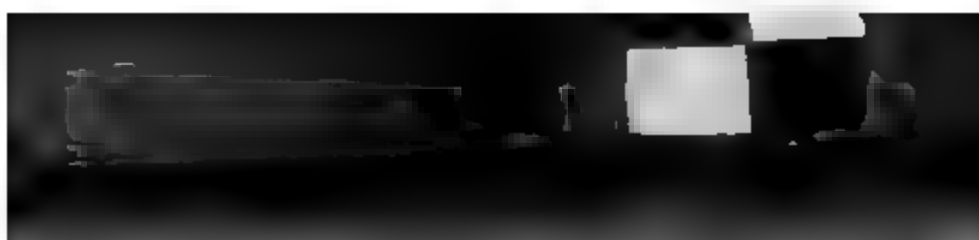
[142] ¶ The secounde cause þat oughte make a man
 to haue desdeyn of his synne is þis. þat as seiþ seint
 petre / ¶ who so doth synne is þral of synne. and
 synne put a man in gret þraldom. [143] and þer-
 fore saith þe prophete. Ezechiel. I wente sorwful in
 desdeyn of myself ¶ Certes wel oughte a man
 haue desdeyn of synne and wiþdrawe him fro þat
 þraldom and vilonye. [144] and lo what saip Seneca.
 in þis matiere. he saip þus ¶ Though I wiste þat god
 nere god. man schulde nener knowe it: ȝit
 wold I haue disdeyn for to do synne [145] and þe
 same Seneca also saith ¶ I am born to gretter þinges
 þan to be þral to my body or þan for to make of my
 body a þral [146] ¶ Ne a fouler þral may no man ne
 womman make of his body þan ȝiue his body
 to synne [147] ¶ And were it þe foulest cherl or þe
 foulest womman þat lyueþ and lest of value: ȝet is
 þanne synne more foul and more in seruitute [148] Euer
 fro þe heigher dege þat man falliþ þe more he is
 þral and more to god vile and abhomin-
 able [149] ¶ O goode god wel oughte a man haue gret disdayn
 o such a þing þat þorough synne þer he was free
 now is he maked bonde. [150] an þerfore saip seint
 austyn ¶ If þou hast disdayn [. . . no gap] þat þou
 þiself schuldest doon synne: haue þou þanne desdeyn þat
 þou þiself schuldist do synne. [151] tak reward of þy
 value þat þou be nouȝt to foul in þiself [152]
 Allas wel oughte men haue disdeyn to be



seruauntes & þralles to synne. & sore ben aschamed
of hemself [153] þat god of his endeles ¹goodnes
hap set hem in heigh estate or ȝeuen hem witte. strengþ
of body. hele. beaute. prosperite. [154] and
bought hem fro þe dep wiþ his herte blood þat
pay so vnkyndely aȝeinat his gentilesce quyen so
vileynsly to slaunȝter of her ouȝhne soules [155] ¶ O
goode god ȝe wommen þat ben of so gret beaute
remembrep ȝow of þe prouerbe of Salamon þat saith.
[156] he likeneth a fair womman þat is a fool of hir body.
to a ryng of gold þat were in þe groyn of a sowe
[157] ¶ For right as a sowe wroter in euerich ordure so
wrootith sche hir beaute in styunkyng ordure of synne

[158] ¶ The þridde cause þat ouȝte moeue a man
to contricioun is drede of þe day of doome. & of þe
orrible peynes of helle [159] ¶ For as seint Ierom saith.
At euery tyme þat I remembre of þe day of doom. I
quake [160] ¶ For whan I ete or drinke or what so þat I
doo euer semeth me þat þe trompe sownep in myn eere.
[161] Riseth ȝe vp þat ben deede / and comeþ to þe
Iuggement [162] ¶ O goode god. mochil ouȝt a man to
drede such a iuggement. þer as we schul be alle
as seiþ seint poul Biforn þe sete of our lord ihū
crist [163] wher as he schal make a general con-
gregacioun wher as no man may ben absent. [164] for
certes þer auaylep non easoyne ne excusacioun
[165] ¶ And nouȝt oonly þat oure defaute schal be
[. no gap] openly
known. [166] and as seint Bernard seiþ ¶ Ther
schal no pleynnyng auayle ne no sleight ¶ we schuln ȝiue
rekenyng of euery ydel word [167] ¶ Ther schulle we haue
a Iuge þat may nouȝt be disceyned ne corrupt. and why?
For certes alle oure þoughtes ben descouered as to him
ne for prayer ne for meede he nyl not / be corrupt
[168] ¶ And þerfor seiþ Salamon ¶ The wrappe of god ne wol
not be corrupt ¶ And þerfor seiþ Salomon ¶ The wrap of

god he wol nouȝt spare no wight for priuete nor for price ¶ And
 þerfore at þe day of doom þer is noon hope to eschape
 [169] wherfor as seint anselm seiþ ¶ Ful greet
 angusch schuld þe synful folk haue at þat tyme
 [170] ¶ þere schal þe sterne and þe wroþ luge sette abowen
 and vnder him þe horrible pur of helle open to de-
 stroye him þat not byknowe his synnes which
 synnes openly ben schewel byfore god and before
 enery creature [171] ¶ and on þe hitr syde no dede
 þan herte may þynke for to hary and to drawe
 þe synful to pyne of helle [172] ¶ And wiþ-
 inne þe hertes of folk schal be þe bytyng concorde
 and wiþoute forþ schal be þe work al brennyng
 [173] ¶ whider schal þanne þe wrecche synful man. Flea
 to hyden him? Certes he may not hyde him. he moou
 come forþ and schewe him [174] ¶ For certes as seith
 seynt Ierom ¶ The erpe schal caste him out of him
 and þe see also and þe aer also þat schal be ful of
 þunder-clappes and lightnynges [175] ¶ Now soþly
 who-so wel remembrith him of þese tydynges? I gesse
 his synne schal not torne him to delit but to greet
 sorw for drede of þe peyne of helle. [176] and þer-
 fore seiþ Iob. to god ¶ Suffre lord þat I may a while
 biwayle and wepe or I go wiþoute retournyng to þe
 derk lond couered wiþ derknes of deþ [177]
 to þe lond of mysse and of derknesse wher as is þe



þe world nys but a litel þing at regard of þe sorwe
of helle [181] ¶ The cause why þat Iob. calleþ helle
þe lond of derknes: [182] vnderstondith þat he
clepith it lond or eorþe for it is stable and neuer schal
fayle. derk: for he þat is in helle hat default/ of
light material. [183] for certes þe derke light þat schal
come out of þe fuyr þat euer schal brenne / schal torne
him to payne þat is in helle for it schewiþ him to
porrible deueles þat him tormenten [184] couered wip
the derknes of deth þat is to sayn þat he þat is in
helle schal haue defaute of þe sight of god ¶ For certes
þe sight of god is þe lif perdurable. [185] þe derk-
nes of deth ben þe synnes þat þe wrecchid man
hap doon whiche þat stourben him to see þe face
of god right as a derk cloude dop bitwixe vs and þe
sonne [186] ¶ lond of myseyse: By cause þat þere ben
þre maner of defautes agains þre þinges þat folk
of þis world han in þis present lif þat is to sayn.
honours. delices. and riches [187] ¶ Agayns honours.
han þey in helle / schame and confusioun. [188] For wel ȝe
witen þat men clepyn honore þe reuerence þat men
doon to þe man. but in helle is noon honour ne reuerence.
for certes no more reuerence schal ben doon to a
kyng þan to a knaue [189] ¶ For which god saip by
þe prophete Ieremie ¶ Thilke folk/ þat me displesen schul
be despit [190] ¶ Honour is eke cleped gret lord-
schipe. þere schal no wight seruen opir but of harm and
of torment ¶ honour eek is cleped gret dignite and heigh-
nes: but in helle schulle þay be al fortrode of deueles
[191] ¶ And god saith. thorrible deueles schuln goon and
comen vpon þe heeddes of dampned folk. And þis
is for ale moche as þe heyher þat þay were in þis present
lif: þe more schuln þay ben abatid and defouled in
helle [192] ¶ Agayns riches of þis world schuln
þay han mysese of pouert. A þis pouert schal be
in .iiij. þinges [193] In default of tresor of which as

dauid saith ¶ The riche folk þat embraseden and onedin
 in al here herte þe tresor of þis world. schuln slepen in þe
 slepyng of deth and no þing schuln þay fynde in
 her hondes of al her tresor [194] ¶ & more-ouer þe
 mysease of helle schal be in þe default of mete and
 drink. [195] For god saith þus by moyses ¶ Thay schul
 be wasted by hunger and þe briddes of helle schuln
 deuoure hem wip bittir teeth and þe galle of þe
 dragoun schal be her drink & þe venym of þe
 dragoun here morsels [196] ¶ And forþer more ouer her
 misense schal be in default of cloþing/ for þay schul be naked
 in body as of cloþing ¶ For þay schuln be nakid of body
 saue of fuyr in which þay brenne and oper filþis. [197] and
 naked schuln þay be of soule. of alle maner vertues which
 þat is cloþing of soule ¶ wher ben þanne þe gaye
 robes. and þe softe scheetis and þe smale schirtes. [198]
 lo what saip of hem þe prophete Isaya
 ¶ vnder hem schuln be strawed motthis and here
 couertours schuln ben of wormes of helle [199] ¶ And
 forþer mor ouer here disease schal be in defaute of
 frendes. for he is not pouere that hap goode frendes.
 but here is no frend. [200] For neyþer god ne no
 creature schal be frend vnto hem. and euerich of hem
 schal hate oper wip dedly hate [201] ¶ The sones and
 the douztres schuln rebellen agayns þe fader and þe mooder
 and kynrele agayns kynrede and chiden and despisen

is no manere [206] ¶ And þerfore in helle is no solace
 ne frendschipe. but euer þe more fleshly kynredes
 þat ben in helle! þe more cursynges þe more chyd-
 ynges and þe more deedly hate þer is among hem
 [207] And forþer ouer þay schul haue defaute of alle
 manere delices ¶ For certis delices ben þe appetites
 of þy fyue wittes as sight hieryng. amellyng. sauor-
 ing and touching [208] ¶ But in helle here sight schal be
 ful of derknesse / and of smoke and þerfore ful of
 teeris. and her hieryng ful of waymentynge and of
 gruntyng of teeth as saip ihū crist // [209] ¶ here nose
 þurles schuln ben ful of stynkyng stynk. and as saith
 ysaye þe prophete ¶ here sauoringe schal be ful of bitter
 galle. [210] and touchyng of al here body y-couered
 with fuyr þat neuer schal quenche / and wip wormes
 þat neuer schuln deyen / as god saip by þe moup of
 ysaye [211] ¶ And for al so moche as þay schuln nouȝt/ wene/
 þat þay may deyen for peyne / and by here deth fle fro
 peyne. þat may þay vnderstonde in þe word of Iob /
 þat saip ¶ Ther as is þe schadow of deth [212] ¶ Certes
 a schadow haþ þe liknesse of the þing of which it is
 a schadow. [.
 no gap] [213] Right so fareth þe peyne of helle. it is
 lik deth. for þe horrible anguisse. And why? for it
 peynes hem euer as though men scholden deye anon. But
 certes þay schul not deye. [214] For as saith Seint
 GreGory ¶ To wrecchid caytifs shal be ȝiue deth wipoute
 deth and ende wipouten ende / and defaute withouten
 faylinge. [215] For here deth schal alway lyuen. and here
 ende schal enermore bygynne. and here defaute schal not
 fayle [216] ¶ And þerfor saip seint Iohan þe
 euangelist ¶ þay schul folwe deth. and þay schuln
 nouȝt fynde him. and þay schul desire to deyen And deth
 schal fle fro hem. [217] ¶ and eek Iob. saip. þat in helle
 is noon ordre of rule [218] ¶ And al be it þat god haþ
 creat al þing in right ordre and no þing wip-

oute ordre. but 'alle þinges ben ordeyned and noum-
 bred: ȝit napeles þay þat ben dampned been nouȝt
 in ordre ne holden non ordre [219] For þe
 corpe schal bere hem no fruyt [220] ¶ For as þe prophete
 dauid saip. God schal destroye þe fruyt of þe corpe as
 for hem. ne watir schal ȝiue hem no moysture ne
 þe aier non refreisching. ne fuyr no light. [221] For as
 seip seint Basile ¶ The brennyng of þe fuyr of þis
 world schal god ȝiue in helle to hem þat ben dampnyd.
 [222] But þe light and þe clernesse / schal be ȝeue to
 hemene to his children. Right as þe goode man ȝeue
 fleisch to his children and bones to his houndes / [223]
 ¶ And for þay schul haue noon hope to eschape. saip seint
 Iob. atte laste þat þer schal horroure and grisly drede
 duelle wiþouten ende [224] ¶ horroure is alway drede
 of harm þat is to come. and þis drede schal euer duelle
 in þe hertes of hem þat ben dampnyd. And þerfore
 han þay lorn al here hope for vij. causes [225] ¶ First /
 for god þat is here Iugge schal be wiþoute mercy to
 hem ne þay may not please him ne noon of his
 halwes Ne þey may ȝiue no þing for here raunsoun /
 [226] ne þay haue no voice to speke to him. ne þay
 may not fle fro peyne. ne þay haue no goodnes in
 hem. þat þay may schewe to deliuere hem fro peyne
 [227] ¶ And þerfore saip Salomon / The wikked man
 deyeth. and whan he is deed: he schal haue noon hope to
 eschape fro peyne [228] ¶ who so wille haue wel

haue contricioun is þe sorwful remembraunce of þe
 good þat he hath left to doon heer in eorþe. and
 eek þe good þat he hap lorn [232] ¶ Soþly þe goode
 werkes þat he hath left: eyþer þay been þe goode
 werkes þat he wrought er he fel in to dedly synne:
 or elles þai ben þe goode werkes þat he [.
 . . . [233] *no gap in the MS.*] dede
 er he fel into synne ben amortised. and astoneyed
 and dullid by ofte synnyng. [234] þat opere
 goode werkes that he wrouȝte whil he lay in dedly
 synne been outrely deede ¹as to þe lif perdurable in
 heuen. [235] þanne þilke goode werkes þat ben
 mortified by ofte synnyng whiche goode werkes he dede
 whiles he was in charite ne mowe neuer quyken agayn
 withouten verray penitence. [236] And þerof saith god
 by þe mouth of Ezechiel ¶ That if þe rightful man re-
 tourne agayn fro his rightwisnesse and werke wikked-
 nesse. schal he liue: [237] nay. For alle þe goode werkes
 þat he hap wrought ne schuln neuer be in remembrance
 for he schal dye in his synne. [238] And vpon þilke
 chapitre saith seint Gregory þus. þat we schuln vnder-
 stonde þis principally. [239] That whan we doon dedly
 synne it is for nouȝt þanne to reherse or to drawe in to
 memorie þe goode werkes þat we han wrought biforn.
 [240] For certis in þe werkyng of þe dedly synne
 þer is no trust to no good werkes that we han don biforne
 þis tyme. þat is to say as for to haue þerby þe lif per-
 durable in heuen. [241] But napeles þe goode
 werkes quiken agayn and comen again and helpen and
 auailen to haue þe lif perdurable in heuen whan we
 han contricioun [242] ¶ But soþly þe goode werkes þat
 men doon whil þat þai ben in dedly synne. for as moche
 as þay were doon in dedly synne: þay may neuer quyken
 [. . . [243]
 *no gap in the MS.*] ¶ And al be it þat þay
 auailen not to haue þe lif perdurable: ȝit auaylen

þay to abbrigging of þe peyne of helle or elles to gete
 temporal riches. [244] Or elles þat god wol þe
 raþer enlumyne and lightene þe hert of þe synful
 man to haue repentaunce. [245] and eek þay auailen
 for to vsen a man to do goode werkes þat þe feend
 haue þe lasse power of his soule. [246] ¶ And þus þe
 curteys lord ihu crist ne wolde nouȝt no good werk
 be lost. For in som what it schal auaille. [247] But for als
 moche as þe goode werkes þat men don whil þay
 ben in good lif ben amortised by synne folwyng
 and eek sith þat alle the goode werkes þat men doon
 whil þay ben in dedly synne been outrely deede
 as for to haue þe lif perdurable. [248] wel may þat man
 þat no goode werkes werkip synge þilke newe freisch song.
 Iay tout perdu mouz temps et mouz labour [249] For
 certis synne byreueþ a man boþe goodnes of nature
 and eek þe goodnes of grace [250] ¶ For soþly
 þe grace of þe holy gost fareþ lik fyre þat may not
 ben ydel. For fuyr as it forletip his werk-
 yng it faileth anon ¶ And right so whan þe grace
 faileþ. [251] þan lesith þe synful man þe goodnes
 of glorie þat oonly is bylucht to goode men þat labouren
 and werken [252] ¶ wel may he be sory þanne þat
 oweth al his lif to god as longe as he hap lyued and
 eek as longe as he schal lyue. þat no goodnes ne hath
 to paye wip his dette to god to whom he oweth al his
 lif. [253] For truste wel he schal ȝure account as saith

braunce of þe passioun þat oure lord ihū crist suffred for
 vs in preching. [257] his werynesse in trauayling his tempt-
 acioun whan he fastid. his longe wakinges whan he
 prayde his teeres whan he wepte for pite of
 good peple [258] þe wo and þe schame and þe
 filthe þat men saide to him ofte foul spitting
 þat men spitten on his face. Of þe buffettis þat men
 gaf him of þe foule mowes and of þe re-
 proues þat men to him saiden [259] of þe nayles
 with whiche he was nayled to þe cros and of al þe
 remenaunt of his passioun þat he suffred for my synnes
 and no þing for his gilt [260] ¶ And ȝe schal vnder-
 stonde þat in mannes synne is euery maner ordre
 of ordinaunce turned vpsodoun. [261] ¶ For it is soþ
 þat god & resoun and sensualite and þe body of man
 be so ordeyned that euerich of þese .iiij.
 schulde haue lordschipe ouer [. . . [262] . . .
 *no gap in the MS.*] resoun and resoun ouer
 sensualite. and sensualite ouer þe body of man.
 [263] ¶ But soþly whan man synnep al þis ordre or
 ordinaunce is tord vpsodoun [264] and
 þanne for as moche as þe resoun of a man ne wol not be
 subiect ne obeissant to god þat is his lord by right þer-
 fore leith it þe lordschipe þat it schulde haue in
 sensualite and eek ouer þe body of man. [265] And
 why? For sensualite rebellith þanne agayns resoun. And
 by þat way leith resoun þe lordschipe ouer sensualite
 and ouer þe body. [266] For right as resoun is rebel to
 god? Right so is boþe sensualite rebel to resoun and
 þe body also. [267] And certis þis disordynaunce and
 þis rebelloun oure lord ihū crist bought vpon his
 precious body ful deere ¶ And herkeneth in which wise
 [268] ¶ For as moche as resoun is rebel to god? þer-
 fore is man worþy to haue sorwe and to be deed.
 [269] þis suffred oure lord ihū crist for man and after þat
 he was bytrayed of his disciple and destreyned and

word of ysaye ¶ He was woundid for
 oure mysdede and defouled by oure felonyes [282]
 ¶ Now sith ihū crist tok vpon him pilke
 payne of alle oure wikkednes: Mochil oughte synful
 men wepe and bywayle þat for his synnes schulde goddes
 sone of heuene al þis endure [283] ¶ The .vjt^e.
 þing þat ouȝte to moeue a man to contricioun is þe hope
 of þre þinges. þat is to sayn. forȝeuenes of synne
 and þe ȝifte of grace wel for to do. and þe glorie of
 heuene wiþ which god schal guerdoun man for his
 goode deedis [284] ¶ And for als moche as ihū crist
 ȝeueþ vs þese ȝiftes of his largesse and of his souerayn
 bounte: þerfore is he cleped. Ihesu nazarenus rex
 Iudeorum [285] ¶ Ihū is for to say saueour or sa-
 uacioun of whom me schal hope to haue forȝeuenes of
 synnes which þat is proprely sauacioun of synnes
 [286] ¶ And þerfore seyde þe aungel to Ioseph ¶ Thou
 clepe his name Ihesu þat schal saue his poeple of here
 synnes [287] ¶ And her of saith Seint petir ¶ Ther is
 noon oþer name vnder heuene þat is ȝeue to any man
 by which a man may be sauȝd. but oonly Ihesu [288]
 nazarenus is as moche to say as florischinge in
 which a man schal hope þat he þat ȝeueþ him remissioun
 of synnes schal ȝiue him grace wel wel to doo ¶ For
 in þe flour is hope of fruyt / in tyme comyng. And in
 forȝeuenes hope of grace wel to do [289] ¶ I
 was at þe dore of þin herte saip Ihesu and cleped for to
 entre. he þat openith to me. schal haue forȝeuenes of
 synne. [290] I wol entre into him by my grace and
 soupe with him by þe goode workes þat he schal doon
 whiche workes ben þe foode of god ¶ And he schal soupe
 wiþ me by þe grete ioye þat I schal ȝiue him [291]
 ¶ Thus schal man hope þat for his werkis of penaunce
 god schal ȝiue him his regne as he bihetith him in þe
 gospel

[292] Now schal man vnderstonde in what

maner schal be his contricioun ¶ I say it schal
 be vniuersal and total ¶ þis is to say. a man schal be
 verray repentaunt for alle his synnes þat he hap doon in
 delyt of his þought for delit is ful perilous [293] ¶ For þer
 ben tuo maners of consentynge [.
 no gap] of affeccoun whan a man is moeued
 to synne & delitith him longe for to þinke on
 þat synne. [294] and his resoun sparceyueth wel þat
 it is synne agayns þe lawe of god. & 3it his resoun
 refreyneþ not his foule delit or talent þough he seth wel
 apertly þat it is aȝenst/ þe reuerence of god al þough
 his resoun consente not to do þe synne in dede:
 [295] 3it sayn some doctours delyt þat
 duellith longe it is ful perilous al be it neuer so lite
 [296] ¶ And also a man schulde sorwe namely for al
 þat he hap desired agayn þe lawe of god wip
 þerfyt consentynge of his hert and of his resoun ¶ For þerof
 is no doute þat it is dedly synne [297] [.
 no gap] þat it nas first in mannes
 þought. & after þat in his delit/ and so forþ in to
 consentynge and in to dede [298] ¶ wherfore say I þat
 many men repente hem neuer ¹of suche þoughtes and
 delitis. no neuer schriuē hem of hit. but conly of þe
 dede of grete synnes outward [299] ¶ wherfore I say
 þat suche wickid delitis and wickid þouȝtes ben
 subtile biglours of hem þat schuln be dampned [300]
 ¶ Man our nax oughte to sorwe for his wicked

remanant of his oþer synnes! Nay. [304] And forþer
ouer contricioun schulde be woundes sorwful and an-
guisschous and þerfore ȝiueth him god plainly his
mercy ¶ And þerfore whan my soule was anguissheous
wipinne me! I hadde remembraunce of god þat
my prayer mighte come to him [305] ¶ And forþer ouer.
contricioun moste be continually and þat a man haue stede-
fast purpos to schryue him and for to amende him of
his lyf [306] ¶ For soþly whil contricioun lastith man
may euer hope of forȝeuenes and of þis comep
hate of synne þat destroyeth synne boþe in himself
and eek in oþer folk at his power [307] ¶ And þerfore
saith dauid. ȝe þat louen god! hatith wikkidnesse. For
trustip wel for to loue god. is for to loue þat he louep.
and hate þat he hatip

[308] ¶ The laste þing þat a man schuld vnderstonde in
contricioun is þis. wher of auailith contricioun ¶ I say
þat som tyme contricioun deliuereþ man fro synne
[309] of which þat dauid saith ¶ I say quod dauid.
þat is to say. I purposid fermely to schryue me and
þou lord relestedist my synne [310] ¶ And right so
as contricioun auailith nat wipoute sad purpos of
schrift if man haue oportunité! Right so. litil worth is
shrifte or satisfaccioun wipoute contricioun [311] ¶ And
more ouer contricioun destruyep þe prisoun of helle
and makip wayk and feble þe strengthes of þe
deueles and restorith þe ȝift of þe holy gost/ and
of alle vertues [312] and it clensith þe soule of
synnes and deliuereþ þe soule fro þe peynes of helle
and fro þe compaignie of þe deuel and fro þe seruage
of synne and restorith to alle goode espiritueles is
to þe compaignie & communicoun of holy chirche [313]
¶ And forþer ouer it makith him þat som tyme was
sone of Ire! sone of grace ¶ And alle þese þinges
he prouith by holy writte. [314] And þerfore he þat
wil sette his harte to þese þinges! he were ful

wys ¶ For soþe he scholde not þanne in al his lyf
 haue corrage to synne. but ȝiuen his body and al his herte
 to þe seruice of Ihū crist and þerof do him
 homage [315] ¶ For certis oure swete lord ihū crist
 hap spard vs so debonerly in oure folyes. þat if he ne
 hadde pite of mannes soule! sory songe mighte we alle
 synge. ¶ *Explicit prima pars Incipit secunda pars*
eiusdem

[No break in the MS.]

[316]

THe secounde partye of penitence is confessioun.
 þat is signe of contricioun [317] ¶ Now schul ȝe
 vnderstonde what is confessioun and wheþir
 it oughte needes be doon or noon. A whiche
 ben conuenable to verray confessioun

[318] ¶ First schalt þou vnderstonde þat confessioun is
 verrey schewyng of synnes to þe prest [319] þis is to
 sayn verray. For he moot schewe him of alle þe
 condiciouns þat ben longynge to his synne as ferforth as he
 can [320] al mot be sayd and nouȝt excused ne
 hyd ne forwrappid and nouȝt anaunte him of his goode
 werkis [321] ¶ And forþermore it is necessary to vnder-
 stonde whens þat synnes springe and how þay
 exersen. and whiche þer ben

[322] of þe springing of synnes as seint poul saip
 in his wise ¶ That is to sayn as by a man synne entred first



makid were in paradys and no þing' schame ne hadden
of her nakidnesse. [326] how þat þe serpent þat was
most wyly of alle oþer bestia þat god hadde makid
sayde to þe womman ¶ why comaundid god to ȝow
ȝe schulde nouȝt ete of euery tree in paradys [327] ¶ The
womman answerde ¶ Of þe fruyt quod sche of þe trees
in paradys we feede vs ¶ But soþly of þe fruyt of þe
tre þat is in þe myddil of paradis. god forbad vs
for to eten ne not touche it lest perauenture we schulde
¹deye [328] ¶ The serpent sayde to þe womman. Nay
nay. ȝe schal not drede of deth for soþe god wot þat
what day ȝe ete þerof ȝoure eyen schal open
and ȝe schul ben as goddis knowing' good and harm
[329] ¶ The womman saugh þe tree was good
to feedyng'. and fair to eyen and delitable to
sight. She tok' of þe fruyt of þe tree and eet it' and
ȝaf it to hir housbond And he eet it' ¶ And anon þe eyen of
hem boþe openeden [330] And whan þat þay knewe
þat þay were naked! þay sowede of fige leues in maner
of breches to hiden here membris [331] ¶ here may ȝe
see þat dedly synne hap first suggestioun of þe
feend as schewep here by þe neddir. and aftirward
þe delit' of þe fleisch as scheweth here by eua. and
after þat þe consentyng' of reson as schewith by
adam [332] ¶ For trustip wel þough so were þat þe
feend temptid oon. þat is to sayn þe fleisch
hadde delit' in þe beaute of þe fruyt defendid.
ȝit certes til þat reson þat is to say adam con-
sentid to þe etyng' of þe fruyt/. ȝit stood he in þestaat'
of Innocence [333] ¶ Of þilk' adam took' we þilke
synne original. for of him fleischly descendit' be we alle.
and engendrit of vile and corrupt' m[a]tiere [334] ¶ And
whan þe soule is put' in oure body right anon is con-
tract' original synne. [.]
.
. . . no gap] [335] and þerfore be we alle I-born sones of

wrappe and of dampnacioun perdurable if it nere baptisme
 þat we resceyuen which bynymeþ vs þe culpe ¶ But for-
 soþe þe peyne duellip wiþ vs as to temptacioun which
 peyne highte concupiscence [336] ¶ And þis concupiscence
 whan it is wrongfully disposed or ordeyned in man: hit
 makith him to coueyte couetise of fleisschly synne by sight
 of his eyzen as to erþely þinges. and eek coueityse of heigh-
 nesse as by pride of herte

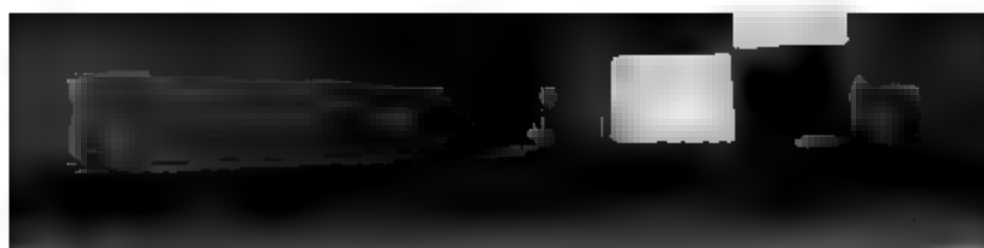
[337] Now as to speke of þe firste coueitise
 þat is concupiscence after þe lawe of oure membris
 þat is [.]
 [338] *no gap*] nouȝt
 obeissant to god þat is lord þerfore is fleisch to
 him disobeissant þurgh concupiscence which þat ȝit is
 clepid norissching of synne [. *no gap*]
 [339] ¶ Therefore al þe while þat a man haþ in him þe
 peyne of concupiscence it is impossible but he be
 tempted som tyme and moeued in his fleisch to synne /.
 [340] ¶ And þis may not faile as longe as he lyueþ
 ¶ hit may wel wexe feble and faille by vertu of baptisme
 and by þe grace of god þorugh penitence. [341] but
 fully schal it neuer ¹quenche þat he schal som
 tyme be moeued in himself but if he were al refreydit by
 siknes or by malice of sorserye or colde drinkes
 [342] ¶ For what saip seint poul ¶ The fleissch coueitith
 agayn þe spirit. and þe spirit agayn þe fleisch þay
 ben so contrarie and so strauen þat a man may nouȝt

no mete but herbes & water to his drink. ne non bed
but þe nakid erpe. For which his fleisch was as blak' as an
Ethiopen for hete and neigh destroyed for cold [346]
¶ 3it' sayde he þat þe brennyng' of lecchery boylid in al
his body [347] ¶ wherfore I wot' wel sicurly þat þay
be desceyued þat say þay ben not' temptid in
here body. [348] ¶ witnesse on seint Iame thapostil
þat saith. þat euery wight' is tempted in his oughne con-
cupiscence þat is to sayn þat euerych of vs hath matere
and occasioun to be tempted of þe norischyng' of synne
þat is in his body [349] ¶ And þerfore seint Iohan
þe Euangelist' saith ¶ If þat we sayn we be wipoute
synne: we deceyue oure silf' and troupe is nought' in vs

[350] ¶ Now schal 3e vnderstonde in what maner
þat synne waxiþ and encresceth in a man ¶ The firste
þing' is þilke norischyng' of synne of which I spak'
byforn þilke concupiscence. [351] And after
þat cometh þe Subieccioun of þe deuel. þis is to sayn
þe deneles bely with which he bloweþ in man þe fuyr
of fleisschly concupiscence [352] And after þat a man by-
think' him wheþir he wol don it/ or non. þilke þing'
to which he is tempted. [353] ¶ and þanne if þat a
man wipstonde and wayue þe firste entisynges of his
fleisshe and of þe feend it is no synne. and if
so be he do not' so: þanne fleeth he anon a flame
of delit/ [354] and þanne it is good to be war and kepe
him wel or ellis he wil falle anon in to consentyng' of
synne / and þanne wol he do it' if he may haue tyme
and space and place [355] ¶ And of þis matere saith Moyses by
þe deuel in þis manere ¶ þe feend saith. // I wol
chace and pursuwe þe man by wickid suggestiouns
and I wil hent' him by moeuyng' or steryng of
synne and I wil parte my prise or my pray by de-
liberacioun and my lust' schal be accomplisit in delit.
I wil drawe my sword in consentynge [356] ¶ For certes
right' as a sword departiþ a þing' in tuo parties right'

¶ And thus departed god fro man and þanne
wolden we have our hand in dede of synne. þus
saith he to us [357] For certes þanne is a man al
wroth at god and þus is synne accompid by tempti-
ng of þe devyl and by consentynge and þanne is þe
synne accompid.

[358] ¶ For þe synne is in two maneres. ouȝt
it to be called a deadly synne. Sothly whan man lovith
his body more than þat he shold love his creatour: þanne
is it a deadly synne. And venial synne is, if a man love
his body more than his soule [359] ¶ For soþe þe
devyl þat venial synne is ful perillous. For it amenisith
þe soule þat men schuld have to god more and more
[360] ¶ And þeif so that a man charge more himself with many
venial synnes. Oweȝt let if so be þat he som
tyme sholden have of hem by schrifte: þay may ful
easily be wroth in hem and þe love þat he hath to ihu
creaseth and in þe wroth shippith venial in to deadly
synne. ¶ For soþe þe more þat a man chargith his soule
with venial synnes þe more is he enclined to falle in
to deadly synne [361] ¶ And þe more let vs nouȝt be negligent to
delyver us of venial synnes ¶ For the prouerbe saith.
þat many synnes makith a gret [362] ¶ And herken
þis ensample ¶ A greet wawe of þe see cometh som tyme
with so gret a violence þat it drenchith þe schip.
and þe soule larneth don som tyme smale droppis
of synne þat comen þerby and larnen in to þe



¶ And þerfore þe loue of euery þing þere is not byset in god
ne doon principally for goddes sake / al þough a man
loue it lasse þan god. ȝit is it venial synne [367] ¹And
deedly synne whan þe loue of eny þing weyeth
in þe hert of a man as moche as þe loue of god or
more [368] ¶ Dedly synne is as saith seint austyn.
whan man torneth his hert from god which þat is
verray souerayn bounte þat may not chaunge and flitte. and
ȝiue his herte to a þing þat may chaunge and flitte.
[369] and certes þat is euery þing saue god of heuen
¶ For soþe if þat a man ȝiue his loue þe which that
he owip to god wip al his herte vnto a creature.
certes as moche of loue as he ȝiueþ to þilke
creature: so moche he reueth fro god. [370] and þer-
fore doth he synne. ¶ For he þat is dettour to god and
ȝeldeth not his dette þat is to sayn al þe
loue of his hert

[371] ¶ Now sippe man vnderstondith generally which
is venial synne: þanne is it couenable to telle specially
of synnes whiche þat many man perauenture ne
demith hem no synnes and schryueth him not of þe
same þinges and ȝit napeles þay ben synnes
[372] ¶ And soþly as clerkes writen þis is to say.
at euery tyme þat man etith or drinkith more þan
suffiseþ to þe sustenaunce of his body in certeyn he doþ
synne: [373] and eek whan he spekith more þan it
needith he doþ synne. and eek whan he herkeneth nouȝt be-
nignely þe pleynt of þe pore [374] eek whan
he is in hele of body and wil not faste whan oþer folk
fasten wipoute cause resonable. / eek whan he slepith
more þan needith or whan he comeþ by þilk enchesoun
to late to holy chirche or to oþer werkes of charite [375]
Eke whan he vseþ his wyf wipoute souerayn desir
of engendrure to thouour of god and for þentent
to ȝelde to his wyf þe dette of his body. [376] eek
whan he wil not visite þe sike and þe prisoner if he may

¶ eek' if he loue wyf or child or oþer worldly þing' more þan resoun requireth. eek' if he flatere or blaundishe more þan him oughte for eny necessite [377] ek' if a man menuse or wiþdrawe þe almesse of þe pouere eek' if he apparaylith his body more deliciously þan it nedith or ete it to hastily by licouresnes. [378] eek' if he talke of vanitees at chirche or at goddis seruice. or þat he be a talkere of ydil wordes of vanite or of vilonye / for he schal ȝelde of hem acount at þe day of doome. [379] eek' whan he heetith or assureth to do þinges þat he may nouȝt performe. eek' whan þat by lightnes or foly he myssaith or scornep his 'neighebor. [380] eek' whan he hap any wicked suspeccioun of þing' þat he wot of it no sothfastnesse. [381] þese þinges and mo wiþoute nombre ben synnes as saith seint' austyn

[382] ¶ Now schal men vnderstonde þat al be it so þat noon erþely man may eschiewe alle venial synnes! ȝit may he refreyne hem by þe brennyng' loue þat he hap to oure lord ihū crist and by prayeres and by confessioun and oþer goode werkes. so þat it schal but litil greue [383] ¶ For as saith seint' austyn ¶ ȝif a man loue god in such a maner þat al þat euer he doth is in þe loue of god or for þe loue of god verraily for he brennep in þe loue of god [384] ¶ loke how moche þat a drope of watir þat fallith in a furneys ful of fuyr annoyeth of greueth! So moche annoyep a venial synne vnto a man þat is perfyt in þe loue of ihū crist [385] ¶ Men may also refreyne venial synne vnto a man by receyuyng' of þe precious body of ihū crist / [386] by receyuyng' eek' of holy water. by almes dede. by general confessioun of Confiteor at masse and at complyn and blessing' of bischops and of prestes and by other goode werkis

[No break in the MS.]

[387] ¶ Now it is bihonely þing to telle whiche ben dedly synnes. þat is to sayn chineteyns of synnes. alle þay renne in oon loos. but in diuers maners now ben þay cleped chineteyns. For als moche as þay ben chief and springers of alle opere synnes [388] ¶ Of þe roote of þese seven synnes; þanne is pride þe general synne and roote of alle harmes ¶ For of þis roote springen general braunches. As Ire. Enuye. accidie or sleuthe. auarice or coueitise. to commune vnderstondynge. glotonye and leccherie [389] ¶ And euerich of þese synnes hath his braunches and his twigges as schal be declarid in here chapitres folwinge.

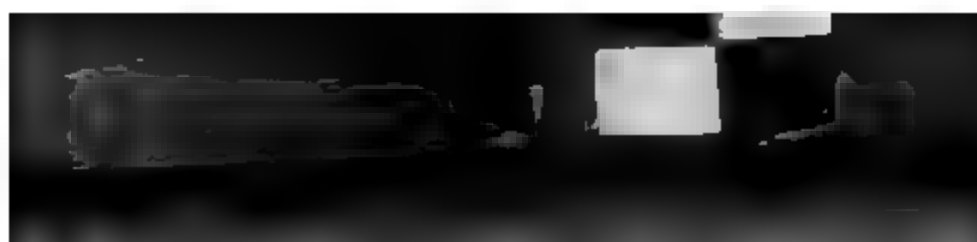
[*No break in the MS.*]

[390] and þough so be þat no man can telle vterly þe nombre of þe twigges and of þe harm þat comen of pride; ȝit wol I schewe a party of hem as ȝe schul vnderstonde [391] ¶ Ther is Inobedience. auauntyng. ypocrisie. despit. arragaunce. Imprudence. Swellyng of hert. Insolence. Elacioun. [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] pertinacie. veinglorie. and many anoper twigge þat I can not telle ne declare [392] Inobedient is he þat disobeieth for despyt to þe comaundementz of god and to his soueraigns. and to his gostly fader. [393] Auauntour is he þat bosteth of þe harm or of þe bounte þat he hap don [394] ¶ ypocrisy is þat 1hydeth to schewe him such as he is and schewen him such as he not is [395] ¶ Despitous is he þat hap desdayn of his neighebour þat is to say of his euen cristen or hap despit to doon þat him ought to doon [396] ¶ Arragaunt is he þat þinkeþ þat he hath pilke bountees in him þat he hap not or

And the first of which I have heard by desert, or
 else by fortune, but as for he is more. [397] ¶ Im-
 pudent is he that for his pride hath no shame of his
 folly. [398] ¶ Swelling of heart is when a man
 is proud of his name but he has done [399] ¶ Inso-
 lent is he that is proud in his judgement all other
 things he regardeth of his valour and of his cunning, & of
 his strength, and of his beauty [400] ¶ Elackown is when
 he may do a thing, he hath neither the felaw [401]
 ¶ Impudent is he that will not be I-taught, he under-
 standeth his own folly and by such wayeth troupe wityngs
 and rebukes as he [402] ¶ Continax is he that
 by his imagination and againe enyech auctorite or
 power of him that been his enemy [403] ¶ Pre-
 sumptuous is when a man undertaketh and empriseth for
 him selfe more than he can do, for he may not doo, and for
 is heget enyquyte ¶ Intemperance is, when men doon not
 as they ought to do, and wayteth to be
 reuerend [404] ¶ Pertinacie is, when man defendith
 his folly and trusteth to moche to his owne witte [405]
 ¶ Vayne glorie is, for to haue pomp and delit in
 temporal riches and glorifie him in worldly
 estate [406] ¶ Langelyng is when a man spekith to
 moche bifore folk & clappeth as a mille and taketh no
 keep what he saith

[407] and 3ir is per a prync spice of pride pat

mayeth first to be collett or he saluys of his



oper is wipoute. [410] of which sople þese for-
sayde þinges and mo þan I haue said aperteynen to
pride þat is in þe hert of a man. and þat oper spices
of pride ben wipoute [411] ¶ But natheles þat oon
of þise spices of pride is signe of þat oper. Right
as gay leuesselle at þe tauerne is signe of wyn
þat is in þe celer. [412] and þis is in many þinges
as in speche and countenance and in outrageous array of
cloþing [413] ¶ For certis if þer hadde be no synne
in cloþing: crist wolde not so soone haue notid and spoke of
þe cloþing of þilke riche man in þe gospel. [414] And
saith seint Gregorie þat precious cloþing is cou-
pable for derthe of it and for his schortnes. and
for his straungenes and disgisines. and for þe super-
fluite. or for þe inordinat skantnes of it/ [415]
Allas many man may sen as in oure dayes þe synful
costlewe array of cloþing [.]

[416]
. . . no gap] which þat makid is so dere to harm of þe
poeple. [417] not oonly þe cost of embrowdyng
þe guyse endentyng of barryng. / Swandyng. palyng.
or bendyng. and semblable wast of cloþ
in vanite [418] ¶ But þer is also costlewe furring in
here gownes so mochil pounsyng of chiseles to make
holes so moche daggyng of scheris. [419] for with
þe superfluite in lengþe of the forsaide gownes trayl-
inge in þe donge and in þe myre on hors and eek on
foote as wel of man as of woman þat al þilke
traylyng is verray as in effect/ wasted consumed þred-
bare and rotyn with donge rapur þan it is ȝeuen to
þe pore to gret damage of þe forsaide pore folk.
[420] and þat in sondry wise. þis is to sain þat þe
more þat cloþ is wastid þe more most it/ coste to
þe poeple for þe scarsenes [421] and forþermore
if it so be þat þay wolde ȝiue suche pounsed and

en for delyt^t þat þay ben so faire fat^t and costlewe [433]
 and also many a vicious knaue mayntened by
 cause of^t hem and in to curious harnoys as in sadelis and
 bridlis cropours and peytrelle couered with precious
 cloping^t and riche barres and plates of gold and of
 siluer [434] For whiche god saithe by zacharie þe
 prophete ¶ I wol confounde þe ryders of such horsis
 [435] ¶ These folk take litil reward of þe ryding^t of
 goddes sone of heuen and of his harneys whan he rode
 vpon an asse. and hadde noon oper harneys but
 þe cloping^t of his disciples newe. ¶ Ne rede I not
 þat euer he rode on oper beest [436] ¶ I speke þis
 for þe synne of superfluite and nouȝt for resonable
 honeste whan resoun it requirith [437] ¶ And forþer ouer
 certes pride is gretly notified in holdyng^t of gret meyne
 whan þay ben of litil profyt^t or of right no profyt^t.
 [438] and namely whan þat meyne is felenous and daun-
 gerous to þe poeple by hardynesse of lordschipe or by
 way of offices [439] Fo[r] certes suche lordes selle
 þanne here lordschipe to þe deuel of helle whan þay
 susteyne þe wickidnes of here meyne [440] or elles
 whan þese folk of lowe degre as is þilke þat holden
 hostilries and susteyne þe þaste of here hostilers
 and þat is in many maneres of disceytes.
 [441] þilke maner of folk ben þe flyes þat folwen
 þe hony or elles þe houndes ¹þat folwen þe carayn.
 suche forsayde folk / strangelen spirituelli here lordschipes
 [442] for whiche þus saith dauid þe prophete ¶ wikked
 deth moot come vpon such lordschipes. & god ȝeue þat
 þay moot descende in to helle a doun. For in
 here houses ben iniquites and schrewednesses and not god
 of heuen. [443] and certes but þay do amende-
 ment. right so as god ȝaf his benisoun to pharao by þe
 seruice of Iacob and to balan þe seruice of Ioseph.
 Right so god wil ȝeue his malisoun to such lordschipes
 as susteynen þe wikkednes of her seruauntes but þay

come to the table [444] ¶ Pride of þe table apperith
 ful after for som riþe men ben cleped to feste
 and þere folk ben put away and rebuked [445] ¶ Also
 in excess of divers metis and drinkis and namely
 of such maner of hake metis brennyng of
 wille furr and peynted and castelid wip papire and
 semblable wip . . . so þat it is abusious for to þinke [446]
 and eek in greet preciousnes of vessel & in curiousnes
 of vessel and of mynstralcy by þe whiche a man is stired þe
 more to delitis of luxurie [447] if so be that þay sette her
 herte þe lasse vpon oure lord ihū crist ¶ Certeyn it is a
 synne. and certainly þe delites mighte be so grete
 in þe cas þat men mighte lightly falle by hem in to
 dedly synne [448] ¶ þe espices þat souden of pride
 soþely whan þay souden of malice ymagined and auised.
 afor cast or elles of vsage ben dedly synnes it is
 no doute. [449] and whan þay souden by frete vn-
 auysed sodeinly and sodeinly wipdrawe agayn al be
 þay greuous synnes I gesee þay ben not
 dedly [450] Now mighte men axe wher-of pride
 souldeth and springeth ¶ I say som tyme it
 springith of þe goodes of nature / and som tyme of
 þe goodes of [. no gap]
 grace. [451] certes goodes of nature stonden
 ouper in goodes of body or goodes of soule [452]
 ¶ Certis þe goodes of body ben hele of body.

¶ Now as for to speke of goodes of nature: god wot þat som tyme we haue hem in nature as moche as to oure damage as to oure profit [458] ¶ As for to speke of hele of body. certes it passith ful lightly. and eek it is ful ofte enchesoun of þe siknesse of þe soule [.

. no gap in the MS.]

¶ And þerfore þe more þat oure body is hool þe more be we in peril to falle [459] ¶ Eke for to pride him in his strengþe of body it is a foly. for certes þe fleisch coueytith again þe spirit. and ay þe more strong þat þe fleisch is þe sorier may þe soule be / [460] and ouer al þis strengþe of body and worldly hardynes causeþ ful ofte many man to peril and mechaunce [461] Eek for to pride him of his gentrie is ful gret folye: For often tyme þe gentrie of þe body bynymeth þe gentry of þe soule ¶ And we ben alle of oon fader and of oon moder & alle we ben of oon nature roten and corrupt riche and pore [462] ¶ For soþe oon maner gentry is for to prayse þat apparilleþ mannes corrage with vertues and moralitees and makith him cristes child [463] ¶ For trustiþ wel ouer what man þat synne haþ maistry: he is verray cherl to synne

[464] ¶ Now ben þer general synnes of gentilesce as schewyng of vice & rybaudrie and seruage of synne. in word in werk and contenance [465] ¶ And vuinge vertu curtesie and clennes / and to be liberal þat is to sayn large by mesure. for þilke þat passith mesure is foly and synne [466] ¶ And anoper is to remembre him of bounte þat he of oper folk haþ receyued [467] ¶ Another is to be benigne to his goode subiectis ¶ wherfore as saip senek. ¶ Ther is no þing more couenable to a man of heigh estate þan debonaite and pite [468] ¶ And þerfore þise flies þat men clepen bees whan þay make here king: þay chesen oon þat haþ no pricke wher wiþ he may styng [469]

¶ Another is, a man to haue a noble herte & a diligent
 to attayne to hihe vertuous þinges [470] ¶ Certis
 also who þat prideth him in þe deedes of grace: is eek an
 outrageous fool ¶ For þulke giftes of gruce þat schulde
 haue t-turned him to goodnes and medicyne: torneth
 him to veynyn and to confusioun as saip seint gregory
 [471] ¶ Certis also, who-so pridith him in þe goodes of
 f rane he is a ful gret fool ¶ For som tyme is a man a
 gret lord by þe morwe þat is a caytif and a wrecche
 er it be night. [472] ¶ And som tyme þe riches of a man is
 cause of his deth. ¶ Som tyme þe delice is
 cause of his greuous maledye þurgh which he deieth
 [473] ¶ Certis þe commendacioun of þe poeple is som-
 tyme fal fals and ful brutal for to truste. þis day þay
 prayse: to morwe þay blame [474] ¶ God woot desir to
 haue commendacioun of þe poeple hap causid deth of
 many a leisy man [475] ¶ Now sith so is. þat 3e han herd and
 vnderstonde what is pride. And whiche ben þe spices of
 it and whens pride sourdeth and springeþ:

[No gap in the MS.]

[476] Now schul 3e vnderstonde. which is þe remedy

¶ Certis, to be humble. ¶ And þat is humble.



no man [480] ¶ The prid is. whan he ne rekkip nought pough a man holde him nouȝt worth ¶ The ferpe is whan he holdeþ him nought sory of his humiliacioun [481] ¶ Also þe humilite of mouth is in foure þinges. In attempre speche. and in humbles of speche. and he byknowith wip his owne mouth þat he is such as him þenkith þat he is in herte. Anoper is whan he praisith þe bounte of anoper man and no þing þerof amenusith [482] ¶ Humilite eek in werk is in foure maneres ¶ The first is whan he puttith oper men toforn him ¶ þe secounde is to chese þe lewedeþ place ouer al ¶ þe þrid is gladly to assente to good counseil [483] ¶ þe ferpe is gladly to stonde to thaward of his souereyns or of him þat is in heigher degre. certeyn þis is a gret werk of humilite

[No break in the MS.]

[484] ¶ De Inuidia. [in margin]

After pride now wol I speke of þe foule synne of Envy which þat is as by þe word of þe philosopre. sorwe of other mennes prosperite ¶ And after þe word of seint austyn. is it sorwe of oper mennes wale & ioye of oper mennes harm [485] ¶ This foule synne is platly agayns þe holy gost. al be it so þat euery synne is agayn the holy gost: ȝit natheles for as moche as bounte aperteyneth proprely to þe holy gost. and enuye proprely is malice: þerfore is it proprely agayns þe bounte of þe holy gost [486] ¶ Now haþ malice ¹tuo spices. þat is to sayn hardnes of hert in wickednes or ellis þe fleisch of man is blynd þat he considereth not þat he is in synne [. no gap] which is þe hardnes of the deuyl [487] ¶ That oper spice of enuye is. whan a man warieth troupe and wot þat it is troupe. and eek whan he warieth þe grace þat god haþ ȝeue to his

neighebor and al þis is by enuye [488] ¶ Cortes þan is enuye þe worste synne þat is ¶ For sothely alle oþer synnes ben somtyme oonly agains oon special vertu [489] ¶ But certes enuye is agayns alle vertues and agayns al goodnes. for it is sory of alle þe bountees of his neighebor ¶ And in þis maner it is diuers from alle þe synnes. [490] ¶ For wel vnneþe is þer any synne þat he ne hath som delit in himself sauf oonly enuye þat euer hath in it self anguisch and sorwe [491] ¶ The spices of enuye ben þese ¶ Ther is first sorwe of oþer mennes goodnes and of her prosperite. and prosperite is kyndely matier of ioye. þanne is enuye a synne agayns kynde [492] ¶ The secounde spice of enuye. is ioye of oþer mennes harm. and þat is proprely lik to the deuyl þat euer reioyeth him of mennes harm [493] ¶ Of þese tuo spices cometh bakbityng. and þis synne of bakbityng or detraccioun hath certein spices as þus ¶ Som man praiseth his neighebor by a wickid entent. [494] For he makith alway a wickid knotte atte last ende. alway he makith a but. at þe last ende þat is þing of more blame þan worth is al þe praysing [495] ¶ The secounde spice is þat if a man be good and doth or seiþ a þing to good entent. þe bakbiter wol torne al þilke goodnes vps-down to his schrewed entent. [496] þe þridde is to amenuse þe bounte of his neighe-

[500] agayns god is it. whan a man grucchith agayn
 pyne of helle or agayns pouerte. or of losse of catel.
 or agayn reyn or tempest¹ or elles grucchip þat schrewes
 han prosperite or ellis þat goode men han ad-
 uersite. [501] and alle þese þinges schulde men suffre
 patiently. for þay come by rightful iuggement and
 ordinaunce of god [502] ¶ Som tyme cometh grucching¹ of
 auarice as Iudas grucched agens þe Maudeleyn whan
 sche anoynted þe hed of oure lord ihū crist with hir
 precious oynement. [503] þis maner murmur is swich
 as man grucchith of goodnes þat himself
 doþ or þat oþer folk doon of here owne catel [504]
 ¶ Som tyme cometh murmur of pride. as whan Symon
 þe pharise grucchid agayn þe maudeleyn whan
 sche approchid to ihū crist and wepte at his feet for hir
 synnes. [505] And somtyme it souldith of
 enuye whan men discoueren a mannes harm þat was
 priue or bereþ him on hond þing þat is fals [506]
 ¶ Murmuryng eek is ofte among seruauntz þat grucchen
 whan here souerayns bidden hem to doon leefful þinges.
 [507] and for as moche as þay dar nouzt openly wipstonde
 the comaundementz of here souerayns: ȝit wol thay sayn
 harm and grucche and murmure priuely for verray
 despit / [508] whiche wordes men clepe þe deueles
 pater noster. þough so be þat þe deuel hadde
 neuer pater noster but þat lewed men calle it so
 [509] ¶ Som tyme it cometh of Ire of
 priue hate þat norischeth rancour in herte as
 I schal declare. [510] þanne cometh eek bitterness of
 herte. þorugh which bitterness euery good deede of his
 neighebores semeth to him bitter and vnsauery [511]
 ¶ But þanne cometh discord þat vnbyndeth alle maner
 of frendschipe. þanne cometh scornynge. of [.
 no gap] his neighe-
 bor al do he neuer so wel. [512] þanne cometh
 accusyng. as whan man seketh occasioun to annoyen his

neighebores which þat is lik þe craft of þe deuel
 þat waytith boþe night and day to accuse vs alle
 [513] ¶ þanne comen malignite þurgh which a man
 annoyeth his neighebor priuely if he may. [514] And if he
 not may algate his wikkid while schal nought wante
 as for to brenne his hous priuely or empoysone or aleen
 his bestis priuely and semblable þinges

[No break in the MS.]

[515] ¶ Remedium contra Inuidiam. [from the margin]

NOW wol I speke of þe remedies agayns þise foule
 þinges and þis foule synne of ennye ¶ First is þe loue
 of god principal and louynge of his neighebor as himself.
 ¶ Soþely þat oon ne may nought ben wipoute þat
 oper [516] ¶ And truste wel þat in þe name of þy
 neighebour þou schalt vnderstonde þe name of þy
 broþer. For alle we haue oon fader fleisschly and oon
 mooder þat is to sain adam and eua and eek oon fader
 spirituel & þat is god of heuen. [517] þy
 neghebor artow holden for to loue. [.]

to stur þat to toun lute to ennyoun of lift and l...



ment for if it were reson that man schulde hate his enemy For-soþe god nolde nouȝt receyue vs to his loue þat ben his enemys [524] ¶ Agains þre maner of wronges þat his enemy doþ to him he schal do þre þinges as þus. [525] agayns hate and rancour of herte he schal loue him in herte. Agayns chydyng and wicked wordes he schal pray for his enemye. agains wikked dede of his enemy he schal doon him bounte [526] ¶ For crist saith loueþ ȝoure enemyes and prayeþ for hem þat ȝow chacen and pursewen. and doþ bounte to hem þat ȝow haten. [. no gap.] [527] For sothely nature driueþ vs to loue oure frendes / and þar fay oure enemyes han more neede to loue þan oure frendes ¶ For sothely to hem þat more neede haue certis to hem schul men do goodnes. [528] And certis in þilke dede haue we by remembrance of þe loue of ihū crist þat dyed for his enemys [529] ¶ And in als moche as þilke loue is more greuous to parfome: so moche is þe more gret remedye & meryt ¶ And þerfore þe louyng of oure enemy hap confoundid the venym of þe deuel. [530] For right as þe deuel is confoundid by humilite: Right so is he woundid to þe doth by loue of oure enemy [531] ¶ Certes þanne is loue þe medicine þat castith out þe venym of enuye fro mannes hert. [532] the apices of þis part¹ schuln be more largely declared in here chapitres folwyng

[No break in the MS.]

¶ De Ira. [from the margin]

[533]

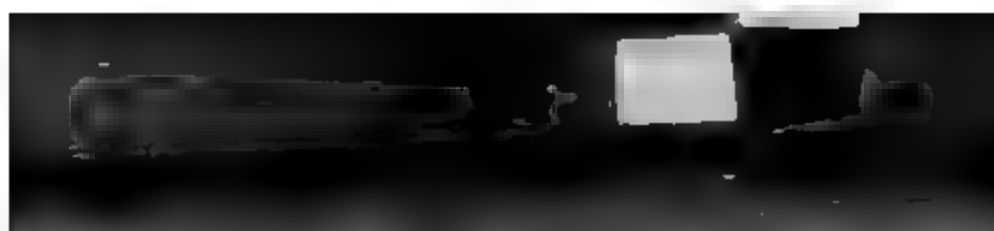
After enuye wol I descryuen þe synne of Ire. For soþely who so hap enuye vpon his neighbor: anon he wol comunly fynde him a matiere of wrappe in word or in dede agayns him to whom he hap envie. [534] and as wel comeþ Ire of pride

632 SIX-TEXT

638 GROUP I. § 2. PARSON'S TALE. Harleian 7334.

as of enuye ¶ For soþly he þat is proud or enuyous
is lightly wroth.

[535] þis synne of Ire after þe descryuyng of
seint austyn is wikked wille to ben auengid by
word or by dede [536] ¶ Ire afte þe philosofer is
þe feruent blood of man I-quiked in his hert þurgh
which he wolde harm to him þat him hatip [537] ¶ For
certes þe hert of man by eschawfyng and mornyng of
his blood waxith so trouble / þat he is out of alle
Iuggements of reson [538] ¶ But þe schal vnder-stande
þat ire is in tuo maneres. þat oon of hem is good.
þat oþer is wikke [539] ¶ The good Ire is by
ialousy of goodnesse þurgh which a man is wroþ
wip wikkidnes. and [. no gap] þer-
fore saith a wise man þat ire is bet þan play. [540]
This Ire is with deboneirete. and it is wroþ wip-
oute bitternes. not wroth with þe man: but
wroþ wip þe mys dedes of þe man as saip þe
prophet dauid ¶ *Inscimini & nolite peccare.* &c [541] ¶ Now
vnderstande þat wikked Ire is in tuo maneres



right so as fuyr is more mighty to destroye erþely þinges þan any oþer element: Right so Ire is mighty to destroye alle spiritual þinges [548] ¶ loke how þat fuyr of smale gledis þat ben almost dede vnder asshen wolden quiken agayn whan þay ben touched [.
no gap in the MS.] by pride þat is couered in mannes herte [549] ¶ For certes fuyr may nouȝt come out of no þing [. no gap] naturelly as fuyr is drawe out of flintes with steel [550] ¶ Right so as pride is often tyme mater of Ire: Right so is Rancour norice and keper of Ire [551] ¶ Ther is a maner tree as saip seint Iaydre . þat whan men maken fuyr of þilke tree and couer þe colis wip asshen: soþly þe fuyr of it wol lasten al a ȝer or more. [552] And right so fareþ it of rancour whan it oones is conceyued in þe hertis of som men: certein it wol lasten fro oon estren day vntil anoper ester day and more. [553] but certis þilke man is ful fer fro þe mercy of god al þilke while

[554] ¶ In þis forsaide deuceles fornays þer forgen þre schrewes. pride þat/ ay blowith & encresith þe fuyr by chidyng and wickid wordis [555] ¶ þanne stont enuye and blowith þe hote Iren vpon þe hert/ of man wip a paire of longe tonges of rancour [556] and þanne þe sinne of contumelie or strif and cheste and baterith and forgeth by vileyns repreuynges [557] ¶ Certes þis cursed synne annoyeth boþe to þe man himself and eek to his neighebor ¶ For soþely almost al þe harm þat eny man doth to his neighebour cometh þurgh wrapþe [558] ¶ For certis outrageous wrapþe doþ al þat euer þe deuyl him comaundeth. For he ne spareþ neȝþer crist ne his moodir. [559] and in his outrage anger and Ire. alas ful many oon at þat tyme felith in his herte ful wikkedly

daggid cloping to þe pore folk. it is not conuenient to were to the pore folk ne suffisaunt to beete here necessite to kepe hem fro þe desperance of þe firmament [422] ¶ vpon þat oþer syde to speke of þe horrible disordinat scantnes of cloping. as ben þese cuttid sloppis or Analets þat þurgh her schortnes ne couereth not þe schamful membre of man to wickid entent [423] Alas som men of hem schewen þe schap and þe boce of the horrible swollen membres þat semeth like to þe maledies of hirnias in þe wrapping of here hose / [424] and eek þe buttokes of hem þat faren as it were þe hinder part of a sche ape in þe fulle of þe moone [425] ¶ And more ouer þe wrecchid swollen membres þat þay schewe þurgh desgysyng in departyng of here hoses in whyt and reed seemith þat half þe schameful priue membres were flayn. [426] And if it so be þat þay departe here hosen in oþer colours. as it whit and blew. or whit and blak and reed and so forth. [427] þanne semith it 1as by variaunce of colour þat half þe party of his priuy membris ben corrupt by þe fuyr of seint antony or by cancre or by other such meschaunce [428] ¶ And jit of þe hynder partye of here buttokes it is ful horrible for to see. For certis in þat partie of here body þer as þay purgen her stynkyng ordure [429] þat foule party schewe þay to þe poeple proudly in despyt of honeste which honeste þat ihū crist and his frendes obserueden to schewen in his lif [430] ¶ Now as of þe outrageous array of women. God wot. þat þough þe visage of some of hem seme ful chaste and debonaire. 3it notifie þay in here array of attyre licorousnesse and pride [431] I say not þat honeste in cloping of man or womman is vncouenable ¶ But certis þe superfluite or disordinat skantnes of cloping is repreuable [432] ¶ Also þe synne of here ornament or of apparaile as in þinges þat aperteynen to rydyng as in to many delicat horses þat ben hold-



man [571] ¶ Manslaȝter in dede is in foure maneres
¶ That oon is by lawe. Right as a Iustice dampnith
him þat is coupable to þe deth. But let þe Iustice
be war þat he do it rightfully and þat he do it nought
for delit to spille blood: but for keping of rightwis-
nes [572] ¶ Anoper homicidy is doon for
necessite. as whan a man slep anoper him defendaunt.
and þat he may noon oþer wise eschape fro his
deth. [573] but certeynly if he may escape wip-
oute slaughter of his aduersarie and sleth him
he doth synne and he schal bere penaunce as for dedly
synne. [574] ¶ Eke if a man by caas or aduenture schete
an arwe or cast a stoon wip which he slep a man:
he is an homicide. [575] Eke if a womman by negligence
ouerlye hir child in hir sleping it is homicide and
deedly synne [576] ¶ Eke whan man distourbith con-
cepcioun of a child and makith a womman ouþer bareyn
by drinke of venenous herbis þurgh whiche sche may
nouȝt conceyue or sleth a child by drynkes. or
elles putteþ certeyn material þinges in secre
place to slee þe child. [577] or elles doþ vnkyndely
synne by which man or womman schedith here nature
in ma[n] or in place þer as þe child may nought be con-
ceyued. or ellis if a womma[n] haue conceyued and hurt
hirselt and sleth þe child ȝit is it homycidie
[578] ¶ What say we eek of wommen þat mordren
here children for drede of worldly schame. Certes an
horrible homicidy. [579] homicidy is eek if a man ap-
proche to a womman by desir of lecchery þurgh þe which þe
child is perischit or elles smitith a womman wytyngly
þurgh which sche sleeth hir child. alle þese ben homi-
cides [. no gap] [580] ¶ ȝit cometh þer of
Ire many mo synnes as wel in word as in werk &
þought. As he þat arettith vpon god and blamith god
of þing of which he is himself gulty or despisith
god and alle his halwes as doon þese cursed hasardours

in diuers cuntrees. [581] þis cursed synne don þay
whan þay felen in here herte ful wickidly of god and
his halwes [582] ¶ also whan þay treten vnreuerently
þe sacrament of þe auter. þilke synne is so gret
þat vnneþe may it be relested but þat þe mercy of
god passith alle his werkes. and is so gret and so
benigne [583] ¶ Thanne cometh of Ire attray anger
whan a man is scharply amonested in his schrifte to for-
lete synne: [584] þanne wol he be angry and
answere hokerly and angrily and defenden or excusen
his synne by vnstedfastnesse of his fleisch. or elles he
dede it to holde companye with his felawes. or
ellis he saith þe fend entused him. [585] or elles he
dide it for his ȝouthes. or ellis his complexioun is so
corrageous þat he may not forbere. or ellis it is
destony. as he saith. [.
. . . no gap] it cometh him of gentilesce of his auncetrie
and semblable þinges [586] ¶ Alle þese maner of folk
so wrappen hem in here synnes þat þay wol nought
deliuer hemself ¶ For soþely no wight þat excuseth
him wilfully of his synne may nought / be deliuered of his
synne til þat he mekely biknoweth his synne. [587]
¶ After þis þanne [. no gap] þat is expres
agayns þe comaundementz of god & þis bifallith often
of angir and of Ire [588] ¶ God saith. þou schalt not
take þe name of þy lord god in vayn or in ydil. ¶ Also
oure lord ihū crist saith by þe word of seint. *Mattheu*
[. no gap in the MS.] [589] ¶ Ne wol ȝe
not swere in alle manere. neither by
heuen for it is goddes trone. ne by þe eorþe for it is þe
benche of his feet. ne by ierusalem: for it is þe cite of
a gret king ne by þin heed: þou may nought
make an her whit ne blak. [590] but sayeth by ȝoure
word ȝe. ȝe. and nay. nay. and what it is more: it / is
of euil. þus saith ihū crist [591] ¶ For cristes sake swereth
not so synfully in dismembring of crist. for cristes sake. bi

soule. ¹herte. boones and body. For certes it semep þat 3e þenke þat cursed Iewes ne dismembrit nought ynough þe precious persone of crist. but 3e disembre him more. [592] and if so be þat þe lawe compelle 3ow to swere. þanne reule 3ow after þe lawe of god in 3oure swering as saip. *Ieremie capitulo .iiij^{to}* [. no gap in the MS.] ¶ Thou schalt kepe þre condiciouns. þou schalt swere in troupe in doom and in rightwisnes [593] þis is to sayn. þou schalt swere soth. For enery lesyng is agayns crist. for crist is verray troupe and þink wel þis þat euery gret swerer not compellid lawfully to swere þe wonder schal not departe fro his hous whil he veeth such vnleful sweringe [594] ¶ þou schalt eek swere in doom whan þou art constreigned by þy domesman to witnesse þe troupe. [595] eek þou schalt not swere for enuye ne for fauour ne for meede but / for rightwisnesse for declaring of it to worschip of god and helping of þin euen-cristen [596] and þerfore euery man þat takip goddes name in ydil or falsly swerip with his mouth or elles takip on him þe name of crist and callith himself a cristen man and lyueth agayn cristes lyuyng and his teching alle þay take cristes name in ydel [597] ¶ loke eek what saith seint peter *Actuum ca. .iiij^{to}* ¶ *Non est aliud nomen sub celo &c* ¶ Ther is noon oþer name saith seint peter vnder heuen ne 3euen to noon men in which þay mowe be saued þat is to sayn but in þe name of ihū crist [598] ¶ Tak heede eek how þe precious name of crist as saith seint poule ad philippenses .ij^o. *In nomine ihū &c* ¶ That in þe name of ihū euery kne of haenly creatures or erpely or of halle schulde bowe and [. no gap in the MS.] tremble to heeren it nempned. [599] ¶ Thanne semep it þat men þat sweren so horribly by his

638 SIX-TEXT

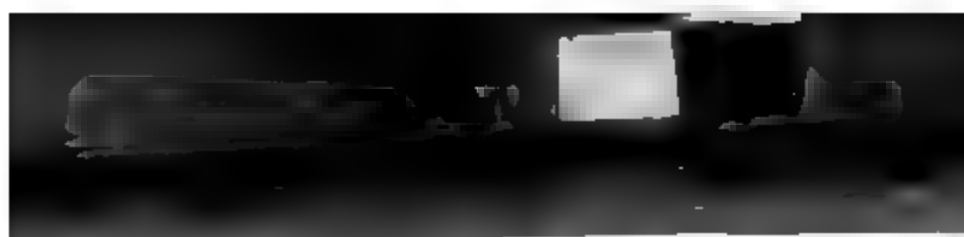
644 GROUP I. § 2. PARSON'S TALE. Harleian 7334.

blessed name þat þay despise it more bodyly
þan dede þe cursed Iewes or elles þe deuel þat
tremblith whan he heerith his name

[600] ¶ Now certis sith þat swering but it be
lawfully doon is so heihly defendid! moche wors is
forswering falsly and ȝit needeles

[601] what say we eek of hem þat deliten hem
in swering and holden it a gentry or manly dede / to
swere grete othis. and what of hem þat of verray
vsage / ne cessen nouȝt to swere grete othis al be not þe cause
worþ a strawe! certes þis is horrible synne [602]
¶ Sweryng sodeynly wipout auysement is eek a
synne [603] ¶ But let vs now go to pilke horrible sweryng
of adiuracioun and coniuraciouns as I doon þese false en-
chauntours or nigromanciens in bacines ful or
in a bright sward in a churche or in a fuyr or in þe schulder
bon of a scheep [604] ¶ I can not sayn but þat þay
doon curselly and dampnably agains þe
faith of holy chirche

[605] what say we of hem þat bilieuen on
dummes as by flight or by nois of briddes or of



and to damage of an oþer man [610] ¶ An oþer lesyng^r
for to saue his lif or his catel [. *no gap*] cometh
of delit/ for to lye. in which delit þay wol forge a long^r
tale and paynte it with alle circumstaunces wher
as þe ground of þe tale is fals [611] ¶ Som lesyng^r
cometh. For he wolde susteyne his word ¶ Som lesyng^r
cometh of rechelesnes wipoute auisement and sem-
blable þinges

[612] ¶ lat vs now touche þe vice of flaterie
which cometh not gladly but for drede or for coueitise
[613] ¶ Flaterie is generally wrongful preysing^r. Flater-
ers ben þe deueles norices þat norisschen his children
wip mylk of þe losingerie. [614] forsoþe Salamon saith
þat flaterie is worse þan detraccioun. for som tyme de-
traccioun makith an hawteyn man be þe more humble
for he dredith detraccioun ¶ But certes flaterie makith
a man to enhaunsen his hert/ and his countenaunce
[615] ¶ Flaterers ben þe deueles enchauntours. For
þay maken man to wene of himself þat he is like to þat he
is nouȝt like. [616] þay ben like Iudas þat bitraised
[. *no gap*] to selle him
to his enemy þat is þe deuel [617] ¶ Flaterers ben
þe deueles chapeleyns þat singen ay. placebo.
[618] I rekene flaterers in þe vices of Ire. For ofte
tyme if oon man be wroþ wip an oþer. þanne wol
he flaterie som man to mayntene him in his querel

[619] Speke we now of such cursyng^r as cometh
of Iroun hert malisoun generally may be said euery
maner power of harm. such ¹cursyng^r bireueþ man fro
þe regne of god as saip seint poule [620] ¶ And ofte
tyme such cursyng^r wrongfully retourneth agayn to
hym þat curseth as þat retourneth agayn to his
owne nest. [621] and ouer alle þinges men oughten
eschewe to cursen here oughne children and ȝiue to þe deuel
here engendrure as ferforth as in hem is Certis it is
gret peril and greþ synne

[622] ¶ let vs þanne speke of chydyng and reproche
whiche þat ben ful grete woundes in mannes hert [. . .

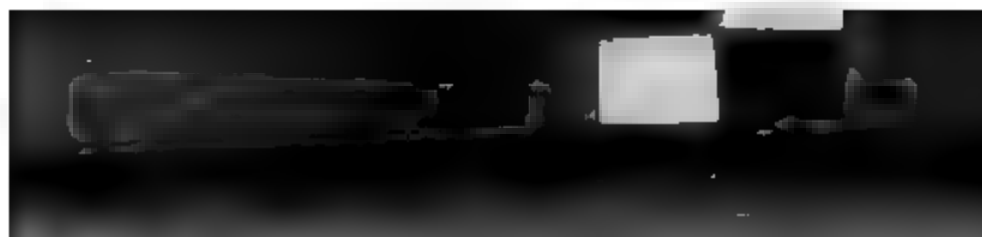
. *no gap in the MS.*

[623] ¶ For certis vnneþe may a man plainly ben
accordid with him þat him openly reuyled and
reproved and disclaundrid. þis is a ful grial synne
as crist saith in þe gospel. [624] and takith keep now
þat he þat reproueþ his neighebor. ouþer he reproueþ
him by som harm of peyne. [.

. *no gap in the MS.*

[625] þanne tornith þe reproef to ihū crist. For peyne is
sent by þe rightwis sonde of god and by his suffraunce
be it meselrie or many oþer maladies. [626] and if he
reproue him vncharitably as þou holour þou dronk-
clewe harlot and so forth þanne aperteyneth þat
to þe reioysing of þe deuil þat euer haþ ioye
þat men doon synne. [627] And certis chidyng may
nought come but out of a vileins herte ¶ For after þe
abundance of þe herte spekeþ þe mouth ful ofte.

[628]



And þerfore saith Salamon ¶ An hous þat is vncouered
& droppynge and a chidinge wyf ben like
[632] a man þat is in droppinge hous in many
partes þough he eschewe þe droppinge in oon place:
it droppeþ on him in anoper place ¶ So farith it by
a chyinge wyf: But sche chide him in oon place: sche
wol chide him in anoper [633] ¶ And þerfore better is
a morsel of bred with ioye þan an hous ful of
delices with chyinge seiþ Salamon [634] ¶ Saint
poul saith ¶ O ye women be ye sugettis to youre
housbondes as bihouep in god. And ye men loueth youre
wyues ad Colocenses iij^o.

[635] ¶ Afterward speke we of scornynge which is a
wikked þing and sinful and namely whan he scornith a man
for his goode workes [636] ¶ For certes suche scornes
faren lik þe foule toode þat may nought endure þe
soote smel of þe vine roote whan it
florischith. [637] þese scorners ben partyng felawes
wip þe deuel. For þay han ioye whan þe deuel
wynneth and sorwe whan he leseth
[638] ¶ Thay ben aduersaries of Ihū crist. for
þay haten þat he loueth þat is to saye sauacioun of soule

[639] Speke we now of wikked counseil ¶ For he þat
wickid counseil giueth. he is a traytour. for he deceyueþ
him þat trusteþ in him ¶ vt achitofel ad absolonem
¶ But napeles 3et is his wikkid counseil first aȝens him-
self [640] ¶ For as saith the wise man ¶ Euery fals
lyuyng haþ þis proprete in him self. þat he þat
wil annoyen anoper man: he annoyeth first himself.
[641] ¶ and men schul vnderstonde þat men schulde nought
take his counseil of fals folk ne of angry folk/ [. . .
. . . .] ne of folk þat louen specially to moche her
oughne profyt ne in to moche worldly. folk. namely in coun-
selyng of soules

[642] Now comeþ þe synne of hem þat sounen and
maken discord amonges folk which is a synne þat/

crist hateþ outrely. and no wonder is. for god died
for to make concord. [643] and more schame do þay to
crist þan dede þay þat him crucifiede ¶ For god
loueth bettre þat frendschipe be amonges folk ¶ þanne
he dide his owne body which þat/ he ȝaf for vnite.
þerfore ben þay likned to þe deuil þat euer ben
aboute to make discord

[644] ¶ Now comith þe sinne of double tonge. suche
as speken faire bifore folk and wikkedly bihynde or
elles þay make semblaunt as þough þay speke of
good entencioun or ellis in game & play and ȝit þay
speke in wikked entent

[645] ¶ Now comeþ þe wreying of counseil þurgh
which a man is famed ¶ Certes vnnethe may he restore þat
damage

[646] ¶ Now comeþ manace þat is an open foly. For
he þat ofte man[a]ceth he threttith more þan he may
parfourme ful ofte tyme

[647] ¶ Now comeþ Idel wordes þat is wipoute
profyt of him þat spekith þo wordes and eek of him
þat heareth þe wordes. or elles ydel wordes ben



þat trauailen in þe seruice of crist: Right so conforten
þe violent wordes and knakkis and iaperies hem þat
trauayle in þe seruice of þe deuyl [653] ¶ These ben
þe synnes þat/ comen of [. no gap] Ire
and of oþer synnes

[*No break in the MS.*]

[654] ¶ *Remedium contra Iram*

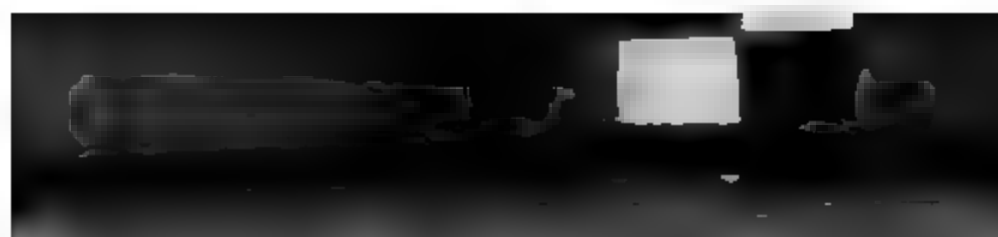
Remedye agayns ire is a vertue þat men
clepe mansuetude. þat is deboneirte. And
seek an oþer vertue þat men clepe pacience or
sufferaunce.

[655] debonairete wiþdrawith and restreigneth
þe stiringes and þe moeuynges of mannyngs corrage in his
herte in such manere þat þai ne skip not out by
anger ne by Ire [656] ¶ Suffraunce sufferith swetely al
þe annoyaunce and þe wronges þat men doon to man
outward [657] ¶ Seint Ierom saith þus of debonairete.
þat it doþ noon harm to no wight ne saith ne for noon
harm þat men doon ne sayn. he ne eschaufith nought
agayns his resoun [658] ¶ This vertu comiþ som tyme of
nature ¶ For as saith þe philosopher man is a quik
þing by nature and trefable to goodnesse
¶ But whan debonairete is enformed of grace: þan is
it þe more worþ

[659] ¶ Pacience þat is an oþer remedie. agayns Ire
is a vertu þat sufferith swetely euery mannes goodnes
as is not wroþ for noon harm þat is doon to him.
[660] þe philosopher saith þat pacience is þilke
vertue þat sufferith deboneirly alle þe outrages of
aduerseite and euery wickid word [661] ¶ This vertue
makith a man lik to god and makith him goddes
oughne dere child as saith crist ¶ þis vertu destroyeth
þin enemy and þerfore saith þe wise man ¶ If þou
wolt venquish þin enemy lerne to suffre [662] ¶ And
þou schalt vnderstonde þat man sufferith foure maners

of greuaunces in outward þinges. agains whiche
he moot haue foure maners of pacience

[663] ¶ The firste greuaunce is of wicked wordes.
þilke suffred Ihū crist wipoute grucching ful
patiently whan þe iewes despised him and reponed him
ful ofte. [664] suffre þou þerfore patiently ¶ For þe
wise man saiþ ¶ If þou striue with a fool. þough
þe fool be wroþ or þough he laughhe algate
þou schalt haue no rest [665] ¶ That oper greuaunce
outward is to haue damage of þi catel: þer agayn
suffred crist ful patiently whan he was despoylid of al
þat he had in his lif and þat nas but his cloþis
[666] ¶ The þridde greuaunce is. a man to haue harm in
his body. þat suffred crist ful patiently in al his
passioun [667] ¶ The ferþe greuaunce is in outrageous
labour in werkis wherfore I say þat folk þat
maken here seruauþt; to trauaile to greuously or out of
tyme as on haly dayes. soþely þay doon greet synne
[668] ¶ Here against suffred crist ful patiently and
taughte vs pacience whan he bar vpon his blisful
schuller þe croys vpon which he schulle suffre



SIX-TEXT 645
GROUP I. § 2. PARSON'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 651

saist^t soth. haue þou þe ȝerde my deere sone and
correcte me for myn impacience. [674] Of pacience cometh
obedienc. þurgh which a man is obedient^t to crist/ and
to alle hem to which him oughte to be obedient^t in crist.
[675] and vnderstonde wel þat^t obedienc is parfyt.
whan a man doþ gladly & hastily with good
herte outrely al þat^t he scholde do [676] ¶ Obedienc is
generally to parforme þe doctrine of god and
of his soueraignes to whiche him oughte to ben obeissant^t
in alle rightwisnes.

[No break in the MS.]

[677]

After þe synne of enuye and Ire. now wol I
speke of [. . . no gap] accidie. For enuye
blendith þe hert of a man and Ire troublith
a man and accidie makith him heuy. þoughtful. and
wrawe [678] ¶ Enuye and Ire maken bitternes in herte.
which bitternesse is mooder of accidie and bynimit^t
þe lous of alle goodnes. þanne is accidie þe
anguische of trouble hert^t and seint^t augustyn saith
[. . . no gap] [679] ¶ Certes
þis is a dampnable synne. For it^t doþ wrong^t to Ihu
crist^t in as moche as it bynymeth þe seruice þat^t we
ought^t to do to crist^t wiþ alle diligence as saith Salomon
[680] ¶ But^t accidie doþ noon such diligence. he doþ
alle þing^t wiþ anoy and with drawenes. slaknes
and excusacioun. and with ydelnes & vnlust^t for
which þe book^t saith ¶ Accursed be he þat^t doþ þe
seruice of god negligently [681] [. . . no gap]
enemy to euery astat^t of man ¶ For certes þestat^t of
[. . . [682] . . . no gap in the MS.]
Innocence. as was þestat^t of adam bifore þat^t he fel in to
synne in which estate he is holden to worche as in
heryng^t and honouryng^t of god [683] ¶ Anoper astat^t
is þe state of sinful man. in which estate. men ben holden

to labore in praying to god for amendement of her synnes. and þat he wolde graunte hem to rise of here synnes [684] ¶ Anoper estant is pestate of which he is holde to werkis of penitence and certes to alle þese þinges is accidie enuye contrarie for it loueþ no busynes at al [685] ¶ Now certis þis soule synne accidie is eek a ful gret enemy to þe lilede of þe body For it hath no pæueaunce azens temporel necessite. for it forslowthith and forsluggith and destroyeth alle goodes temporels by rechelesnes

[686] ¶ The ferþe þing is þat accidie is like hem þat ben in þe peyne of helle by cause of her slouþe and of her leuynes For þay þat ben dampned ben so bounde þat þay may nought wel do ne wel þenke [687] ¶ Of accidie cometh first þat a man is annoyed and encombrid for to do eny goodnes. and makith that god haþ abhominacioun of such accidie as saith seint Iohan.

[688] ¶ Now comeþ slouþe þat wol suffre noon hardnes to no penaunce For solely slouþe is so



.
.
. *no gap*] seiþ seynt gregory

[693] ¶ Now comeþ wanhope þat is despair of þe
mercy of god þat comeþ som tyme of to moche out-
rageous sorwe ¹and som tyme of to moche drede ymagyn-
ynge þat he hap do so moche synne þat it wil
not auaile him þough he wolde repent him and
forsake synne. [694] þurgh which despair or drede
he abundith al his herte to alle maner synne as seith
seint augustin. [695] whiche dampnable synne if þat
it continue vnto his lyues ende it is cleped synnyng of þe
holy gost. [696] This horrible synne is so perilous.
þat he þat is despaired þer is no felonye ne no synne
þat he doutith for to do. as schewed wel by Iudas.
[697] Certes aboue alle synnes. þan is þis synne
most displeant to crist and most aduersarie [698]
sothely he þat despisith him is like þe coward
campion recreaunt þat seith recreaunt wipoute neede.
allas allas needeles is he recreaunt
and needeles despaired [699] ¶ Certes þe mercy of god is
euer redy to þe penitent and is aboue alle his werkes.
[700] allas can not a man byþenk him on þe gospel
of seint luk/ wher as crist saith þat as wel schal
þer be ioye in heuen vpon a synful man þat doþ
penitence as vpon nynety and nyne þat ben rightful men þat
[. *no gap*] needen no penitence
[701] ¶ I like forþer in þe same gospel þe ioye and þe
fest of þe goode man þat had lost his sone. whan
þe sone with repentaunce was torned to his fader
[702] ¶ Can not þay remembre eek þat as seiþ
seint luk xxij°. how þat þe þef þat was hangid
biside ihū crist sayde ¶ lord remembre of me whan
þou comest in to þy regne [703] ¶ Forsope saith
crist. to day þou schalt be wip me in
paradis [704] ¶ Certis þer is noon so horrible synne of

man þat it may in his lif be destroyed with penitence
 þorugh vertu of passioun of þe deth of crist
 [705] ¶ Allas what needith it man þinne to be despaired
 sith þat his mercy is so redy and large. sake and haue
 [706] ¶ Thanue cometh sompnoient þat is sluggish
 slumbring which makith a man ben heuy and dul in
 body and in soule. and þis synne cometh of slouþe
 [707] and certes þe tyme þat by way of resoun man
 schuld nout slepe þat is by þe morwe but if þer were
 cause resonable [708] For soþely þe morwe tyde is
 most couenable to a man to say his prayers and for
 to þenk vpon his god and to honoure god and to
 geue almes to þe pore þat first cometh in þe name
 of crist [709] ¶ lo what saith Salamon. ¶ who-so wol
 by þe morwe arise and seeke me schal fynde
 [710] ¶ þan cometh negligence that/
 rekkith of no þing and how þat ignorance be
 moder of alle harm. Certis necgligence is þe norice
 [711] ¶ Negligence doþ no force whan he schal doon
 a þing whether he doo it wel or baddely

¶ Of þe remedy of þese two synnes as saith

[717] ¶ Certes þanne semeth it þat þay schal be tormentid
wip þe deuel in helle but if þay don penitence

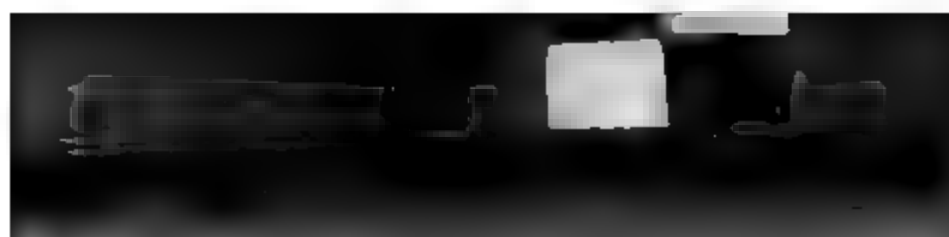
[718] ¶ þanne comith þe synne þat men clepe
tarditas. as whan a man is so latrede or tarying er
he wil torne to god. and certis þat is a gret foly.
he is like him þat fallith in to þe dicke and wol not
arise / [719] And þis vice cometh of a fals hope þat
he þinkith he schal lyue longe. but þat hope
fayleþ ful ofte

[720] ¶ þanne comith laches. þat is he when he
bigynneth any good werk anoon he wol forlete it and
stynthe as doon þay þat han eny wight to gouerne.
and ne take of hem no more keep anoon as þay fynde
eny contrarie or eny anoy [721] ¶ þese ben þe newe
schepherdes þat leten her schep wityngely go renne to
þe wolf þat is in þe breres or don no force of her oughne
gouernaunce. [722] Of þis cometh pouert and destruccioun
boþe of spirituel and of temperel þinges ¶ Thanne cometh
a maner of coldenesse þat freseþ al þe hert of man
[723] þanne cometh vndeocioun þurgh which a man is
so blunt & as saith seint Bernard he hap such a langour in
soule þat he may neyþeir rede ne synge in holy chirche ne
heere ne þinke ondeocioun in holy chirche ne trauayle with
his hondes in no good werk þat nys þo him vnsauory
and al [724] þanne waxith he slow and
alombry and soone wol he be wroþ and soone is enclined
to hate and to enuye [725] ¶ þanne comith þe synne of
worldly sorwe such as is clepid tristicia þat sleth
man as saith seint poule [726] ¶ For certis such sorwe
werkith to þe deth of þe soule. & of þe body also.
For þer of cometh þat a man is anoyed of his oughne lif.
[727] which sorwe schorteth ful ofte þe lif of a
man or þat his tyme is come by way of kynde

[No break in the MS.]

[728] ¶ Agains þis horrible 'synne of accidie and þe braunches of þe same þer is a vertu þat is cleped fortitudo or strengþe þat is affeccoun þurgh which a man despiseth alle noyous þinges [729] ¶ This vertu is so mighty & so vigorous þat it dar wipstonde mighty and wisely kepe himself from perils þat ben wicked and wrastil agains þe assautes of þe denel. [730] For it enhaunsith and enforceþ þe soule. Right as accidie abateth it and makith it feble. For þis fortitudo may endure by long sufferance þe trauailes þat ben conuenables

[731] ¶ This vertu hap many spices. þe first is cleped magnanimite þat is to sayn gret corrage. For certis þer bihoueþ gret corrage agains accidie lest þat it ne swolwe not þe soule by þe synne of sorwe or destroye it by wanhope [732] ¶ This vertu makith folk vndertake harde þinges and greuous þinges by his owne wille willfully and resonably. [733] and for als moche as þe denel fighteth agaynst a man more by queyntise and by sleight þan by strengþe! þerfore many a man schal azeinstonde him by witte. and by resoun and by discrecioun. [734] Thanne is þer þe vertu of faith and hope in god and in his seintes to eschew. and to acomplise þe goode werkes in þe whiche he purposith ferinely to continue. [735] thanne comeþ seurte or sikernes and þat is whan a man doutith no trauaile in tyme comyng of good werk þat a man hap bygonne [736] ¶ þanne comeþ magnificence þat is to say whan a man doth and performith grete werkes of goodnesse þat he hath bygonne. and þat is þende why þat men schulden do goode werkes. for in þe accomplising of grete goode werkes liþ þe grete guerdoun. [737] þanne is þer constaunce þat is stablenes of corrage and þis schulde ben in herte by stedefast faip. and in mouthe. and in



beryng'. and in cheer and in deede. [738] eek' þer ben
mo special remedies agayns accidia, in dyuers werkis
and in consideracioun of þe peyne of helle and of þe
ioye of heuen and in þe trust of þe hyhe grace of þe holy
goost. þat wil ȝeue him might to parforme his good
entent.

[*No break in the MS.*]

[739] De Auaricia [*from margin*]

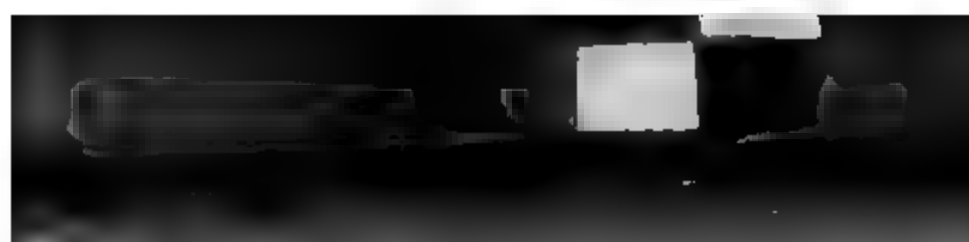
After accidia: I wil speke of auarice and of
coueytise. Of whiche synnes For sothely whan
saith sein poule þat þe roote of alle euyles &
harmes is coueytise/ [740] and þat þe hert of
man is confoundid in it self and troublid and þat þe
soule hap lost þe comfort of god. þanne seekith he an
ydel solas of worldly þinges.

[741] ¶ Auarice after þe descripcioun of seint austyn.
is a likerouanes in hert to haue erpely þinges
[742] ¶ Some oþer folk sayn þat auarice is for to
purchase many erpely þinges and no þing ȝeue
to hem þat han neede [743] ¶ And vnderstonde þat
auarice ne stont not oonly in lond ne in catel: But som
tyme in science and in glorie and eny maner
outrageous þinges is auarice [744] ¶ And
þe difference bytwixe auarice and coueytise is þis.
Coueytise is for to coueyte suche þinges as þou
hast not [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] [745] ¶ And
auarice is a synne þat is ful dampnable. For al holy
writ curseth it and spekith agayn þat vice. for it dop
wrong to Ihu crist. [746] For it bireueth him þe loue
þat men to him owen and turnith it bakward agains
al resoun. [747] and makith þat þe auarous man
hath more hope in his catel þan in ihu crist. and
[.
. *no gap in the MS.*] [748] þerfore saith

man þat is an ydolater. þat an auerous man is
þe þat is an ydolater

[751] " what difference is þer bitwen an ydolater and
an auerous man. þat þat an ydolater þer auerous
þat is an auerous

[752] " and þere þe synne of mawmetrie is
þe man þat þat is defendith in þe ten comaunde-
ments as þat wites in exodo capitulo [751] þou
shalt love me as false godes bifore me. ne þou shalt make
to the no grune þing. thus is he an auerous man þat
þat is his god to form god " And an ydolater [752] þurgh
his cruel synne of auerice and coneytise comen þese
herte laches þurgh whiche thay ben distreyned
by tallages custumes and cariages more þan here
diete of resoun is. and elles take þay of here bonde
men amerciments whiche mighte more reasonably ben
cullid extorciouns þan mercymentis. [753] of whiche
mercymenis and raunsuynge of bonde men some
lordes stywarthes seyn þat it is rightful. For as moche as
a lord þat is toward þat þat it is his lord



seip Seneca. ¶ Thi prudence schulde liue benignely wip
þi þrallis [760] þilke þat þay clepe thralles
ben goddes poeple. For humble folk ben cristes frendes
þay ben contubernially wip þe lord

[761] ¶ Thank' eek as of such seed as cherles
springen. of such seed springe lordes. as wel may
þe cherl be saued as þe lord. [762] The same deth þat
takith þe cherl [.
. no gap in the MS.] as þou woldist
þi lord dide wip þe if þou were in his plyt.
[763] Euery sinful man is a cherl as to synne ¶ I rede
þe certes þat þou lord werke in such a wise wip
þy cherles þat þay raper loue þe þan drede þe. [764]
I wot wel þer is degre aboue degre as resoun
is and skil þat men don her deuoir þer as it is dewe.
¶ But certes extorciouns and despit of oure vndirlinges is
dampnable

[765] ¶ And forþermore vnderstonde wel þat
conquerours or tyrauntes maken ful ofte þralles of
hem þat born ben of als royal blood as ben þay þat
hem conqueren. [766] þis name of cherldom was
neuer erst' couth til noe sayde þat his sone
chanaan schulde be þral of his breþeren for his synne
[767] ¶ what say we þanne of hem þat pylen and doon
extorciouns to holy chirche ¶ Certis the swerdes þat
men ȝeuen first to a knight whan he is newe dubbyd
signifieth faith and þat he schulde defende holy chirche
[.
. no gap] [768] and as seith seint' austin. Thay ben
þe deuiles wolues þat stranglen þe scheep of ihū
crist. and doon wors þan wolues. [769] for soþely
whan þe wulf hap ful his wombe he stintith to
strangle scheep. but soþly þe pilours and þe destroy-
ers of þe goodes of holy chirche ne doon nouȝt so. For þai
etynte neuer to pile. [770] ¶ Now as I haue sayd. sith so
is. þat synne was first' cause of þraldom. þanne is it

þus. þat ilke tyme þat al þis world was in synne.
 þanne was al þis world in þraldom and in subieccioun
 [771] But certis sith þe tyme of grace com: God
 ordeyned þat somme folk schulde be more heigh in estaate
 and in degre and somme folkes more lowe and þat
 euerich schulde be serued in here estate and in degre
 [772] ¶ And þerfore in somme contrees þere þay ben
 thralles whan þay han turned hem to þe faith: þay make
 here þralles free out of thraldom ¶ And þerfor certis
 þe lord oweth to his man þat þe man oweth to
 þe lord. [773] ¶ The pope callith himself seruaunt
 of seruaunts of god ¶ But for as moche as þe staat of
 holy chirche [. no gap] to þe commune
 profit might nought haue ben kepte ne pees¹ ne reste in
 erthe. but if god had ordeyned som man of
 heiher degre and some men of lower: [774] þerfore was
 soueraignte ordeyned to kepe and to mayntene and de-
 fende her vnderlynges or her subiectis in resoun as fer-
 forth as it lith in her power and not to destroye
 ne confounde hem [775] ¶ wherfore I say þat þilke lordes
 þat be like wolues þat deuouren þe possessioun of
 þe catel of pore folk wrongfully wipoute mercy or
 measure: [776] þay schul receyue by þe same mesure
 þat þay han mesured to pouer folk þe mercy of ihu
 crist but if it be amendid [777] ¶ Now cometh deceipt
 bitwixe marchaunt and marchaunt. and þou schalt vnder-
 stonde þat marchaundise is in many maneres. þat oon
 is bodily. and þat oþer is gostly. þat oon is honest
 and leful. and þat oþer is dishonest & vuleful
 [778] ¶ Of þilke bodily marchaundise þat is honest and
 leful is þis. þat þer as god hap ordeyned þat a
 regne or a cuntre is suffisaunt to himself. þanne is it
 honest and leful þat of þe abundaunce of þis contre
 þe men helpe anoþer cuntre þat is more needy
 [779] ¶ And þerfore þer moote be marchauntz to
 bringe fro þat oon cuntre to þat oþer her march-



auudise [780] ¶ That oper marchaundise þat men
hauntyn with fraude and treccherie and deceipt/ with
lesynges and fals othis is cursed and dampnable
[781] ¶ Espirituel marchaundise is proprely symonie
þat is ententyf desire to boye þing/ espirituel þat is
þing þat apperteyneth to þe seintuarie of god and to
þe cure of þe soule [782] þis desir is if so be þat a
man do his diligence to parforme it. al be it þat his
desir take noon effect. ȝit is it/ to him a dedly
synne. and if he be ordrid he is irregular [783] ¶ Certis
Symonye is cleped of Symon Magus þat wolde han
bought for temporel catel þe ȝifte þat god had ȝiuen
by þe holy gost to seint petir and to papostlis
[784] ¶ And þerfor vnderstonde þat boþe he þat
sellith and he þat bieth þinges espiritueles ben
cleped Symonials be it by catel be it by procurement
or by fleishly prayere of his frendes eiper fleshly frendes
or spiritual frendes [785] ¶ Fleishly in tuo maneres
as by kynrede or oper frendes ¶ Sothely if þay pray
for him. it is not worth [. no gap] if he
take þe benefice it is Symonie. and if he be worthy & able.
it is non [786] ¶ That oper is whan man or
womman prayen for folk to auance hem oonly for
wikkid fleishly affeccoun þat þay haue vnto þe persone
and þat is ful Symonye. [787] but certis in seruice
[. no gap]
moot he be honest and ellis not. and eek þat ȝit be
withoute bargaynyng and þat þe persone be able
[788] ¶ For as saith seint Damase ¶ Alle þe synnes of þis
world at þe reward of þis synne is a þing of nought.
For it is þe gretteste synne þat may be after þe synne
of lucifer and antecrist [789] ¶ For by þis synne god
forlesith þe chirche and þe soule þat he bouȝt wip
his precious blood by hem þat ȝeuen churche to hem
þat ben not digne [790] ¶ For þay putten in þeues þat

stelen þe soules of ihū crist and destroyen patri-
 moygne. [791] by suche vndigne prestis and curates.
 han lewed men þe lasse reuerence of þe sacrament/ of
 holy chirche and suche zeueres of chirches putten out
 þe children of crist. and putten in to þe chirche þe
 deuiles onghne sone. [792] þay sellen soules
 þat lambes schulde kepe to þe wolf þat stranglith
 hem. And þerfore schul þay neuer haue part
 of þe pasture of lambes þat is þe blisse of
 heuen [793] ¶ Now cometh hasardrie wiþ his appur-
 tenaunce. as tables. and raffles. of whiche cometh deceipt.
 fals othis. chidynges and alle raueynes. blasphemynge.
 and reueyinge of god and hate of his neighbors. wast
 of goodes out of tyme. and som tyme man-
 slaughter. [794] ¶ Certes hasardours ne mowe not be
 wipoute gret synne whil þay haunte þat craft [795]
 ¶ Of auarice cometh eek lesynges. þeste and fals witnesse and
 falsopes ¶ And þe schul vndirstonde þat þese ben grete synnes
 and expresse agains þe comaundementz of god as I haue
 sayd [796] ¶ Fals witnesse is in word and eek in dede.
 In a word. for to lere. þis word. þis. (see.)

ynge of holy þinges. or of þing^s sacred of crist ¶ Sacrilage is
in tuo¹ maneres þat^o oon is by resoun of holy place as chirches
or chirchshawes. [802] For whiche enery vileins synne þat^o
men doon in suche places may be clepid sacrilege or
enery violence in semblable place ¶ þat^o oþer maner is. as þo
þat wipdrawen falsly þe rightes þat^o longen to holy
chirche [803] ¶ [. . . no gap] and generally sacrilege
is to reue holy þing^s fro holy place. and vnholly
þing^s out of holy place. or holy thing^s out of
holy place

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Remedium contra Auariciam [from margin]
[804]
Now schul þe vnderstonde þat^o þe releuyng^e of
auarice is misericorde and pite largely taken.
And men might axen why þat^o misericord and pite
is relieuyng^e of auarice. [805] ¶ Certes þe auaricious
man schewith no pite ne misericorde to þe needeful
man. For he delitith him in kepyng^e of his tresor
and nougt^o in þe rescowyng^e ne relieuyng^e of his euen-
cristen. & þefore speke I first^o of misericord
[806] ¶ Thanne is misericord as saith þe philosopher
a vertu. by which þe corrage of a man is stired by þe
myseise of him þat^o is myseyed. [807] vpon which
misericorde folwith in parformyng^e of chariteable
werkis of misericord. [808] ¶ And certes þese
moeuen men to þe misericord of ihū crist þat^o ȝaf
himself^o for oure gult^o. and suffred deþ for misericord
and forȝaf vs oure original synne [809] and þer by
releasid vs fro peyne of helle and amenaid þe
peynes of purgatorie by penitence and ȝeueþ grace
wel to do and at þe laste þe ioye of heuen [810] ¶ The
spices of misericorde ben for to loue and for to
ȝiue. and eek^o for to forȝiue and for to relesee and for to haue
pite in herte and compassioun of þe meschief^o of his

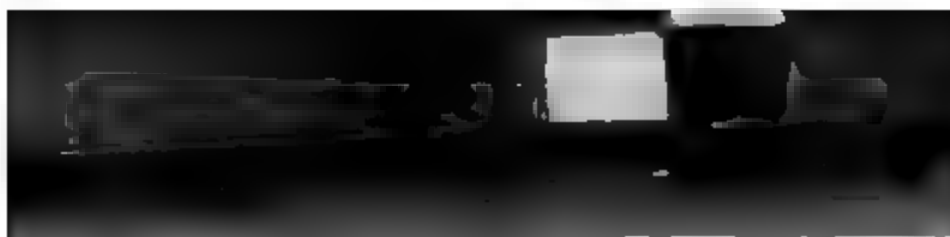
engeneristen and eek chastite þe as noue is
 [811] ¶ Another maner of remedye agayn auarice is
 reasonable largesse but sothely here biȝneth þe con-
 sideracioun of þe grace of ihū crist and of his
 temporel goodes and eek of his goodes perdurable
 þat crist gaf vs. [812] and eek to haue remembrance of
 þe deþ þat he schal receyue he noot nor whanne
 [. . . no gap] and eke he schal forȝon al þat he hath
 saue oonly þat he haþ dispendid in goode werkes

[813] ¶ But for als moche as some folk ben vnreson-
 able men oughte to eschiewe folȝ largesse þam
 clepen wast [814] Certes he þat is fool-large ne
 giueþ nouȝt his catel. [. . . no gap] Sothely
 what þing þat he giueth for vayne glorie as to
 mynstrals and to folk for to bere his renoun in þe
 world: he haþ synne and noon almes
 [815] ¶ Certes he lesith foule his goodes þat sekith
 wiþ þe gift of his good no þing but synne.
 [816] he is like to an hors þat sekith naper to drynke
 drouȝ watir and trouble þan for to drinke watir of þe
 welle þat is cleer. [817] And for as moche as þay giue þer
 as þay schuld not giue: to hem appendith þilke
 malisoun þat crist schal giue at þe day of doom to
 ham þat schal be dampned.

[No break in the MS.]

¶ De Gula [from margin]

[818]
After auarice cometh Gloteny which is expresse eke
 agayn þe comaundement of god. Gloteny is
 vnreasonable and desordeyned coueytise to ete and
 to drynke. [. . .
 . . . no gap] [819] þis synne cor-
 ruptid al þis world as is wel schewed in þe synne of
 adam and of Eua ¶ Ioke eek what saith seint poul of
 glotoun [820] ¶ Many saith seint/ poul gon of whiche



I haue ofte said to ȝow and now I say it wepyng
¶ That thenemyes of þe cros of crist of
whiche þende is deth and of whiche here wombe is
here god and here glorie in confusioun þat so
saueren erpely þinges [821] ¶ he þat is vsant [. . .
.
.
. no gap in the MS.] [822] to þis
synne hath many spices ¶ The firste is dronkenes
þat is horrible sepulture of mannes resoun. And
whan man is drunken he hath lost his resoun and
þis is dedly synne [823] ¶ But schortly whan þat a
man is not wont to stronge drinke and par auenture ne
knowiþ not þe strengþe of þe drynk or hath feblesse
in his heed or hap trauayled þurgh whiche he drynkith
þe more and be sodeynly caught wip drynke it is no
dedly synne but venial [824] ¶ The secounde spice of
dedly synne is. whan þe spirit of a man wexith al trouble
for drunkenesse. and bireueþ him his witte and his discre-
sioun [825] ¶ The þridde spice of glotouns is whan a man
deuoureth his mete and hap no rightful maner of etyng
[826] ¶ þe ferþe is whan þurgh þe grete abund-
aunce of his mete þe humours of his body been dis-
tempred [827] ¶ þe fift is þe Idilnes by to moche
drinking. For which a man som tyme forgetith by þe
morwe what he dide at eue or on þe night bifore

[828] In oþer maner ben distinct þe spices of
glotonye after seint Gregory ¶ The firste is for to ete or drynke
byfore tyme to ete ¶ The secound is. whan man ȝineth him
to delicate mete or drinke [829] ¶ The þridde is. whanne
man takith to moche þerof ouer mesure ¶ The ferþe is
curiosite wip gret entent to make and apparayle
his mete ¶ The fift is. For to ete to gredely [830] ¶ These
ben þe fyue fyngres of þe deuiles hand. by whiche
he drawith folk to synne. /

[831]

¹ **A** Gayns Glotonye is þe remedie abstinence as
saip Galien. But þat holde I nouȝt meritorie. If
he do it oonly for þe hele of his body ¶ Saint
austyn wol þat abstinence be don for vertu and
wip pacience. [832] Abstinence he saith is litil worth
but if a man haue good wille þerto and but it be enforced
by pacience. and by charite. and þat men doon it for
goddes sake and in hope to haue þe blisse of heuen

[833] ¶ The felawes of abstinence ben attenper-
aunce þat holdith þe mene in alle þinges. eek
schame þat eschiewith al dishoneste. Suffisaunce þat
seeketh noone riche metes ne drynkes ne doþ no force of to
outrageous apparaillyng of mete [834] ¶ Mesure also
þat restreyneth by resoun the dislaue appetit of etyng.
Sobernes also restreyneth [.]

[835]] þe delicat wille to ete and þe lasse leysir
[.]
. no gap in the MS.]

[No break in the MS.]

¶ De luxuria

[836]

After Glotonye þanne cometh leccherie. For þese
two synnes ben so neih cosyns þat ofte tyme þey
wol not departe. [837] Vnde paulus ad Ephesios ¶ Nolite
inebriari vino &c. God wot þis synne is ful displeaunt
þing to god. vino in quo est luxuria. For he sayde him-
self. Do no leccherie. and þerfore he putte gret peyne
agayn þis synne / in þe olde lawe. [838] If a wom-
man þral were take in þis synne. sche scholde be
beten with stoones to þe deth. and if sche were a gentil
womman! sche schulde be slayn wip stoones. / and if sche
were a bisschoppis douȝter! sche schulde be brent by
goldis comaundement. [839] ¶ Forther ouer by þe
synne of leccherie! god dreinte al þe world at þe



dilune ¶ And after þat he dreynthe fyue citees with thonder
layt and sonk hem in to helle

[840] ¶ Now let vs thanne speke of þilke stynkyng
synne of lecherie þat men clepen aduoutry of weddid
folk þat is to sayn if þat oon of hem be weddid
or elles boþe [841] ¶ Seint Iohan saith þat aduoutris
schuln be in helle in watir breunying of fuyr and
of brimston. In fuyr for þe lecherie. In brimston For þe
stynk or her ordure. [842] ¶ Certis þe brekyng of
þis sacrament is an horrible þing. hit was makid of
god himself in paradis Confermed of ihū crist as
witnesseth seint Mathew ¶ A man schal lete
fader and mooder and take him to his wif and þay
schul ben two in oon fleisch [843] ¶ This sacrament bitok-
enep þe knyttyng togider of crist and of holy chirche
[844] nat oonly þat god forbad aduotrie in dede:
but eek he comaunded þat þou scholdest not coueyte þy
neyhebers wif [845] ¶ In þis heste seiþ seint
austyn is forboden al maner coueytise to do
lecherie ¶ lo what seiþ seint mathew in þe gospel. that
who-so seth a womman to coueytise of his lust: he hap
doon lechery wip hir in his herte. [846] ¶ here may þe
se þat nouȝt oonly þe dede of þis synne is forboden:
but eek þe desir to do þat synne [847] ¶ This cursed
synne annoyeth greuously hem þat it haunten and first
to here soule. for he obligith it to synne and to pyne of
þe deþ þat is pardurable [848] ¶ vnto þe body annoyep
it greuously. also for it dreyep him and wastith him &
schent him. and of his blood he makith sacrifice to þe
deuel of helle ¶ It wastith eek his catel and his substaunce.
[849] and certes if þat it be a foul þing a man to waste
his catel on women: ȝit is it a fouler þing whan þat
for such ordure women dispende vpon men here catel
and here substaunce [850] ¶ This synne as saith þe prophete
byreueth man and womman her good fame and al here
honour. and it is ful pleasaunt to þe deuel. For þer by

wynneth he þe moste pray of þis world
 [851] ¶ And right as a marchaunt deliteþ him most
 in chaffare þat he haþ most auantage of: Right
 so delitith þe feend in þis ordure

[852] ¶ This is þe oper hond of þe deuel with fyue
 fynghes to cacche þe poeple to his vilonye [853] ¶ þe
 firste fynger is þe foule lokyng of þe foule womman
 and of þe foule man þat sleth right as a basiliskoc
 sleþ folk by þe venym of his sight. For þe coueytise
 of eyen folwip þe coueytise of þe herte [854] ¶ The
 secounde fynger is the vileynes touchinge in wikkid
 manere. and þerfore saith salamon þat who-so
 touchith and handelith a womman: he farith lik him
 þat handelith þe scorioun þat styngith and sodeinly
 sleeth þurgh his enuenemyng as who so touchith
 warm picche. it schent his fynghes [855] ¶ The þridde is
 foule wordes þat farith lik fuyr þat right anon
 brenneth þe herte [856] ¶ The ferþe is þe
 kysyng. and trewely he were a greet fool þat wolde
 kisse þe mouth of a brennyng ouen or of a forneys:
 [857] and more fooles ben þay þat kysen in vilonye.
 For þat mouth is þe moup of helle. and namely þise
 olde dotard fooles holours. 3it wol þay kisse þough
 þay may nought do & smater hem. [858] ¶ Certis þay
 ben like to houndes. For an hound whan he cometh to
 a roser or by oper beautes. þough he may nouȝt
 'pisse: 3et wil he heue vp his leg and make a coun-
 tenaunce to pisse. [859] and for þat many man weneth
 he may not ayne for licorousnes þat he doth
 with his wif: Certis þat oppinioun is fals. God wot a
 man may sle himself wip his owne knyfe and mak
 himself dronke of his oughne tonne [860] ¶ Certis
 be it/ wif or child or eny worldly þing þat he
 louth biforn god it is his maumet and he is an ydolastre .
 [861] man schulde loue his wif by discrecioun
 paciently and attemperelly. and þanne is scho as it

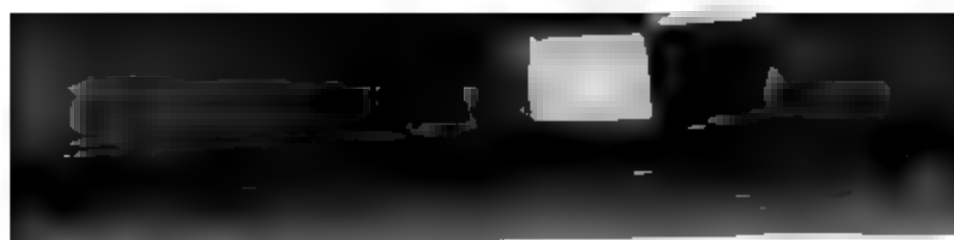
were his suster [862] ¶ The fyfte fynger of the deuyles
 hond is þe stynkyngede of lecherie [863] ¶ Certes þe fyue
 fyngres of glotony þe deuyl put in þe wombe of a man.
 & his fyue fyngres of lechery bygripeth hym by
 þe reynes for to proue him in to þe fourneys of
 helle. [864] þere as þey schuln haue þe fuyr. and þe wormes
 þat euer schal lasten. and wepyng and wayling
 scharp hunger and þurst. and grislines of deuyles
 þat schul alto-tere hem wipoute respit/ and wip-
 outen ende [865] ¶ Of lecherie as I sayde souldres
 diuers spices of fornicacion þat is bitwen man
 and womman þat ben nouȝt married and þis is dedly
 synne and against nature [866] al þat is enemy and
 destruccioun to nature. [867] þar fay þe
 resoun of a man tellip him wel þat it is dedly
 synne For als moche as god forbad lecherie and seint
 poule ȝeuth hem þat regne þat is due to no wight
 but hem þat doon synne dedly [868] Anoper synne
 of lechery is for to bireue a mayden of hir maydenhede /
 for he þat so doȝt Certes he casteth maydenhede out
 of the heighest degre þat is in þe present lif [869] and
 bireuith hir þilke precious fruyt þat þe book clepith þe
 hundrid fruyt. I can ȝeue it noon oper name in englich.
 but in latyn it is I-cleped Centesimus fructus secundum
 Ieronimum contra Iouinianum [870] ¶ Certes he þat so
 doth is cause of many harmes and vilenyes mo þan eny man
 can rekene. Right as he som tyme is cause of alle þe damages
 þat bestis doon in þe feeld þat brekith þe hegge or þe closure
 þurgh which he destroyeþ þat may not be restored:
 [871] for certes no more may maydenhode be re-
 stored þan an arm þat is smyten fro þe body
 retourne agayn to waxe. [872] sche may haue mercy þis
 wot I wel if sche do penitence but neuer schal it
 be þat sche nas corrupt [873] ¶ And al be it so þat I
 haue spoke som what of aduoutre: ȝit is it good to speke of
 mo¹ perils þat longen to aduoutre for to eschiewe þat foule

synne [874] ¶ Aduoutrie in latyn is for to sayn approching
of oþer mannes bed þorugh þe which þat whilom
were oon fleisch abounden here bodyes to oþer persones
[875] ¶ Of þis synne as saip þe wise man
many harmes cometh þer-of ¶ First brekyng of faith ¶ And
certes faith is þe keye of cristendom. [876] and whan þat
faith is broke & lorn! soþely cristendom stont
veyn and wipouten fruyt [877] ¶ This synne is eek a
þeef. For þeste is generally to speke to reue a wight his þing
agayns his wille [878] ¶ Certis þis is þe foulest thefte
þat may be whan a woman stelith hir body from
hire housbunde and ȝiueth it to hire holour to defoule
hire & stelith hir soule fro crist/ and ȝeuth it to
þe deuel [879] ¶ This is a fouler þeste þan for to breke a
chirche and stele chalises. For þese aduouteres
breke þe temple of god spirituelly and stelen þe vessel
of grace þat is þe body and þe soule ¶ For Ihu crist
schal destroyen hem as saith seint poule [880] ¶ Sothely
þis þeste doutyd gretly Ioseph whan þat his lordes
wyf prayde him of vilonye whan he saide. lo my lady
how my lord hap take to me vnder my warde al þat he
hap in þis world. ne no þing of his power is oute of
my power but oonly ȝe þat ben his wyf [881] and
how schuld I do þanne þis wikkidnes and synne so
horribly agayns god and my lord. God it forbede
¶ Alas al to litel is suche troupe now I-founde [882] ¶ The
þridde harm is þe filthe þurgh which þay breken
þe comaundement of god and defoule þe auctour of
here matrimonye þat is crist. [883] For certis in so moche
as þe sacrament of mariage is so noble and so digne! So
moche is it þe gretter synne for to breke it. for god
makid mariage in paradis in þestat of Innocence to
multiplie man kynde to þe seruice of god [884] and
þerfore is þe brekyng þe more greuous. Of which
brekyng comen fals heires ofte tymes þat wrongfully
occupien mennes heritage. and þerfore wolde crist putte



hem out of þe regne of heuen þat is heritage to goode folk. [885] Of þis breking comeþ ek ofte tyme þat folk vnwar wedden or synnen wip her kynrede and namely þese harlottis þat haunten bordels of þese foule wommen þat mowe be likened to a comune gonge where as men purgen here entrayles of her ordure [886] ¶ what say we ek of putours þat lyuen by þe horrible synne of putrie & constreyne wymmen 3e som tyme his oughne wyf or his child as don¹ þese baudes to 3elde hem a certeyn rente of here bodily putrie ¶ Certes þese ben cursede synnes [887] ¶ Vnderstonde eek that avoutrie is set gladly in þe ten comaundements bituixe manslaughter and thefte. For it is grettest thefte þat may be. for it is thefte of body and soule / [888] and it is lik homicidie For it kerneth a-tuo hem þat first were makid oon fleisch. and þerfore by þe olde lawe of god þay scholde be slayn [889] ¶ But napeles by þe lawe of Ihū crist þat is lawe of pite whan he sayde to þe womman þat was founde in aduoutri and schulde haue ben slayn with stoones aftir þe wille of þe Iewes as was her lawe. Go quod ihū crist and haue no more wille to synne. or wilne no more to do synne. [890] ¶ Sothely þe vengeance of avouterie is awardid to [. no gap] helle / but it be destourbed by penitence [891] ¶ 3it ben þer mo spices of þis cursed synne. as whan þat oon of hem is religious or ellis bothe or for folk þat ben entred in to ordre as subdekin or dekin or preest or hospitalers and euer þe higher þat he be. þe gretter is þe synne. [892] þe þinges þat gretly aggreggith her synne is þe brekyng of here avow of chastite whan þay resceyued ordre. [893] and forþer ouer is soþ þat holy ordre is cheff of alle þe tresor of god and his especial signe and mark of chastite to schewe þat þay ben ioyned to chastite which þat is þe moste precious lif þat is [894] ¶ And eek þese ordred folk ben specially tytled to god and of þe

special meyne of god of whiche whan þay don dedly synne þay ben þe special traytours of god and of his poeple. [. no gap in the MS.] and whil þay ben suche traytours: here prayer auaylep not to þe poeple [895] ¶ Prestis ben aungels as by þe dignite of here misterie ¶ But forsoþe seint poul saith þat Sathanas transformeth him in aungel of light. [896] Soþely þe prest þat hauntith dedly synne: he may be likened to þe aungel of light. [. no gap] & he semeth aungel of light: but for soþe he is aungil of derknes [897] whiche ben þe sones of belie as schewith in þe book of kinges þat þay were þe sones of belial þat is þe denel. [898] belial is to say wipoute Iuge and so faren þay þay þynke hem fre and han no Iuge no more þan hath a fre bole þat takith which cow þat him likeþ in þe toun [899] so faren þay by women For right as a fre bole is y-nough for al a toun: / Right so is a wikked prest corrupcioun ynough for al a parisch or for al a contray [900] ¶ These prestes as saip þe book ne conne not þe mistery of presthode. þe poeple ne god ne knowe þay not. þay holde hem nought apayed as saith þe book of soden fleissh þat was to hem offred: but þay tooke by force þe fleissch þat is raw: [901] Certes so þese schrewes holde hem not appayed with rosted fleissh and sode fleissh wip whiche þe poeple feeden hem in gret reuerence. But þay wil haue raw fleisch of folkes wyues and here dougtres [902] ¶ And certes þese women þat consenten to here harlotrie don gret wrong to crist and to holy chirche and alle halwes / and to alle soules for þay birenen alle þese hem þat schulde worschipe crist and holy chirche and praye for cristen soules [903] ¶ And þerfore han suche prestis & here femmans eke þat consenten to here leccherie þe malisoun of al þe court cristian til þay come to amendement



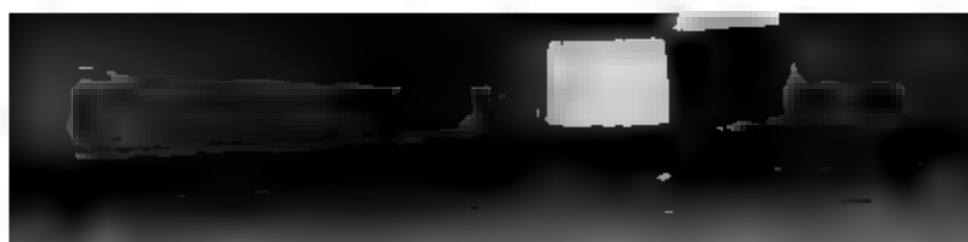
[904] ¶ The þridde spice of aduoutry is som tyme bitwix
a man and his wif and þat is whan þay take noon reward
in her assembling but only to þe fleischly delit as
saith seint Ierom. [905] and ne rekke of no þing but
þat þay be assembled by cause þat þay ben married.
al is good ynough as þinkith hem. [906] But in suche
folk hap þe deuel power as saith þe aungel Raphael
to Thoby in here assemblyng þay 'putten ihū
crist out of her herte. and ȝiuen hemself to alle ordure
[907] ¶ The ferthe spice is þe assemble of hem þat ben
of here kynrede or of hem þat ben of oon affinite or
elles wip hem wip whiche here fadres or here kynrede
han delitid in þe synne of leccherie. þis synne makith
hem like houndes þat taken noon heede of kynrede
[908] and certes parenteal is in tuo maneres eyþer
gostly or fleishly. gostly as for to dele wip her
gossib. [909] For riȝt / so as he þat engendrith a child
is his fleishly fader! Riȝt so is his godfader his fader
espirituel. for which a woman may in no lasse synne
assemble wip hir gossib þan wip hire oughne fleischly
fader or broþer [910] ¶ The fiftte spice of þilke abhominable
synne of which þat no man unneþe oughte to speke ne
write. napeles it is openly rehersed in holy wryt/.
[911] [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] but þough þat holy writ
speke of horrible synne! Certes holy writ may not be
defouled no more þan þe sonne þat schyneth on a
dongehul [912] ¶ Anoper synne appertenith to lecchery þat
cometh in aleping. & þis synne cometh ofte to hem
þat ben maydenes and eek to hem þat ben corrupte
and þis synne men clepen pollucioun þat cometh in .iiij.
maners [913] ¶ Som tyme of languisshynge of body for
þe humours ben to ranke and to abundaunt in þe body
of man. somtyme of infirmite for þe feblenesse of þe
vertu retentyf as phisik makeþ mencioun. And som tyme
for surfete of mete and drynke. [914] som tyme of

vileins þoughtes þat ben enclosed in mannes mynde
 whan he [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] kepe him wisely or elles
 may men synne greuously

[*No break in the MS.*]

[915] ¶ Now cometh þe remedye aȝens lecchery and þat
 is generally chastite of wikkedhede and continence þat re-
 streyneþ alle þe desordeigne moeuyngeþ þat comen
 of fleischly talentes. [916] and euer þe gretter meryt
 schal he han þat most restreyneth eschau-
 fynges of ordure of þis synne. and þis is in þre
 maneres. þat is to sayn chastite of mariage / chastite
 of/ wikkedhede [917] ¶ Now schalt þou vnderstonde þat
 matrimoigne is leful assemblynge of man and
 woman þat rescayuen by vertu of þe sacrament þe
 bond þurgh which þay may not be departid in al here
 lif þat is to say whil þay lyuen boþe.
 [918] þis as saith þe boke is a ful gret sacrament
 God makid it / as I haue said in paradis and wolde him-
 self be born in mariago [919] and for to holden mariage.
 he was at þe weddyng wher as he turnede watir in to
 wyn which was þe firste miracle þat he wrought in
 erþe biforn his disciples [920] trewe effect of
 mariage clensith fornicacioun and replenischith holy
 chirche of good lynage. for þat is þe ende of mariage
 and it chaungith dedly synne in to venyal bitnixe
 hem þat ben weddid [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] as wel as þe bodyes
 [921] ¶ þis is verray mariage þat was first blessed by
 god er þat þe synne bigan whan naturel lawe was in his
 first poynt in paradis. and it was ordeyned þat/ oo man
 schulde haue but oon woman. and oon woman but oon
 man as saith seint augustyn by many resouns

[922] ¶ First for mariage is figured bitwixe crist and



holy chirche ¶ Anoper is for a man is heed of
a womman algate by ordinaunce it/ schulde be so
[923] ¶ For if a womman had mo men þan oon! þanne
schulde sche haue mo hedes þan oon & þat were an
horrible þing biforn god. And eek a womman.
myȝte nouȝt please to many folk al at oones. and also
þer ne schulde neuer be pees & rest among hem. For
euerich wolde aske his oughne þing. [924] and
forþer-ouer no man schulde knowe his oughne en-
gendrure ne who schulde haue his heritage and þe
womman scholde be þe lasse loued fro þe tyme þat
sche were ioyned to many men

[925] ¶ Now cometh how þat a man schulde bere him
wif his wif and namely in tuo þinges þat is ¹to
sain in sufferaunce and in reuerence and þat schewed crist
whan he made first womman. [926] For he ne made hire
not of þe heed of adam. for sche schulde not to
gret lordschipe haue / [927] þer as þe womman hap þe
maistry sche makith to moche disaray. þer nedith noon
ensample of þis. þe experience of þis of day by day
oughte suffice [928] ¶ Also certes god ne made nouȝt
womman of þe foot of adam. For sche ne scholde nouȝt be
holden to lowe for sche can not/ paciently suffre ¶ But god
made womman of þe ribbe of adam For womman schulde
be felawe vnto man [929] Man schulde bere him to his
wif. in faith in troupe and in loue as saip seint
poule. aman schulde loue his wif as crist loued
holy chirche [. no gap] þat deyed for it.
so schulde a man for his wyf if/ it were neede

[930] ¶ Now how þat a womman schulde be subiect
to hir housbonde þat tellith seint peter . iiij. c. first in obedi-
ence [931] and eek/ as saip þe decre. A womman þat
is a wif as longe as sche is a wif sche hap noon
auctorite to swere ne to bere witnessse wipoute leue of
hir housbonde þat is hir lord. algate he schulde be so
by resoun. [932] sche schulde eek serue him in al

honeste and ben attempre of hir array / I wot wel
 þat þay schulde sette here entent to please her house-
 bondes but nought by here queyntise of array [933] ¶ Seint
 Ierom saith þat wyues þat ben arrayed in silk and
 in purple ne mowe nouȝt cloþe hem in ihū
 crist ¶ Ioke what saith saint Iohn eek in þe same matier
 [934] ¶ Seint gregori saith eek þat no wight sekith
 precious cloþing ne array but only for veyn glorie to ben
 honoured þe more biforn þe poeple [935] ¶ It is a gret
 foly a womman to haue fair array outward and
 hirsilf to ben foul inward [936] ¶ A wyf schulde eek be
 mesurable in lokyng and in beryng and in laughyng
 and discrete in alle hir wordes. [937] and
 aboue alle worldly þinges sche schulde loue hir housebonde/
 with al hire herte and to him to be trewe of hir body.
 [938] so scholde an housebonde eke ben to his wif.
 For sith þat al þe body is þe housebondes. so schulde
 here herte ben. or ellis þer is bitwixe hem tuo as in
 þat no parfyt mariage [939] ¶ Thanne schal men vnder-
 stonde: þat for þre þinges a man and his wyf mowe fleischly
 assemble ¶ The firste is in entent/ of engen-
 drure of children to the seruice of god. for certis þat is
 þe cause fynal of matrimoyne [940] ¶ The secounde cause is to
 zelden euerych of hem his dette vn to oþer of his body
 ¶ For euerych of hem haþ power of his oughne body
 ¶ The bridde is for to eschiewe lecherie and vilenye.
 þe ferþe forsoþe is dedly synne. [941] as to þe
 firste it/ is meritory. The secounde also for as saip þe
 decre þat sche haþ merit of chastite þat zeldith to
 hir housebonde þe dette of hir body. ȝe þough it/ be
 agayn hir likyng and þe lust of hir hert [942] ¶ The
 bridde maner is venial synne. and trewly scarsly may
 eny of þese be wipoute venial synne for þe
 corrupcioun and for þe delit. [943] The ferþe
 maner is for to vnderstonde as if þay assemble only for
 amorous loue and for noon of þe forsayde causes. but



for to accomplisþ þilke brennyng delyt þay rekke
neuer how ofte. soþely it is dedly synne and ȝit wip
sorwe some folk wole more payne hem for to doon þan
to her appetit suffisþ.

[944] the secounde maner of chastite is to ben
a clene wydewe and to eschew þe embrasynges of men
and desiren þe embrasynges of ihū crist [945] þese
ben þe þat han ben wyues and han forȝon here hous-
bondes and eek wommen þat han doon lecherie and be
relisued by penitence / [946] and certis if þat a wyf
couþe kepe hir al chast by licence of hir housebonde so
þat sche ȝeue non occasioun þat he agilt it
were to hir a gret merit [947] ¶ Thise maner
wymmen þat obseruen chastite moste be clene in herte
as wel as in body and in þought and measurable in cloþing
& in countenaunce. abstinent in etyng and
drynkyng in speche and in dede. and þanne is sche þe
vessel or þe boyst of the blessed Marynleue þat
fulfyllith holy chirche ful of good colour. [948] ¶ The þridde
maner of chastite is virginite. and it/ bihousþ þat sche
be holy in herte and clene of body. and þanne is sche
spouse of ihū crist and sche is þe lif of angels.
[949] sche is þe preysyng of þis world. and sche is an
þese martires in egalite. sche hap in hir þat tynge þat tynge
may nouȝt telle. [950] virginite bar oure lord
ihū crist and virgine was himselfe

[951] ¶ Anoper remedy agayns lecherie is specially
to wipdrawe suche þinges as ȝiuen occasioun to þilke
vilonye as is case and etyng and drynkyng for certis when
þe pot boylith strongly. þe beste remedye is to wip-
drawe þe fyr [952] sleping eek in gret quiete
is eek a gret/ norice vnto lecherie

[953] ¶ Anoper remedy agayns lecherie is þat a
man or a womman eschewe þe companye of hem by
whiche he doutith to be tempted. for al be it so þat þe
dede be wipatond. ȝit is þer gret temptacioun

[954] sothely a whit wal al þough it brenne not fully by stikyng of a candel yet is þe wal blak of stiking of a candel ful ofte tyme. [955] I rede þat no man truste in his oughne perfeccioun but he be stranger þan Sampson or holier þan Dauid. and wiser þan salamon

[956] ¶ Now after þat I haue declared 3ow þe seven dedly synnes as I can & some of here braunches and here remedies: soþely if I coude I wolde telle 3ow þe ten comaundementes. [957] but so heigh a doctrine I leue to diuines. but/ napeles I hope to god þay ben touchid in þis litil tretys euerych of hem alle

De secunda parte penitencie [in margin]

[958] **N**ow for as moche as þe secounde part of penitence stant in confessioun of mouth as I bigan in þe chapitre I say seint austyn saith. [959] Synne is euery word and euery dede / and al þat men coueyten agayn þe lawe of ihu crist. and þis is for to synne in herte in mouth and in dede by þy fyue wittis þat been. sight heeryng smellyng tastyng or sauoryng or felyng [960] ¶ Now it is good to vnderstonden þe circumstaunces þat aggreggen moche to euery synne. [961] þou schalt considre what þou art þat dost þe synne wheþir þat þou be mal or femal. old or 3ong gentil or þral. free or seruaunt hool or seek.

menne houses or in þin owne in feld or in chirche
or in chirchewawe. in chirche dedicate or noon.
[965] For if [.]

no gap in the MS.] it be dedicate it is enterdited til it
be reconsiled by þe bischop [966] and þe
prest scholde be enterdytel þat dede such a vilonye to terme
of al his lyf & scholde no more synge no masse and if he dede
he schulde do dedly synne at euery tyme þat he song masse
[967] ¶ The ferthe circumstaunce is by which media-
tours as by which messagers¹ or for entysement or for
consentement to bere companye with felawes For
many a wrecche for to bere companye wol go to þe
deuel of helle. [968] for þay þat eggyn. or con-
sentyn to þe synne ben parteneres of þe synne and
of þe dampnacioun of þe synners

[969] ¶ The fyfte is how many tymes
þat he hap synned if it be in his mynde² and how ofte
þat he hap falle. [970] For he þat ofte fallith in synne.
despiseþ þe mercy of god and encresceth his synne
and is vnkynde to crist and he waxith þe more feble
to wiþstonde synne and synneþ þe more lightly
[971] and þe latter arrisith and is þe more eschiewe
to schriue him. and namely to him þat hap ben his con-
fessour. [972] For whiche þat folk whan þay falle agayn
in here olde folies eyther þay forletin her confessours
al vtterly or ellis þay departen here schrifte in diuers
places. but soþely such departed schrifte hap no
mercy of god of his synnes [973] ¶ The sixte circum-
staunce is why þat a man synneþ as by which temptacioun
[. *no gap*] or by ex-
cityng of oþer folk or if he synne wiþ a womman by
force or by hir owne assent. [974] or if þe womman
maugre hir heed hap ben enforced or noon. þis
schal sche telle. or for coueytise or for pouerte &
if it was hire procuryng or noon and alle such maner

[¹ leaf 230]

harneys [975] ¶ The .vij. circumstaunce is in what maner he hap don his synne or how þat sche hap suffred þat folk han doon to hire. [976] þe same schal þe man telle pleynty alle þe circumstaunces. and wheþer he haue synned wip commune bordeal womman or noon. [977] or doon his synne in holy tyme or noon. in fastyng tyme or noon. or biforn his schrifte of after his latter schrifte [978] And hap par aduantage broken his penaunce enioyned þerfore. by whos help or by whos counseil by sorcery or by oþer craft al moste be told [979] ¶ Alle þese þinges after þay be grete or smale engreggen þe consciens of a man and eek þe prest þat is þe iugge may þe better ben auysed of his iugement in zuiyng of þy penaunce / and þat is after þy contricioun. [980] For vnderstonde wel þat after þe tyme þat a man hap defouled his baptisme by synne if he wol come to sauacioun þer is noon oþer wey but penitence and schrifte of mouthe and by satisfaccion [981] and namely by þo tuo. if þer be a confessour to which he may schryue him. and þe þridde if ȝe haue lif to parforme it.

[982] þanne schal men loke it and conside þat if he wol make a trewe and a profitable confessioun þer moste be foure condiciouns [983] ¶ First it moste ben in sorweful bitternesse of herte as sayde þe king Ezechiel to god ¶ I wol remembre me alle þe ȝeres of my lif in bitternes of myn hert. [984] þis condicioun of bitter-

seint augustyn þat such schamefast folk ben next
 forzeuence of remissioun [988] ¶ The secounde signe is
 humilite of confessioun ¶ Of which saip seint petre
 humblith ȝow vnder þe might of god. þe hond of god
 is myȝty in confessioun For þer-by god forȝiueþ þe
 synnes he alone hap þe power. [989] and þis
 humilite schal ben in herte and in signe outward. For
 right as he hap humilite to god in his herte: right so
 schulde he humble his body outward to þe prest þat sittith
 in goddes place [990] For which in no manere sith þat
 crist is souerayn and þe prest is his mene and mediatour bi-
 twix crist and þe synnere and þe synner is þe lasse as by
 way of resoun: [991] þanne schulde nouȝt þe confessour sitte
 as lowe as þe synnere but þe synnere schulde knele biforn him
 or at his feet but if maladye destourbid it for he schal take no
 keep who sittith þere but in whos place þat he sitteth.
 [992] a man þat hap trespassed to a lord and cometh for to
 axe him of mercy and to maken his accord / and settith him
 down anon by þe lord. men wolde holde him outrageous and
 not worþy so soone for to haue mercy ne remissioun [993] ¶ The
 þridde signe is þat þy schrifte schulde be ful of teeris if
 men may wepe. and if he may not wepe wip his bodily eyen
 let him wepe wip his herte. [994] Such was þe confessioun
 of seint peter. For after he hadde forsake ihū crist.
 he wente out and wepte ful bitterly [995] ¶ The ferthe
 signe is þat he lette nouȝt for schame to schewen
 his confessioun. [996] Such was þe confessioun of þe
 magdaleyn þat spared for no schame of hem þat were
 at þe feste to go to oure lord ¹ihū crist and byknowe
 to him hire synne [997] ¶ The fifte signe is þat a man
 or a womman be obeisaunt/ to resceyue þe penaunce þat
 him is enioyned. For certis ihū crist for
 þe gultes of oon man was obedient to his deth

[998] ¶ The oper condicioun of verray confessioun
 is þat it hastily be doon. For certes if a man had a
 dedly wounde. euer þe lenger þat he taried to warisch

himself: þe more wolde it corrupte and haste him to
 his deþ and eek þe wounde wolde be þe worse to
 hele [999] ¶ and right so fareþ synne þat long
 time is in a man vnachewed [1000] Certes a man oughte
 soone schewe his synne for many causes as for drede
 of deth þat cometh sodeinly and not certeyn what tyme
 it schal come or ben in what place. and eek þe drecchyng
 of oon synne draweth another [1001] and eek þe lenger
 he tarieþ þe ferþer is he from crist and if he abyde
 vnto his laste day skarsly may he schriue him or re-
 membre him of his synnes or repente for þe
 greuous malady of his deth [1002] ¶ And for as moche as
 he hap not in his lif herkened Ihū crist whan he
 hap spoken: he schal crie to ihū crist at his laste
 day. and scarsly wol he herken him. [1003] And
 vnderstonde þat þis condicioun moste haue foure þinges
 þy schrifte moste ben purueyed byforn and auyseed.
 For wikked haste doþ no profyt and þat a man can
 schryue him of his synnes. be it of pride or of enuye and
 so forþ alle þe spices and þe circumstaunces [1004] and þat
 he haue comprehendid in his mynde the nombre and þe
 gretnes of his synne [.
no gap] [1005] and eek þat he be contrit of his sinnes
 and in stedefast purpos by þe grace of god neuer eft to
 falle in synne and eek þat he drede and countrewayte
 himself and þat he flee þe occasiouns of synne to whiche he

pou hast ben schryuen of þy curate but if it like þe of þin humilite. þis is no departyng of schrifte [1009] ne I ne say not þere as I speke of diuisioun of confessioun ¹þat if pou haue licence to schryue þe to a discret and to an honest prest wher þe likith and eek by þe licence of þy curate þat pou ne maist wel schriue þe to him of alle þyn synnes. [1010] but let no synne be byhinde vtold as fer as pou hast remembrance. [1011] and whan pou schalt þe schriue to þi curate: telle him eke al þy synne þat pou hast doo with pou were last I-schryue. þis is no wikkid entent of diuisioun of schrifte

[1012] ¶ Also þy verrey schrifte askith certeyn condiciouns. First þat pou schriue þe by þy fre wille nouȝt constreyned ne for schame of folk ne for maladye or such þing. for is reson þat he þat trespassith wip his fre wille [. . . *no gap in the MS.*] confesse his trespas. [1013] noon oþer man schal telle his synne but himself. ne he schal not nayte or denye his synne ne wrappe him with þe prest for his amonestyng to lete synne [1014] ¶ The secounde condicioun is þat þy schrifte be laweful þat is to sayn þat pou þat schriuest þe and eek þe prest þat herith þy confessioun ben verrayly in þe feith of holy chirche [1015] and þat a man be nouȝt despaired of þe mercy of Ihū crist/ as caym or Iudas. [1016] and eek a man moot accuse himself of his owne trespas and not another: but he schal blame and wite himself and his oughne malice of his synne / and noon other [1017] ¶ But napeless if þat an oþer man by occasioun or ellis enticer of his synne or þat þe estate of a persone be such þurgh which his synne aggreggith or elles þat he may not playnly schryue hym but he telle þe persone wip which he hap synned þanne may he telle it [1018] so þat his entent be nouȝt to bakbyte þe persone: but oonly to declare his confessioun

[1019] Thow schalt nouȝt eke make no lesyng' in
 þy confessioun for humilite [. . . *no gap*] to sayn
 þat þou hast don synnes of whiche þou were
 neuer gulty [1020] as seint augustyn saiþ ¶ If þou by
 cause of humilite makest lesynges
 on þiself. þough þou were not in synne bifore
 ȝit art þou þanne in synne þurgh þy lesynges [1021]
 ¶ Thou most schewe þy synne by þyn oughne propre
 mouth but þou woxe dombe. and not by no
 lettre. for þou þat hast don þe synne þou schalt haue
 þe schame. [1022] þou schalt nouȝt
 peynte þy confessioun by faire subtil wordes to couer
 þe more þy synne for þanne bigiliat þou þiself and
 not þe prest. þou most telle it platly be it
 neuer so foul ne so horrible. [1023] þou schalt eek/
 schriue þe to a prest þat is discrete to counsaile þe ¶ And
 þou schalt nouȝt schryue þe for ¹veinneglorie ne for
 ypocrisie. [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] [1024] ¶ þou
 schalt not eek renne to þe prest sodeinly to telle him
 lightly þy synne as who-so tellith a tale or a iape. but
 auysily and wiþ gret deuocioun: [1025] and generally
 schriue þe ofte. if þou ofte falle: ofte þou aryse by
 confessioun [1026] ¶ And þough þou schryue þe ofter
 þan oones of synne of which þou hast ben schriuen: it is
 þe more merite and as saith seint augustyn ¶ Thou

[1029] ¶ *De tertia parte penitencie*
The þridde partye of penitence is Satisfaccioun and
 þat stondith generally in almes dede and
 bodily payne [1030] ¶ Now ben þer [. . . .]
 of almes dede ¶ Contricioun of herte where a man
 offereþ himself to god ¶ The secoude is. to haue pite of þe
 defaute of his neighbor ¶ The þridde is. in
 good counseil and comfort gostly and bodily where men
 han neede and namely in sustenaunce of mennes foode.
 [1031] and take keep þat a man hap neede of [. . .
 no gap in the MS.]
 eloping and herberwe. he hap [. . . .] charitable
 counseil and visityng in prisoun and malady. and
 sepulture of his dede body [1032] ¶ And if þou may not
 visite þe needeful wip þy persone: visite by þy
 message and by þy giftes. [1033] þese ben general
 almesses or werkes of charite of hem þat han temporal
 riches or discrecioun in counselynge. Of þese werkes
 schalt þou hieren at þe day of doom

[1034] þis almes schalt þou doon of þin oughne
 propur þinges and hastily and priuely if þou maist.
 [1035] But napeles if þou maist not do priuely:
 þou schalt nouȝt forbere to do almes þough men se
 it / so þat it be nouȝt don for þank of þe world but
 oonly for þonk of ihū crist [1036] ¶ For as witnessith
 seint Mathewe .v^{to}. ¶ A cite may not ben hid
 þat is set on a mountayn ne non light not a lanterne and
 put it vnder a buisschel but men sette it on a candel
 stikke to lighte þe men in þe hous. [1037] Right
 so schal ȝoure light lighten biforn men þat men may
 se ȝoure goode werkes and glorifien ȝoure fader þat is in
 heuen

[1038] ¶ Now as to speke of bodily payne. it is in
 prayere in wakinges in fastynges. in vertuous

techinges of orisouns. [1039] 3e schul vnderstonde
 þat orisouns or prayeres is for to seyn a pitous wil of
 herte þat redresseþ in god and expressith it by word
 outward to remembre harmes and to haue þinges
 espirituel & ^l durable and som tyme temporal þinges
 of whiche orisouns of þe orisoun of þe pater noster
 . hap oure lord ihū crist enclosed most þinges [1040] ¶ Certis
 it is priuiledged of þre þinges in his dignite [.
 no gap] þan any oþer prayer. For ihū
 crist himself maked it. [1041] and it is schort for it schulde
 be coude þe more lightly. and forto wipholde it þe
 more esily in herte and helpe himselfe þe oftere with
 þe orisoun [1042] and for a man schulde be þe lasse wery
 to say it. and for a man may not excuse him to lerne
 it. it is so schort and so easy and for it comprehendith in it
 self alle goode prayeres [1043] ¶ The exposicioun of þis
 holy praier þat is so excellent and so digne. I bitake to
 þese maystres of theology. saue þus moche wol I sayn
 whan þou prayest/ þat god schulde forgiue þe þy
 gultes as þou forgiuest hem þat þey gulten to þe: be ful
 wel war. þat þou be not out of charite. [1044] þis
 holy orisoun amenisith eek venial synne. and þerfore
 it appendith specially to penitence.

[1045] þis praier moste be trewely sayd and in
 verray faith. and þat men pray to god ordinatly and dis-
 cretly & deuoutly and alway a man schulde putte his wille

temptacioun. [1049] 3e schul vnderstonde þat fast-
ynges stont in þre þinges ¶ In forbering of bodily mete
and drink. and in forberyng of worldly iolite. and in for-
bering of worldly synne. þis is to sayn þat a man schal
kepe him fro dedly synne in al þat he may

[1050] ¶ And þou schalt vnderstonde eek þat god
ordeyned fastyng. and to fastyng appurteynen foure
þinges [1051] ¶ largesce to pouer folk. gladnes of
hert espirituel. not to ben angry ne annoyed ne
grucche for he fastith. and also resonable hour for to
ete. ete by mesure þat is to sayn a man schulde not ete in
vntyme ne sitte þe lenger at his mete for he
fastith

[1052] ¶ Thanne schal þou vnderstonde þat bodily
peyne stant in discipline or teching by word or by
wrytyng or by ensample. Also in heires weryng or
of stamyn or of habeious on her naked fleisch for cristes
sake and suche maner penaunce [1053] ¶ But ware þe wel
þat such maner penaunce ¹of þyn fleissh make nouȝt
þin herte bitter or angry or anoyed of þiself. for better is
to cast away þin hayre þan for to caste away þe swet-
nes of ihū crist. [1054] and þerfor seiþ seint poule
¶ Clothe ȝow as þay þat ben chosen of god in herte of
misericorde debonairete. sufferaunce and such maner of
cloþing. of þe which ihū crist is more appayed þan of
haire or of hauberkis

[1055] ¶ þan is eek in knockyng on
þe brest. in scourgyng wip ȝerdes. in knelynges. in
tribulaciouns [1056] in suffring paciently wronges þat
ben doon to him/ and eek in pacient sufferaunce of maledies
or leasyng of worldly catel or of wif. or of child or of
opir frendes

[1057] ¶ Thanne schalt þou vnderstonde whiche þinges
destourben penaunce / and þis is in foure þinges. þat is.
drede. schame. hope. and wanhope. þat is desperacioun
[1058] ¶ And for to speke first/ of drede for which he

weneth þat he may suffre no penaunce. [1059] þer
agayns is remedye for to þinke þat bodily penaunce is
but schort and litel at þe regard of þe peyne of helle þat
is cruel and so long þat it/ lastith wipouten ende

[1060] ¶ Now agains þe schame þat a man hap to
schryue him and namely þese ypocrites þat wolde
be holde so parfyt þat þay haue no meede to schriue
hem. [1061] agayns þat schame schulde a man þinke þat
by way of resoun þat he hath not ben aschamed to
do foule þinges. Certis him oughte not ben aschamed to
doon faire þinges & goode þinges and þat is confessioun [1062]
¶ And man scholde eek þinke þat god seeth alle þy
þoughtes and þy werkes to him may no þing be
hyd ne couered [1063] men schulde eek remembre
hem of þe schame þat is to come at/ þe day of doom to
hem þat ben nought penitent and schriuen in þis present
lif. [1064] For alle þe creatures in heuen ne in erthe and in
helle schuln seen apertly al þat he hydith in þis world

[1065] ¶ Now for to speke of ham þat
ben so negligent and slowe to schryue hem stant in
tuo maneres [1066] ¶ þat oon is. þat he hopith for to lyue
longe and for to purchace moche riches for his delyt.
and þanne he wol schriue him. and as he saith he may as
him semith tymely ynough come to schrifte
[1067] ¶ Another is of þe Surquidie þat he hap in cristes
mercy [1068] ¶ Agains þe firste vice he schal þinke

þiuke þay mighte nought longe perseuer in good-
 nesse [1071] ¶ The firste wanhope cometh of þat he
 demyth þat he synned so highly and so ofte and so
 longe layn in synne þat he schal not be saued
 [1072] ¶ Certis agens þat cursed wanhope schulde he
 þenke þat þe passioun of Ihu crist is more strong for
 to vnbynde þan synne is strong for to bynde
 [1073] ¶ Agains þe secounde wanhope he schal þinke
 þat als ofte as he fallith he may arise agayn by penitence /
 And þough he neuer so longe haue leyn in synne þe
 mercy of crist is alway redy to resceyue him to mercy
 [1074] ¶ Agains þe wanhope þat he demeth þat he þinkith he
 schulde not longe perseuere in goodnesse. he schal þinke
 þat þe febles of þe deuel may no þing doon but
 men wol suffre him. [1075] And eek he schal haue strengþe
 of þe help of god and of al holy chirche and of þe
 proteccioun of aungels if him list

[1076] ¶ Thanne schal men vnderstonde what is þe
 fruyt of penaunce And after þe word of ihu crist ¶ hit is
 þe endeles blisse of heuen [1077] þer ioye hap no
 contrariete of wo ne of penaunce ne greuaunce. þer alle
 harmes ben passed of þis present lif. ther as is þe sikernesse
 fro þe payne of helle. [.]

. [1078]

no gap in the MS.] þere as is þe body of man þat whilom
 was seek. frel and feble and is immortal. and
 so strong and so hool þat þer may no þing empeire
 it. [1079] þer nys neyþer hunger þurst ne colde.
 but euery soule replenished wip þe sight and þe parfyt
 knowyng of god [1080] ¶ This blisful regne may men
 purchase by pouerte espirituel and þe glorie by lowe-
 nes. þe plente of ioye by hunger and þurst and
 reste by trauaile and þe lif by deth and mortificacioun of
 synne.

[*Small break in the MS.*]

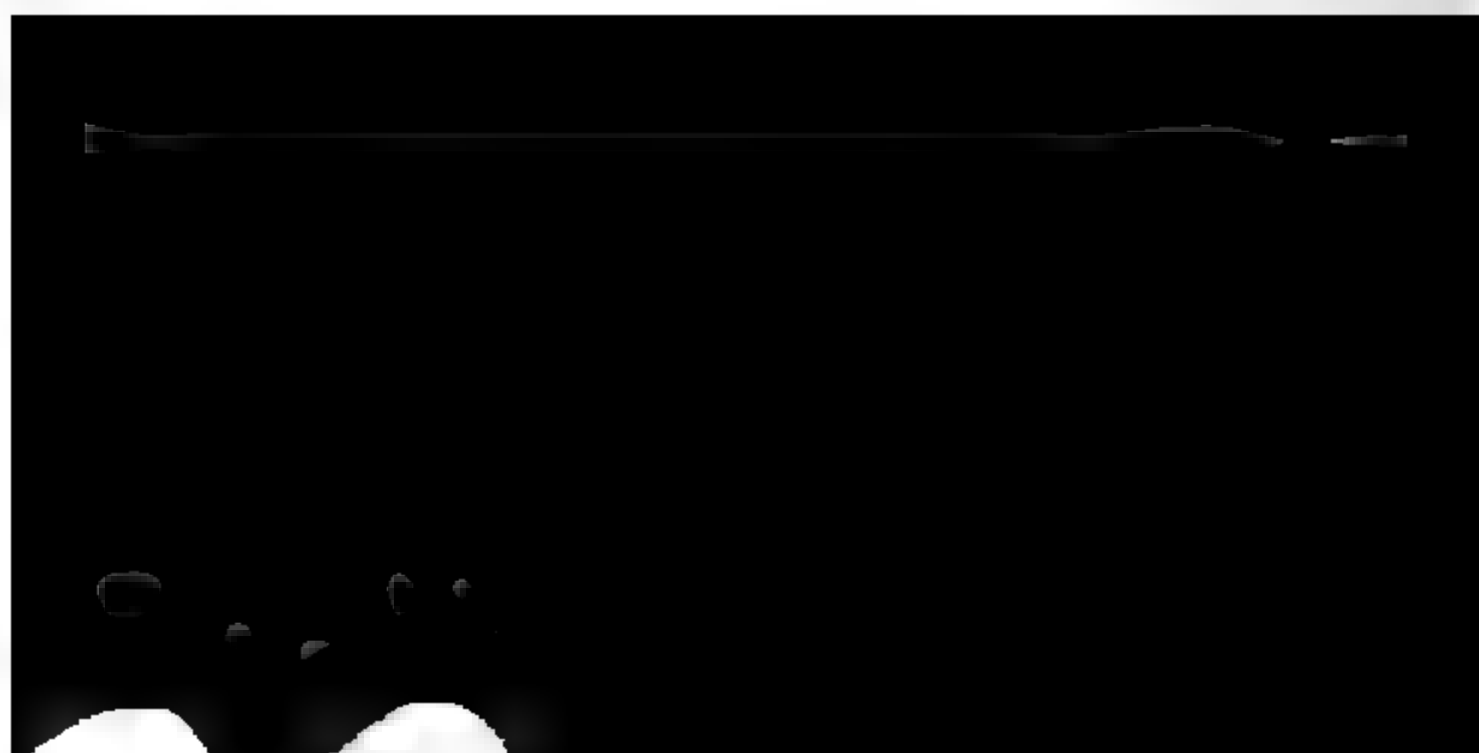
¶ Proces de Chauceres ./

[1081]

Now pray I to ȝow alle þat heren þis litel tretis
 or reden þat if þer be any þing þat likes
 hem þat þer-of þay þanke oure lord ihū
 crist of whom procedith alle witte and al goodnes
 [1082] ¶ And if þer be any þing þat displeith hem I
 pray hem þat þay arette it to þe defaute of myn
 vnconnyng¹ and not to my wille þat wolde fayn haue
 sayd better if I hadde connyng [1083] ¶ For þe
 book¹ saip. al þat is writen. for oure
 doctrine is writen [. *no gap*] [1084] For I
 biseke ȝow mekely for þe mercy of god þat ȝe pray for
 me þat god haue mercy on me and forȝeue me my
 gyltes [1085] and naneliche my translaciouns and of endit-
 yng/ in worldly vanitees. whiche I reuoke in my re-
 tracciouns [1086] as is þe book¹ of troyles. þe book¹
 also of fame. þe book¹ of .29. ladies þe
 book¹ of þe duchesses. þe book¹ of seint valentines
 day and of þe parliment of briddes. þe Tales of Cauntur-
 bury alle þilke þat sounen in to synne [1087] þe book¹ Many
 of þe leo. and oþer bokes if þay were in my mynde / or

SIX-TEXT 685
GROUP I. § 2. PARSON'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 691

penitence. confessioun. and satisfaccioun. to don in þis
present lif [1091] þurgh þe benigne grace of him þat is king
of kynges and prest of alle prestis þat bought vs
wip his precious blood of his hert! [1092] So þat I moute
be oon of hem at þe day of doom that schal be sauyd
Qui cum natro



APPENDIX

TO THE HARLEIAN MS 7834

OF AN END-LINK, HYMN, AND CUTS, NOT IN THE MS.

-
- | | PAGE |
|---|------|
| 1. The genuine <i>Nun's Priest's End-Link</i> , Group B,
§ 15, from MS Reg. 17 D xv, Brit. Mus. ... | 694 |
| ('Twould have followed p. 377 above, had it been
in the Harleian MS.) | |
| 2. The Hymn of Chaucer's Oxford Clerk Nicholas,
"Angelus ad Virginem" (A 3216, p. 92 above),
from the Arundel MS 248, ab. 1250-60 A.D.,
in English and Latin; a facsimile and a print | 695 |
| 3. Woodcuts of the Paintings of the 23 <i>Tellers of
the Canterbury Tales</i> copied from the Ellesmere
MS, and cut, by Mr. W. H. Hooper. | |
| 4. Woodcuts of 6 <i>Tellers of 6 of the Canterbury
Tales</i> — the Reeve, Cook, Wife of Bath,
Pardoner, Monk, and Manciple,—and of 6
<i>Allegorical Figures for the Parson's Tale</i> ,—
Envy and Charity, Gluttony and Abstinence,
Lechery and Chastity,—copied from MS Gg.
4. 27 in the Cambridge University Library,
and cut, by Mr. W. H. Hooper. | |

1.

THE NUN'S PRIEST'S END-LINK.

[MS Reg. 17 D xv., leaf 284 (paper, 11460).]

[S]ir Nonnes priest. our host sayde anon
 I-blessid be thy breche. and euery stoon
[S] This was a mery tale of chauntilier
 But be my trowth if thow were a seculer 4640
 Thow woldest bien. a tredefoule aright
 For if thow have corage. as thow hast myght
 The were nede. of hennys as I wene
 Ya mo than .vij. tymes. seventene 4644
 Se whiche brawnes. hath this gentil priest
 So grete a nekke. and so large a brist
 He lokith as a sparhawke. with his Ien
 Hym nedith nat. his colour for to dyen 4648
 With brasil ne with grayne of portyngale
 Now sir faire fal yow. for youre mery tale
 Here endith
 the tale of



[illegible]

"ANGELUS AD VIRGINEM"

2.

The Hymn of Chaucer's Oxford Clerk, NICHOLAS,

"ANGELUS AD VIRGINEM."

(Miller's Tale, Group A. l. 3216, p. 92, abuv.)

ENGLISH (rymes *ababcc, dde, ccc*).

THE LATIN ORIGINAL:

Arundel MS. 248, leaf 154. Ab. 1250-60, A.D.

'ANGELUS AD VIRGINEM.'

1

Gabriel fram evene king
sent to þe maide swete,
broute¹ þire blisful tiding,
And faire þe gan hire greten : 4
"Heil be þu, ful of grace arith¹
"for godes sone, þis evene lith, 6
"for mannes louen,
"wile man bicomem,
"and taken 9
"fles of þe, maiden brith,
"ma[n]ken fre for to maken
"of senne and deules mith." 12

2

Mildeliche im gan andsweren
þe milde maiden þanne :
'wiche wise sold ichs beren
child with-huten manne !' 16
þangle seide, "ne dred te nout !
"þurw þoligast sal ben iwrout 18
"þis ilche þing,
"warof tiding
"ichs bringe : 21
"al manken wrth ibout
"þur þi swete chiltinge,
"and hut of pine ibrout." 24

1

Angelus ad uirginem
subintrans in conclaue,
Virginis formidinem
demulcens inquit, "Aue !
"Aue regina uirginum !
"celi terreque dominum
"concupies,
"& paries,
"intacta,
"salutem hominum,
"tu, porta celi facta,
"medela criminum."

2

'Quomodo conciperem,
'que uirum non cognoui ?
'qualiter infringerem
'quod firma mente uoui !'
"Spiritus sancti gracia
"perficiet hec omnia.
"ne timeas,
"seru gaudeas
"secura,
"quod castimonia
"manebit in te pura,
"dei potencia."

¹ e is an overline insertion. In lines 8, 4, 26, 28, 53, 60, &c. the 'þ' of þe, þire, þle, þerde, &c. stands for 'h'.

² A later overline 'so' is before 'for'; but the line should be only 2 measures.

3

Wan þe maiden understud,
 and þangle wordes þerde,
 mildeliche, with milde mud,
 to þangle þie andswerde:
 'Hure lordes þenmaiden iwis
 'ics am, þat her abouen is;
 'aneftis me
 'fulfurthed be
 'þi sawe,
 'þat ics, sithen ¹his wil is,
 'maiden, with-huten lawe,
 'of moder haue þe blis.'

4

þangle wente a-wei mid þan,
 al hut of hire sichte;
 and ²þire wombe arise gau,
 þurw þoligastes mithe;
 in hire was crist biloken anon,
 soth god, soth man, ine fleas and bon;
 and of hir fleas
 iboren was
 at time,
 war-þurw us kam god won,
 þe bout us hut of pine,
 and let im for us slon.³

5

Maiden moder makeles,
 of milche ful ibunden,
 Did þu þu us þat þu chas

3

25 Ad hec, uirgo nobilis
 respondens, inquit ei,
 'Ancilla sum humilis
 28 'omnipotentis dei,
 'tibi celesti nuncio
 30 'tanti secreti conscio,
 'consentiens
 ' & cupiens
 33 'uidere
 'factum quod audio,
 'parata sum parere
 36 'dei consilio.'

4

Angelus disparuit,
 & statim puellaris
 uterus intumuit,
 40 uí partus salutaris,
 quo circumdatur utero
 nouem mensium numero;
 post exiit,
 & iniit
 45 conflictum,
 affigens humero
 crucem qui dedit ictum
 48 soli mortifero.

5

Eya mater domini
 que pacem reddidisti
 Angelis & homini



3.

WOODCUTS OF THE
PAINTINGS OF THE 23 TELLERS OF
THE CANTERBURY TALES

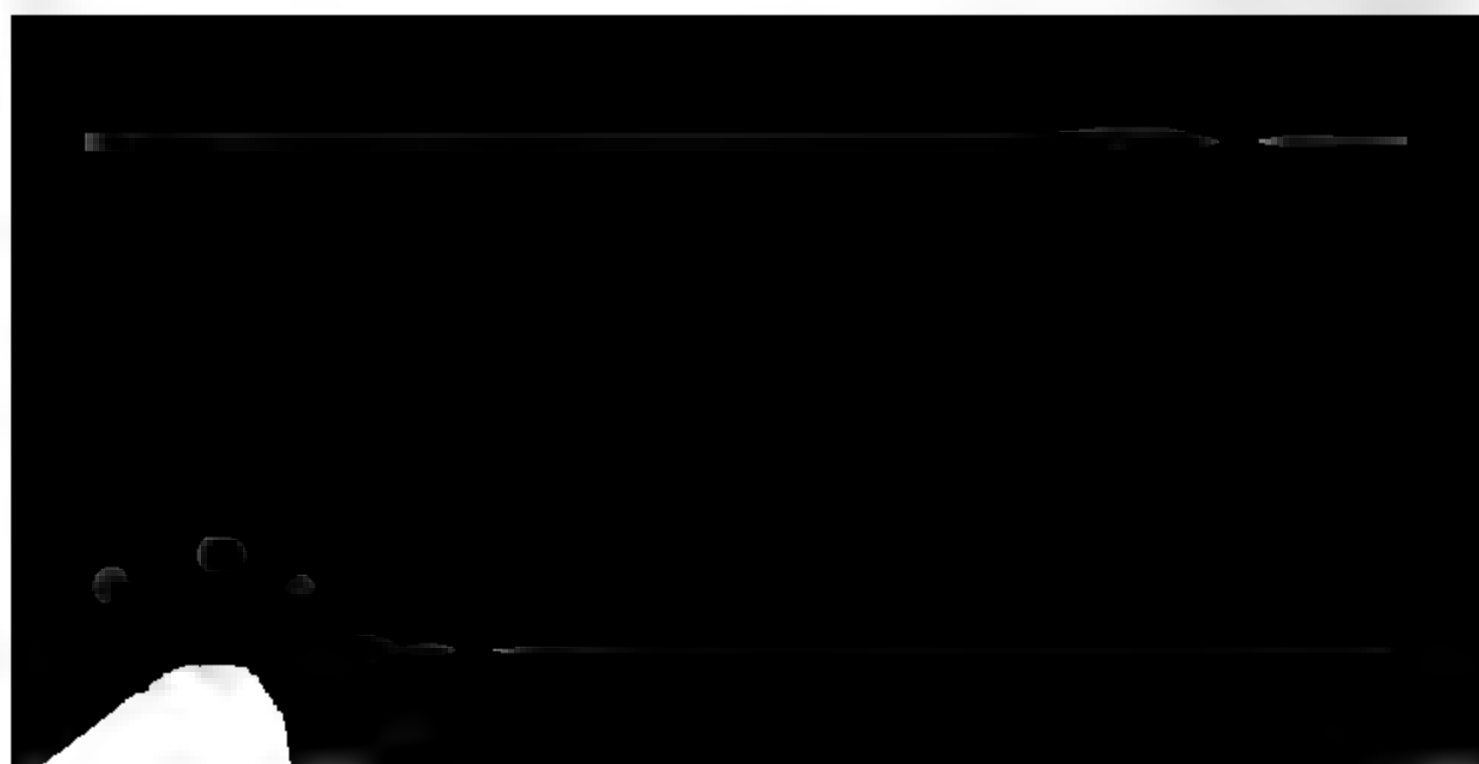
COPIED FROM

THE ELLESMERE MS

AND CUT BY

MR W. H. HOOPER.





STANFORD



THE KNYGHT

Ellesmere MS, leaf 14

The brand on the horse's hip—M. for Miles—
is in ink and probably by a later hand





STAMPED 18



THE MILLER.
Elfenmère 111, leaf 22, back.

01/01/2000



STANFORD LIBRARY

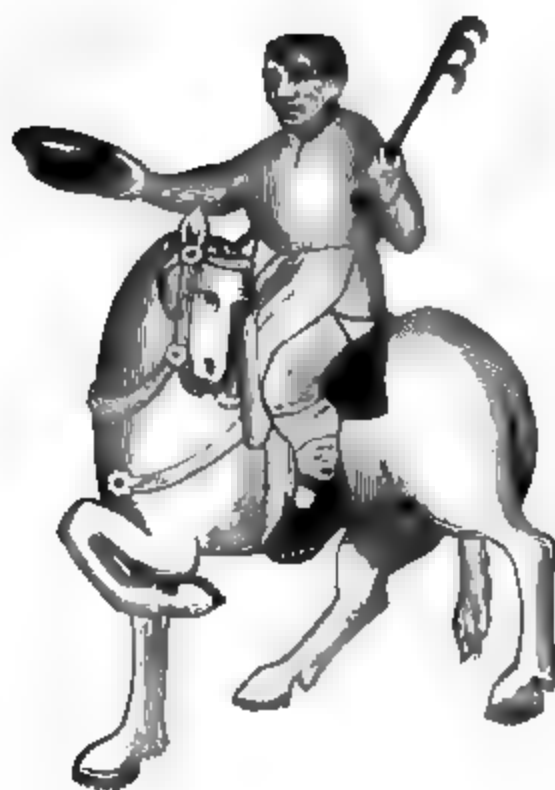


THE REVE

Ellesmere MS, leaf 46

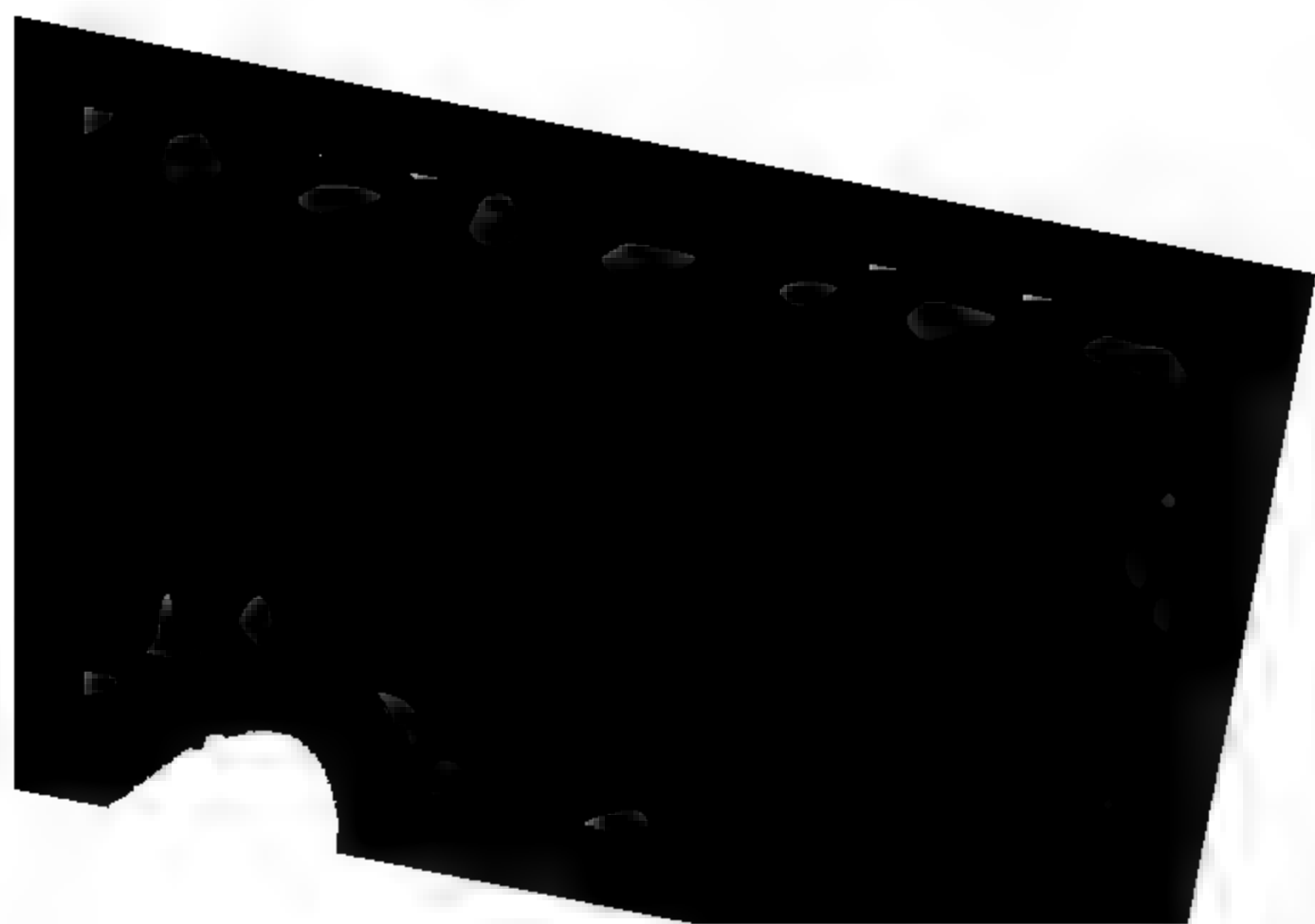
STANFORD LIBRARY

STANFORD LIB.



THE COOK.
Ellenore MS, leaf 51.

9A98U1 08099A13



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE MAN OF LAW
Elton MS, leaf 51, back

1900 1901



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE SHIPMAN.

Willems MS, leaf 147, back



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE PRIORESSE.

Elfenmeyer MS, leaf 152, back.

YASAL GÖRÜŞLER





CHACER

Manuscript MS, leaf 147, mark

WASA 00000000



YANFORD LIBRARY



THE MONK,
Exeter MS leaf 173



AYRONE LIBRA



THE NONNES PREEST.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 183.

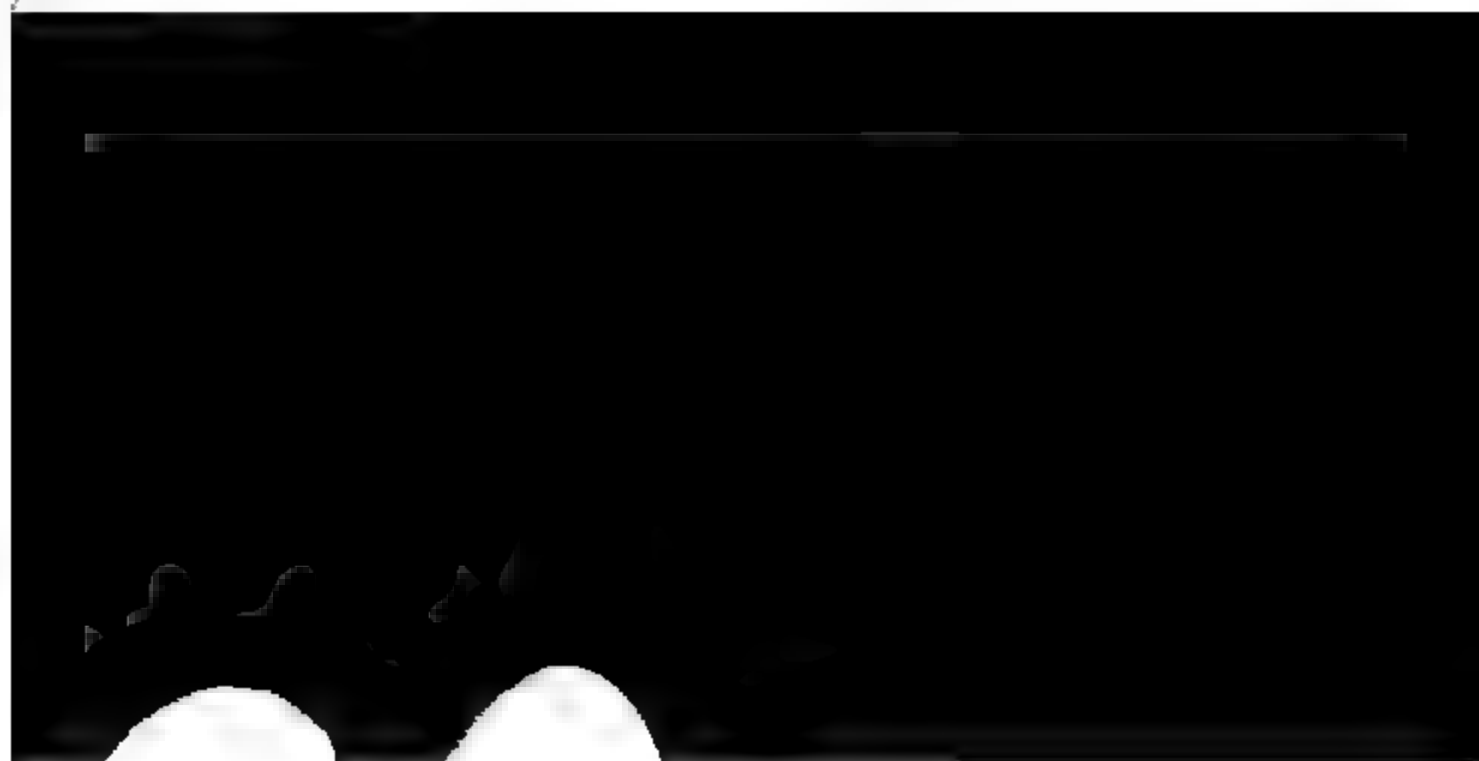
STANFORD LIBRARY



THE DOCTOR.

Elisamere MS, leaf 137.

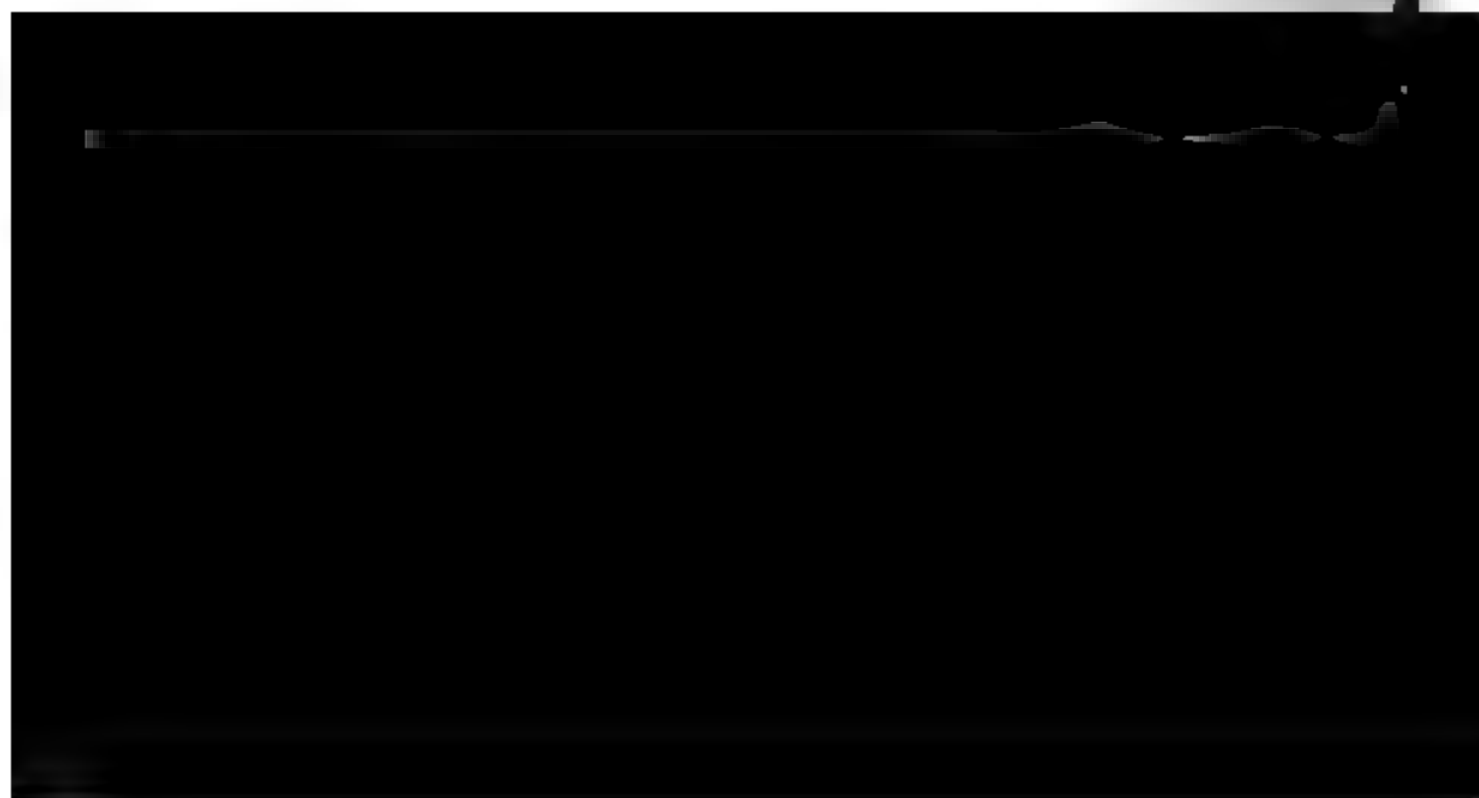
WASH. STATE





THE PARDONER.

Elton MS, leaf 142.



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE WYF OF BATHE

Elcomera MS, leaf 70.



THE FRERE

At camera MS, Post 90, 1924

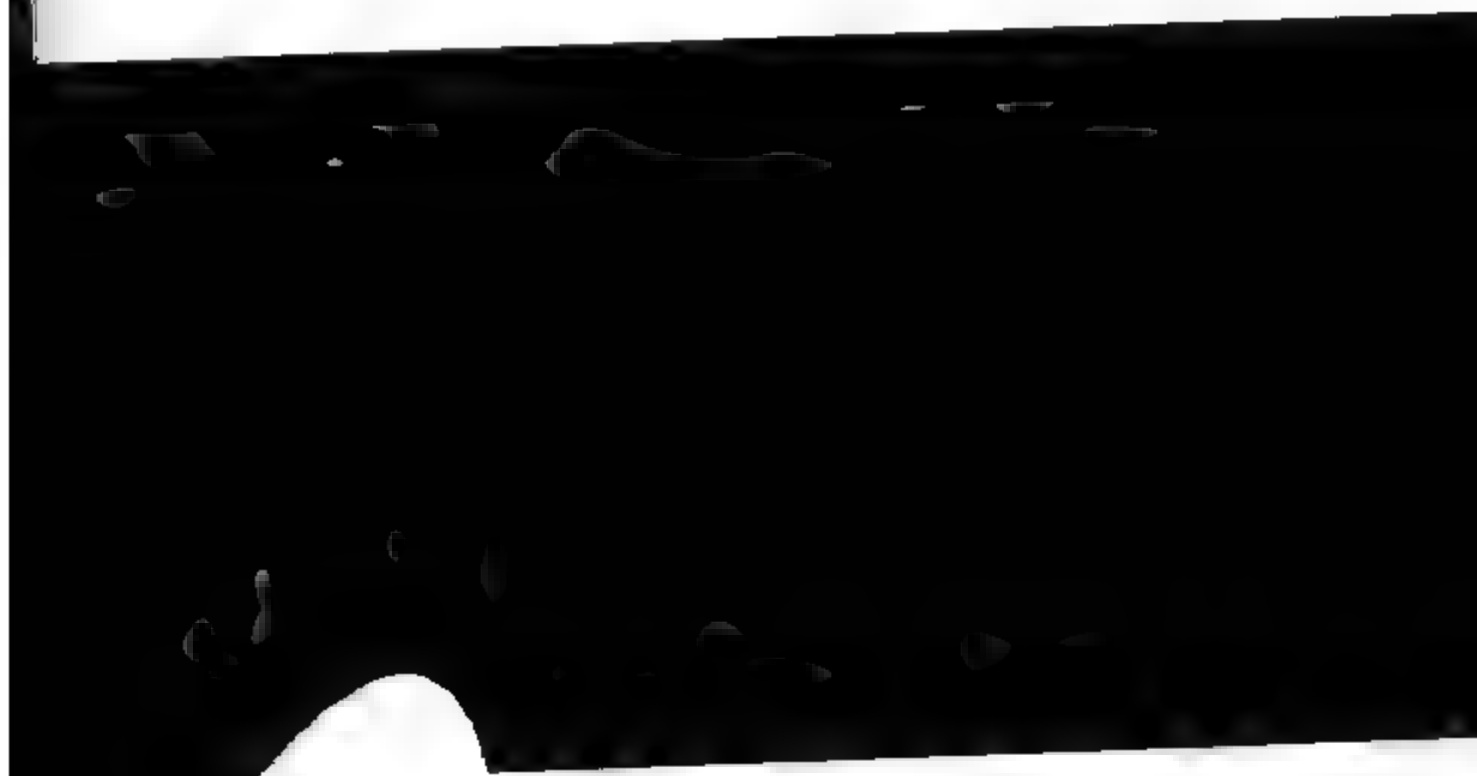
STANFORD LIBRARY



THE SOMONOUR

Ellesmere MS, leaf 65, verso

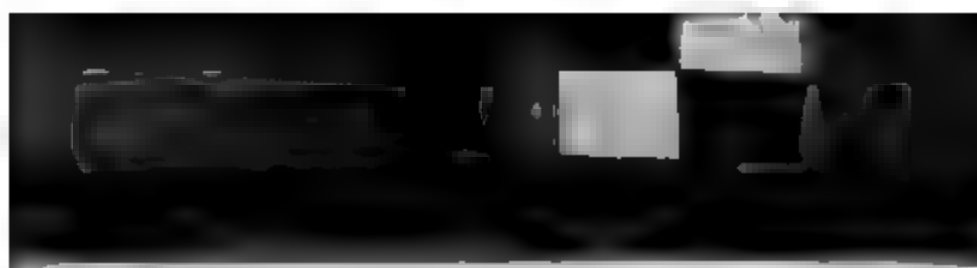
WASH DC 100000



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE CLERK OF OXFORD
Illustration by the artist



STAMPED



THE UNIVERSITY
OF MICHIGAN





STANFORD LIB.



THE SQUIRE.

Illustration No. 110, 111, 112.

1

2

3

STANDARD LIBRARY



THE FRANKLIN,

Illustration No. 1, Vol. 1, 1871, 1872.

1941

1941



THE SECOND NUN.

Blissmore MS, leaf 191.

11

DANFORD LIBRARY



THE CANON'S YEOMAN

Kilmorey MS, leaf 17v.

100

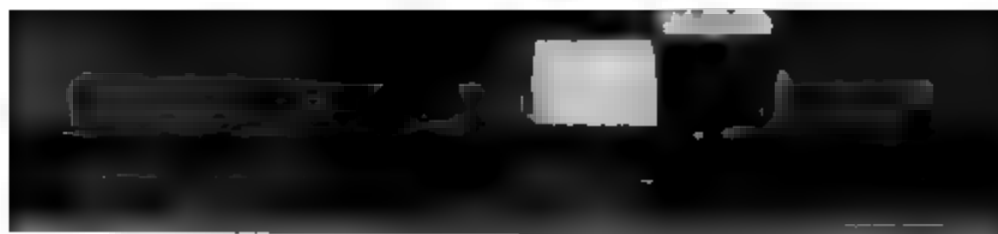




THE MANCIPLE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 297.





STANFORD LIBRARY



THE PARSON.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 110, back.

[These coloured figures in the Ellesmere MS have evidently been drawn by two different persons. The little pieces of ground on which the later hand places his figures, mark those done by him.

His drawing is not so good as the first hand's, and his colours are badly ground, and of poor quality.—W. H. HOOPER.]

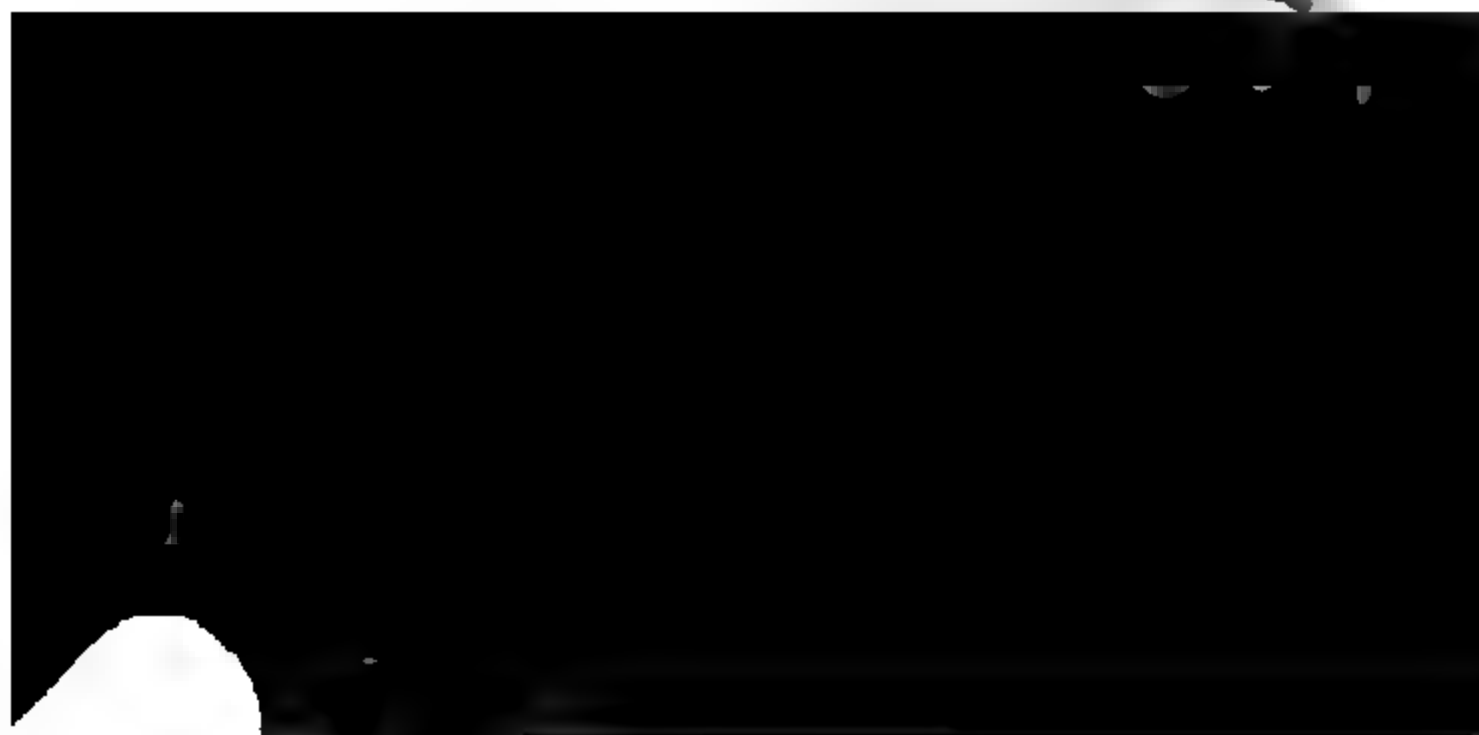
一、二、三、四、五、六、七、八、九、十、十一、十二、十三、十四、十五、十六、十七、十八、十九、二十、二十一、二十二、二十三、二十四、二十五、二十六、二十七、二十八、二十九、三十、三十一、三十二、三十三、三十四、三十五、三十六、三十七、三十八、三十九、四十、四十一、四十二、四十三、四十四、四十五、四十六、四十七、四十八、四十九、五十、五十一、五十二、五十三、五十四、五十五、五十六、五十七、五十八、五十九、六十、六十一、六十二、六十三、六十四、六十五、六十六、六十七、六十八、六十九、七十、七十一、七十二、七十三、七十四、七十五、七十六、七十七、七十八、七十九、八十、八十一、八十二、八十三、八十四、八十五、八十六、八十七、八十八、八十九、九十、九十一、九十二、九十三、九十四、九十五、九十六、九十七、九十八、九十九、一百。

STANDARD LIBRARY



THE REEVE.

MS. A. 9. 27, Univ. Libr. Camb. leaf 186



STANFORD LIB.



THE FRANKLIN.

Kilmer MS, leaf 127, back.



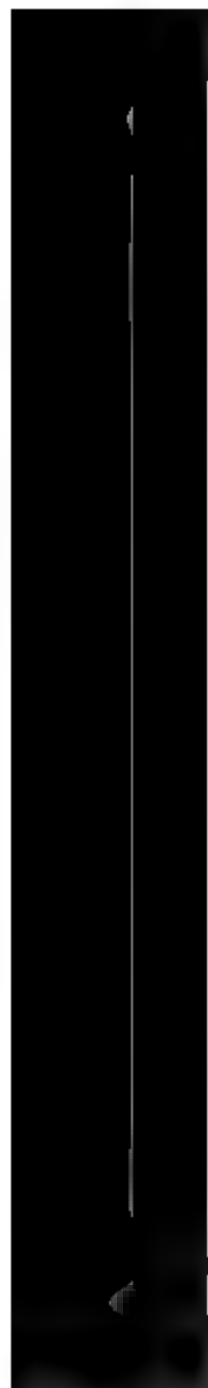
XXXXXX

STANFORD LIB.



THE SECOND SUN.

Ellesmere MS., leaf 191.



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE CANON'S YEOMAN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 10v





THE MONK
(without his Bells and Hounds).
MS. G. 4. 27, Cant. Libr. Cambr., leaf 252



THE MANCIPLE

MS. No. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Cambr., fol. 306

UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



ENVY
(on his Wolf gnawing a Bone)



CHARITY
(with her wings and flaming Heart).

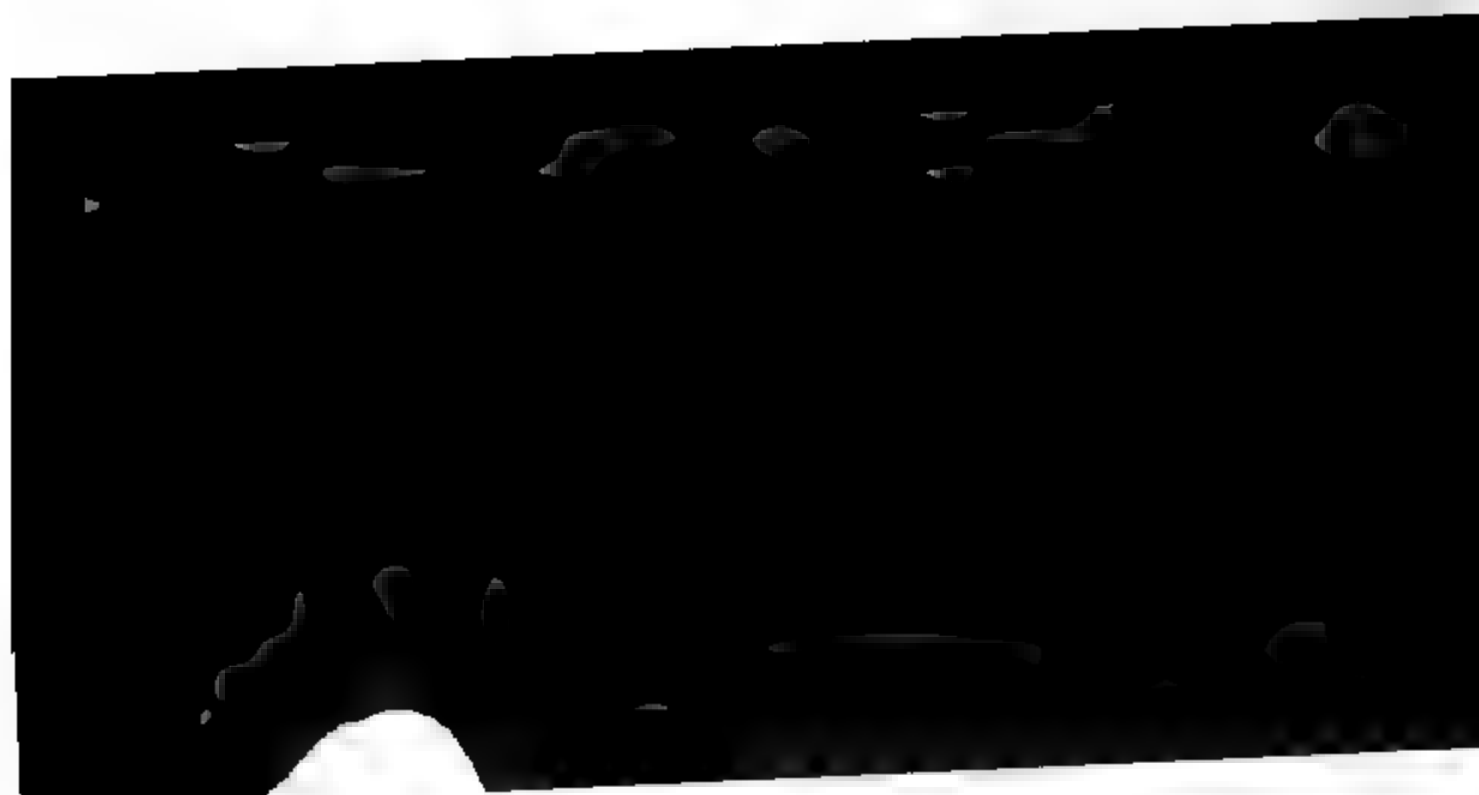
Parson's Tale.

MS. G. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Camb., leaf 416



GLUTTONY AND ABSTINENCE. *Parson's Tale*

MS. Gv. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Camb., leaf 132



STANFORD LIBRARY



LECHERY (with her Goat and Sparrow), and CHASTITY (trampling on the Dragon of Lust) *Parson's Tale*,

MS G. 4. 27, Ex Libris Combe, leaf 43v

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE CANON'S YEOMAN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 19r

22

Chaucer Society.

THE

Harleian MS 7334

OF

Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.



LONDON

PRINTED BY J. C. CLARKE, 25, ABchurch Lane,
AND H. K. BURNELL & CO., 57 & 59, FLEET STREET.

1893-1894

7 11



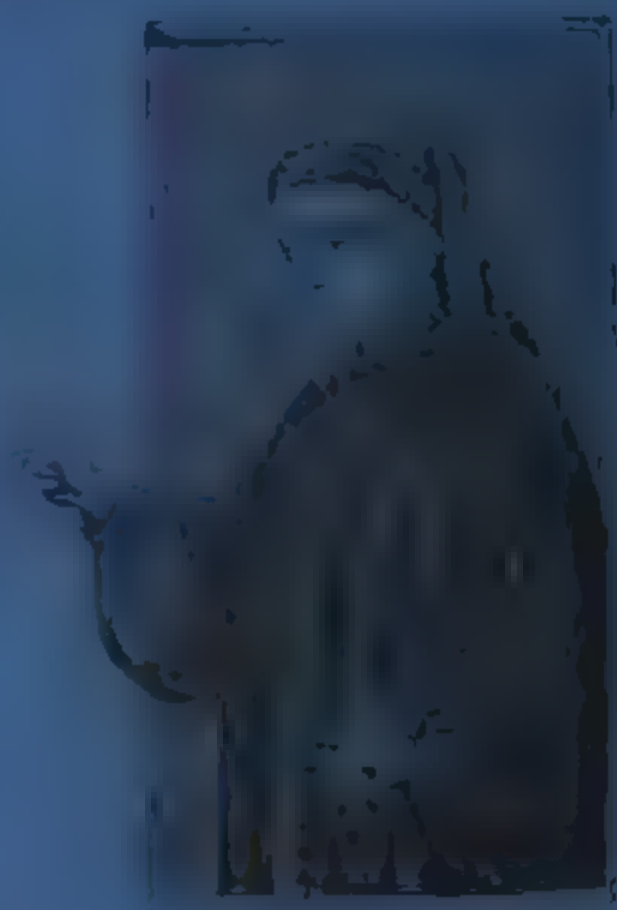
Chaucer Society.

1107

Harleian MS 7334

of Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL



LONDON

PRINTED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY
BY HODGKINS & CO. 27 & 29, 17, CO. ST. MARK'S

AD 1893

The Chaucer Society.

Editor in Chief:—Dr F. J. FURNIVALL, 3, St George's Square, Portrose Hill, N.W.
Hon. Sec.—W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N.

THE CHAUCER SOCIETY'S PUBLICATIONS.

To do honour to CHAUCER, and to let the lovers and students of him see how far the best unprinted Manuscripts of his works differ from the printed texts, this Society was founded in 1868. There were then, and are still, many questions of metre, pronunciation, orthography, and etymology yet to be settled, for which more prints of Manuscripts were and are wanted; and it is hardly too much to say that every line of Chaucer contains points that need reconsideration. The founder (Dr Furnivall) began with *The Canterbury Tales*, and has given of them (in parallel columns in Royal 4to) six of the best theretofore unprinted Manuscripts known. Inasmuch as the parallel arrangement necessitated the alteration of the places of certain tales in some of the MSS, a print of each MS has been issued separately, following the order of its original. The first six MSS printed have been: the Ellesmere (by leave of the Earl of Ellesmere); the Hengwrt (by leave of W. W. E. Wynne, Esq.); the Camb. Univ. Libr., MS Gg. 4. 27; the Corpus, Oxford; the Petworth (by leave of Lord Leconfield); and the Lansdowne 851 (Brit. Mus.). The Harleian 7334 has followed.

Of Chaucer's *Minor Poems*, the MSS of which are generally later than the best MSS of the *Canterbury Tales*, all the available MSS have been printed, so as to secure all the existing evidence for the true text.

The *Troilus* Parallel-Text from the 3 best MSS has been issued, and a 4th MS text of it with the englisht Boccaccio Comparison.

The *Bosce* from the best MS is now in type.

To secure the fidelity and uniform treatment of the texts, Dr F. J. Furnivall has read and will read all with their MSS.

Autotypes of most of the best Chaucer MSS have been published.

The Society's publications are issued in two Series, of which the first contains the different texts of Chaucer's works; and the Second, such originals of and essays on these as can be procured, with other illustrative treatises, and Supplementary Tales.

Messrs Trubner & Co., of 57 & 59, Ludgate Hill, London, E.C., are the Society's publishers, Messrs R. Clay and Sons of Bungay its printers, and the Alliance Bank, Bartholomew Lane, London, E.C., its bankers. The yearly subscription, which constitutes Membership, is two guineas, due on every 1st January, beginning with Jan. 1, 1868. *More Members are wanted. All the Society's Publications can still be had. Those of the first year have been reprinted.*

Prof Child, of Harvard College, Cambridge, Massachusetts, is the Society's Honorary Secretary for America. Members' names and subscriptions may be sent to the Publishers, or to the Honorary Secretary.

W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N.

FIRST SERIES.

The Society's issue for 1868, in the First Series, is,

1. The Prologue and Knight's Tale, of the *Canterbury Tales*, in 6 parallel



1

2

3





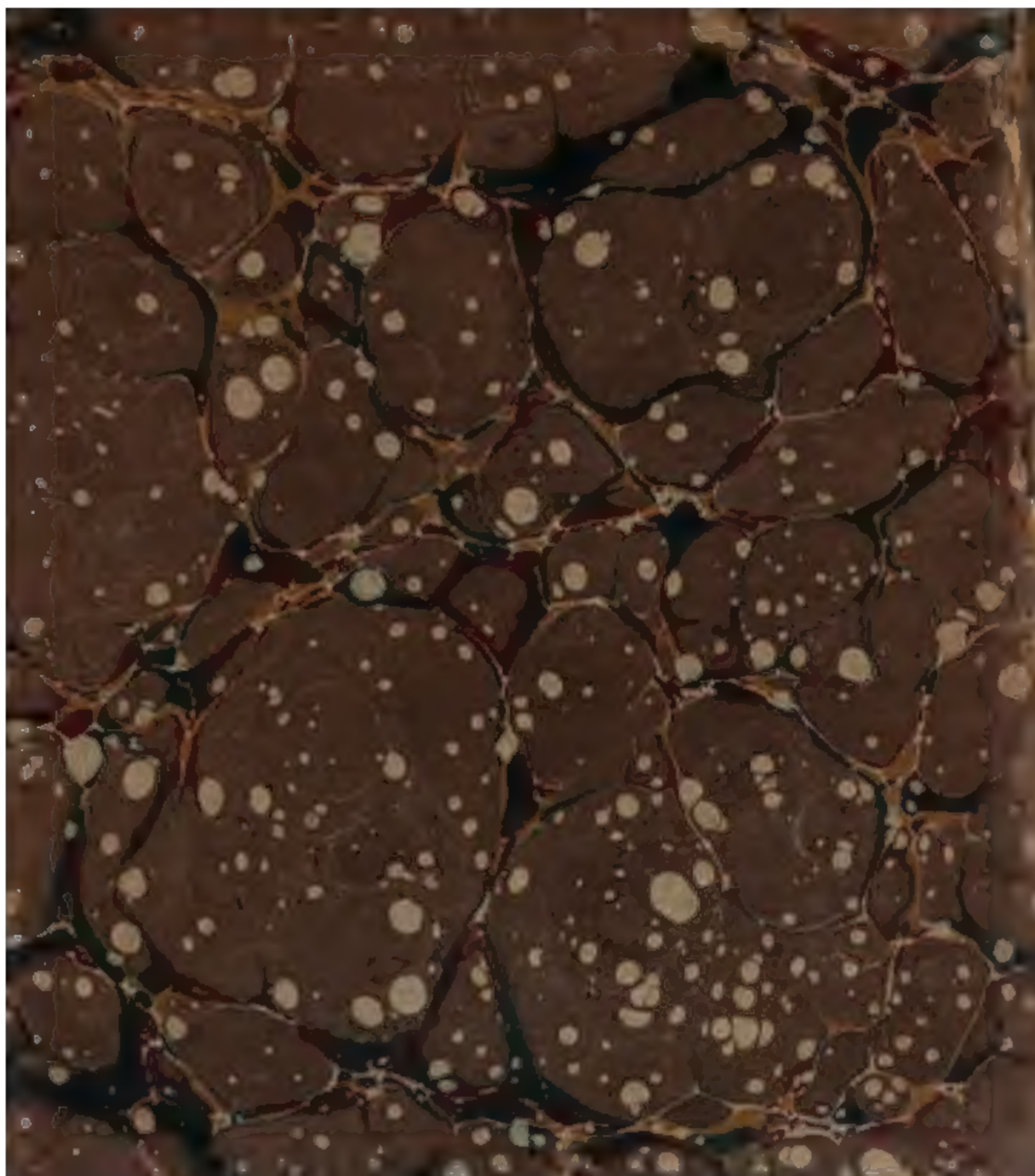
1

2

3

4





NOV 25 63

13 63
13 63

Stanford University Library

Stanford, California

In order that others may use this book,
please return it as soon as possible, but
not later than the date due.

